

192 5742m

Keep Your Card in This Pocket

Books will be issued only on presentation of proper library cards.

Unless labeled otherwise, books may be retained for four weeks. Borrowers finding books marked, defaced or mutilated are expected to report same at library desk; otherwise the last borrower will be held responsible for all imperfections discovered.

The card holder is responsible for all books drawn on his card.

Penalty for over-due books 2c a day plus cost of notices.

Lost cards and change of residence must be reported promptly.



PUBLIC LIBRARY
Kansas City, Mo.

Keep Your Card in this Pocket



3 1148 00554 4580

SPENCER AND SPENCERISM

SPENCER AND SPENCERISM

BY

HECTOR MACPHERSON

AUTHOR OF "THOMAS CARLYLE" AND "ADAM SMITH"

NEW YORK
DOUBLEDAY, PAGE & CO.
1900

COPYRIGHT, 1900,
BY DOUBLEDAY, PAGE & CO.

Norwood Press
J. S. Cushing & Co. — Berwick & Smith
Norwood Mass. U.S.A.

PREFACE

A PHILOSOPHIC thinker of the first rank is always known by the amount of literature which his writings call forth. Descartes, Locke, Spinoza, Hume, Kant, Hegel — these in their respective spheres were epoch-makers. From the philosophic germs which they scattered have sprung whole libraries of controversial literature. In like manner Mr. Herbert Spencer has paid the penalty of his great philosophic fame. As an epoch-maker, he, too, has had to pass through the fire of hostile criticism. For a great number of years his philosophy has been the battleground of controversialists who, differing in many ways among themselves, have united in their attempts to discredit a system of thought which threatened to destroy long-cherished opinions and stereotyped beliefs. One result of this has been that to the general public the Synthetic Philosophy, embedded as it has been in the works of critics, has necessarily appeared in a fragmentary form. My object in writing this book has been to present to

the general reader Spencerism in lucid, coherent shape. Nothing can take the place of Mr. Spencer's own writings, but mastery of these demands an amount of leisure and philosophic enthusiasm which are by no means widespread.

In this design I have had the approval of Mr. Spencer. He has taken a kindly interest in the undertaking, and he responded to my request for certain materials. The book is by no means a slavish reproduction of Mr. Spencer's writings. Taking my stand upon the fundamental ideas of the Synthetic Philosophy, I have used them in my own way to interpret and illustrate the great evolutionary process.

While, therefore, Mr. Spencer has been in full sympathy with the aim of the book, he does not stand committed to the detailed treatment of the subject. The work has indeed been a labor of love. Should it induce the reader to study Spencerism as expounded by the master himself, my reward will be ample.

I should be lacking in gratitude did I not express my obligations to the elaborate work of Mr. John Fiske, entitled *Outlines of Cosmic Philosophy*. No student of Spencer can afford to neglect Mr. Fiske's book, which it would be difficult to rival in point

of lucidity and intellectual ability. I am also indebted to Professor Hudson of California for his admirable book, *Introduction to the Philosophy of Herbert Spencer*. In the philosophic and economic parts of the book, I have drawn upon a few paragraphs in my *Carlyle* and *Adam Smith*. Knowledge of a philosopher's system of thought is greatly helped by knowledge of the philosopher himself, and in this respect I have been exceedingly fortunate. The recollection of my personal relations with Mr. Spencer will ever be to me a priceless possession.

HECTOR MACPHERSON.

EDINBURGH, April, 1900.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. EARLY LIFE	1
II. INTELLECTUAL ENVIRONMENT	18
III. EVOLUTION OF THE EVOLUTION THEORY	39
IV. PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS	54
V. THE COSMOS UNVEILED	66
VI. THE EVOLUTION OF LIFE	84
VII. THE EVOLUTION OF MIND	105
VIII. THE ECONOMIC EVOLUTION OF SOCIETY	124
IX. THE POLITICAL EVOLUTION OF SOCIETY	146
X. THE ETHICAL EVOLUTION OF SOCIETY	169
XI. THE EVOLUTION OF RELIGION	189
XII. THE PHILOSOPHIC ASPECT OF SPENCERISM	201
XIII. THE RELIGIOUS ASPECT OF SPENCERISM	216
INDEX	235

CHAPTER I

EARLY LIFE

CARLYLE has remarked that the history of the world is in the main the history of its great men. There is profound truth in the saying, though in his antipathy to a purely scientific treatment of civilization Carlyle used his great man theory in fantastic and misleading fashion. The intellectual contribution which each century makes to the progress of the world takes its hue from the dominating influence of its leading thinkers. True greatness is epoch-making. If we wish to discover the place of a thinker in the great evolutionary chain, we must apply the epoch-making test. The mind of the great man is like an overflowing reservoir which makes for itself new channels and fertilizes hitherto unknown tracts of thought. Or to use a biological simile, the sociological effects produced by the great man resemble the changes caused in the fauna and flora of a country by the introduction of a new species. Think of the impoverishment which history would sustain by the obliteration of the names, say,

blinded the intellect to the subtle relations existing between man and his surroundings. Herbert Spencer changed all that. His *Principles of Biology* foreshadowed a conception of biography in which the great man would no longer be viewed as an incomprehensible incarnation of supernatural energy, but as the product of certain interpretable forces. Between the average man and the great man the difference is mainly this — the one remains passive, while the other, as has been already said, reacts upon his environment, thereby unlocking new forces and giving a fresh impetus to progress. In coming to the study of Herbert Spencer, we cannot do better than use for purposes of biographic interpretation his own far-reaching principles. Before seeking to understand Spencer the philosopher, it is necessary to understand Spencer the man. A critical estimate can only lay claim to completeness when a picture is given of the philosopher as influenced by his age as well as dominating his age. If the title of great is due to those rare souls who have scaled the heights of human thought, and from the Pisgah summit have pointed the way to intellectual horizons undiscoverable by ordinary mortals, upon the brow of Herbert Spencer must be placed the never-fading wreath of immortality.

Herbert Spencer was born at Derby on 27th April 1820. Spencer, like Mill, owed much to his father,

but the educational methods pursued were very different indeed. James Mill had an almost fanatical belief in education. One of the tenets of the eighteenth-century philosophy was the modifiability of human nature, and the value of systematic training. James Mill put his son into training at the earliest possible moment; and for years subjected him to a severe course of mental discipline. The elder Spencer, in his own way as intellectually independent as James Mill, took a more rational view of education. He did not deem it the highest wisdom to force children into an artificial groove; he preferred to trust to the spontaneity of nature. In his view cramming of the memory with bits of detached knowledge was of little value compared with thorough mental individuality. Being a teacher by profession, the elder Spencer was in a position to give full sway to his ideas. To this, and not, as has been supposed, to delicate health, was it that young Spencer was somewhat backward in his early education. He was seven years of age before he could read. In due course the boy was sent to a training day-school, but his progress was not particularly satisfactory. He did not take kindly to the routine of school life. He is described as having been restless, inattentive, and by no means pliable. In all lessons in which success depended upon mechanical methods, such

as learning by rote, young Spencer did not show to advantage. Knowledge of the fragmentary kind he did not readily assimilate; it was only when his observing and reasoning faculties were called into play that intellectual progress was discernible. Nature appealed to him more forcibly than books. Science in his youthful days exercised over him a special charm. One of his favorite occupations is said to have been "the catching and preserving of insects and the rearing of moths and butterflies from eggs through larva and chrysalis to their most developed forms."

To his domestic surroundings, more than to his formal school training, the boy was indebted for his mental development. His father and uncles were men of pronounced individualities, bold thinkers on religion, politics, and social questions generally. In the family circle young Spencer heard all the topics of the day discussed with freedom and boldness. Such an atmosphere was fatal to that hereditary reliance upon authority characteristic of average middle-class homes. Moreover, the boy was early taught to think for himself in matters religious by the example of dissent which he witnessed weekly in his own home. His parents were originally Methodists, but his father had a preference for the Quakers, while his mother remained true to the Wesleyan persuasion. On Sun-

day mornings young Spencer attended the Quakers' meeting with his father, and in the evening he accompanied his mother to the Methodist chapel. Thus early the future philosopher had to reckon with the personal equation, the domestic bias in matters theological. There is nothing in Mr. Spencer's writings to show that religion had ever taken vital hold of him, as it did some of his noted contemporaries. Mill has left on record how he grew up outside of religious influences. His father deliberately kept him from contact with religion on its emotional and ceremonial side. In that case Mill's detachment of mind on religious questions was intelligible; but, in regard to Spencer, the curious thing was that, while moving in the midst of religious influences, he seems to have remained totally unaffected by them. One would have expected to find him, like George Eliot, under the sway of those spiritual ideals and impulses which were inseparably associated with middle-class Evangelicalism in the first half of the century. In conversation I once asked Mr. Spencer if, like George Eliot, he had first accepted the orthodox creed, then doubted, and finally rejected it. His reply was that to him it never appealed. It was not a case of acceptance and rejection: his mind lay outside of it from the first.

In many ways both Mill and Spencer would have

found their philosophic influence broadened and deepened had they, in their early days, shared in the spiritual experiences of their contemporaries. Those thinkers who, under the domination of youthful enthusiasm, have endeavored to realize supernatural ideals and, under emotional fervor, to strike the note of ascetic sanctity, receive an almost intuitive insight into the deeper religious problems of the age—an insight denied those who come to the study of religious psychology with the foot-rule of the logician and the weighing-scales of the statistician. Many students who have long since broken away from the bonds of orthodoxy, and whose minds now soar into the ampler air of speculative freedom, will be ready to admit that in dealing with religion the minds of both Mill and Spencer work under serious limitations, due to their lack of spiritual receptivity in early days. To this lack of receptivity must be traced the error into which Mr. Spencer fell in his *First Principles* in supposing that science and religion would find a basis of agreement in recognition of the Unknowable. The terms proposed by science resemble those of the husband who suggested to the wife, as a basis of future harmony, that he should take the inside of the house and she the outside.

When young Spencer reached his thirteenth year, the question of his future came up for serious con-

sideration. It was deemed wise to trust him to the educational care of his uncle, the Rev. Thomas Spencer, perpetual curate at Hinton, near Bath. The Rev. Mr. Spencer was a Radical in politics, a temperance advocate, an anti-corn law agitator, and an enthusiastic advocate of all measures relating to the welfare of the people—a man, in brief, whose life was shortened by unsparing devotion to ideals which are now recognized as realizable, but which then were treated as the products of a Quixotic mind. The reverend gentleman, himself a distinguished 'graduate of Cambridge, naturally set himself to qualify his nephew for a university career. His nephew's mind, however, was not cast in the university mould. In his interesting biographic sketch of Herbert Spencer, Professor Hudson sums up very concisely the progress made during this period: "The course of study now pursued was somewhat more regular and definite than had been the case at home; and the discipline was of a more rigorous character. But save for this the uncle's method and system did not materially differ from those to which young Spencer had been accustomed while under his father's roof. Once again his successes and his failures in the various studies which he now took up were alike significant. In the classic languages to which a portion of his time was daily given very little

progress was made. The boy showed neither taste nor aptitude in this direction; rules and vocabularies proved perpetual stumbling-blocks to him; and what little was with difficulty committed to memory was almost as soon forgotten. But while for studies of this class there was shown an inaptitude almost astounding, a counterbalancing aptitude was exhibited for studies demanding a different kind of ability — constructive and co-ordinating power rather than a memory for unconnected details. In mathematics and mechanics such rapid advancement was made that he soon placed himself in these departments abreast of fellow students much older than himself. What was noticeable, too, was his early habit of laying hold of essential principles, and his ever-growing tendency towards independent analysis and exploration.”

Close study of his nephew's mind led the Rev. Mr. Spencer to abandon the idea of a university career. It has been represented that his uncle was emphatic upon the necessity of a university training, and only reluctantly gave up the idea in consequence of the nephew's obstinacy; but I have it on Mr. Spencer's authority that this was not the case. In his own words: “There was no dispute. My uncle gave up the idea when he saw that I was unfit.” That is to say, it became clear to the Rev. Mr. Spencer that the mind of his nephew was of a type which could

not be fitted into the university mould. He saw that it would follow a bent of its own, and would not be forced into conventional channels. Much has been said of the loss which Spencer has sustained through exclusion from the atmosphere and training of university life. In dealing with exceptional minds, whose evolution is pre-determined along original lines by innate capacity and genius, no good purpose is served by appealing to general rules, which from the nature of the case can deal only with the expected and the calculable, not with those outstanding individualities which defy the ordinary laws of averages and probabilities. One drawback certainly was attached to Spencer's exclusion from university life. He was compelled to face not only a hostile public, but the insidious opposition of university cliques, who could not bear to see a new thinker of commanding power step forward into the intellectual arena without the hall-mark of university culture. Had Spencer been the centre of an admiring group of university disciples his system would have come into vogue much earlier; it would, in other words, have become fashionable. As it was, after the gradual decay of home-made philosophies, Hegel became the idol of university circles, and Spencer was left, a voice crying in the wilderness. Notwithstanding all this, Spencer gained more than he lost by missing the conventional university

training. However reluctant the Rev. Mr. Spencer was to abandon his deeply-cherished design, he admitted in after years that in following the promptings of nature his nephew had acted wisely. He doubtless saw that the very qualities which unfitted his nephew for the routine of a classical curriculum were precisely the qualities which gave him his great superiority in science and philosophy. A grinding in dead languages and a saturation in old-world methods and ideas might have seriously checked the faculties for observation and massive generalization which, when left to develop naturally, have made their possessor an unrivalled king in quite a new intellectual sphere, in which stand in unique conjunction the widest speculative thought and unparalleled analytic power.

The abandonment of the university design led to a period of uncertainty as to young Spencer's future. He returned home. The practical outlook seemed vague and uncertain. In the absence of any well-defined plan, his father secured him an assistantship in a school. The teaching profession was one in which Spencer might well have shone provided the curriculum were framed on a rational and scientific basis. As a teacher he would have found himself out of sympathy with modern systems, and sooner or later his career would have been cut short. One quality invaluable in a teacher he

possessed in a pre-eminent degree — that of luminous exposition. Those who have had the privilege of conversing with Mr. Spencer have been at once struck with the marvellous lucidity of his handling of the most abstruse topics. Into ordinary conversation he carries the habits of thought and exposition which other men usually leave behind in the study. There is no pedantry, no formalism: sweep of thought, clearness in statement, fertility of illustration, and lucidity of exposition are wedded to conversational charm. This expository power struck John Stuart Mill forcibly in his first interview with Spencer. A friend of Mill once told me of Mill's admiration for Spencer's power of presenting a full-orbed view of his subject in language at once precise and luminous. It is plain that Spencer would have made an ideal teacher. However, circumstances rather than design cut short his pedagogic career. In the autumn of 1837 young Spencer, whose early bent was towards science, especially on the mathematical and mechanical sides, received and accepted an offer from the resident engineer of the London division of the London and Birmingham railway, then in process of construction. For a year and a half he worked in London as a civil engineer, and subsequently, for two and a half years, on the Birmingham and Gloucester railway. During this time he showed

his interest in the intellectual side of his profession by contributing several papers to the *Civil Engineer Journal*, and his inventive faculties found scope in the invention of a little instrument called the velocimeter, for calculating the speed of locomotive engines. Again his life-plan was destined to be changed. After eight years at civil engineering, young Spencer was brought face to face with a crisis by the disasters which followed upon the great railway mania. In the reaction which followed, Spencer, with other young men similarly situated, suffered. The demand for new railways fell off, and consequently the demand for civil engineers. At the age of twenty-six Spencer had to begin the world afresh. He returned to his home in Derby. Meanwhile Spencer's mind had been branching out in other quarters besides civil engineering. He was musing upon political philosophy and science. In 1842 he contributed to a paper called *The Nonconformist* a series of articles on 'The Proper Sphere of Government.' These, after due season, appeared later in pamphlet form. In his home retreat at Derby his mind was still further matured by reading and thinking. Man, however, does not live by thought alone, so it behooved Spencer to turn his attention to the bread and butter side of life. He cast his eyes towards journalism, and after a

miscellaneous period he was, in 1848, in his own words, "invited to take the position of sub-editor of the *Economist* newspaper." This post he held till 1853. In London he got his feet on the first rung of the ladder of fame. The history of his long, toilsome, and heroic ascent is mainly the record of the various stages of his mind in the conception and elaboration of that vast system of thought with which his name is imperishably associated.

CHAPTER II

INTELLECTUAL ENVIRONMENT

WHILE engaged in the work of a civil engineer, and before he settled in London, Spencer was quietly pondering over the great intellectual problems of the time. Naturally he was led by his fondness for science to study the highest authorities in the various departments. At the age of twenty he began to study Lyell's *Principles of Geology*. Without demur he accepted the development as opposed to the special creation theory of the earth and man, though like the rest of his contemporaries he could not trace the process in its detail, nor understand its nature. In order to follow the evolution of young Spencer's mind it will be necessary to describe the intellectual environment in which it moved in those early days.

The early years of the century were years of great fermentation, theological, philosophic, political, and social. The practical energies of the nation, freed from the great strain of the continental wars, found new outlet in the spheres of commerce and industry. Scientific study of nature, no longer tabooed by theol-

ogy, demonstrated its utility by an imposing record of inventions and discoveries, whose influence on the national prosperity was at once dramatic and all-embracing. Such a transformation of the industrial and social order could not take place without exerting a potent influence upon the higher thought of the time. Science, which in the practical sphere had achieved colossal triumphs, and given man power over nature, could not but be greatly influenced by the new forces which it had called into existence. Science as the worker of miracles became the idol of the hour : at its shrine the popular as well as the cultured intelligence of the day worshipped fervently. The printing-press teemed with books for the diffusion of useful knowledge, while to the more highly cultured the British Association, established in the first half of the century, proved itself a veritable Mecca. The union between science and industry had one effect — discoveries, inventions, and theories came pell mell, to the utter confusion of the methodical thinker, with his desire to reduce his intellectual knowledge to something like order. In the whirl of practical details, thought in the wide and comprehensive sense was paralyzed ; the wood could not be seen for the trees. In the midst of the jubilation over the advance of discovery, in the midst of the eulogiums over the material victories which Science had brought in its train, there were those

who remembered that man does not live by facts alone, those who are ever ready to string facts on the thread of philosophic or scientific generalizations. Since the days of Bacon and his *Novum Organum*, thinkers have cherished the ambition to discover knowledge by the slow but sure methods of science, and to weave that knowledge into one comprehensive whole.

It soon became evident that a new theory of man and his relation to the Universe was following in the wake of science and its discoveries. In Scotland, the theological spirit, much as it wished, could not prevent the reading public from being influenced by such books as Combe's *Constitution of Man*, and the famous *Vestiges of Creation*. On the Continent the same spirit of scientific inquiry and theorizing was abroad. This desire of science not to remain content with looking upon nature as a huge museum in which the highest aim was duly to ticket and label phenomena, found expression in Humboldt's *Cosmos*, which appeared in 1845. About the same time appeared Whewell's *History and Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences*, which was intended to be the continuation of the work of Bacon "renovated according to our advanced intellectual position and office." A thinker of the type of Whewell labors under one distinct disadvantage—while he is engaged upon ultimate generalizations, discoveries are

being made which may knock away the foundation of his entire cosmical structure. This was precisely the fate of Whewell. As Merz says in his valuable work on *European Thought*: "In the year 1857, the date of the publication of the latest editions of Whewell's works, nothing was popularly known of energy, its conservation and dissipation, nothing of the variation of species and the evolution of organic forms, nothing of the mechanical theory of heat or that of gases, of absolute measurements and absolute temperature; even the cellular theory seems to have been popular only in Germany. And yet all the problems denoted by these now popular terms were then occupying, or had for many years occupied, the attention of the leading thinkers of that period. But we find no mention of them in Whewell's Works." Still, Whewell did great service to the cause of scientific thought. His was a bold attempt to reduce to something like coherence the confused mass of scientific knowledge. Underlying the book was the idea of the organic unity of the sciences; and if he failed to realize his ideal, the reason lay not in his lack of insight, but in the fact that scientists had not then discovered by observation and experiment the marvellous unity of nature.

The next great impetus to scientific thought came from Comte. In the history of scientific thought the name of Auguste Comte will always occupy an hon-

ored place. It is customary to belittle Comte on account of his vagaries in connection with the Religion of Humanity, but we must not allow his failings to blind us to the great work he did in the sphere of scientific thought. Science, as has been pointed out, had a bewildering effect upon the average mind. Along with the material blessings which came in its train, Science had incidentally come forward as a rival to Theology, as an interpreter of Man and the Universe. In the minds of many people, even thinkers of the caliber of Faraday, the theological and scientific conceptions lived comfortably side by side. But studious readers of the signs of the times had come to the conclusion that Theology and Science were deadly rivals, yet perplexity existed as to how they were related in the history of thought and speculation. It was the merit of Comte to attempt to show the position which Theology, Metaphysics, and Science hold in the progress of humanity. Whether or not we agree with his famous law of the three stages, this, at least, must be conceded — Comte by his law has rendered luminous a large tract of history which, in the hands of the average historian, had been a perfect maze. In a rough sort of way we do get a fruitful view of human progress when we say with Comte that Theology failed in its interpretation of the Universe, because it busied itself with personal causes, while Metaphysics also went

wide of the mark because it dealt in entities, whereas Science has been fruitful in so far as it has confined itself to the study of phenomena on the lines of observation and experiment. In the purely scientific sphere, Comte did great service in his efforts to show that progress does not take place at haphazard, as a superficial student of the history of discoveries and inventions is apt to think, but that through the seemingly aimless growth of science there is traceable a definite law. Before Comte the various sciences were treated as so many distinct branches of man's knowledge of nature. Any classification which existed was of an artificial kind. For this Comte substituted a classification which had the note of organic unity. The sciences, according to him, are six in number: Mathematics, Astronomy, Physics, Chemistry, Biology, and Sociology. The merit claimed for this arrangement by Comte is that the order of their classification is the order in which the sciences have been evolved — the order in which they have passed from the theological or metaphysical into the scientific stage. If we wish to learn how far scientific conceptions are gaining ground, we have a fairly reliable method if we apply the Comtean classification. In Mathematics, Astronomy, and Physics, the scientific method pure and simple has long held sway. It is not, however, long since Chemistry and Biology were at the metaphysical stage, with its

“vital principle” and such like entities, while in the region of Sociology prayers for success of war, for industrial prosperity, etc., show unmistakable signs of the theological stage.

Valuable as was the work of Comte, it was vitiated by one great defect. In his antipathy to the study of causes, he was led to confuse two things which are quite distinct — final or theological, and efficient or mechanical cause. The result of this was that he refused to trace his six sciences to a common root. All attempts to get behind phenomena, even to the subtle laws and forces which seemed to be the key to phenomena, were ruthlessly opposed by Comte. As Ward, an American writer, puts it: “Among the most lamented of Comte’s vagaries is his uncompromising hostility to all the modern hypotheses respecting the nature of light, heat, electricity, etc. He classed all these along with gravitation, and declared that all the efforts expended in the vain search after origin, nature, or cause were simply squandered. These agencies, according to him, were merely phenomena, and were to be studied only as such. The imaginary interstellar ether was an ontological conception or a metaphysical entity to be classed along with phlogiston and all the spirits of the laboratory and the imaginary occupants of the bodies of men, animals, and inanimate objects. The undulatory theory of light was no better than the emission theory, and both

equally vain attempts to know what from the nature of things cannot be known. In fact, the domain of the unknowable in Comte's philosophy was enormous in its extent, and when we contemplate the little that was left for man to do we almost wonder how he should have regarded it worth the labor of writing so large a work. The amount of mischief which this one glaring fallacy accomplished for Comte's system of Positivism, insinuating itself into every chapter, and more or less vitiating the real truths contained in the work, was so great as to give considerable color to the claim that pure Comtism, if it could be made to prevail and exert its legitimate influence upon human inquiry in the future, would so far cripple every department of science as to throw it back into mediæval stagnation. For it would strike a fatal blow at all true progress in human knowledge by crushing out the very spirit of inquiry, and would quench all interest in phenomena themselves by prohibiting the search after the springs and sources—the causes—of the phenomena which furnish the true life and soul of scientific research."

Comte failed to realize his ideal, for a reason which explains the slow progress that has hitherto been made in the great task of formulating a scientific philosophy of the Universe. For this two things are needed—vast accumulation of facts and great synthetic power. A scientist with nothing but a

passion for facts is simply an intellectual hodman, whose relation to the philosophical scientist is that of a bricklayer's laborer to the architect. On the other hand, great speculative power working upon imperfect knowledge leads often to sheer absurdity. Witness Germany with its natural philosophy. The ideal condition is one in which fact and theory go hand-in-hand. Comte came as near as was possible in his day to providing a scientific key to Nature. All that was needed was for Comte to discover and formulate the law of unity, which, like a golden thread, runs through his six sciences. For logical purposes, it is necessary to treat the various sciences as if they stood for separate independent classes of facts in Nature, but the discoveries which were taking place just at the close of Comte's career substituted the dynamic for the statical conception of Nature. Herbert Spencer profited by the new conception of Nature of which Comte was unable to take advantage. From the point of view of the scientific thinker, the dominating fact of the century may be defined as a new conception of Nature. Until Spencer began to write, the conception of Nature was that of a colossal machine, the various parts of which were specially manufactured to fit into their respective places. Unity, of course, there was, but the unity was in the mind of the Supernatural Mechanic, not in the material of which the machine was con-

structed. Alike in the works of scientists and theologians of the early century, we find a total absence of the thought of organic unity as applied to the Cosmos. Not only did the thinkers of the time fail to hit upon the great fact of the unity of the Cosmos, but they had resigned themselves to the view that it was impossible to make such a discovery. Caught in the meshes of a false philosophic method, the philosophers of the Rational school placed an arbitrary limit to speculation. Mill's *Logic* was the text-book of the school. Mill's admiration of Comte finds explanation in the fact that the great Frenchman had carried the method of induction in interpretation of the Universe to what seemed to be its utmost limit. According to Mill, knowledge resolves itself into a recognition of particulars. What we call a law is simply a recorded observation that phenomena follow each other in a regular order. There is no inherent necessity that phenomena should be inter-related. Comte's law of the sciences determined nothing as to the necessary relations between the six sciences which he named : all that could be said was that the human mind in the course of its progress came to a knowledge of the sciences in the way indicated by Comte. Mill, like Comte, considered that scientific men were going beyond the inductions of experience when they endeavored to attribute to Nature any kind of inherent regularity and necessity. Hence his remark that

in some after planet the axiom that two and two make four might not hold. With Mill a scientific philosophy had done its work when it revealed the existence of a number of apparently permanent laws whose inter-relation were undiscoverable, and upon which the regularity of the Cosmos depended. Mill's conception of the world was that of a collection of facts grasped by the mind by virtue of the law of association — facts existing by no inherent necessity, but resting in the last analysis on the arbitrary and the accidental. In our Cosmos these facts exist in one way; elsewhere the connection might be totally different. Thus, as Taine puts it, the Experiential philosophy, the philosophy which plumed itself upon refusing to go a step beyond Induction, ends in "an abyss of chance, an abyss of ignorance."

Here we have the explanation of Mill's curious attitude to religion, as revealed in his posthumous essays. At bottom Mill's conception was that of Theology, with its postulation of an unknown cause which at any time may reveal itself in an arbitrary manner. Mill was bound to admit that things need not necessarily exist in the connection in which we now find them. At any moment the connection might be severed; consequently he was driven to admit that the question of miracles really turned on the question of evidence. We find the same curious sympathy with theological conceptions in Huxley,

who was constantly throwing a sop to the theologians, in the admission that he was quite ready to believe the most profound mysteries in religion, if the evidence were forthcoming, on the ground that Science contains as many mysteries as anything to be found in Theology. In other words, Huxley, like Mill, contended that it was not possible to detect in Nature any facts held together by necessity. Comte, Mill, and Huxley never got beyond the interpretative standpoint of Hume, whose Agnosticism, it should be remembered, extended to science as well as to theology. We shall see later that Spencer's contribution to a scientific conception of the Universe consisted in going beyond Hume, Comte, and Mill, in the direction of including all generalizations under one generalization, and in supplementing the inductive method by the deductive, thereby demonstrating the necessary and organic unity of the Cosmos. So much for the scientific conceptions of the Universe which were prevalent among advanced thinkers when Spencer began to study science in a broad and comprehensive manner. Along with the scientific was the philosophic conception, which also formed one of the factors in his intellectual environment.

The French Revolution will always remain a landmark in modern history. If the student of history desires to understand the lines of modern thought

and life, he must go back to that great political and social upheaval. It is a mistake to suppose that the Revolution exhausted its influence mainly in the sphere of public activity. In all departments its reactionary effect was felt, and in none more so than in Philosophy. What do we mean by Philosophy? The answer to that will be easier when we consider what is meant by Science. Science has been defined as the systematization of our knowledge of phenomena. In a word, Science deals with the modes of existence; Philosophy with the nature of existence. It is clear that the conceptions which Philosophy forms of the nature of existence will react powerfully on the conception which Science will form of the modes of existence. Assume that Matter is the ultimate fact, and you are logically committed to a materialistic conception of Mind and of Society—a conception which must have far-reaching influence upon individual and social evolution. If we wish, then, to find the key to the development of the nineteenth century, we must go back and try to discover the philosophical conceptions which dominated the previous era. The apostles of the Age of Reason adopted Materialism as their philosophic creed. Voltaire and Rousseau were Deists, but the influential party in revolutionary circles were undoubtedly Materialists. The creed of Diderot and his apostles was summed up in

Holbach's famous *System of Nature*, in which everything, from the movements of the solar masses to the movements of the soul, was interpreted in terms of matter. Even before the Revolution the dreariness of the French philosophy struck the highest minds of the time with a kind of despair. Thus Goethe says: "The materialistic theory which reduces all things to matter and motion appeared to me so gray, so Cimmerian, and so dead, that we shuddered at it as at a ghost."

Its downfall was inevitable when the Age of Reason ended in a carnival of diabolism. As George Henry Lewes puts it: "The reaction against the philosophy of the eighteenth century was less a reaction against a doctrine proved to be incompetent than against a doctrine believed to be the source of frightful immorality. The reaction was vigorous, because it was animated by the horror which agitated Europe at the excesses of the French Revolution. Associated in men's minds with the saturnalia of the Terror, the philosophic opinions of Condillac, Diderot, and Cabanis were held responsible for the crimes of the Convention; and what might be true in those opinions was flung aside with what was false, without discrimination, without analysis, in fierce, impetuous disgust. Every opinion which had what was called a taint of Materialism, or seemed to point in that direction, was denounced as an

opinion unnecessary, leading to the destruction of all religion, morality, and government." In the reaction which followed the French Revolution, we have a vivid illustration of the close connection which exists between philosophy and everyday life. The sudden contempt into which Materialism fell may be taken as an instinctive, though irrational, testimony to the intimate relation which exists between abstract thought and concrete life. It may be taken for granted that the conceptions which people form of the Universe and of their relation to it will largely influence the nature of the social bond. Morality and human ideals generally cannot remain unaffected by theories which make Matter or Spirit the root-principle of the great cosmical scheme. In Holbach's *System of Nature* we have the materialistic theory worked out logically into a comprehensive ethical and sociological creed. In the famous French *Encyclopædia of Sciences* Materialism had formal embodiment as a system of philosophy. Nature was viewed simply as a piece of mechanism, man as the product of a complex molecular arrangement, mind the development of animal sensations, morality as a phase of self-interest, religion as a product of emotional hallucination, and government as an ingenious arrangement between despotic kings and designing priests to keep the people in slavery. When the crash came it was natural that the whole

scheme of Materialistic Philosophy should totter to the ground. What was to take its place?

Naturally thinkers looked around for a set of first principles which would give repose to their minds as well as stability to the social system. The Catholic section, headed by de Maistre; the Royalists, inspired by Chateaubriand; and the Metaphysicians, stimulated by the Eclectic School of Cousin, united their forces against Materialism. For a time Eclecticism held the field, but the work of construction both in France and Britain needed a new set of first principles which neither nation could supply. The constructive principles were imported from Germany. The Germans — Kant, Fichte, Schelling, and Hegel — attacked the problem of Existence from the spiritual instead of from the material side. To the Materialists, French and English, of the Revolution school, the Germans said that the great mystery of Being was insoluble by mechanical methods. Reduce Matter, they said, to its constituent atoms and you fail to seize the principle of life; it evades you like a spirit. With the Germans — especially Hegel — Cosmology and Psychology grew naturally out of Ontology: Nature and Man were incarnations of the Absolute. Coleridge and Carlyle, in their own peculiar ways, vigorously combated the Materialistic Philosophy with its denial of necessary truth, its repudiation of religion, and

its substitution of Utilitarianism for a moral sense. What Carlyle and Coleridge did for the cultured class generally Sir William Hamilton did for the purely philosophic section. Though one part of his philosophy—the doctrine of the Relativity of Knowledge—has been used in the interests of Agnosticism, the general drift of his influence was anti-materialistic. How formidable a foe he was may be judged by the elaborate attempt of Mill to discredit Hamilton as an authority. The contrast between the two philosophies is well put by Mill in his essay on Coleridge. Mill says: “The German-Coleridgian doctrine expresses the revolt of the human mind against the philosophy of the eighteenth century. It is ontological, because that was experimental; conservative, because that was innovative; religious, because that was abstract and metaphysical; poetical, because that was matter-of-fact and prosaic.” Political circumstances were soon to lead to a revival of the Experiential as opposed to the Intuitive school, the school of Hume, Diderot, and Mill, as opposed to Kant and his British interpreters. With the peace of 1815 the old despotism, under the name of the Holy Alliance, began to press heavily upon Europe. People forgot the evils of Anarchy under pressure of present despotism. Institutions which were looked upon as refuges from the Revolutionary storm were now used as prison-houses for

the free spirit of man. A philosophy which tended to prop up existing institutions, to justify existing beliefs, and, when questioned, to fall back upon innate ideas, intuitions of the mind — such a philosophy became the natural target of thinkers of reforming proclivities. It was not without reason that the political Radicals of the early years of the century were bitter opponents of the Intuitive School. Mill senior and Bentham did much to pave the way for the revival of Empiricism, but the philosopher of the sect was John Stuart Mill.

In Mill's hands Empiricism lost its old fanaticism. So long as a thinker of materialistic tendencies never gets beyond the popular ideas of Matter he will have no difficulty in finding in experience a steadfast ground of certainty. But Mill was too well versed in psychology, was too acute a thinker, to find repose in the materialism of the old school. By sheer stress of logic, Mill was driven close to Hume's position by his definition of Matter as a permanent possibility of sensation, and Mind as a permanent possibility of feeling. With such a hesitating and uncertain cosmological and psychological creed, it is easy to understand Mill's contention that in science there is no such thing as necessary truth; in ethics no such thing as moral intuition; and in politics no such thing as authoritative belief: over every department hangs a cloud of uncertainty. In his remarkably

suggestive book on British philosophy, Professor Masson puts this characteristic of Mill's whole philosophy very well when he says: "Mr. Mill's logic corresponds with what the science of logic could alone be consistently with his fundamental psychological principle. It could not be like the old logic and Hamilton's logic, a science of the necessary laws of thought, but only a science of the method of quest after experimental truth or probability. So in his fine essay on liberty the radical idea is that one can never be surer of anything, be it even the forty-seventh proposition of the first book of Euclid, than in proportion as the chances of contradiction are exhausted; and the high value set thus upon human freedom, and even upon eccentricity of thought and action, seems to be grounded on the conviction that the human race can never know what it may attain to in the shape either of knowledge or of power, until it has sent out a rush of the largest number of individual energies simultaneously, and with the least restraint from law or custom, in all directions. As for the essay on Utilitarianism, it is expressly a restatement of Paley's and Bentham's theory of expediency as the sole possible foundation of morals, but with a suggestion of this higher and more exquisite definition of expediency characteristic of Mr. Mill, that it means the largest possible amount of pleasure, and the least possible

amount of pain, not to you or me or this age or all mankind only, but to the sum-total of sentient existence. In short, if I am not mistaken, Mr. Mill's writings prove that if he thinks of any one particular mode of thought among his contemporaries as being more than any other chargeable with the total mass of obstruction, fallacy, and misery that yet rolls in the heart of society, as being more than any other the False God or Baal or Moloch of the human mind—it is the theory of necessary beliefs."

In all this Mill was thoroughly consistent. Having failed to discover any inherent necessity in the Cosmos, he was unable to find any such necessity in the mind of man. Effective enough in its polemic against the reigning Intuitionism as represented by Hamilton, Empiricism, even in the hands of an acute thinker like Mill, was incapable of returning satisfactory answers to the fundamental problems of Psychology. In regard to the root-question, that relating to the constitution and function of the mind, Mill remained virtually at the position of Locke. With Mill, as with Locke, the mind was a blank sheet of paper, upon which, by means of the law of association, experience was duly registered and transformed into coherent knowledge. In such a system there was no room for *a priori* ideas; all was traceable to experience. So far good, but experience showed that in the mind certain beliefs

impressed themselves with an intuitive force and an absoluteness which found no explanation in the experience of the individual. The axioms of geometry and of causality were not reached by the individual through a purely inductive process. How were these to be explained? Before Empiricism could give a rational answer to this question it had to come under the transforming influence of the evolutionary idea. In Psychology as in Cosmology Spencer's contribution was so original as to transform the old Experiential system of Mill, and bring to an end the long-standing feud between the Intuitionists and the Experientialists. That will be explained in all detail later. Meanwhile, it was necessary, in order to understand the revolution worked by Spencer in philosophy, to have a clear conception of the problems which came before him for solution.

CHAPTER III

EVOLUTION OF THE EVOLUTION THEORY

It is a mistake to suppose that when he began his studies Spencer set himself consciously and deliberately to discover the unifying root of Nature's multiform manifestations. At first his mind was mainly directed to questions of a politico-social nature. In the early years of the century, political thinkers were greatly exercised about Government, its nature and limits. Brought up in a democratic circle, inheriting the traditions of Liberalism on the side of religious dissent and political Radicalism, it was natural that Spencer's early thoughts should run in a sociological direction. Ever in search of first principles, it was also natural that he should endeavor to seek the scientific basis of Government. As the earliest products of his thinking, his letters on *The Proper Sphere of Government*, published in the *Nonconformist* newspaper in 1842, and republished in pamphlet form in 1843, demand attention. In these letters we find emphatic insistence on the view that social phenomena con-

form to invariable laws: the ethical progress of man as due to social discipline, the spontaneous nature of society, with a consequent discouragement of State interference and control. Not satisfied with his treatment of the subject, Mr. Spencer resolved to deal with it on a more comprehensive scale. In 1850 appeared *Social Statics*, the object of which was to base his practical views of the nature and scope of Government on a coherent set of first principles. At a later stage of the present work, when dealing with Sociology, an attempt will be made to show the nature of Spencer's contributions to political science as compared with the speculations of previous thinkers from Locke to Mill. Meanwhile, in tracing the evolution of Mr. Spencer's mind, it is necessary to point out that in *Social Statics* are to be found the germs of those pregnant speculations which were to lead to the far-reaching cosmical generalization which, like a magnet, gathers to itself the scattered detached fragments of scientific thought.

In *Social Statics* we find Mr. Spencer giving expression to his dissatisfaction with the prevailing school of political thought, with which he was, on the practical side, in close sympathy—namely, the Utilitarian school. He felt that on the philosophic side Utilitarianism, as defined by Bentham and his followers, lacked theoretic stability. Spencer set

himself to ask and answer the questions — What is society? and What are the relations between man the unit and society the mass? In harmony with their fundamental principle, the Utilitarians founded their conception of society on Induction. Men, they recognized, all made happiness the goal of their endeavor. Society is composed of numbers of men in search of happiness; consequently the highest type of society would be one in which the greatest number of its members enjoyed the greatest amount of happiness.

Here, as in science and philosophy, the school of Bentham and Mill displayed the arbitrary nature of their fundamental principle. No attempt was made to demonstrate the necessary connection between individual and social happiness and the general laws of life. Man was viewed from the statical standpoint. Human nature was treated after the style of the eighteenth century philosophers as a stable product. Human nature is everywhere the same, summed up the eighteenth century point of view. The evils of society were held to be due to bad governments. Let legislation aim at the greatest happiness of the greatest number, and all will go well. Now such a mode of reasoning did not commend itself to Spencer. He argued that before an all-embracing social law can be legislatively formulated, we must first dis-

cover what society is, and how man the unit stands related to society. We must not rest content with induction : we must discover the necessary bond between the unit and the mass. And when that is accomplished, we may be in a position to deduce the necessary laws of that relationship. Manifestly at the outset an answer had to be given to this question — Is society a natural or an artificial product? The rationalist thinkers of the eighteenth century favored the view that society was an artificial product.

Rousseau, with his famous theory of a state of nature, simply gave expression in exaggerated form to the idea generally entertained that society was largely the result of manufacture, of deliberate design, too often the outcome of base motives. Governments held an exaggerated importance in the minds, not only of the eighteenth century thinkers, but also of the school of Philosophic Radicals — the Mills and the Benthames. Even John Stuart Mill, in his book on *Representative Government*, shows traces of this view by his constant anxiety lest, in the absence of political checks and counterchecks, society should proceed along wrong lines. Society, up till Spencer wrote his *Social Statics*, was viewed almost exclusively from the political side. Spencer changed the point of view from the political to the biological. It is a common

objection to the Spencerian system of thought that it is simply a revival in modern times of the *a priori* methods of the Schoolmen — a kind of materialistic Hegelism in which facts are made to fit a pre-conceived theoretic framework. Nothing could be further from the truth. I confess myself to have held some such view. With many others I supposed that Spencer had started consciously with a vast cosmical theory, and had then explored the realm of science for illustrations and verifications. In conversation Mr. Spencer assured me that such was not the case. He began with fact; he stuck by the inductive process; and it was only at a certain stage of his scientific exploration that the thought flashed across his mind that the law of biological and social evolution is a universal process, traceable in the cosmical changes and in the latest results of civilization. But we do not need to rely upon conversation on this point. In one of his essays, *Reasons for Dissenting from M. Comte*, there is an interesting autobiographic statement. In reply to those who classed him erroneously as a follower of Comte, Spencer says: "And now let me point out that which really has exercised a profound influence over my course of thought. The truth which Harvey's embryological inquiries first dimly indicated, which was afterwards more clearly perceived by Wolff, and which was put into a definite shape

by Von Baer — the truth that all organic development is a change from a state of homogeneity to a state of heterogeneity — this it is from which very many of the conclusions which I now hold have indirectly resulted. In *Social Statics* there is everywhere manifested a dominant belief in the evolution of man and of society. There is also manifested the belief that this evolution is in both cases determined by the incidents of conditions — the actions of circumstances. And there is further, in the sections already referred to, a recognition of the fact that organic and social evolution conform to the same law. Falling amid beliefs in evolutions of various orders, everywhere determined by natural causes (beliefs again displayed in the *Theory of Population* and in the *Principles of Psychology*); the formula of Von Baer set up a process of organization. The extension of it to other kinds of phenomena than those of individual and social bodies is traceable through successive stages. It may be seen in the last paragraph of an essay on *The Philosophy of Style*, published in October, 1852; again in an essay on *Manners and Fashion*, published in April, 1854; and then in a comparatively advanced form in an essay on *Progress: Its Law and Cause*, published in April, 1857. Afterwards there came the recognition of the need for modifying Von Baer's formula by including the trait of in-

creasing definiteness ; next the inquiry into those general laws of force from which this universal transformation necessarily results ; next the deduction of these from the ultimate law of the persistence of force ; next the perception that there is everywhere a process of Dissolution complementary to that of Evolution ; and finally the determination of the conditions under which Evolution and Dissolution occur. The filiation of these results is, I think, tolerably manifest. The process has been one of continuous development set up by the addition of Von Baer's law to a number of others that were in harmony with it."

In *Appleton's Popular Science Monthly* for February, 1897, there appeared an article on Mr. Spencer, by Professor Hudson of California, in which the evolution of Mr. Spencer's mind is minutely traced, by the aid of an important letter on the subject from Mr. Spencer himself. Professor Hudson says : "I am fortunate in having before me as I write a letter in which he was kind enough to outline for me the important stages in his progress toward the great doctrines of the synthetic philosophy. If, in following his account and in occasionally reproducing, as I shall venture to do, his own words, I am forced to touch again upon points already brought out, this will scarcely be deemed ground for regret, since the slight repetition involved will serve per-

haps to throw the whole subject into clearer relief. The simple nucleus of his philosophic system first made its appearance in *Social Statics*, where, in the chapter entitled 'General Considerations,' mention is made of the biological truth that low types of animals are composed of many like parts not mutually dependent, while higher animals are composed of parts that are unlike and are mutually dependent. This, he writes, 'was an induction which I had reached in the course of biological studies — mainly, I fancy, while attending Professor Owen's lectures on the Vertebrate Skeleton.' With this was joined the statement that the same is true of societies, 'which begin with many like parts not mutually dependent, and end with many like parts that are mutually dependent.' This also was an induction. 'And then in the joining of these came the induction that the individual organism and the social organism followed this law.' Thus the radical conception of the entire system took shape before Mr. Spencer had become acquainted with Von Baer's law, which, as we have seen, did not occur till two years later. This law, though applying to the unfolding of the individual only, had none the less its use. In furnishing the expression 'from homogeneity to heterogeneity,' it presented a more convenient intellectual implement. 'By its brevity and its applicability to all orders of phenomena, it served for thinking much

better than the preceding generalization, which contained the same essential thought.' The essays which followed *Social Statics* were marked by the establishment of various separate inductions in which other groups of phenomena were brought under this large principle, while in the first edition of the *Psychology*, not only was the same principle shown to comprehend mental phenomena, but there was also recognized the primary law of evolution — integration and increase of definiteness. What followed may best be given in Mr. Spencer's own words: 'Then it was that there suddenly arose in me the conception that the law which I had separately recognized in various groups of phenomena was a universal law applying to the whole Cosmos: the many small inductions were merged in the large inductions. And only after this largest induction had been formed did there arise the question — Why? Only then did I see that the universal cause for the universal transformations was the multiplication of effects, and that they might be deduced from the law of the multiplication of effects. The same thing happened at later stages. The generalization which immediately preceded the publication of the essay on *Progress: Its Law and Cause* — the instability of the homogeneous — was also an induction. So was the direction of motion and the rhythm of motion. Then, having arrived at these

derivative causes of the universal transformation, it presently dawned upon me (in consequence of the recent promulgation of the doctrine of the conservation of force) that all these derivative causes were sequences from that universal cause. The question had, I believe, arisen, Why these several derivative laws? and that came as the answer. Only then did there arise the idea of developing the whole of the universal transformation from the persistence of force. So you see the process began by being inductive and ended by being deductive; and this is the peculiarity of the method followed. On the one hand, I was never content with any truth remaining in the inductive form. On the other hand, I was never content with allowing a deductive interpretation to go unverified by reference to the facts.'” The cautious method of induction employed is evident from this extract, and is a sufficient answer to those who twit Mr. Spencer with dealing purely in hypothesis. Mr. Spencer’s great originality will be found to consist in the unique manner in which he has combined the two processes, inductive and deductive. He has taken away the reproach of empiricism from scientific thought, and the reproach of vague theorizing from philosophic thought. Thus slowly and unconsciously was Mr. Spencer drawn on to the path of his great discovery. His studies in biological and social science, as has been

shown, led him to formulate a law of change and progress, which he suddenly discovered to be the law of all change and progress.

Notwithstanding Mr. Spencer's protests against being classed as a Comtist, the impression still largely prevails that in aim and method Spencerism and Positivism are fundamentally alike. That they are fundamentally different will be evident from comparison of the two systems. With Spencer the task of philosophy was to search for the unifying root of the Cosmos. The task of the scientist is to discover the widest generalizations in particular divisions of the Cosmos. He formulates the laws of mechanics, of chemistry, of biology, psychology, and sociology. Is it possible to go beyond these generalizations? Is it possible still further to combine the generalizations of science under one supreme generalization, without abandoning the methods of induction and deduction? Are the great divisions of phenomena arbitrary divisions, the result of the principle of the division of labor? Or is it possible to proceed still further, and show that the various sciences represent separate yet closely related stages in the development of the Cosmos—stages which are not arbitrary departments devised by man for intellectual convenience, but parts of one all-embracing process? In other words, is the Cosmos from star to soul pervaded by one law,

or must we be content with the view that a rigorous analysis brings us down to a number of Permanent Causes or Laws which cannot be reduced to an ultimate unity? Comte held distinctly by the view that all attempts to reduce phenomena to a single law were chimerical. Such attempts he declared to be as futile as the old theological theorizings about a First Cause. Man's business, according to Comte, "is to analyze accurately the circumstances of phenomena and to connect them by the natural relations of succession and resemblance." Failing to distinguish between final and efficient Causes, Comte unwittingly put an arbitrary limit to human inquiry. Content with noting the order of phenomena, he denied with scorn the right of the intellect to seek for the cosmical causes of phenomena. In harmony with his view Comte treated with contempt the cell doctrine, which, even while he was writing, was revolutionizing physiological science; he tabooed all inquiries into the origin of the human race, he was hostile to all hypothesis about the nature of heat, light, electricity. Because Theology in its search for origins had taken the wrong road, he would prohibit the search altogether, forgetful of the fact that knowledge which limits itself to the mere noting of co-existences and resemblances among phenomena remains at the empirical stage. On the other hand, the Spencerian philoso-

phy rests upon the possibility of framing, in relation to the Cosmos as a whole, a generalization which shall be verifiable in detail. According to Spencer, the duty of Philosophy is, taking its stand upon the widest truths formulated by Science, to form a generalization which shall link all phenomena into one organic whole. Comte denied the possibility of any such universal Synthesis. He included in one sweeping condemnation philosophies of the Cosmos as well as theologies of the Cosmos. Manifestly Spencerism and Comtism cannot be in fundamental agreement when Comte passionately denounces precisely the speculative methods and results which have constituted the life-work of Mr. Spencer. Mr. Spencer was not indebted for his fundamental ideas to Comte, for the simple reason that not only had Comte no fundamental ideas about the Cosmos, but he denounced as metaphysicians or theologians in disguise all who ventured to formulate such ideas. In short, Spencer could not be indebted to Comte for his philosophy of the Cosmos, because Comte had no philosophy of the Cosmos: he put it forward as his chief title to fame that he had none.

But, it will be said, Comte claimed to be the author of the Positivist Philosophy. It will not do, in order to establish the originality of Mr. Spencer, to assert that Comte was no philosopher, in face of the fact that it is as a philosopher that he is known

to history. Within certain definitely prescribed limits Comte was a philosopher, and deserves credit for producing new and fruitful conceptions of great value; but their value is historical and sociological, not cosmical. Banishing the idea of efficient cause, Comte quite logically was brought to a full stop at his six sciences. Beyond these he could not go. Here induction had completed its work, and all that an empirical philosophy could do was to show the historic relation between the sciences, and organize them in a social direction. This constituted Comte's originality. Having dismissed as futile all inquiries into causes which lay beyond the methods of the museum and the laboratory, having relegated ultimate laws to the region of the Unknown, Comte was compelled to organize his philosophy round Humanity instead of the Cosmos. All speculations which had no direct relation to human well-being were placed by him in the same category as theology. Such a contracted view of man's intellectual capabilities gradually transformed his philosophy into a religion in which intelligence was discouraged and authority elevated to the front rank as a factor in human progress. Conclusive evidence has been adduced to show that Mr. Spencer's conception of philosophy is fundamentally different from that of Comte. Spencer's view of causation, with his insistence upon the necessary co-relations of phenomena

as distinguished from customary association, marks off his system completely from the Empiricism of Hume, Mill, and Comte, while his sociological like his cosmical conceptions have nothing in common with the Positivist system ; in fact, the two systems agree only in their acceptance of those ideas which are held by all scientific thinkers, as opposed to theological conceptions of Man and the Universe. Meanwhile, before proceeding to study Mr. Spencer the philosopher, a few pages may fitly be devoted to Mr. Spencer the man.

CHAPTER IV

PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS

THE ten years from 1850, when he published his first book, *Social Statics*, till 1860, when he issued the prospectus of his *Synthetic Philosophy*, were fruitful to Mr. Spencer both socially and intellectually. Although his writings were not popular, they brought him into notice in circles where high thinking was sure to be appreciated. The intervals of leisure enjoyed while on the staff of the *Economist* Mr. Spencer utilized in contributing to the leading reviews, notably the *Westminster*, which at that time had as sub-editor Mary Ann Evans, destined later to take the world by storm as George Eliot. In the *Life of George Eliot* are to be found a number of interesting references to the rising philosopher. In a letter to Mr. Bray about the end of September 1851, George Eliot writes: "On Friday we had Foxton, Wilson, and some other nice people, among others a Mr. Herbert Spencer, who has just brought out a large work on *Social Statics*, which Lewes pronounces the best book he has seen on the sub-

ject." In another letter to the Brays a year after she says: "I went to the opera on Saturday, at Covent Garden, with my 'excellent friend Herbert Spencer,' as Lewes calls him. We have agreed that there is no reason why we should not have as much of each other's society as we like. He is a good, delightful creature, and I always feel better for being with him." Writing to Miss Sara Hennell she expresses herself thus: "My brightest spot, next to my love of old friends, is the deliciously calm *new* friendship that Herbert Spencer gives me. We see each other every day, and have a delightful *camaraderie* in everything. But for him my life would be desolate enough." Again: "Herbert Spencer dined with us to-day—looks well, and is brimful of clever talk as usual. His volume of *Essays* is to come out soon. He is just now on a crusade against the notion of Species." But perhaps the most interesting reference is to be found in the extract from the diary of George Henry Lewes, under date January 28, 1859: "Walked along the Thames towards Kew to meet Herbert Spencer, who was to spend the day with us, and we chatted with him on matters personal and philosophical. I owe him a debt of gratitude. My acquaintance with him was the brightest ray in a very dreary, *wasted* period of my life. I had given up all ambition whatever, lived from hand to mouth, and thought the evil of each

day sufficient. The stimulus of his intellect, especially during our long walks, roused my energy once more, and revived my dormant love of science. His intense theorizing tendency was contagious, and it was only the stimulus of a theory which could then have induced me to work. I owe Spencer another and deeper debt. It was through him that I learned to know Marian—to know her was to love her—and since then my life has been a new birth. To her I owe all my prosperity and all my happiness. God bless her.” In regard to the concluding remarks, rumor has it that Lewes supplanted Spencer in the affections of George Eliot. This is not the case. Mr. Spencer’s relations with George Eliot from first to last rested on the basis of friendship pure and simple.

The reference by Lewes to Mr. Spencer’s theorizing tendency needs to be supplemented by reference to his passion for facts. He is equally removed from the hodmen of science who are content to throw down before their readers a confused mass of facts, and the fantastic theorists who weave cosmic speculations out of their inner consciousness. It is said of Cuvier that from the examination of a bone he could in his mind construct the entire animal. To Spencer a fact is valuable in so far as it enables him to place it in organic relation with other facts in an interpretative scheme of thought. He possesses

an instinctive insight into the value of facts. The combination in his mind of philosophic and scientific qualities, strange as it may seem, has somewhat retarded his fame. The philosopher who soars into cloudland blames Mr. Spencer for his utilitarian habits of thought, his constant reference to reality, and his resolute refusal to take imaginative flights. The men of science, on the other hand, are quite willing to admit his philosophic powers, but they are jealous of a thinker who has assimilated the results of science without having gone through the usual apprenticeship in the museum and the laboratory. Rather than frankly admit that in Mr. Spencer's mind the philosophical and scientific tendencies are uniquely blended, his opponents pursue a policy of detraction, with the hope of discrediting his influence as a speculative thinker and as a master of scientific method.

Reference has already been made to Mr. Spencer's great expository power. In regard to this Dr. Hooker once remarked, "He talks like a book." It is not to be supposed, however, that there is anything like pedantry in his conversation. He is as far as possible removed from the conventional conception of a philosopher, who is supposed to be so wedded to abstract meditation as to be in social life the embodiment of dreary dullness. There is nothing of the dry-as-dust about Mr. Spencer. I remember how

agreeably surprised I was with my first meeting with the great man. I had expected to meet a grave and somewhat awe-inspiring philosopher, whose mind was so absorbed in study of the Cosmos as to make him impatient of the trivialities of ordinary mortals. Instead, I found myself in presence of a bright, vivacious personality, a man of generous impulses, very much at home among the actualities of life, and withal brimful of humor. There is no assumption of superiority in Mr. Spencer's conversation. It is racy, pointed, vigorous. His criticisms of contemporary writers are calm, suggestive, and penetrative; and, great as is his fame, he never poses as an oracle, or, in Carlylean style, assumes pontifical airs. How far he is removed from everything like this is well illustrated by an incident which occurred at a London dinner-party. The hostess had invited a friend specially to meet Mr. Spencer. The guest found himself seated beside an elderly gentleman, to whom he addressed the usual commonplaces. During the evening he was astonished to hear the elderly gentleman addressed across the table as Mr. Spencer. In surprise he turned to him and exclaimed, "Are you really Mr. Herbert Spencer?" Mr. Spencer, smiling blandly, and no doubt with a merry twinkle in his eye, quietly replied that he was. Until considerations of health forbade him, Mr. Spencer delighted in the social side

of life. Daily he used to visit the Athenæum Club, not to study, but to enjoy a game of billiards, of which he was passionately fond. There he would be found with his coat off, as intent upon scoring a victory against his opponent as he is in wrestling with a controversialist in the philosophic arena.

But after all, the interest in Mr. Spencer's life is of an intellectual kind. As Emerson says: "Great geniuses have the shortest biographies. They live in their writings." Specially does this hold of Mr. Spencer, whose seclusion, apart from indifferent health, was necessitated by the formidable philosophic scheme which he had mapped out for himself. In 1860, when forty years of age, he published the prospectus of a colossal scheme, namely, a new theory of the Cosmos, from its earliest nebular manifestations to its highest development in man and civilization—a scheme bold in theoretic conception, and, considering Mr. Spencer's state of health, seemingly Quixotic in practical design. From this time onward the history of his life is mainly the history of a series of heroic endeavors, culminating in heroic achievement. How heroic were these endeavors will be made clear when the whole circumstances are fully considered. In addition to indifferent health—the result of a nervous breakdown consequent on over-work—Mr. Spencer had to face the fact that he had dedicated his life to an ideal in the realization

of which both adequate remuneration and fame must at best have been remote results. In an age when the main springs of human activity are largely conventional, when great deeds are done from desire of immediate tangible reward, Mr. Spencer set the bright example of a career wholly devoted to universal ends, unblemished by that infirmity of noble minds — thirst for popular applause. With a determination positively heroic, an energy positively superhuman, the quiet, self-centred thinker set himself to wrestle with the great mysteries of Existence, undeterred by the chilly dreariness of the study, and untempted by the glittering allurements of the market-place. In his evidence given before the Copyright Commission, Mr. Spencer affords the reader a glimpse of the hard, stiff, lonely battle that had to be fought, uncheered by sympathy, and unrelieved by public approval. The autobiographic portion of his evidence runs as follows: "I published my first work, *Social Statics*, at the end of 1850. Being a philosophical work, it was not possible to obtain a publisher who would undertake any responsibility, and I published it at my own cost. The edition consisted of 750 copies, and took fourteen years to sell. In 1855 I published the *Principles of Psychology*. There were 750 copies. I gave away a considerable number of copies, and the remainder — I suppose about 650 — sold in twelve and a half years. I afterwards, in 1857, pub-

lished a series of Essays, and, warned by previous results, I printed only 500 copies. That took ten and a half years to sell. Towards 1860 I began to publish a *System of Philosophy*. I decided upon the plan of issuing to subscribers in quarterly parts, and to the public in volumes when completed. Before the initial volume, *First Principles*, was published, I found myself still losing. During the issue of the second volume, *Principles of Biology*, I was still losing. In the middle of the third volume I was still losing so much that I found I was frittering away all that I possessed. I found that in the course of fifteen years I had lost nearly £1200, adding interest, more than £1200, and as I was evidently going on ruining myself, I issued to the subscribers a notice of cessation. . . . After the issue of the notice, property came to me in time to prevent the cessation. My losses did not continue very long after that. The tide turned, and my books began to pay. They were repaid in 1874—that is to say, in twenty-four years after I began I retrieved my position.” In addition he spent nearly £3000 in Sociological Tables.

That is to say, in the cause of truth Mr. Spencer for twenty-four years worked without fee or reward. His solitary intellectual labors were utterly ignored by the public, and in spite of that he laboriously and heroically toiled up the steep ascent of philosophy.

In all this there is a grandeur quite Miltonic. In the midst of the general neglect Mr. Spencer had the sympathy of a number of philosophic thinkers, who knew his real worth. A number of American admirers, hearing of his determination to stop the series, forwarded to Mr. Spencer through Mr. Youmans, his devoted adherent and friend, a purse of money and a gold watch. The money, with characteristic high-mindedness, he accepted as a public trust for public ends. John Stuart Mill, I am informed, also stepped into the breach. He recognized in Mr. Spencer a new thinker of unique caliber, and with magnanimity far removed from personal rivalry, he offered Mr. Spencer a large sum to enable him to carry out his great undertaking. Mr. Spencer declined the offer, while fully appreciating the spirit in which it was made.

The financial difficulty solved, Mr. Spencer had another difficulty to face, which proved to be a life-long one—namely, chronic ill-health. In spite of all obstacles, he has the satisfaction of knowing that the work mapped out forty years ago has been accomplished. In dignified strain he thus records his impressions in the concluding volume of his great undertaking: “On looking back on the six-and-thirty years which have passed since the *Synthetic Philosophy* was commenced, I am surprised at my audacity in undertaking it, and still more surprised

at its completion. In 1860 my small resources had been nearly all frittered away in writing and publishing books which did not repay their expenses ; and I was suffering under a chronic disorder, caused by over-tax of the brain, which, wholly disabling me for eighteen months, thereafter limited my work to three hours a day, and usually to less. How insane my project must have seemed to onlookers may be judged from the fact that before the first chapter of the first volume was finished, one of my nervous breakdowns obliged me to desist. But imprudent courses do not always fail. Sometimes a forlorn hope is justified by the event. Though, along with other deterrents, many relapses, now lasting for weeks, now for months, and once for years, often made me despair of reaching the end, yet at length the end is reached. Doubtless in earlier days some exultation would have resulted, but as age creeps on feelings weaken, and now my chief pleasure is my emancipation. Still there is satisfaction in the consciousness that losses, discouragements, and shattered health have not prevented me from fulfilling the purpose of my life."

Though Mr. Spencer had finished his life-task, though in the process age had crept upon him and his physical energies had become weaker, yet were his philosophic powers unimpaired, his mental vision undimmed, and his intellectual strength unabated. Finding London life distracting, he retired to

Brighton, where, in comparative solitude, he was enabled, as far as considerations of health would admit, to round off his great work by bringing it abreast of modern thought. His *First Principles*, containing the groundwork of the system, needed little or no attention; but in Biology great strides had been made since his *Principles* were published, and Mr. Spencer set himself to publish a new and revised edition. The *Principles of Psychology*, too, stood in need of revision. The book had borne the brunt of recent attacks from the new Hegelian school which had sprung up in Oxford and Glasgow. These attacks had to be met, and in this and kindred tasks Mr. Spencer found his leisure at Brighton amply occupied. Along with the feeling of satisfaction at the completion of his task was the feeling of gratification at the steady advance of his fame and influence. In America, where Mr. Spencer first received recognition, his influence has been deep and far-reaching. Even to a greater extent than in England his works have moulded the religious and philosophic thought of the New World. On the Continent his books have been translated by enthusiastic disciples, and among Oriental thinkers, in India and Japan, the bold and massive generalizations of the Spencerian philosophy have found a congenial home. Following in the footsteps of philosophic fame have come offers of

worldly honor, which Mr. Spencer has steadily refused. To a thinker whose triumphs have been won, not in the stifling atmosphere of personal ambitions, but in the ample region of pure intellectual discovery, the conventional honors of the world seem pale and shadowy. So far as conventional distinctions are concerned, Mr. Spencer prefers to end life as he began—a devoted, austere worshipper of truth, removed alike from the distractions of the market-place and the allurements of social distinction.

CHAPTER V

THE COSMOS UNVEILED

A COMMON charge against Mr. Spencer is that he is a Materialist. Again and again he has repudiated the term, but explanation and denial do little to stem the current of misrepresentation. The root error made by those who accuse the Spencerian philosophy of being materialistic is due to failure to distinguish between a comprehensive generalization of the Universe resting upon the data of science, and a philosophic interpretation of that generalization. Now, there are two ways in which the Universe may be viewed, as natural and supernatural, mechanical, or rather dynamical, and spiritual. The supernatural or spiritual view has been condemned by history as sterile in the region of fact, and fantastic, not to say superstitious, in the region of interpretation. Progress in the acquiring of exact knowledge dates from the time when the mechanical view of the world was substituted for the spiritual. When Newton substituted his conception of gravitation for the angelic theory of planetary movements, he introduced into the study of the world a mechan-

ical element verifiable in terms of force. Did this constitute Newton a Materialist? When Darwin substituted for the spiritual theory of special creations the dynamical conception of a struggle between organisms for a definite amount of life-sustaining forces, was he necessarily a Materialist? Now, what Spencer has done is simply to fuse the separate generalizations of science into one all-embracing generalization. His life-work has been to trace the evolutionary process from star to soul, always, observe, scientifically interpretable in terms of force. Every man of science must be a Materialist when dealing with tangible modes of existence and their verifiable laws. The charge of Materialism would be valid if Mr. Spencer contended that for the ultimate explanation of the Universe all that was needed was the mechanical forces with which men of science deal. Now, Mr. Spencer repudiates as earnestly as his detractors the view that force,—which on the mechanical side is the final word of the scientific conception of the world,—is the final word of the philosophic conception. To the philosophical scientist force is but a symbol: in his view atoms and energies have only a relative value. Indeed, so impressed is Mr. Spencer with the inadequacy of the Materialist theory that in his *First Principles* and his *Psychology*, he says that it is more rational to conceive the ultimate principle of Existence in

terms of Mind than Matter. But what the actual nature of the one reality is Mr. Spencer does not undertake to say. Once for all let it be understood that Spencerism stands on its own merits as the philosophy of the Knowable, and as the only organized body of thought which has its roots in experience and is a guide to the understanding of life, both theoretically and practically. Those who choose to identify Spencerism with Materialism are simply blinding themselves with a dust-cloud of their own raising.

It tends greatly to clear the ground for the comprehension of the Spencerian philosophy if we remember that it cuts itself off entirely from the old metaphysical attempts to solve the absolute mystery of existence. In his *First Principles* Spencer adopts and improves the Hamiltonian demonstration of the relativity of knowledge, holding that, from the constitution of the human mind, knowledge of noumena is impossible. From this it follows that Spencer restricts philosophy to the unification of Knowledge, the reduction of phenomena to one ultimate law. If the Universe is not a chaos the laws which underlie phenomena must be related, and when traced back must merge into one another as the branches of a tree merge in the trunk and the trunk in the root. Mr. Spencer's task was to find the root-principle of phenomenal

existence. Some one has said that to “a thinker capable of comprehending it from a single point of view, the Universe would present but a single fact, but one all-comprehensive truth.” Everything depends upon the point of view. From the point of view of the supernaturalist the Universe need not necessarily seem a single fact, one all-comprehensive truth. The unifying principle may well be not in the Universe, but in the mind of the Creator. So far indeed from the Universe testifying to its own unity, or being the manifestation of one all-comprehensive truth, supernaturalists have always postulated the necessity of a revelation as interpreter of the Universe. Then again, if we take a mechanical view of the Universe, we do not readily arrive at the idea of unity. Between the various parts of a machine there may be no necessary, inevitable connection. For unity we must go to the mind of the constructor of the machine. So long as the purely mechanical conception of the Universe obtained sway over the minds of philosophers there was no getting beyond Positivism, with its theory that nothing can be known beyond co-existences and sequences. Mill’s intellectual helplessness before the problem, his belief that there was no inherent necessity at the heart of things—instance his declaration that in other worlds two and two might make five—had

their origin in the unconscious hold which the old mechanical conception of the Universe had upon his mind.

The demonstration of the essential and necessary unity of the Cosmos was only made possible when the dynamical was substituted for the mechanical point of view. The dynamical point of view involved the idea of growth, as against manufacture. When the Universe began to be viewed as a dynamic process rather than as a manufactured product, the way was opened for treating phenomena as something more than co-existences and sequences—as necessary links in a great cosmical chain. Manifestly we must get a clear grasp of the dynamic conception of the Universe before we can understand the law of its evolution. Meanwhile from a purely scientific standpoint all that is necessary is recognition of the fact that the two great generalizations known as the Nebular Theory and the Conservation of Force have made the dynamic theory of Matter the necessary basis of a study of the Cosmos. The scientific philosopher who deals with phenomena with a view to their unification must necessarily start with Existence when it comes before him in concrete, material fashion. Now, in tracing the Universe, science can get no further back than the nebula, or world-stuff. According to the nebular theory the matter which

composes the solar system once existed in a diffused state. The problem is to discover the laws by which, from a diffused nebulous state, Matter has increased in concentration and complexity so as to result in the world we now see. Along with the Nebular theory goes the doctrine of the Conservation of Force, which, interpreted, means that the Matter of the Universe is a fixed quantity, and is capable of endless transformations. Viewed thus, the Universe is one fact, the result of one great cosmic process—namely, the Redistribution of Matter and Motion. When Spencer came upon the scene, he found the path of discovery cleared by the three great generalizations—the universal law of Gravitation, the Nebular Theory, and the doctrine of the Conservation or Persistence of Force. These three isolated generalizations Spencer fused into one by his theory of Evolution. Newton formulated the law of Gravitation, Kant and Laplace used it to explain the origin of stellar and planetary systems, and Spencer, combining this with the doctrine of the Persistence of Force, was led to discover the law of the entire cosmical process from star to soul. As has been well said, “the idea embraced in the word Evolution as employed by Spencer is by far the nearest approach ever yet made to the conception of an absolutely universal and cosmical law.”

The problem before Mr. Spencer was this : Given a Universe composed of a fixed quantity of Matter and Motion, conceived in harmony with the Newtonian law of Gravitation as manifesting co-existent forces of attraction and repulsion, to trace the process by which the Cosmos evolved from its nebulous to its present state. Spencer's starting-point is the Persistence of Force, on the ground that, reduced to its ultimate analysis, our conception of Matter rests upon "forces standing in certain correlations." When we say that Force is persistent, we are simply declaring that the Force in the Universe is constant — is never increased or diminished. This belief rests upon something deeper than a scientific induction : it is a psychological necessity. If Force came into existence and went out of existence, the Universe would be, not a Cosmos, but a Chaos. If Force was liable to sudden creation and annihilation, reasoning would be impossible, because reasoning is simply the classification of the relations among Forces. Scientific induction as well as abstract reasoning could not exist unless the forces of Nature persisted — that is, continued to exist. The great universal fact of the Redistribution of Matter and Motion is no arbitrary fact, but follows naturally from the Persistence of Force. It needs little reflection to see that, if Force is persistent, the relations among forces must also persist : the one is a corol-

lary of the other. In the one as in the other, scientific induction and psychological necessity are in entire harmony. When we say that the relations among forces persist, we are simply postulating the law of Nature's uniformity, which is the essential basis of all scientific procedure. As Mill puts it, the uniformity of the laws of Nature is the major premise of all inductions. This belief has a deeper root than is indicated in the old Experiential and Positive philosophies. Hume, Mill, and Comte traced our conception of Nature's uniformity to Experience. Hume got no further than custom, and Mill never could reach anything better in the way of certainty. Comte's whole philosophy, resting as it does on the idea of recording co-existences and sequences, entirely ignored the element of necessity in our conception of Nature's uniformity. According to Spencer, the belief in the uniformity of Nature is something more than the outcome of experience : it is a necessity of thought, which unconsciously we bring with us to the interpreting of experience, and without which experience itself could not be understood so as to be made the foundation of scientific certainty. Moreover, the Spencerian conception of Force and its relations throws a flood of light upon the idea of Cause and its teleological implication. Reduced to its ultimate analysis, "our belief in the necessity and uni-

versality of causation is the belief that every manifestation of force must be preceded and succeeded by some equivalent manifestation." That is to say, between cause and effect a natural and necessary relation exists. How far-reaching is the law of the persistence of relations among forces may be gathered from a remark made by Stallo in his suggestive book, *Concepts of Modern Physics*, where, without reference to Mr. Spencer at all, he says: "The real existence of things is co-extensive with their qualitative and quantitative determinations. And both are in their nature relations, quality resulting from mutual action, and quantity being simply a ratio between terms neither of which is absolute. . . . It may be observed in this connection that not only the law of causality, the conservation of energy, and the indestructibility of matter so called, have their root in the relativity of all objective reality—being indeed simply different aspects of this relativity—but that Newton's first and third laws of motion, as well as all laws of least action in mechanics (including Gauss's laws of movement under least constraint), are but corollaries from the same principle. And the fact that everything is, in its manifest existence, but a group of relations and reactions, at once accounts for Nature's inherent teleology." From this point of view, the laws of Nature are not externally imposed

upon Matter, but are necessarily evolved along with the evolution of phenomena—are, in fact, from the scientific standpoint, generalized descriptions of Nature's actions and reactions.

Another corollary that flows from the Persistence of Force is the transformation and equivalence of forces. If the force in the Universe is a definite fixed quantity, it is evident that forces do not cease to exist when they elude the senses. Changed in form, force must reappear. This corollary from the Persistence of Force has had abundant illustration by science. Thanks to the labors of Meyer, Joule, Grove, and Helmholtz, science is now able to formulate, as a fundamental law of Nature, the transformation and equivalence of forces. Helmholtz has described the process with such lucidity that his words may fitly be quoted: "If a certain quantity of mechanical work is lost, there is obtained, as experiments made with the object of determining the point show, an equivalent quantity of heat, or instead of this, of chemical force; and, conversely, when heat is lost, we gain an equivalent quantity of chemical or mechanical force; and again, when chemical force disappears, an equivalent of heat or work; so that in all these interchanges between various inorganic natural forces, working force may indeed disappear in one form, but then it reappears in exactly equivalent quantity in some

other form : it is thus neither increased nor diminished, but remains in exactly the same quantity." The attempt to extend the law of the transformation and equivalence of forces to organic processes met with stubborn resistance. It was feared that the reduction of the organic processes, with the mysteries of life and growth, to the play of mechanical forces would lead straight to Materialism ; consequently for a time an entity called vital force was invoked in order to combat the coming danger. In his *First Principles*, Spencer in his usual lucid and convincing manner shows that through all Nature's processes, organic and super-organic as well as inorganic, the law of the transformation and equivalence of forces holds good.

Two other corollaries from the Persistence of Force refer to the direction of Motion and the rhythm of Motion. Motion, as Spencer shows by numerous and striking illustrations drawn from all parts of Nature, always follows the line of least resistance. Whether he is dealing with the movements of the planets, the forces which go to explain the condensation and evaporation of clouds, the nutritive and mechanical processes of organic nature, or the economic forces of society, Spencer is able to verify the great all-comprehensive truth that Motion follows the line of least resistance. It is the same with the truth that Motion is rhyth-

mical. Mr. Spencer's treatment of this section is specially profound. It is difficult to know which to admire most—the clearness of his analysis of the complex phenomena with which he deals, or the brilliancy of his power of generalization. So impressed have some of his contemporaries been with the marvellous power exhibited in this section that one of them, a writer of great repute, has declared that Mr. Spencer's treatment of the rhythm of Motion “offers one of the most brilliant examples of strict philosophic thinking which the world has yet produced.” Like the other corollaries, direction of Motion and the rhythm of Motion are shown to be necessary deductions from the Persistence of Force. In regard to the former Mr. Spencer says: “When we seek a warrant for the assumption that of two conflicting forces that is the greater which produces motion in its own direction, we find no other than the consciousness that such part of the greater force as is unneutralized by the lesser must produce its effect—the consciousness that the residuary force cannot disappear, but must manifest itself in some equivalent change—the consciousness that force is persistent.” In regard to rhythm Mr. Spencer also shows that the inductive truth that all motion *is* rhythmical rests on the deductive fact that all motion *must* necessarily be rhythmical: “The force embodied as a momentum in a given

direction cannot be destroyed; and if it eventually disappears, it reappears in the reaction of the retarding body, which begins afresh to draw the now arrested mass back from its aphelion. . . . Thus, then, rhythm is a necessary characteristic of all motion. Given the co-existence everywhere of antagonistic forces—a postulate which, as we have seen, is necessitated by the form of our experience—and rhythm is an inevitable corollary from the persistence of force.” Obviously, we have only got part of the way to the construction of a philosophy in showing that all phenomena rest upon one law—the Persistence of Force and its corollaries. This is only to show the unity of phenomena, but how are we to explain the difference? It is essential to trace the One in the Many; it is equally essential to trace the rise and progress of the Many. Mr. Spencer had now to show how the Universe as a cosmical product resulted from these laws—in other words he had to formulate the process by which phenomena assume their varied forms in obedience to the law of the Persistence of Force. What was wanted was a formula which would cover the process manifested by phenomena in all their mutual actions and inter-actions, from the earliest nebulous existence to the highest products of civilization. The law of that process discovered by Mr. Spencer he calls the law of Evolution. At the end of a

long inquiry, worked out brilliantly by means of the inductive method, Mr. Spencer reaches the law of the great cosmic process. The redistribution of Matter and Motion which results in the formation of an aggregate, Mr. Spencer calls by the name of Evolution; the redistribution which results in the decay and dissipation of an aggregate he terms Dissolution. Evolution is defined as an integration of Matter and concomitant dissipation of Motion, during which the Matter passes from an indefinite incoherent homogeneity to a definite coherent heterogeneity, and during which the retained Motion goes through a parallel transformation. This law holds true of all existences whatsoever. For convenience we divide phenomena into sections—astronomic, geologic, biologic, psychologic, sociologic; but the process of Evolution is one and its law is one. Evolution of the parts goes on along with evolution of the whole. Not only is Evolution one in principle, but one in fact.

We are still, however, in the region of induction. John Stuart Mill would remind us that no number of inductions can establish a necessary law. For anything induction can tell us, there may not be any necessary connection between facts. They may be found within our experience existing in a regular order, but as to the necessity of that order induction is silent. Unless, therefore, Mr. Spencer's attempt

at a great cosmic philosophy was to prove abortive, it was essential that he should not only show how the cosmic process takes place, but also why it takes place in one form and could not possibly take place in another. In other words, he had to deduce the great world-transformations from the Persistence of Force. Induction and Deduction had, so to speak, to join hands before Knowledge was unified and philosophy had reached its goal. Taking his stand upon the great cosmical fact of which all other facts are merely phases—namely, the redistribution of Matter and Motion, as shown to follow necessarily from the transformation and equivalence of force, along the line of least resistance, and in rhythmical direction—Spencer had to show that the process which results in the formation of aggregates necessarily means a process of evolution from a state of indefinite incoherent homogeneity to a state of definite coherent heterogeneity. It is now a fact generally accepted by men of science that the planetary system at its origin was an immense nebulous mass at the stage of comparative homogeneity—a stage which, however, was necessarily being departed from by the attractive force of matter. Motion towards local centres of gravity would set up heterogeneities in the masses, which, being subject to unlike forces, would be rapidly differentiated. In the course of the redistribution of Matter and Motion the homo-

geneous nebulous fluid, under the operation of strictly mechanical principles, was bound to become heterogeneous. The same process is traceable in the solar system, in the geologic and organic history of the earth, and in civilization. Not only the Universe, but all things in it, have advanced from the homogeneous to the heterogeneous state. The instability of the homogeneous is greatly increased by another principle, which acts with all the force of mechanical necessity — namely, the multiplication of effects: one cause produces many effects. To this is due the diversity which we find in Nature.

So far we have traced the passage of the homogeneous to the heterogeneous, from the simple to the complex, as being the result of sheer mechanical necessity, but no reason has been given why the heterogeneity should proceed in an orderly definite manner. If there were only instability of the homogeneous and multiplicity of effects, the Universe might well be a chaos. To what is the orderliness of Nature due? Still adhering to the principle of mechanical necessity, Mr. Spencer shows that like forces produce like results, unlike forces unlike results, and thus along with the passage of aggregates from the uniform to the multiform there also proceeds a change from indefiniteness to definiteness of parts. As has been well said: "Segregation, or the clustering of the like and separation of the unlike parts under the

action of forces capable of moving them, produces the definiteness and individuality of things." Under the influence of mechanical law the process of the redistribution of Matter and Motion, being the result of antagonistic forces, must reach a point where the forces balance, producing upon us the feeling of harmony or equilibrium in Nature. In its completeness the law of Evolution is presented inductively and verified deductively from the law of the Persistence of Force, which moves along the line of least resistance in a rhythmical direction, producing integration by loss of motion and orderly differentiation, owing to the instability of the homogeneous, the multiplicity of effects, and segregation, resulting in a balance of forces, called equilibration. When the balance is overthrown by an increase of Motion, then disintegration begins, followed by incoherent indefinite heterogeneity, ending in Dissolution.

By tracing Nature's processes to their cosmical root Mr. Spencer has unified phenomena, and in the act has, of course, unified Knowledge. In his view the Universe is a complex unity which, when reduced to its ultimate analysis, is seen to be one fact — the Redistribution of Matter and Motion, all phenomena being complex aspects of that one fact. The object of Mr. Spencer's numerous works is to trace the law of evolution through the various

branches of phenomena, organic, super-organic, psychologic, and sociologic, and by means of it to unify and interpret phenomena. Mr. Spencer makes no attempt to give an absolute explanation of the Universe. His aim has been to show in what manner the earth with all its life has been evolved, to trace the cosmical process, to unify phenomenal knowledge, not to dispel mystery or answer questions of the Absolute and Infinite. In his *First Principles* Mr. Spencer has applied his formula to the evolution of the earth from its nebulous to its present stage ; but to bring his scheme of philosophy within reasonable compass, he has merely outlined the inorganic evolution, reserving his strength for the development of life to which the *Principles of Biology* are devoted.

CHAPTER VI

THE EVOLUTION OF LIFE

WHATEVER be the ultimate philosophic value of Comte's famous law of the three stages, to the student of scientific thought it is of great utility. He learns the close connection that exists between metaphysical conceptions and scientific discoveries. If discovery has been slow, the reason is due perhaps more to a wrong method of metaphysical interpretation than to actual scientific exploration. Facts have lain around the man of science in abundance, but he has remained blind to their significance, simply because his mind was filled with conceptions which belong to the metaphysical stage of thought. At the metaphysical stage, the mind in its search for causes finds a resting-place in entities or abstractions. Instead of being content with a formula which describes all phases of phenomena—a kind of intellectual shorthand—the mind personifies the process, and converts the final result into an initial, dominating, all-controlling agent.

In all regions of phenomena the belief in entities

has retarded the progress of knowledge. Light, heat, electricity, magnetism — each in turn has been conceived not as the result of certain conditions, but as a mysterious principle controlling the conditions. A good example of this is associated with Stahl's doctrine of phlogiston, which he used to explain the theory of combustion. Stahl supposed that all combustible substances contained a common element, which he called the Fire Principle. The discovery of the doctrine of the Conservation and Transformation of Forces brought to an end, in the realm of physics and chemistry, the despotic sway of entities, of personified abstractions. But if they no longer govern, they reign in somewhat languid and ornamental fashion. No man of science takes entities into account when dealing with physical and chemical phenomena, but in common speech their influence may still be traced. In the popular mind Gravitation, for instance, is thought of as the cause of bodies tending to approach one another, instead of being simply the name of an observed fact. Chemical affinity, too, is thought of as the cause of the combination of gases, whereas, like Gravitation, it is the generalized description of a natural process.

In one realm, that of Biology, entities not only reign, but govern. So despotically do metaphysical abstractions rule in Biology that they have been

the most formidable opponent to the application of the Evolution theory to life and its multiform manifestations. Just as formerly men of science spoke of a Heat Principle and a Fire Principle, so now they speak of a Vital Principle. It may be surmised that as metaphysical conceptions have been driven out of the purely mechanical and chemical spheres, they must ultimately be banished from the higher and more complex world of organic life. The surmise is transformed into a confident expectation when it is discovered that the metaphysical view of phenomena is the result of a natural infirmity of thought, which can only be cured by a rigorous application of scientific and philosophic analysis. That infirmity of thought is well expressed by James Hinton when he remarks upon the fact "that the processes of Nature are studied by us in an inverse order: we see effects before we see causes." He illustrates this as follows: "Let us conceive that, instead of having invented steam-engines, men had met with them in nature as objects for their investigation. What would have been the most obvious character of these bodies? Clearly their power of acting—of moving. This would have become familiar as a 'Property' or endowment of steam-engines long before the part played by the steam had been recognized; for that would have required careful investigation and a

knowledge of some recondite laws, mechanical, chemical, pneumatic. Might it not then have happened that motion might have been taken as a peculiar characteristic belonging to the nature of the engine? and when after a long time the expansion of the steam coincident with this motion was detected, might it not have been at first regarded as consequence and not as cause?" Under these circumstances it would seem the most natural thing in the world to trace the complex activity of the steam-engine to a Locomotive Principle.

How inadequate as an explanation of biological phenomena is the principle of Vital Force is admirably shown by Mr. Spencer in his remarkable chapter, "The Dynamic Element in Life," in the new edition of his *Principles of Biology*. Those who write down Mr. Spencer as a Materialist will find him in that chapter quite at one with the Idealist in admitting the mystery of Life, and the impossibility of conceiving it to stand in the relation of effect to purely mechanical causes. It is a mistake, however, to suppose that there is something specially inscrutable about life. The inscrutability is the same in kind as that which belongs to Existence as a whole. The fall of a stone is quite as inexplicable as the activity of an organism. It is just as impossible to conceive how a stone falls as how an organism moves. As Mr. Spencer observes,

neither Newton nor any one else has been able to conceive how the molecules of matter in the stone are affected not only by the molecules of matter in the adjacent part of the Earth, but by those forming parts of its mass eight thousand miles off, which severally exercise their influence without impediment from intervening molecules; and still less can we conceive how every molecule of matter in the sun ninety-two millions of miles off has a share in controlling the movements of the Earth. Still less can we conceive the physical process by which electric impulses are transmitted from one place to another. The ultimate reason of any phenomenon is unknown; the fact we know, and the law of the fact we can discover. For the evolutionist the one practical question in biology is not, Can the mystery of life be explained? but, Can the processes of life be traced, and the complex phenomena reduced to something like unity? In other words, Will the Spencerian formula of Evolution, as a movement from the simplex to the complex through successive integrations and differentiations, cover not only the purely mechanical side of Nature, but also those processes known as living?

Anti-evolutionists deny the application of Mr. Spencer's formula to biology on the ground that between non-living and living matter there is a great gulf, which cannot be bridged by a theory

that postulates the unity and continuity of all Nature's processes. In their view living matter is so unique that by no conceivable process could it be evolved from non-living matter: a special creative act is necessary, which at once invalidates the methods and results of the evolutionist. The assumption here is that there are two kinds of matter, living and dead. This assumption takes its rise in the old conception of matter as something dead, inert, which can only be energized in two ways, either by a specific creative fiat, or by the infusion of a mysterious vital principle. This crude idea of matter no longer holds sway over the minds of modern philosophers and scientific students. Science and philosophy, long divided by such watchwords as Materialism and Idealism, are now beginning to unite in recognition of the fact that Matter is not dead, inert, but alive and everywhere palpitating with energies, and that organic life is no special creation, but simply a highly specialized and complex form of the universal life of Nature. So far from Mr. Spencer being a Materialist, he might more correctly be described as an Idealist. So far from thinking that life is a product of Matter, he has clearly indicated that in his view Matter itself is a form of life. In his own words: "Under one of its aspects, scientific progress is a gradual transfiguration of Nature. Where ordinary perception

saw perfect simplicity it reveals great complexity; where there seems absolute inertness it discloses intense activity; and in what appears mere vacancy it finds a marvellous play of forces. Each generation of physicists discovers in so-called 'brute-matter' powers which but a few years before the most instructed physicists would have thought incredible. When the explorer of nature sees that, quiescent as they appear, surrounding solid bodies are thus sensitive to forces which are infinitesimal in their amounts — when the spectroscope proves to him that molecules on the earth pulsate in harmony with molecules in the stars — when there is forced on him the inference that every point in space thrills with an infinity of vibrations passing through it in all directions; the conception to which he tends is much less that of a universe of dead matter than that of a universe everywhere alive; alive, if not in the restricted sense, still in the general sense." At the end of all scientific and philosophic inquiries we come, according to Mr. Spencer, to an infinite and omnipresent Energy from which all things proceed. Manifestly this new conception of Life renders unreal the old dispute about non-living and living matter. Living matter we no longer think of as something entirely different in kind from non-living matter. We now think of the difference as one of degree. Matter is alive, not

because there has been added to it a special property. What we call living matter only seems to us to be specially alive because its movements are of a highly complex nature, and because it is organized on what seems to us to be a principle of inherent self-activity. If the distinction we make between living and non-living matter be really an artificial distinction, the result of a natural infirmity of thought, clearly the philosopher who would trace the process of life must begin his work with the earliest manifestations of living matter.

Naturally Mr. Spencer begins his *Principles of Biology* by a consideration of the constitution of organic matter. It is no part of the biologist's duty to discuss the speculative question of the origin of life. The mathematician does not concern himself with what Quantity, Space, and Time are; nor the physicist with what Force is. In like manner the biologist has to deal with the manifestations of life, not with origins. As a philosophic biologist, Mr. Spencer has accomplished his task when he shows that the phenomena of life conform to the process of evolution which he has traced in the inorganic sphere. At the outset an apparently formidable obstacle meets us in the attempt to interpret organic evolution by means of the Spencerian formula. In its simplest form evolution may be described as an integration of

matter and concomitant dissipation of motion. But when we come to study organic matter, we discover the two processes no longer working in antagonism, but in unison. Unless motion can be conserved instead of being entirely dissipated, there cannot be secured those secondary phases of evolution known as functional activities. The problem is to secure at one and the same time structural fixity with functional mobility. How is motion to be retained in an organism without producing the natural consequence of disintegration? In the case of organic bodies these apparently contradictory conditions are reconciled. In organic bodies matter is combined in a form which embodies an enormous amount of motion along with a great degree of concentration. Both in his *First Principles* and *Principles of Biology* Mr. Spencer subjects matter in its earliest or protoplasmic state to a rigorous analysis, the result of which is to show that the essential characteristic of living matter is the union of great molecular activity along with a degree of cohesion that permits of temporary fixity of arrangement. The phenomena of life, so far as the man of science is concerned, are inseparably associated, not with unique properties, but with modes of motion. Science has amply justified Mr. Spencer's reasonings. Thus we find Sir Michael Foster from

the practical point of view unconsciously endorsing the Spencerian line of thought, as follows: "The more these molecular problems of physiology are studied the stronger becomes the conviction that the consideration of what we call structure and composition must, in harmony with the modern teachings of physics, be approached under the dominant conception of modes of motion. The physicists have been led to consider the qualities of things as expressions of internal movements; even more imperative does it seem to us that the biologist should regard the qualities of protoplasm (including structure and composition) as in like manner the expressions of internal movements. He may speak of protoplasm as a complex substance, but he must strive to realize that what he means by that is a complex whirl, an intricate dance, of which what he calls chemical composition, histological structure, and gross configuration are, so to speak, the figures; to him the renewal of protoplasm is but the continuance of the dance, its functions and actions the transference of the figures. . . . It seems to us necessary, for a satisfactory study of the problems, to keep clearly before the mind the conception that the phenomena in question are the result, not of properties of kinds of matter, but of kinds of motion." Organic evolution begins with homogeneous living matter,

with protoplasm in its most elementary form. Owing to its molecular instability matter changes in the direction of the heterogeneous, becomes differentiated. In other words, there results multiplication of organs, with their respective functions.

From the amœba, whose entire body may be said to consist of a single organ, its stomach, to the human being, the differentia is immense. Yet the process is not abrupt, but transitional: each stage is a link in the great evolutionary chain. Hand in hand go integration, differentiation, and segregation. Different parts of an organism become co-ordinated, the result being a moving equilibrated system, a coherent individuality. Manifestly if life is conceived as a mode of motion, as the resultant of complex molecular activities, it cannot be understood except in relation to its environment, the medium of these activities. So long as a Vital Principle was postulated, the inner activities of an organism received an undue importance, almost to the exclusion of the environing agencies. Mr. Spencer showed that life was no entity, but a relation. Vital phenomena are the product, not of an inherent principle of life, but of the organism and its medium, the inner forces in vital correlation with the outer forces. According to his celebrated definition, Life is the continuous adjustment of internal to external relations. In his *First Principles* and *Principles of*

Biology Mr. Spencer has shown that the evolution of organic life, from the humblest protoplasmic forms in which it is found to the highest types with all their structural and functional complexities, is from the homogeneous to the heterogeneous, by means of successive integrations and differentiations.

It should not be forgotten that the evolution of organic life is simply a specialized form of cosmical evolution, consequently a close correspondence exists between organisms and their environment. Given an environment gradually increasing in heterogeneity, and it follows that in order to survive and propagate themselves organisms must, in adapting themselves, also increase in heterogeneity. Parts of the organisms restrict themselves to certain processes, and thus by specialization a sort of division of labor takes place, the result of which is to create structural and functional complexities. This process, called direct equilibration, would be powerless without indirect equilibration, better known as Darwin's law of "Natural Selection" — a law which should not be confounded with the law of Evolution, it being at most a brilliant confirmation of Mr. Spencer's cosmical generalization. By means of the struggle for existence everywhere going on among organisms, there is secured the killing-out of the unfit, and the survival and perpetuation of those organisms characterized by successful variations,

which by the law of heredity become structural and functional. Palæontology confirms this by showing that each geological epoch had its own class of organisms in correspondence with the environment, thus proving that organic has gone hand-in-hand with inorganic evolution. Embryology adds further confirmation, by showing that the human organism in its evolution from the germ cell summarizes the ancestral development in being progress from an indefinite incoherent protoplasmic homogeneity to the definite coherent heterogeneity of the fully developed body through successive integrations and differentiations — all of which, as Mr. Spencer indicates, are necessitated by the law of the Persistence of Force, and its corollaries.

Without transgressing at undue length upon the work of specialists, and making this summary of Mr. Spencer's views severely technical, it would be impossible to do justice to the elaborate and painstaking manner in which the theory of Evolution is applied to the construction of what has been aptly called a working thought-model of organisms and species, in their development, racial history, and everyday activities. Mr. Spencer has done more than reconstruct Biology on new lines ; he has linked the science to human affairs by his bold and luminous generalization on the multiplication of the human race — a generalization which, on account of its

bearing on the famous theory of Malthus, is of perhaps greater interest to the sociologist than to the biologist. Those who are acquainted with the social aspirations of the French Revolution thinkers do not need to be told of the enthusiastic hopes which were entertained of the human race from the Age of Reason, which it was believed had dawned upon humanity. According to the Encyclopædists, with the destruction of the great enemies of progress, Priestcraft and Kingcraft, the reign of equality and brotherhood would be inaugurated. The speculations of Condorcet summed up the creed and the hopes of the eighteenth century reformers. Like the spectre at the banquet, Malthus appeared with his gloomy prophecies of the future. By his theory of population Malthus seemed to prove that human ills were untouched by political and social revolution — were inherent in the nature of things. With great parade of statistics and imposing display of logic, the English parson contended that he had discovered a law against which the philosophic optimists would battle in vain, the law that human population increases at a quicker rate than human subsistence. Poverty and misery as a consequence inevitably followed at the heels of civilization. According to Malthus there was no cover set for the poor man at Nature's table. Godwin and his fellow-optimists strove hard to weaken the force of

this pessimistic theory; but coinciding as they did with the misery of the Revolution wars, the speculations of Malthus appeared to have an immovable root in actual experience.

To Mr. Spencer was reserved the honor of formulating a biological theory which, while doing justice to the elements of truth in Malthusianism, pointed the way to a solution which removed the dark shadow of pessimism from civilization. As the result of profound study of the phenomena of multiplication, Mr. Spencer discovered that Individuation and Genesis are in necessary antagonism: advance of the one necessitates decrease of the other. The error of Malthus lay in the assumption that Genesis was an absolute instead of a relative factor of organic life. According to Mr. Spencer, Genesis varies with Individuation. The higher and more complex the organism, the lower the rate of increase. In an advancing state of civilization where nerve and brain development are the dominating factors, the rate of population necessarily declines. Mr. Spencer presents his theory in condensed form as follows: "The necessary antagonism of Individuation and Genesis not only fulfils the *a priori* law of maintenance of race, from the monad up to Man, but ensures final attainment of the highest form of this maintenance—a form in which the amount of life shall be the greatest possible and the births and

deaths the fewest possible. From the beginning pressure of population has been the proximate cause of progress. It produced the original diffusion of the race. It compelled men to abandon predatory habits and take to agriculture. It led to the clearing of the earth's surface. It forced men into the social state ; made social organization inevitable ; and has developed the social sentiments. It has stimulated to progressive improvements in production, and to increased skill and intelligence. It is daily thrusting us into closer contact and more mutually dependent relationships. And after having caused, as it ultimately must, the due peopling of the globe, and the raising of its habitable parts into the highest state of culture — after having perfected all processes for the satisfaction of human wants — after having, at the same time, developed the intellect into competence for its work, and the feelings into fitness for social life — after having done all this, the pressure of population must gradually approach to an end." And thus we find Mr. Spencer in Sociology acting the part of reconciler between the Optimists and the Pessimists, just as in Psychology he put an end to the feud between the Intuitionists and the Experientialists.

The *Principles of Biology* created a new era in the study of Nature. When it appeared, master minds were under the spell of metaphysical concep-

tions of life, and the real facts of organic development were obscured, on the one hand by the erroneous notion about the origin of life-forms, and on the other by the forbidding nomenclature of dry-as-dust specialists—men whose vision was so narrowed by pedantic devotion to details that they could not see the wood for trees. By his piercing vision into the heart of Nature's process, and his marvellous co-ordinating faculty, Mr. Spencer brought order out of confusion, and by the touch of his philosophic magic wand revealed a new world of surpassing interest and beauty. Biological science has made great strides since his work appeared, but the strides have been mainly along the lines which were indicated half a century ago by the unique genius of the author of the *Principles of Biology*.

That the progress of biological knowledge has been mainly on the lines laid down by Mr. Spencer is evident from the revised edition of the *Principles of Biology* published in 1898 and 1899. Since the publication of the work in 1864 men of science have accumulated facts in great abundance, but these, instead of conflicting with the conceptions of Mr. Spencer, harmonize with his philosophic ground-plan. Since 1864 biologists have busied themselves largely with the astonishing phenomena of "Metabolism," cell-life, and the questions of heredity as raised by Professor Weismann. In the

new edition these problems are attacked with an acumen and vigor which abundantly show that at the age of four-score Mr. Spencer's intellectual vision has not become dim, nor his intellectual force abated. Notwithstanding this, there is a tendency in some quarters to question Mr. Spencer's method of dealing with the intricate and minute facts of organic life on philosophic principles—a method apt to be superficially confounded with the *a priori* speculations of the old Nature philosophers. Distinguished men of science, however, bear ungrudging testimony to the great practical value of Mr. Spencer's biological philosophy. In a letter dated 1898, a portion of which I should like to quote were I permitted, an author of several biological works of importance refers to the influence which *The Principles of Biology* exercised on him. In a review of the revised edition Professor Morgan remarks: "What strikes one most forcibly on reading the *Principles of Biology* in this new and enlarged edition is the extraordinary range and grasp of its author, the piercing keenness of his eye for essentials, his fertility in invention, and the bold sweep of his logical method. In these days of increasingly straitened specialism it is well that we should feel the influence of a thinker whose powers of generalization have seldom been equalled, and perhaps never surpassed." In the same strain men of the stamp of

Sir Joseph Hooker and Professor Ray Lankester have borne testimony to the great and enduring work which Mr. Spencer has done in the biological field. On the Continent Mr. Spencer's labors have met with hearty and generous appreciation. In the January number of the *Revue Scientifique* for 1899 appeared the following: "The work of 1864 itself has unquestionably had a profound influence upon these improvements [in the domain of biology since 1864] in suggesting new inquiries and aims. Biologists cannot do without consulting the revised work — new on many points — of the English philosopher; and doing so, they will find in it many precious ideas and suggestions from which their experimental work will benefit largely. And like us they will be full of admiration for this work, so all-compact and admirably arranged, so crammed with facts and ideas, of the philosopher who has exercised such a profound influence upon the science of his time." Professor Yves Delage, Professor of Zoology and Comparative Anatomy at the Sorbonne, in the preface to his work, *The Structure of the Protoplasma and Theories on Heredity*, etc., says: "What I have called positive experiment is often as difficult to conceive as to accomplish, and if a philosopher counsels it, and a naturalist corroborates it as well, it may so happen that the former has not the least part in the success. The example of

H. Spencer is proof of it. With him the philosopher is coupled with the naturalist, but, so to speak, with a non-practising naturalist. I do not know if he dissected animals or practised the ingenuities of technical histology. Who would dare deny, however, that he has rendered important services to Biology? He possesses deep knowledge of biological questions, and arguments drawn from anatomy, histology, or embryogeny do not in any way embarrass him."

In the same connection my friend Professor Arthur Thomson of Aberdeen, the distinguished Scottish Biologist, has favored me with the following: "Mr. Spencer has a genius for seizing essentials and leaving out distracting details, for disposing facts in big groups, for disclosing what one might call rational relationships—and, in this respect, quite apart from the evolution theory, his *Principles of Biology* was an epoch-making work. I mean that even as a balance-sheet of the facts of life, the book is a biological classic; consciously or unconsciously we are all standing on his shoulders. Indeed, many of us have had the experience of re-discovering clear ways of relating facts which we presently find much better done in a brief paragraph in the *Principles*. But then the great work was much more than a careful balance-sheet of the facts of life — not that this was little, it was the introduc-

tion of order, clearness, breadth of view, and gave biology a new start—it also displayed the facts of life and the inductions from these for the first time clearly *in the light of evolution*. I mean that if the evolution idea is an adequate modal formula, then we need to think of growth, development, differentiation, integration, reproduction, heredity, death—all the big facts—in the light of this. This was not Darwin's line, he was a great evolutionist, but surely not philosophic. Spencer's problems are not less real because more general, though many who talk of 'organism,' 'growth,' 'differentiation,' etc., glibly, and without ever feeling the problems behind every word, would probably not admit this. I cannot say that I have any great sympathy with those who call Spencer an abstract biologist, a philosophical biologist, etc., and mean thereby to suggest that he is not in touch with, and is not treating of, the real facts of life. I should rather think that he got nearer the realities than any one else. But I suppose the false antithesis between philosophy and science will have a lingering death, since even Spencer's work has not killed it."

When regard is had to the profound influence and epoch-making nature of the *Principles of Biology*, Mr. Spencer may be allowed, with pardonable pride, to express in the preface of his new edition a feeling of gladness at surviving long enough to present his work in a finished and modernized form.

CHAPTER VII

THE EVOLUTION OF MIND

IN dealing with biological phenomena it was pointed out that one great source of error was the fact that the processes of Nature are necessarily studied in an inverse order. We see effects before we discover causes. Ignorant of the slow complex processes of Nature, the mind naturally seeks for causes sufficiently striking and dramatic to account for imposing effects. As already remarked, had we been ignorant of the mode of construction of a steam engine, we should naturally have attributed its power of motion to a "property," or, in other words, to a Locomotive Principle. In the absence of scientific knowledge man naturally falls back upon entities as causes of phenomena. We have seen the part which entities have played in Biology. Even yet many scientific men, in dread of Materialism, cling to the Vital Principle as the chief and dominating cause of life and its multiform manifestations. When we come to the study of mind, we are not surprised to find that here, even more than in life

in general, entities have played an important part. The marvels of consciousness, the mysteries of brain and mind, are so overpowering that the first impulse of the student is to look for the cause altogether outside of ordinary cosmic forces. Primitive man could find no cause adequate to the effect short of supernatural power. In his view, God formed man of the dust of the earth, and breathed into him a living soul. As the theological conception faded away, its place was taken by the metaphysical conception. Instead of a supernatural agent acting outside of the Cosmos, the metaphysicians postulated an agent within the organism. Just as a Vital Principle was invoked to explain life in general, so an Intelligent Principle was invoked to explain the conscious life of man in particular. Philosophers pictured the mind as being somewhat like a political State where intellect and conscience ruled by a kind of divine right. Their authority was liable to be overturned. Evil, in fact, was the result of mental and moral anarchy. The lower passions were in revolt against the higher. Thus we have Butler plaintively remarking that if Conscience had power as it had right, it would rule the world. The process of thought was personified until the intellect became, not a generalized term, but an active agent. As Samuel Bailey says: "The faculties have been represented acting like independent agents, giving

birth to ideas, passing them on to each other mutually, and transacting their business among themselves. In this kind of phraseology the mind often appears like a sort of field in which perception, reason, memory, imagination, will, conscience, the passions, produce their operations like so many powers, either allied or hostile."

Mr. Spencer revolutionized Psychology by abolishing the absolute distinctions which metaphysicians had drawn between mind and the outer world, between subject and object. He dethroned entities and abstractions by the simple process of representing mind and matter, not as two antithetical substances, but as two phases of one cosmical process. Mr. Spencer has made it impossible to speak of the mental life of man as being under the control of a Principle of Intelligence, or mysterious Entity, which creates and directs thought. In the Spencerian philosophy Psychology stands in close and necessary relation to Biology. In both departments two all-mastering conceptions hold sway—the continuity of phenomena, and the intimate relations between the organism and its environment. If there is no absolute distinction between non-living and living matter, it follows that between the earliest and the latest manifestation of psychical life there can be no absolute demarcation. Between the humblest expressions of life in the animal world

and the highest manifestations in the intellect of man, the difference is not one of kind but of degree. The Spencerian Psychology is based, not on the pre-evolution view that mind is an entity with supernaturally endowed capacities, capable of being studied apart from its material mechanism, but on the idea that the mental faculties are evolved by slow and imperceptible gradations, along with a slowly evolving mechanism, in response to movements in the environment. And thus we are brought back to Mr. Spencer's definition of life as the continuous adjustment of internal to external relations. The organism, however humble, can only continue in existence by maintaining a correspondence with its environment. Where the environment is simple, the organism is simple. "A plant's vital processes display adjustment solely to the continuous co-existences of certain forces surrounding its roots, and vary only with the variations produced in these elements and forces by the sun. The life of a worm is made up of actions referring to little else than the tangible properties of adjacent things." Progress towards higher life implies ability in the organism to respond to more special and more complex movements in the environment. Among the humbler organisms the correspondences in the environment are so few that the same structures are capable of performing diverse functions, but a study

of biology shows that division of labor takes place, so that in presence of a complex environment organisms, in order to live, must develop complex structures. Biologically speaking, the degree of life varies with the degree of correspondence. At a certain stage in the evolution of life, the environment becomes so complex that the correspondence cannot be maintained automatically by the organism, however greatly differentiated in structure and function. There comes a limit, for instance, to the capacity of sight and hearing to discriminate, as it were, automatically among the external changes. At this limit life purely physical shades into life psychical. In the higher animals the ability to respond to complex external relations is associated with a specialized form of matter called nerve matter, which in its highest development is associated with Consciousness. The science of Psychology, then, in the strict sense of the term, begins with the dawning of Consciousness. Or, as it must be otherwise expressed, Psychology is that department of science which deals with the evolution of Consciousness by means of which, and under the direction of which, the mind maintains its correspondence with an environment no longer purely material, but including history, society, and all the influences which flow from the atmosphere of conscious life and thought—in a word, of civilization. It is impossi-

ble in brief space to indicate in detail the masterly manner in which Mr. Spencer shows the close and intricate correspondence between life and its environment, and the unrivalled skill with which he traces the dual process of evolution of mind and its environment, developing from the simple to the complex by successive integrations and differentiations.

The problem of Psychology, on the subjective side, is to discover and determine the evolutionary process of Consciousness—in other words, the law of intelligence. If life in general is definable as correspondence between internal and external relations, obviously mental life in particular, or intelligence, must be included in the definition. It is idle to inquire into the ultimate nature of Consciousness or Intelligence. We know no more about the starting-point of Consciousness than we do about the starting-point of Matter. In both cases we begin with the homogeneity which we find in Nature, and with that as the basis we try to discover the cause of all the complex developments. In its ultimate analysis Mr. Spencer finds Intelligence to rest upon the recognition of likeness and unlikeness between primary states of feelings. Grant to the mind the power of recognizing and distinguishing feelings, and it is plain that the entire mental life of humanity, from that of a savage to, say, a Newton, is the result of continuous differentiation and integra-

tion of states of consciousness. What is the law of intelligence? The law is no other than the association of ideas. "When any two psychical states occur in immediate succession, an effect is produced, such as that if the first subsequently recurs, there is a certain tendency for the second to follow it." Upon this law all education is based, and upon it rests the cogency of the sayings, "Practice makes perfect," and "Habit is second nature." What, then, are the evolutionary stages in the growth of intelligence? The first stage is reflex action, in which a single impression produces a single sensation. Reflex action scarcely comes within the domain of Psychology, as, being automatic, it is performed without consciousness. Its significance consists in the fact that it is the connecting link between biological and psychological phenomena. Instinct is a highly developed form of reflex action. With instinct we have a combination of movements following a combination of impressions, but in the course of development the environment becomes so complex that even highly developed instinctive actions are not able to maintain their automatic responses to the environment. The co-ordination becomes irregular. So long as the actions between the organism and the environment are automatic, memory cannot exist. Memory emerges when the correspondence is not complete. When the adaptation is

re-formed, when the adaptation is again complete, memory lapses into instinct, as may be seen in the fact that a musician, who at first strains his faculties to remember the notes of a new piece, by and by plays the tune automatically, even so far as to carry on a conversation at the same time. That is to say, he plays instinctively, without memory being called into exercise. What of Reason? Is it a supernatural endowment, or an evolutionary product? According to Spencer, Reason cannot be absolutely demarcated from Instinct. The difference between them is one of degree, not of kind. So long as the adjustments between internal and external relations are simple and permanent, they are made instinctively. Instinct may be defined as unconscious adjustments. When the adjustments are many, complex, and temporary, deliberation comes into play. Reason may be defined as conscious adjustments. The process of evolution is thus luminously sketched by Mr. Spencer: "While on the one hand instinctive actions pass into rational actions when from increasing complexity and infrequency they become imperfectly automatic, on the other hand rational actions pass by constant repetition into automatic or instinctive actions. Similarly we may here see that, while on the one hand rational inferences arise when the groups of attributes and relations cognized become such that the impressions

of them cannot be simultaneously co-ordinated, on the other hand rational inferences pass by constant recurrence into automatic inferences or organic intuitions. . . . The genesis of instinct, the development of memory and reason out of it, and the consolidation of rational actions and inferences into instinctive ones are alike explicable on the single principle that the cohesion between psychical states is proportionate to the frequency with which the relation between the answering external phenomena has been repeated in experience." At this stage emerges Mr. Spencer's great philosophical contribution, whereby he revolutionized the science of Psychology by bringing to an end the historic feud between the Intuitionists and the Experientialists.

In order to appreciate the full force of the Spencerian theory of reconciliation, it is necessary to present a historical sketch of the famous philosophic feud, beginning with John Locke. Locke's whole system of metaphysics rests on the idea that the mind or soul exists as an agent independent of the external world. The problem he set himself to solve was the exact relation between the mind and the world. Dissatisfied with the theory of innate ideas, Locke took up the position that all knowledge comes through the senses, consequently ideas are the counterparts of sensations. The question which immediately faced Locke was this — What is that

thing called Matter which is the basis of all our knowledge? He saw that all the properties of Matter could not exist exactly as they seemed to exist, because many of them were conditioned by the mind itself. Light and heat, he saw, did not exist as properties apart from the mind—they existed only in relation to the mind. But if matter is clothed by the mind with secondary qualities, what guarantee is there that the primary qualities are not also in some ways conditioned by the mind? The result of Locke's inquiry was to leave the mind just where Descartes left it—in the position of a self-acting entity. He dethroned innate ideas, but he put nothing in their place. With Descartes the mind was a constitutional monarch, conditioned in all its workings by innate ideas. With Locke the mind was still a monarch, but one whose system of government had fallen into anarchy. Berkeley detected the fatal consequences of Locke's philosophy. In order to dispel anarchy he got rid of Locke's dilemma about the primary and secondary qualities of matter by abolishing matter altogether. According to Berkeley, Spirit, not Matter, was the real substance of the Universe. At this stage Hume appears, and in effect says to Berkeley: If there is no evidence of the existence of matter as a permanent substance, there is a like want of evidence for the existence of mind as a permanent substance.

What, says Hume, we are conscious of is not an entity called mind, but a chain of feelings linked together by association. In the hands of Hume the reasonings of Locke and Berkeley ended in scepticism. Locke's theory, like Berkeley's, was formulated in the interests of Theology. Locke hoped to find in Causation a stepping-stone to a great First Cause; Hume, by substituting Association for Causation, knocked the props from Theology. By resolving mind as an entity into a series of feelings linked by association, Hume also knocked the props from Psychology. Hume drove Theology and Philosophy into bankruptcy — that is what constitutes him an epoch-making force in the history of thought.

Hume's destructive criticism roused into philosophic activity Immanuel Kant, whose contribution to the problem took the shape of innate forms of thought, instead of the innate ideas of Descartes. Great as are the differences among the Germans, they all, from Kant to Hegel, endeavor to break the force of Hume's criticism by re-establishing in a more plausible and subtler form the conception of a self-acting Ego, a spiritual agent endowed with potencies and capabilities, with forms of thought apart from experience. An attempt has been made in England to modernize Kant and Hegel, but it cannot be said that the attempt, headed by the late Pro-

fessor Green, has been a success. Neo-Kantianism, instead of the old forms of thought, postulates a single active self-conscious principle, a transcendental unifying principle, "the one subject which sustains the world and is the real knower in all finite intelligences." Professor Seth Pringle-Pattison effectively disposes of this latest attempt to construct an Idealistic theory when he says it is of a piece with the Scholastic Realism which hypostatized *humanitas* or *homo* as a universal substance, of which individual men were in a manner the accidents. Similarly here the notion in general—the pure Ego—which is reached by abstraction from the individual is erected into a self-existent reality, "an eternally complete self-consciousness, of which the individual is an imperfect representation or mode." Hume's destructive theory was far-reaching. If the mind was no entity, but a process, clearly a blow was struck at innate ideas and intuitive forms of thought. Naturally Hume's conception of mind commended itself to the Experiential philosophers like the two Mills, in their crusade against the intuitional theory of morals. With John Stuart Mill, mind resolves itself, as with Hume, into a permanent possibility of feeling. Mill's philosophy was transitional. Effective enough in its polemic against the reigning Intuitionalism, Empiricism, even in the hands of an acute thinker like Mill, was incapable of returning

satisfactory answers to the fundamental problems of Psychology. In regard to the root question, that relating to the constitution and function of the mind, Mill remained virtually at the position of Locke. When the Darwinian theory of man's origin began to gain general acceptance, it was evident that Psychology would be profoundly influenced. If no break was discoverable in the evolution of animal forms, the difficulty was increased of making the human mind an isolated entity with a specially created constitution, in which were embedded *a priori* forms of thought. Equally difficult was it to conceive the mind as possessing nothing but a susceptibility to impressions. Thinkers began to ask whether the Darwinian theory did not involve the view that mind also was gradually evolved from a lower form of life. Pursuing this line of thought, even before Darwin popularized it, Spencer reached the far-reaching conclusion that what had hitherto been accepted as necessary truths by the Intuitionists, and which the school of Mill never could resolve into individual experiences, were beliefs which, though *a priori* to the individual, were *a posteriori* to the race.

Here, indeed, was a luminous conception — a conception by the aid of which Empiricism was able to make most serious inroads upon the Kantian answer to Locke and Hume. As Mr. Fiske puts

it: "Locke was wrong in calling the infant's mind a blank sheet upon which experience is to write knowledge. The mind of the infant cannot be compared to a blank sheet, but rather to a sheet already written over here and there with invisible ink, which tends to show itself as the chemistry of experience supplies the requisite conditions. Or, dropping metaphor, the infant's mind is co-related with the functions of a complex mass of nerve-tissue, which already has certain definite nutritive tendencies. The school of Leibnitz and Kant was wrong in assuming a kind of intuitional knowledge, not ultimately due to experience. For the ideas formerly called innate or intuitional are the results of nutritive tendencies in the cerebral tissue, which have been strengthened by the uniform experience of countless generations until they have become as resistless as the tendency of the dorsal line of the embryo to develop into a vertebral column. The strength of Locke's position lay in the assertion that all knowledge is ultimately derived from experience — that is, from the intercourse between the organism and the environment. The strength of Kant's position lay in the recognition of the fact that the brain has definite tendencies, even at birth. The doctrine of Evolution harmonizes these two seemingly opposite views, by showing us that in learning we are merely acquiring latent capacities, by more or less powerful

nutritive tendencies, which are transmissible from parent to child."

What Kant described as *a priori* principles Spencer declared to be racial experiences which, by their constancy and universality, have become organic forms of thought operating with all the force of intuitions. Manifestly, Spencer's matchless contribution to Psychology was rendered possible by his destruction of the old conception of mind as a self-centred entity with supernatural endowments or metaphysical properties, and the substitution of the conception of mind as co-related with matter—mirroring its movements, and subject to the law of reciprocity. Mind, in the Spencerian view, is no entity, but a specialized form of a universal process, and evolving in correspondence with its environment. Up till Spencer began to write, mind had been almost exclusively studied by the introspective method. It was treated as an abstraction, and even followers of Hume, like Mill, who had given up the old idea of a separate mental substance, never realized the importance of associating Psychology with Biology, and studying mental processes in their earlier pre-human manifestations.

Mr. Spencer's two volumes on Psychology are not only an epoch-making work in the region of metaphysics, but they have also proved the forerunner of a new method in the study of brain and nerve

dissolution as well as of evolution. So long as the mind was treated as an entity, so long was Psychology barren in the region of practical life. When, however, the conception of mind as correlated in structure and function to a material organ and a nervous system became clear to Mr. Spencer, it was plain that mental processes could only be adequately studied through their physical equivalents. If the development of intelligence keeps pace with a developing nervous organization and increased complexity of brain, if the process of evolution is not divisible into two sections, one physical and one mental, there is no escape from the conclusion that the lapse from intelligence, or mental dissolution, will have its physical equivalent in the shape of a disordered nervous organization and diseased brain structure. In that case Psychology, as expounded by Mr. Spencer, becomes a valuable aid to the practical physician. That it is so, I am assured by no less an authority than Dr. Hughlings Jackson, who in a private letter to me states that he has "found Mr. Spencer's *Principles of Psychology* more useful than any other works on psychology in the study of those diseases of the nervous system which have a mental side. I believe that Mr. Spencer's doctrines of Evolution and Dissolution are of very great value in the methodical analysis of cases of insanity, and further

that, on the basis these doctrines supply, relations of different kinds of disease of the highest cerebral centres to one another can be traced, and also relations of disease of these centres to diseases of lower centres of the nervous system." Another distinguished authority, Dr. Mercier, whose writings have done much to elucidate the pathological aspects of mental evolution, writes me as follows: "My idea of the value of Spencer's work is that he has done for co-ordinations in Time what Newton did for co-ordinations in Space, and by so much as the intricacy and multiplicity of the former exceed those of the latter, by so much does Spencer's achievement exceed Newton's. In my own official work—in Neurology, Psychology, and especially in Pathology, I may almost say in the case of the two former and quite in the case of the latter, he has reduced chaos to order. He has at any rate discovered the fundamental principles of these sciences, and whatever systems are erected in these sciences in the future must be erected on the foundations he has laid. I am at present engaged upon a book on Psychology in which I am essaying to expand and apply his principles, to supplement and fill in his outlines." This is sufficient answer to those who contend that the Spence-rian philosophy, like the Hegelian, is a fantastic piece of theorizing, having little or no basis in reality. It

is Mr. Spencer's merit as a psychologist that to the keenest speculative vision he unites a devotion to fact so minute as to give his writings the stamp at once of philosophic profundity and eminent practical utility.

"But," exclaims the startled reader, "if mental life develops from biological life by unbroken stages, there is no escape from Materialism." Foreseeing this objection, Mr. Spencer has been careful to point out that the terms Matter and Mind are after all symbols, not absolute existences. When the philosophical scientist endeavors to understand the nature of Matter and Mind, he is baffled.

Though he may succeed in resolving all properties of objects into manifestations of force, yet, says Mr. Spencer, "he is not thereby enabled to realize what force is. Similarly, though analysis of mental actions may finally bring him down to sensations as the original materials out of which all thought is woven, he is none the forwarder; for he cannot in the least comprehend sensation—cannot even conceive how sensation is possible. He sees that the materialist and spiritualist controversy is a mere war of words. . . . In all directions his investigations eventually bring him face to face with the unknowable. He learns at once the greatness and the littleness of human intellect, its power in dealing with all that comes within the range of

experience ; its impotence in dealing with all that transcends experience. He feels, with a vividness which no others can, the utter incomprehensibleness of the simplest fact considered in itself. He alone *sees* that absolute knowledge is impossible. He alone *knows* that under all things lies an impenetrable mystery." Students who have not gone to the root of his philosophy conclude that because Spencer, as distinct from Hegel, treats of the evolution of concrete Matter instead of abstract Spirit, therefore he is a Materialist. What Mr. Spencer says is that thought is conditional upon brain structure, and that increasing complexity of brain structure is paralleled by increasing complexity of intelligence ; in both cases the law of evolution holds good. He is no Materialist. Like Job, Goethe, Carlyle, and all kindred thinkers, Mr. Spencer stands uncovered before the Power behind phenomena — that mysterious, awe-inspiring Power, the source of all phenomena, material and mental, the Infinite and Eternal, before which, now as of old, the fit attitude of the human soul is one of sacred silence and devout humility.

CHAPTER VIII

THE ECONOMIC EVOLUTION OF SOCIETY

WHAT is called progress in the purely organic world has been seen to consist in a series of structural and functional changes from a relatively simple state of organization. Does social progress conform to the same law? According to Mr. Spencer, the formula which is applicable to purely physical phenomena embraces also social phenomena. Society, like an organism, begins in a state of relative simplicity, and by a series of structural and functional changes, reaches a state of relative complexity. The task which lies before the Sociologist is that of tracing the evolution of society through its various stages, from the primitive tribe to the highest form of civilization. Here as elsewhere he is not primarily concerned with the question of origin. In treating of cosmical evolution, the evolutionist commences with the *nebulae*; in dealing with organic evolution he begins with indifferentiated protoplasm; and in studying the development of society his starting-point is primitive man as historically discernible.

The task of the evolutionist is clearly defined : he has to discover the cause and law of social progress. His first duty is to endeavor to get back to the starting-point of human history, to the doings of primitive man.

Whatever view is taken of man's relation to the animal world, one thing is certain — his condition when history first catches a glimpse of him was not far removed from animalism. Primitive man was a creature of appetites and instincts controlled by rigorous necessities. Led by the senses, he was utterly devoid of morality in any real sense of the term. Marriage was unknown ; the social bond weak and uncertain ; life resolved itself into a bitter struggle for existence among a discordant mass of antagonistic units. In a word, society was in a fluid state resembling the nebulæ of the pre-planetary period. By what means was a start made in the direction of social integration ? To the Sociologist the answer to this question is of fundamental importance. Once the cause of social progress is discovered, we have within our grasp the key to civilization. The cause of social progress must be found in the nature of primitive man. A reference to Mr. Spencer's *Principles of Psychology* shows that whether the habits of an animal shall be solitary or gregarious depends upon the relation between the two most general functions — self-maintenance

and race-maintenance. Those animals which can adequately provide for their own wants lead solitary lives ; whereas those which cannot supply their individual wants live and act in concert. Now of all animals man is least fitted to lead a solitary life ; some kind of co-operation with his fellows is an indispensable necessity. Here, then, is the germ of sociality. The germ is increased by the necessities of race-maintenance. It is a physiological fact that the higher and more complex the physical and mental organization, the longer the period of infancy. However crude and unsatisfactory the affection between mother and child in primitive times, it must have been kept alive and increased during the period of infancy. Not that domestic relations had any coherence or stability. There is good reason to believe that the family was not the earliest form of social organization. A species of domestic communism seems to have preceded family life, but under whatever form, the tie between mother and child was enduring. Civilization on its highest and noblest side is rooted in motherhood. Even in primitive society the strength of affection fostered by the maternal relationship did something to counteract the force of the purely selfish feeling, and to increase the fund of sociality. Sooner or later the family as an institution was bound to evolve from tribal chaos ; and when it did evolve the first step was taken in

the path of civilization. Upon primitive man, when the stage of the family was reached, two pressing duties devolved — self-maintenance and family-maintenance. In other words the cause of social activity was man's desire to provide for his own wants and the wants of those dependent upon him. Comte, followed by Mill, makes the intellect the chief cause of progress. According to them, civilization is prompted and controlled by ideas. Ideas play a great and ever-increasing part in civilization, but they are not the prime cause. Progress has an economic root. In order to live, in order to maintain correspondence with his environment, man, like plants and animals, must have adequate sustenance. The first task imposed upon primitive man by the rigors of his environment was not to get true ideas, was not intellectual culture, but the gratification of his physical requirements. He had to live, and the first necessity was to supply his material needs. The cause of social progress lies not in the intellectual but in the physical side of human nature. Society took its rise from the fact that man by co-operating with his fellows was abler to supply his wants than by individual effort. Not that there was any formal contract, as Locke and Rousseau would have us believe. Primitive men formed themselves instinctively into tribes in order to lessen the stern struggle for existence.

With the formation of tribes the struggle for

existence entered upon a new phase. In primitive times, owing to man's ignorance of natural laws and processes, population constantly outran the means of subsistence. Darwin has familiarized the modern mind with the view of Nature as an arena in which plants and animals are engaged upon a life-and-death struggle for existence, a struggle in which only the fittest survive. In this arena primitive man also fought. We moderns have greatly lessened the force of the struggle, because by science we have learned to make the means of subsistence outstrip the increase of population. But in early times life was a perpetual struggle for the means of subsistence, and naturally the struggle took the form of wars between tribes. With an increasing population and a stationary food supply tribes had either to starve or steal. A policy of annexation was thrust upon men by sheer necessity.

It needs little reflection to see that wars must have been an integrating factor of great force. Militarism must greatly have increased the cohesiveness of the tribal bond ; in Spencerian phraseology, it made for social integration. Under Militarism the individual was necessarily subordinated to the tribe or state. This subordination was intensified by primitive religions which, by deifying the chief or king, identified the law of the tribes or kingdom with the will of Heaven. Thus it was that under

the military régime humanity was ruled both by the dead and the living ; indeed, the rule of the dead was the stronger, inasmuch as the ruler was only obeyed so long as he voiced religion and tradition. The development of primitive humanity becomes intelligible when we describe it as progress from the tribal stage to a complex military stage by a series of integrations and differentiations. But the military régime contained one fatal defect. The task of procuring sustenance became subordinated to that of aggression. War, which in the earlier stages was a means to an end, became ultimately an end in itself. The nation was divided into workers and warriors. Under the influence of religion and patriotism, war was glorified as the main function of life, and to the military ranks gravitated the best talent of the community. In the words of Buckle : “The three most distinguished statesmen Greece ever produced, Solon, Themistocles, and Epaminondas, were distinguished military commanders. Socrates, supposed by some to be the wisest of the ancients, was a soldier ; and so was Plato ; and so was Antisthenes, the celebrated founder of the cynics. Archytas, who gave a new direction to the Pythagorean philosophy, and Melissus, who developed the Eleatic philosophy, were both of them well-known generals, famous alike in literature and in war. Among the most eminent

orators, Pericles, Alcibiades, and Demosthenes were members of the military profession ; as also were the two greater tragic writers, Æschylus and Sophocles. The most philosophic of all the Greek historians was certainly Thucydides, but he, as well as Xenophon and Polybius, held high military appointments, and on more than one occasion succeeded in changing the fortunes of war."

While war was held in the highest honor, industrial labor was held in the greatest contempt. As a consequence, slavery, as we see from the political writings of Aristotle, was viewed as the normal state of the lower orders. Following this, there could be no such thing as distribution of wealth among the people. Among ancient nations the function of the people was to minister to the pleasure of the rich, who held a monopoly of power and wealth. Of all the nations of antiquity Greece came nearest to the modern ideal, but she fell because she endeavored to import a democratic constitution, suitable to the industrial régime, into the military régime. Greece struck the note of freedom and individuality, but she was a premature development. Greece was born out of due season. In a warlike epoch, a democratic community, resting upon slavery, and devoting its resources to military aggrandizement, could not hope permanently to resist the encroachment of a world-wide military

power. Greece fell a prey to Rome. Rome in her turn fell a prey to Militarism with its false economic system. Much has been said of the causes of Rome's decline and fall. Many causes were at work—religious, moral, social, and political, but underlying them all was the one cause which was at the root of the decay of ancient civilization, namely, the unequal distribution of wealth, with the resulting slavery of the populations. Instead of production of wealth by means of science and industry, there was annexation of wealth by means of war and conquest. Instead of distribution of wealth on the lines of intelligence and industry, there was monopoly of wealth on the lines of military force and slavery. The result of this was the corruption of the governing classes and the deterioration of the lower classes. So long subordinated to the State, and treated as a mere chattel, the individual was totally unfit to cope with the fierce liberty-loving independent barbarians who broke up the Roman Empire. Under the military régime humanity failed to solve the first necessity of life—that of adequately providing for its own sustenance. The great economic experiment in the hands of Militarism had proved a colossal failure. Rome arrested human progress, and Rome was overthrown by the progressive instincts of humanity, which nothing can permanently thwart.

From the ruins of the Roman Empire there arose, slowly but surely, a new social order. This time, owing to the widespread anarchy, society was reorganized, not on the basis of the family or the tribe, but on the feudal system. At first it seemed as if one kind of despotism had simply been exchanged for another. Feudalism was nothing if not despotic, and it was difficult to see how society would avoid the rock upon which it had already split, the rock of Militarism. But in the heart of Feudalism lay hidden the germ of progress. When society began to assume a relatively settled form, when all the great lords' dependants were not needed for military duty, a number were settled around the estates as "hinds" and artificers. This social differentiation had far-reaching consequences. The moment an attempt was made to provide for human necessities by means of labor instead of by war, that moment a new hope dawned upon the horizon of humanity. From the small body of artificers which, slave-like, clung to the bounty of the great feudal lords, sprang Industrialism with all its world-transforming influences. Guizot traces the earlier evolution of Industrialism as follows: "No sooner was society a little settled under the feudal system than the proprietors of fiefs began to feel new wants, and to acquire a certain degree of taste for improvement and cultivation; this gave rise to some little com-

merce and industry in the towns in their domains; wealth and population increased within them — slowly for certain, but still they increased.” By and by the industrial serfs in the towns of the lords’ domain began to feel their power. They became what the slaves of the ancient world never became, an important factor in the social system. To prevent the town serfs from increasing in independence, the lords resorted to harsh and despotic measures. Between the two a great struggle for supremacy took place. It ended in the triumph of the burghers, who freed the towns from the harassing rule of the feudal law. From this dates the emancipation of industry. Henceforth freedom was given to a new power in the State. The satisfaction of human wants was to be accomplished not by war, but by peaceful industry. The individual man was at last permitted to secure his own sustenance by means of labor, instead of having the fruits of his labor taken from him by war and slavery. When society acknowledged the right of the individual to be what Nature intended him to be, a being formed for self-maintenance, the first stage was reached in the evolution of an enduring civilization.

The great problem of social evolution is to preserve the spontaneity and freedom of primitive humanity along with the social restraints and influences which are needful for the cohesion of society. In Spen-

cerian language, the difficulty is to allow the cohesive or integrating forces in society to have due influence without stamping out the principle of variation or differentiation, upon which progress depends. In the organic world Darwin has made us familiar with the truth that plants and animals which do not respond to the variation in the environment are doomed to disappear in the struggle for existence. We have seen that ancient civilization disappeared from the same causes. Religion, Government, economic error, all tended to produce individual and social stagnation. The different nations failed to adjust themselves to outer relations, and Nature in her sternest mood stamped them out of existence.

It is now to be seen how modern civilization set itself to solve the problem of uniting social cohesiveness with individual variability. Modern civilization in so far as it has been progressive has proceeded by successive integrations and differentiations. We have already seen the cause of social progress to lie in man's efforts to satisfy his material wants. When that cause is not allowed to operate, there results individual and social stagnation. The operation, when allowed to take place, must follow a definite law. What, then, is the law of social progress? The law is that where material prosperity, the result of industry, is the most widely distributed, the

greater is man's progress intellectually, morally, and socially. This has been so well stated by an American author, Mr. Gunton, who has so admirably applied the doctrine of evolution to social philosophy, that his words deserve to be reproduced: "The progress of society towards greater complexity of organization, in which the necessity of physical effort is diminished, intellectual power and personal freedom increased, and moral character elevated, is always in the ascending order from the material to the intellectual and moral; the material being the basis, the intellectual the means, and the moral qualities the result." By overlooking the fundamental importance of the economic side of society great confusion has been imported into the study of civilization. One writer, De Tocqueville, mars a series of otherwise profound generalizations by tracing the social and political phenomena of modern societies to the passion for equality, which in his view is the distinctive note of democracy. To what is the passion for equality due? Had De Tocqueville pursued the subject further, he would have found that the passion for equality has its root in the economic necessity of man to secure equal rights as a primary condition of self-maintenance. Men did not agitate for political freedom from an abstract love of freedom: they sought for political rights as a means of securing the right to labor, and the

right to the fruits of their labor. Like De Tocqueville, Comte went astray in attributing civilization to an abstract law like that of the three stages, instead of to the economic law that mankind seek to satisfy their material wants along the line of least resistance.

When industry began to assert itself, two great powers of resistance blocked the way,—the State and the Church. In the Middle Ages the people were ground under two despotisms, the Roman Catholic Church, and the State, as represented by the feudal lords and monarchy. How were these successfully attacked? The common view is that the Roman Catholic Church had its despotic power weakened by the Protestant movement, and that the despotism of the Crown and the lords was weakened, in this country at least, by the unique concessions arising from the Crown and embodied in Magna Charta. That the revolt against Roman Catholicism had a deeply religious side no one would deny. But what made the revolt a success? A clew to the answer is had when it is remembered that the Church of Rome came into collision with the new industrial ideal. The teaching of the Church, as Mr. Lecky well shows, was based on monastic, ascetic, and other ideals which were totally incompatible with the industrial and commercial spirit. At every turn industry and commerce found themselves ham-

pered by laws and teachings which not only repressed individual effort and initiative, which are the roots of Industrialism, but which treated the accumulation of wealth and devotion to money-getting as sinful. A religious system which ran counter to the economic tendencies of the new industrial epoch was bound to come into collision with the growing intelligence which a life of secular activity directly and indirectly fostered. It was no accident that the Reformation, and for that matter political freedom, made greatest progress in those countries where the towns had gained the greatest success in their contest with the feudal régime.

It is a significant fact that "England was the only country in which the Free Towns were not overpowered by either the Church, the Monarchy, or the Barons": and consequently it was the only country in which religious, social, and political progress was not arrested. The middle classes became a power in the State when they wrested the control of the towns from the barons, and the same classes, imbued with the spirit of freedom and intelligence, the outgrowth of the industrial régime, broke the back alike of Papal domination and aristocratic and monarchic despotism.

One of the elements of perplexity which confront the student of civilization is the manner in which phenomena, which were at first effects, ultimately

become causes. The desire for material satisfaction, which is the primary cause of social progress, leads naturally to increased knowledge of Nature. Increase of intelligence, the effect, becomes itself the cause of further increase of material prosperity, and thus social differentiation, which began instinctively, is followed consciously and with rational purpose. No thinker has done more to show the close psychological connection between this double process of civilization than Mr. Spencer, and no thinker has done more to focus the historical effects of the process than Comte. Upon the mind of the student, Comte's picture of the Middle Ages, the fall of the feudal régime, and the rise of the industrial epoch, has all the effect of a panoramic vision. Were it for nothing else than his magnificent historical survey, Comte would be entitled to everlasting remembrance by philosophic students of intellectual, social, and political evolution.

It is difficult, if not impossible, to estimate in detail the value of the various discoveries in science, the increase of knowledge, the rapid progress of inventions, upon the development of civilization, especially on the side of complexity and variability. To these we must largely attribute the great contrast between the fixity of ancient civilization and the flexibility of modern civilization. But two causes must be signalized as exerting a momentous influ-

ence upon the great evolutionary course of society, namely the substitution of Free Trade for Protection, and the substitution of machine for hand labor. In the past these have produced great effects, the full force of which, however, will not be felt till the removal of disturbing influences in the form of certain politico-economic delusions. Even yet the old superstition about the evil effect of machinery is alive in the mind of working men; and they are not to blame when they can quote the depreciatory words of Mill in his *Political Economy*. And as regards Free Trade, the world is yet far from admitting the truth of the great economic conceptions of Adam Smith, who did for the industrial what Newton did for the physical world.

What is the precise relation of Adam Smith's economic gospel to the evolution of society? No greater evidence that the primary cause of social progress is not ideas, but desires, is had than the unreasoning way in which mankind carried into the industrial era the ideas and methods which pertained to Militarism. What a sad commentary upon human intelligence is the fact that not till the time of Adam Smith was the true theory of trade and commerce formulated in a scientific form. For centuries trade and commerce were conducted under the influence of an economic theory which kept alive the old features of antagonism that belonged to the military

period. Under the influence of Protection trade and commerce, instead of uniting mankind, kept alive feelings of disunion. War, instead of dying away in presence of a higher type of civilization, was made an instrument of national aggrandizement. Nations labored under the delusion—natural enough when wealth and conquest were synonymous—that they could only become prosperous by beggaring their neighbors. In the words of Adam Smith: “Each nation has been made to look with an invidious eye upon the prosperity of all the nations with which it trades, and to consider their trade as its own loss. Commerce, which ought to be among nations, as among individuals, a bond of union and friendship, has become the most fertile source of discord and animosity.” The intelligent adoption of Adam Smith’s doctrine as the corner-stone of foreign policy is only a matter of time; and when Free Trade is universal, humanity will advance from the stage of nationalism to that of internationalism. When that day arrives, wars will cease. As I have expressed it in my work on Adam Smith: “Free Trade rests, not like mercantilism, on national independence, but on national interdependence. Under Free Trade the progress of one nation makes for the progress of all. Fleets and armies are no longer needed to secure a monopoly of trade, to preserve the balance of power, because in obedience to an economic law

those countries which are industrially equipped will share in the trade of other countries, even in the teeth of protective tariffs. Free Trade is not synonymous with a clash of interests, but in essence means mutually advantageous exchange of services. Once this view is reached, there flashes on the mind the vision of a time when the whole world will be bound together by the golden chain of self-interest, a self-interest which recognizes that, given the conditions of liberty and justice, the gain of one is the gain of all. Free Trade thus appears in its true light as, from the economic side, the application of Christian ethics to the international sphere. Nations, instead of being hated rivals, each armed to the teeth, lying in wait for the other, are seen to be members of a great federation, each developing its sources to the utmost, and exchanging its products in harmony and with mutual profit." What a stride from the ferocious tribal rivalries of primitive man, and the scenes of carnage among the great military nations of the past, to the doctrine of world-wide peace taught by Adam Smith! Well might Richard Cobden describe Free Trade as the international law of God Almighty.

What an ennobling vision of humanity would have been vouchsafed Adam Smith had he realized the extraordinary beneficent impetus which would be given to his economic gospel in the age of

machinery. Wonder is often expressed at the sterility of the intellect of the ancients in the domain of inventions and machinery. How could it have been otherwise? Even in Greece civilization was represented by an aristocratic elect maintained in idleness and affluence by a slave population whose material wants were few, limited, and stationary. Apart from the fact that ancient thinkers looked upon labor as the peculiar work of slavery, and were therefore not likely to desire methods of saving labor, there was not a population sufficiently developed to cause a demand for machine-made goods, which cannot be produced at a profit unless in large and increasing quantities. Until the lower classes had advanced so far in material prosperity that there arose among them a variety of desires other than the purely material—social and intellectual desires—there could be no market for the products of machinery. The time was ripe when in England there had arisen a large and comparatively intelligent middle class who were so far removed from the claims of physical necessity as to enjoy the pleasures and luxuries of life.

In what way, then, does the substitution of machine for hand labor help forward the evolution of society? In other words, how does machinery contribute to the material prosperity, intellectual improvement, and moral elevation of the people?

In pre-machinery days, when the market for labor was small and uncertain, and when the wages bill was the main element in cost, high profits could only be received by cheap labor. When the market was large and increasing, the superiority of machine over hand labor turned to the advantage of the worker. The advantage is twofold. Intelligence on the part of the worker becomes an important factor in mechanical superiority; consequently it is to the advantage of the master to grant high wages to the intelligent worker. Moreover, as the object of higher wages is to cheapen production, it follows that the worker, who is also a consumer, benefits in the cheapening of products brought about by his highly paid labor. Thus in a twofold manner the working population profits by machinery — by higher wages and by their increased purchasing power. In the words of an American economist: "A reduction in the price puts commodities within the reach of another large class who were previously unable to consume them, and the market is thereby extended, thus enlarging the income without raising the rate of profit — all of which tends to further increase the demand for labor and to improve the general well-being of the community."

A civilization resting upon hand-made goods necessarily involves the hopeless poverty of the workers. In such a civilization labor must neces-

sarily be cheap and necessities dear; whereas in the machinery era the situation is reversed — wages are increased and the necessities of life cheapened. When we say that wages are increasing, what does that imply but that man the worker is increasing in value; and when we say that the necessities of life are being cheapened, what does that mean but that for the consumer, who is also the worker, life is becoming easier and more comfortable? The ancient civilizations fell because man the worker was of no value; he was treated as a commodity to be bought and sold — as an instrument to be used for the selfish enjoyment of a minority, whose corruption brought social ruin. Modern civilization contains the elements of endurance because man the worker is increasing in value with every increase in intelligence and morality. As man the worker is also man the consumer, it is clear that every advance in intelligence, leisure, and morality must raise the standard of society till intellectual and æsthetic pleasures become no longer the monopoly of a rich and cultured few, but the heritage of the many. And thus we come to understand the Spencerian definition of social progress as a complex process of adjustment with a complex environment, comprising not only material sustenance but all other intellectual, social, and ethical pleasures which distinguish a being of great potential qualities. Civilization is simply

the process of adjustment on a large scale whereby man's whole nature, physical, intellectual, and moral, develops in all its marvellous complexity in response to an environment also increasing in complexity.

CHAPTER IX

THE POLITICAL EVOLUTION OF SOCIETY

IN the preceding chapter an attempt was made to formulate the cause and law of social evolution. The cause is not intellectual, as Comte and Mill believed, but economic. Social activity has its origin, not in the intellectual side of human nature, but in the primitive passions and instincts which man shares with the animal creation. Man, like the animal, must provide for his material wants, and as individual man is the weakest of animals, in order to maintain with success the struggle for existence he is driven to associate with his fellows. Moreover, as was shown, the germ of sociality fostered by family life somewhat softens the fierce play of egoism and lays the foundation of altruism, which in the higher forms of civilization flowers in the shape of patriotism, philanthropy, and all the heroic virtues which link man with the divine. In dealing with the political evolution of society it is essential not to lose sight of the economic root. Once the economic root is overlooked, the thinker falls into the

error of attributing political constitutions either to the deliberate intentions of despots, as with Hobbes, or to a social contract, as with Locke and Rousseau, or to considerations of utility, as with Bentham. If the economic root is kept steadily in view, the political history of humanity becomes intelligible.

A flood of light is thrown upon the origin of political constitutions by Mr. Spencer's comparison of society to an organism. What are the distinguishing characteristics of the animal organization? In order that an animal shall live, the animal must be possessed of a threefold structure—it must be able to maintain itself by the assimilation of food; it must have a distributing system, by means of which food is carried to various parts of the body; and it must have a defensive system, by means of which it can regulate its movements in presence of enemies. In the most primitive form of society this threefold constitution exists in the germ. The tribe must provide itself with food, must secure the means of subsistence. The manner in which this is done determines the nature of the other two structures—the distributive and the regulative. In primitive times, owing to man's ignorance, the productive power of Nature does not keep pace with the increase of population; consequently the system of distribution does not, as in later times, take the form of friendly barter, of exchange, but of forcible appro-

priation. War is the normal state of primitive society. Under these conditions, the political or regulative structure is the natural outgrowth of the economic structure. In other words, political constitutions are determined by economic conditions.

That this is so is evident from a study of early societies. Where the economic conditions are simple, the distributive and regulative systems are simple. Where the economic conditions are complex, the distributive and regulative agencies also increase in complexity. Society, in the course of its development, obeys the Spencerian law of progress from the simple to the complex through successive integrations and differentiations. Societies are divisible into two kinds—Military and Industrial. Not that these have existed separately. Under the military régime industry necessarily existed, and under the industrial régime militarism has never been wholly absent. We call a régime military when industrial resources are used to support the military system in carrying out the national ideal of war. We call a régime industrial when industry is the national ideal, the army simply being used for defensive purposes. Given a tribal kingdom, a nation predominantly military, resting upon the idea that economic prosperity depends upon the forcible appropriation of territory, and the political constitution will evolve along certain natural and necessary lines.

In brief, political constitutions are determined by social necessities. Where these involve war, as must be the case where prosperity is believed to be synonymous with forcible possession of territory, everything will be sacrificed for military efficiency. The army will simply be the nation mobilized; industry will be exploited in the interest of war, and the individual will be subordinated to the State. The method of regimentation, so conspicuous in the army, will be extended to all classes of the community; individual liberty will be reduced to a minimum. In a word, an economic conception of life which rests on war necessarily involves a political constitution resting on despotism.

History abundantly justifies these generalizations. In tribes where wars are rare, individual freedom is greatest. With difficulty can the Chief secure obedience. Even he himself is allowed to command only so long as he pays due deference to tribal customs which, though unwritten, have all the coercive force of laws. With war, the situation undergoes a change. In presence of enemies the loosely connected units form themselves instinctively into a compact mass under the bravest leader; the tribe undergoes a process of integration. The democratic form of government which manifests itself even in primitive tribes in a peaceful régime gives place to a military dictatorship. At this

stage there is no difference between the military organization and the political organization. The dictators who determine questions of defence and offence naturally settle questions of a purely civic character. Industry, being an adjunct of the military system, comes under the sweep of the principle of regimentation which naturally belongs to a state of war. Be the outward form of government what it may — monarchical or oligarchical — those in possession of power in the military régime carry into the internal management of the nation the principle of regulation or despotism, which in the army is an absolute necessity. The individual has no rights against the State. He is valued only in so far as he contributes to the security of the State. In the ancient world, where war was the main occupation, the individual was used simply as an instrument for the glorification of the State. The State might grant him privileges; he could demand no rights. In Rome, as the result of social stability, philosophers began to talk about the law of Nature, and progress in the recognition of individual rights might have been made but for the eruption of barbarism, which overthrew the ancient civilization, and once more placed Might on the throne of the world. The long reign of militarism was necessary in order to produce order out of confusion, and, of course, under feudalism despotism again reigned supreme. The

military dictator under feudalism was as much the political dictator as under the great despotic governments of the ancient world. To quote from Mr. Spencer: "Up to the tenth century each domain in France had its bond, or only partially free, workmen and artisans, directed by the seigneur, and paid in meals and goods. Between the eleventh and fourteenth centuries the feudal superiors—ecclesiastical or lay—regulated production and distribution to such extent that industrial and commercial licenses had to be purchased from them; in the subsequent monarchical stage, it was a legal maxim that "The right to labor is a royal right which the prince may sell and subjects may buy"; and onwards to the time of the Revolution the country swarmed with officials who authorized occupation, directed processes, examined products. In the old English period the heads of guilds were identical with the local political heads—ealdormen, wick-port, or burgh reeves; and the guild was itself in part a political body. Purchases and bargains had to be made in presence of officials. Agricultural and manufacturing processes were prescribed by law. Dictations, of kindred kinds, though decreasing, continued to late times. Down to the sixteenth century there were metropolitan and local councils, politically authorized, which determined prices, fixed wages, etc.

Under Militarism, whether in the ancient world or in the modern feudal world, one process may be detected, namely, the integration of tribes into communities, communities into kingdoms, and kingdoms into nations. In all cases the inspiring motive was the desire for territory by means of war. No doubt other causes — such as religion — came into operation, but the root-motive of social evolution was economic — the desire for wealth on the part of the governing classes. War was the instrument of this desire, and industrial workers were valued solely as providing revenue for the ruler and a commissariat for the army. Under such economic conditions, the political constitution rested upon despotism, though the form which it took differed in different countries. It matters little about the form — whether monarchical, oligarchical, or feudal — if the result is the same, namely, the subordination of the individual to the State. Social integration is an indispensable factor in progress, but in studying organic evolution we saw that an equally important factor is differentiation, and the power which an organism possesses of varying in response to varying agencies in the environment. Now the political constitutions which evolved alongside of Militarism made no provision for the factor of differentiation. Everything was fixed by statutes. In industry, in religion, in politics, variations which would have been profitable to civ-

ilization were crushed out. The laborer who claimed the right to work for himself was treated as a rebel serf, the religious man who claimed a right to dissent from the church was a heretic, and the political man who rose against consecrated despotism was a traitor. Manifestly, under the military régime, progress was impossible. Progress was in danger of being arrested by a political system of despotism. Whence was salvation to come?

In the previous chapter it was shown that a new era appeared when Industrialism began to be of more importance than Militarism. When, thanks to feudalism, something like social security had been reached, not war but industry became the means of procuring wealth. Such a far-reaching change in human affairs could not take place without having a marked effect upon political constitutions. With the rise of the Free Cities the old doctrine of Might upon which political despotism rested gave place to a new doctrine of Right. With the rise of commerce and industry, the natural rights of man, which had been hidden from view during the long reign of militarism, clamored for recognition. The long contest between the feudal barons and the freemen was something deeper than a squabble over charters. At bottom the demand of the city-dweller was the demand that

no longer should the individual be subordinated to the ruling power, that the individual had certain natural rights with which no political power, king, knight, or legalized government, could meddle. The abolition of serfdom had its root in the feeling that the individual should no longer receive his freedom as a privilege from his feudal superior, but could demand it as a right; and the victory of the towns over the barons implied that men of industry and commerce had a right to the fruits of their labor. The key to the political evolution of society in this country, from Magna Charta to the last Reform Bill, is found in the fact that the long period was a contest between the old despotic elements in the British Constitution founded on Might, and the growing industrialism with its demand for the recognition of the fundamental rights of man — rights, moreover, which have a biological and psychological justification — the right to live, the right to think, the right to labor, and the right to the products of labor. The various modifications in the British Constitution, from the absolutism of the Stuarts to the constitutionalism of the Hanoverians, the oligarchy of the Lords, and the democracy of the Reform period, represent successive stages in the great contest between the old despotism under which the individual had no rights as against the State, and the modern view that the duty of the State is not to con-

fer rights but to safeguard the prime rights of man, to which the State itself owes its existence and its rationality.

In confirmation of the view that the political constitution of a particular period is conditioned by the dominant economic force, is the fact that Magna Charta, the starting-point of England's political freedom, was the product of the industrial and commercial conflict with the military despotism of the Crown. True, in the contest the burghers had the co-operation of the barons, who single-handed were unable to cope with the king. All the same the rights embodied in Magna Charta secured the burghers against the violence of the barons as well as against the despotism of the king. By Magna Charta it was declared that no freeman shall be deprived of his freehold liberties or free customs, be executed, or outlawed, but by lawful judgment of his peers or by the law of the land. Here was a great advance upon the military régime, which by entirely subordinating the individual to the State conceded privileges but denied rights. Magna Charta established in England the doctrine that the individual had a right which the State dare not override, namely, the right to justice. Fifty years later, another right was wrested by the burghers from the State—the right to take part in the councils of the nation by returning representatives

to Parliament. After the reign of King John, the towns were granted charters which gave them municipal independence, including the right to make their own laws, elect their own magistrates and judges, levy their own taxes, etc. The economic revolution by which the Free Cities rose and flourished gave an impetus to the political revolution which later destroyed the absolutism of the Stuarts, weakened the power of the aristocracy, and paved the way for the reformed Parliament in which the Corn Laws were repealed, slavery abolished, Free Trade declared, the legal code purified, and restrictive laws which pressed heavily upon labor removed from the statute book.

Further confirmation of the view that political evolution is conditioned by economic evolution is had in the fact that in those countries where the Free Cities were destroyed, where economic progress was arrested, the political evolution received a check, and a retrograde movement to despotism took place. In Spain charters were granted to the towns early in the eleventh century, and in the twelfth they were represented in the Cortes. The benefits of these political reforms were lost by the religious wars which raged. In Spain militarism was too strong for industrialism, which gradually grew weaker and weaker until, in the fifteenth century, the burghers ceased to be represented in

the Cortes. With the weakening of economic forces in Spain began the decline of that great nation in wealth and political freedom. In Italy the cause of political freedom was also arrested by the fall of the Free Cities. The decline of material prosperity was followed by the loss of all that makes for progress. In France likewise the fall of the Free Cities led to the revival of political despotism and social misery. In France the burghers were worsted in their struggle with the barons, the feudal system was re-established in a form so odious as to lead to the great Revolution. The Free Cities, the outcome of economic forces, by ultimately destroying the political system of militarism and erecting a political constitution on the idea of Right instead of Might, were the birthplaces of material prosperity, and as a consequence became the nurseries of civilization.

An American writer, a thinker thoroughly imbued with the evolutionary philosophy, sums up the close relation between economic and political evolution as follows: "If we examine the progress of political and religious freedom, we shall find that it has always followed the line of the material prosperity of the masses, rising where that rose, falling where it fell, and becoming permanent only where industrial improvement had been general and continuous. England was the only country in which the Free

Towns were not overpowered by either the Church, the Monarchy, or the Barons, and consequently it was the only country in which social and political progress was not arrested. The Cortes of Spain, the States-General of France, and the Republics of Italy rose and passed away, scarcely leaving their imprint upon the national character, while the English House of Commons has ever stood out as a conspicuous feature of modern civilization."

The remark has already been made that in the complex phenomena of social life it frequently happens that effects become themselves potent causes. Thus political constitutions, which are really the effects of economic causes, by and by become the causes of increased economic prosperity. How, then, did legislation influence economic progress? If we study the great legislative reforms of the past from Magna Charta to the Reform Bill, we find that they may all be summed up in three words—Life, Liberty, and Property. Whether we study Magna Charta, the Reformation, Free Trade, Political Emancipation, we find throughout them all the assertion of the right of man to live, to think, to labor, and to retain the products of his labor. Legislative reform has mainly consisted in repealing despotic measures which, congenial to the military régime, and sometimes beneficent, were fruitful in evil when carried forward to the industrial epoch.

Of late years a new theory of political evolution has become popular — a theory which cannot possibly meet with the endorsement of the Evolution philosophy as here expounded. From the Spencerian point of view, any theory which advocates increased power of the State, whether in the form of Socialism, Collectivism, or Trade Unionism, stands condemned as a retrograde movement, as an attempt to revive parts of the political and regulative system which belong to the régime of Militarism. If man has natural rights, manifestly no power on earth has a right to infringe them, be the motive what it may. Under a military régime men may have to risk their lives and their property to defend the national existence, but in a civilization resting upon pacific industry no body of men can have a mandate to tamper with the rights of their fellows. The fundamental principle of Liberalism which finds ample justification in the Evolution philosophy is this — Every man is to do that which he wills, provided he infringes not the equal freedom of any other man. Socialism, Collectivism, and Trade Unionism, in their respective spheres, are attempts to destroy the initiative and energy of the individual from which have sprung the best elements in civilization, and revive the principle of regimentation which belongs to the military epoch — a principle which makes man a slave, an automaton, a machine. In

the organic world progress is secured by the survival of profitable variations by giving free play to the principle of differentiation. Subordinate the man to the State, and at once order is secured at the expense of progress, and for the healthy evolution of civilization we have a repetition of the old paternal communities of Peru, which were so lacking in stamina that they fell before the first blast of misfortune. It is no coincidence, but a natural sequence, that Socialist ideas at home should lead to revival of Militarism abroad. If it is legitimate to legislate in the interests of the people in domestic matters, it becomes equally legitimate to attend to their interests abroad. If Parliament is competent to legislate on behalf of labor at home, it is also competent to secure an increase of trade abroad by means of diplomatic scheming involving the risk of war. The revival of Militarism means the revival of despotism, the decay of prosperity, the decay of political and individual liberty, and a lowering of those national ideals which have inspired the best and truest of Englishmen in their heroic battle for justice and freedom.

This retrograde movement receives intellectual assistance from a school of political philosophers who deny that man possesses natural rights. In their view rights are creations of the State; consequently there are no first principles in politics,

only expediciencies. If this theory be correct, Militarism and Socialism cannot be combated on purely intellectual grounds. What has the Evolution theory to say to this doctrine, which is simply a revival of the social contract theory of Hobbes, Rousseau, and Bentham? The idea of a social contract has its root in the error into which Comte and Mill fell, namely, the belief that progress is the result of knowledge acquired and deliberately organized. Now nothing but confusion results till the truth is recognized that man's first steps in progress are made not by means of his intellect, but through the spontaneous operations of his instincts, desires, and passions. Hobbes had a glimpse of this truth, but he missed its significance by his defective view of human nature. Man, with Hobbes, is purely a selfish animal, and therefore with him there was no road out of individual isolation to social co-operation except by the way of deliberate calculation of the benefits to be derived from the social state and deliberate submission to a despot. Bentham, like Hobbes, had a low view of human nature. The only difference between them was that the one saw no hope of social organization except through a despotic monarchy, whereas the other pinned his faith to a utilitarian democracy. The end which Hobbes sought to gain by absolutism, Bentham, and for that matter Rousseau, sought to

gain by a popularly elected government whose aim was the greatest happiness of the greatest number. For the rights of man, which had fallen into discredit by the excesses of the French Revolution, Bentham substituted the happiness of man.

Had Bentham and his followers stopped to analyze their political creed rigorously, they would have discovered that it is impossible to divorce the idea of happiness from that of rights. What is meant by the popular saying that self-preservation is the first law of nature? What is the meaning of the phrase, struggle for existence? The meaning plainly is that man, like the animal, asserts the right to live, the right, that is, to exercise his powers and faculties. When this right is admitted, happiness follows as a natural consequence. Surrounded on all hands by enemies and obstacles, primitive man finds existence so precarious that, urged on not by deliberate reasoning but by the instinct of self-preservation, he joins himself to his fellows. He does not look to government to procure happiness; he expects government to safeguard his freedom and security, which are the conditions of happiness. Primitive man loses his freedom in ways already indicated. Governments, tribal and other, rob him of his freedom, and then begins the contest between the individual and the State. If it is the function of governments to legislate for the greatest happiness of the greatest number,

such a social state is quite compatible with the unhappiness of the minority, and thus under Bentham as under Hobbes the individual has no claims against the State, which fulfils its duty when the happiness of the majority is secured. On the other hand, if the function of the State is to safeguard the rights of man — the right to live, to think, and to labor — then the requisite conditions are secured for the individual to realize his own happiness. By making happiness the direct aim of legislation you deprive a minority of their happiness; by making liberty the direct aim, you produce happiness as a natural consequence, or at least you make the happiness of the individual the direct result of his own conduct. If he chooses to abuse his right to liberty, he cannot blame the State for his unhappiness, whereas under the Benthamite constitution the happiness of the minority is necessarily interfered with to increase the happiness of the majority. Or as it might be put otherwise, happiness in man is the natural consequence of the development of his instincts, desires, and faculties. This development cannot take place unless under favorable conditions — in other words, where liberty to develop is secure. Thus the conclusion is reached that so far from society being dependent upon government for its existence, government is simply an effort to procure the necessary conditions for the proper development of society.

Society exists before government. Governments do not exist for the purpose of laying down the principles of social co-operation. Social co-operation grows out of the desire of men for one another's society for purposes of mutual help. The true function of government is to see that the individual in the assertion of his liberty does not encroach upon the liberty of his fellow. Nowhere has the distinction between society and government been more clearly stated than in the writings of Paine, the author of *The Rights of Man*: "A great part of that order which reigns among mankind is not the effect of government. It had its origin in the principles of society and the nature and constitution of man. The mutual dependence and reciprocal interest which man has in man and all the parts of a civilized community upon each other create the great chain of connection which holds it together. The more perfect civilization is, the less occasion has it for government, because the more does it regulate its own affairs and govern itself." Government "is nothing more than a national association acting upon the principles of society" — a definition very different from the one given by those who deny the rights of man, namely, that society is the creation of government and needs to be regulated by paternal methods.

In their practical results these opposing theories

may be studied in the Old and New Liberalism. About the time of the French Revolution, Liberalism underwent an important change—a change which Burke was the first to detect. Rousseau shifted the foundation of Liberalism from natural rights to political rights. According to the French thinker, the fundamental right of man was not the right to liberty, but to an equal share in the government of the country. The people in the exercise of their political rights being in the majority were sovereign; what, and only what, they legislatively declared to be rights were treated as rights. The hitherto accepted natural rights (liberty and property) could be annihilated by the fiat of the all-powerful majority. It is this French theory of political thought which has passed into British politics under the name of the New Liberalism. According to the Old Liberalism, every man has a right to his own property; according to the New Liberalism the majority have a right to encroach upon other people's property in order, as Mr. Chamberlain's "Radical programme" puts it, to increase the comforts and multiply the luxuries of the masses. The Old Liberals would have spurned such an interpretation of their creed. In their view, justice and liberty had nothing to do with majorities and minorities. They fought against slavery, not because it was supported by a powerful minority, but because slavery was a violation of the

fundamental right of man to personal liberty. The Old Liberals fought for toleration, not on the majority principle, but on the principle that no power on earth had a right to interfere with liberty of conscience. The Old Liberals advocated an extended franchise, not in order to shift absolute power from the classes to the masses, but in order to give every citizen the power to protect his interests. In other words, with the Old Liberals an extended franchise was meant to be a safeguard, not an engine of oppression. The Old Liberals strove to secure for every man equality of opportunity; the New Liberals are striving to procure equality of conditions. They tell Lazarus, who has been sitting at the rich man's gate, to take his place boldly at the rich man's table. In Australia the New Liberalism has borne its logical fruit. Some years ago, at a meeting in Sydney of the unemployed, one speaker demanded that the Government should give as a right, not as a favor, six shillings a day and guarantee work for twelve months. He further advised the unemployed not to submit to insults to their independence! On the principles of the New Liberalism there is nothing to prevent the unemployed, if they are in the majority legislatively, dividing the wealth of the country among the masses. The passion for equality when divorced from the passion for justice becomes a potent instrument of national demoralization. On

one occasion, when Turgot was asked to confer a benefit on the poor at the cost of the rich, he replied: "We are sure to go wrong the moment we forget that justice alone can keep the balance true among all rights and interests." France forgot that, and went terribly wrong. The Liberal party of the present day is in danger of making the same fatal mistake.

To Mr. Spencer belongs the credit of bridging the gulf between the two views. Agreeing with Hobbes and Bentham that government is a necessity, he differs with them as to the origin of that necessity. Where Hobbes, Bentham, and Rousseau make happiness the motive of legislation, Spencer makes it the result. According to Spencer the legislation has to do, not with happiness, but with justice. By tracing the social instincts of man to their biological and psychological roots, Spencer shows that the motive power of all progress, organic and super-organic, in animal and man, is the desire for freedom to develop. Grant this, and the first and indispensable condition of happiness is secured. The practical bearing of these two views of society is far-reaching. If the function of government is directly to produce social happiness, there is no escape from paternal legislation, which in practice leads to the rule of a despotic majority. If on the other hand the function of the government is to maintain the

liberty of the individual, so far as he does not encroach upon the like liberty of his fellows, then not only is despotism impossible, but the way is open for the development of all kinds of energies and talents — in short, for the growth of those individual variations which in the social as in the natural world are the real elements of all enduring progress. The two factors, order and progress, which previous thinkers were unable to reconcile, are in the Spencerian theory brought into a union at once philosophically satisfying and politically fruitful.

CHAPTER X

THE ETHICAL EVOLUTION OF SOCIETY

Two things filled the soul of Kant with awe — the starry heavens above and the moral laws within. What more natural than that the reflective as well as the unreflective portion of mankind should attribute these marvellously mysterious phenomena to the direct creative act of the Deity? How plausible seemed the primitive theory that God created the heavens and the earth by His Almighty fiat, by the word of His power. For ages the human mind in dealing with the starry heavens clung to the conception of creation. Similarly with the moral sense. Man, it was believed, was created with a keen sense of right and wrong, with a faculty called Conscience, which was described as God's viceregent in the soul. How was this conception harmonized with the admitted tendency of man to do wrong? Either Conscience spoke with an uncertain voice, or some great anarchic revolution had taken place in the soul of man whereby God's viceregent was deposed, or Conscience itself was the product of circumstances, man

being really at the mercy of his passions, like a rudderless ship in a stormy sea. The theory of the fall of man held sway in one shape or another for ages. Man, it was believed, was created as perfect as the starry heavens, but by virtue of free will, man had the power of thwarting the design of the Creator; by one act of disobedience man entered upon a career of racial rebellion. Man, it was said, knew the right but preferred the wrong. Conscience reigned but did not govern. With the decay of theological conceptions, the theory of a separate faculty called Conscience, whose function it was to preside over the ethical side of human nature, fell into discredit. Great efforts were made to preserve in metaphysical form the essential idea of the theologic conception. Thinkers who had departed widely from the old supernaturalism still endeavored to keep alive the idea that man was born with an intuitive sense of right and wrong. Discarding the theological foundation, they made strenuous efforts to make Conscience a fundamental attribute of human nature. Adherents of the intuitive theory of morals were faced with one supreme difficulty—that of accounting for the diverse and contradictory views of morality existing in different ages of the world and among different races of man. On the theological theory these diversities and contradictions were plausibly explained by the fall of man. Discarding

the supernatural view of man, the intuitive thinkers were incapable of bringing these views into harmony with history and experience.

How was the difficulty to be met? If Conscience is not a supernatural germ implanted in man by God, and if the facts of life are incompatible with the intuitive theory of an innate sense of right and wrong, where is the solution of the problem to be found? Another set of thinkers professed to have discovered the key to the problem. They declared that Conscience is not primary but derivative. In their view man's desire for happiness is primary, Conscience being compounded of several elements, notably the element of coercion which follows from the conflict between contending passions in the individual and contending individuals in society. The efforts of the Utilitarians, from Bentham to J. S. Mill, were devoted to the attempt to show how the belief in Conscience, the sense of right and wrong, may be traced to individual experiences of happiness and unhappiness. The Utilitarian school failed in the sphere of ethics, as it failed, as was shown, in the sphere of economic history, by giving undue prominence to conscious reflection as an element in primitive progress. Primitive men did not seek to acquire wealth from conscious motives, nor did they, as Locke believed, draw up a social compact from a deep sense of the

benefits of social co-operation. No more did primitive men make utility the avowed and consciously pursued means of securing the greatest amount of happiness. Primitive man was not, as the Utilitarians assumed, a reasoning and calculating animal. The Evolution theory in the realm of ethics successfully attacked the problem which the Utilitarians found insoluble. So long as morality as a science was viewed from the standpoint of empiric Individualism, Utilitarianism as advocated by Mill had great difficulty in repelling critical attacks. Spencer came to the rescue by substituting the racial for the individual standpoint. As he puts it in his letter to Mill: "Just in the same way that I believe the intuition of space possessed by any living individual, to have arisen from organized and consolidated experiences of all antecedent individuals who bequeathed to them their slowly developed nervous organizations — just as I believe this intuition, requiring only to be made definite and complete by personal experiences, has practically become a form of thought, apparently quite independent of experiences; so do I believe that the experiences of utility organized and consolidated through all past generations of the human race, have been producing corresponding nervous modifications, which, by continued transmission and accumulation, have become in us certain faculties of moral intuition — certain emotions to right

and wrong conduct, which have no apparent basis in the individual experiences of utility." In his highly original work, *The Origin and Growth of the Moral Instinct*, Mr. Alexander Sutherland goes to the root of the failure of Benthamite Utilitarianism, when he says : "To the individual in actual life, the test as to the rightness of an action is never supplied by a consideration of its usefulness to the race. The true test he finds within himself in his instinct of sympathy. The philosopher is justified in proving that these sympathies have grown up and exist within us in order to minister to the use and preservation of the species, and it thus happens that while morality is founded on sympathy, sympathy is founded on utility. It would be doing a gross injustice to men such as Bentham, Austin, and Mill, to imagine that they were not themselves clear-sighted enough fully to perceive this chain of causation. But they lost their hold of a general assent by suffering the middle link to drop out of view ; and the public, which acts rightly, not by reason of any abstract notion of utility, but by the inward impulse of sympathy and duty, has always resented what seemed to be the application of a cold and pragmatistical principle to a warm and beautiful sentiment." Discarding alike the theological theory of man as supernaturally created and endowed with Conscience, and the Utilitarian theory of man as

guided by reason and consciously testing right and wrong by experiences of utility, the evolutionist bases his ethical philosophy on the view of man in his primitive stage as not much removed from the animal, and under the control of desires, passions, and instincts. In his view the ethical evolution of man is co-related with the economic, political, and intellectual evolution of society. Ethical codes are not supernaturally imposed upon mankind, nor are they intellectually elaborated from experiences of utility; they are evolved in the course of man's struggle for existence, and are determined by that struggle in its threefold aspects—the struggle for self-maintenance, family-maintenance, and race-maintenance.

In dealing with economic evolution, the question was as to the material result—increase and distribution of wealth. In dealing with political evolution the question was as to the conditions—that of liberty or despotism—under which the economic forces work. In dealing with ethical evolution we are concerned with the effect of the economic and political evolution on the feelings and sentiments of man, and the reaction of those feelings and sentiments upon society. In this connection it is necessary to recall the words used in a previous chapter in treating of the root-passions of society: “Whether the habits of an animal shall be solitary or gregarious depends upon the relation between the two most

general functions—self-maintenance and race-maintenance. Those animals which can adequately provide for their own wants lead solitary lives; whereas those which cannot supply their individual wants live and act in concert. Now of all animals man is least fitted to lead a solitary life; some kind of co-operation with his fellows is an indispensable necessity. Here then, is the germ of sociality.” To this must be now added the remark that in sociality we have the germ of morality. The two things are distinct though closely related. Sociality may exist without morality, as among the lower animals, but morality cannot exist without sociality. For a true understanding of ethical evolution it is essential to trace the gradual and subtle manner in which sociality shades into morality. In order that we may be able to trace the various stages, it is necessary to have a clear idea of the end which Nature has in view in social evolution. Unless we understand the aim of Nature, no intelligent understanding is possible of the process. The aim of Nature is to favor the existence of those individuals, families, and organized societies who are most successful in maintaining themselves in presence of numerous competitors. We call conduct ethical in the highest sense which consciously furthers the efficiency of the individual, the species, and the social state. In no existing society has this ideal been

realized, but we must keep this ideal in view if we wish to trace the various stages in the ethical process. Manifestly such a process would be impossible, were it not for the element of sociality. Those very passions which stamp man as a selfish animal contain the germ of sympathy which in higher civilizations blossoms into altruism and all the virtues and graces which adorn humanity. Adam Smith was right in making sympathy the basis of morals, but in the absence of knowledge it was impossible for him to analyze sympathy, which is a complex quality, into its simpler social elements. How does sympathy evolve from the rude selfish passions of primitive man? Sympathy develops out of sociality, to which primitive man is driven like the animal by his passions and necessities. Primitive man is not a conscious co-worker with Nature; he is carried on by forces over which he has no control, the tendency of which he cannot detect, and the aim of which he cannot understand. The rate at which sympathy develops is the measure of ethical evolution. Sympathy is the root of all the virtues.

On the ethical side, the struggle which is everywhere found in Nature resolves itself into a struggle between the selfish and sympathetic sides of human nature. Other things being equal, Nature favors the sympathetic man at the expense of the unsympathetic; the family and tribe bound together

by sympathy are more than a match for families and tribes which are torn by internal dissensions, and in which individual selfishness reigns supreme. So important are the sympathetic instincts that we can detect in the animal world the beginning of the great ethical evolution which in mankind has reached such an advanced stage. In the earlier stages of animal life, Nature secures the perpetuation of species by means of an extraordinary individual fertility. Among fishes the average mother deposits more than 600,000 spawn, out of which perhaps one or two remain to maintain the existence of the species. Nature scatters the germs of life with prodigious prodigality, so as to make sure that in the midst of the prodigious destruction a few of the germs will be saved. Under such conditions, where there is no parental care, sociality is impossible. This stage, which may be called that of competitive fertility, gives place to another stage, that where success in the struggle for existence is determined by higher nerve organization, and increased brain power and intelligence. Mr. John Fiske has demonstrated conclusively that one result of increase in nerve and brain organization is prolongation of infancy. Thus we find in the more highly organized animals a close connection between parent and young. The period of helplessness draws forth the emotional power of the parents, and among the

higher class of animals we detect features of conduct quite human, as when the mother monkey rushes with her young to a hiding-place and then turns and faces death with a sense of satisfaction. Through the animal world the strength of the sympathetic instincts are in direct relation to the period of infancy, which again is determined by the slowness with which the complex nervous system and brain evolve.

When we come to primitive man the process becomes distinctly traceable. To make this plain, it is necessary to bear in mind the description in a previous chapter of primitive man from the purely economic side. "Primitive man was a creature of appetites and instincts, controlled by rigorous necessities. Marriage was unknown; the social bond weak and uncertain; life resolved itself into a bitter struggle for existence among discordant units. . . . However crude and unsatisfactory the affection between mother and child in primitive times, it must have been kept alive and increased during the period of infancy." The family is the ethical unit as it is the economic and political unit. In treating of biological evolution, it was seen that environment is the controlling cause. Unless an animal can adapt itself to its environment, unless its structure and functions are in harmony with its surrounding, it must perish. It is the same with emotions and sentiments. Called forth by the environment, they

are determined in their nature and force by the environment. Now, what is the environment which confronts the family as the ethical unit? The environment is no other than other families whose attitude is that of chronic hostility. Inside the family circle certain narrow, rude, but powerful sentiments hold sway—such as paternal and fraternal sympathy, courage, self-sacrifice, and the martial virtues generally. But there comes a time when, for purposes of protection, families join to families, and the clan is formed. This extension of the environment leads to extension of the sympathies, which, no longer confined to the family circle, embrace all who are associated together in defence of the clan. With the extension of sympathy inside the clan area, there still exists a feeling of hostility to all outside. The feeling of clannishness is greatly deepened by religion, by bringing into operation the sanction of departed chiefs, and by the commands issued by living chiefs, whose governments become increasingly despotic with the increase of hostile relations with tribal enemies. Along with the military régime there evolves an appropriate ethical code. The finer and tenderer virtues can have no place in a state of society in which war is the dominating form of activity, where industry is left to slaves, and where cannibalism and infanticide are recognized features of the national life. In the military

régime the sympathetic qualities of human nature, fostered by family life and man's need for social co-operation, are arrested, and the few virtues which war calls into exercise are of a hard, imperious, and loveless type. How potent war is in arresting ethical evolution is shown by the fact that in all the ancient civilizations, from the barbaric empires of the East to the comparative civilizations of Greece and Rome, no room was found for the specifically Christian virtues of gentleness, charity, mercy, benevolence, and forgiveness. Morality is not the root but the fruit of civilization, and hence in a national life based on antagonism to other national lives, those peculiarly civilized virtues which we identify with love of humanity as such, could not possibly blossom.

In Greece and Rome, in the minds of a few philosophers, there dawned the idea of an environment beyond the confines of the tribe, the nation, and the empire. Thanks to the world-wide conquests of Rome, the idea of a humanity beyond racial boundaries began to dawn upon the mind of philosophers, but at best the feeling was more sentimental than real. Socrates spoke of himself as a citizen of the world, and Roman Jurists were familiar with the idea of a humanity resting, not upon blood relationships and national privileges, but on natural rights. The Founder of Christianity gave this idea vivid and practical form when He boldly declared for the

brotherhood of man on the basis of one Father in Heaven. Evolutionists have not done justice to the great impetus given to the evolutionary process by the Founder of Christianity. Enamoured of massive generalizations, students of evolution have sometimes under-estimated the immense power in history of great personalities, who, by unlocking new forces in human nature, have frequently done more than general causes to modify the course of civilization. Unhappily personal influences tend to be transient, and thus it has happened that the pacific creed of the Founder of Christianity gradually was pressed into the service of war, and ended, in the Middle Ages, in narrowing the idea of human brotherhood till it became synonymous with a theological conception narrower even than the tribal conception with its dogma of destruction to all outside the pale. Christianity on the ethical side failed because the ideas of its Founder were in advance of the time. The Sermon on the Mount came into conflict with the ethical ideas of the military régime, which lasted till the economic revolution produced by the doctrine of Free Trade. In fact, the military régime is not yet extinct, as may be seen by the revival of Protection theories in our day, logically accompanied by the increase of armaments as a condition of increased trade and commerce.

Still the economic doctrine of Adam Smith is

destined to have incalculable influence upon ethical evolution. The relation of the doctrine of Free Trade to ethics is thus stated in my book on Adam Smith: "At the first blush it would seem as if, from the Darwinian point of view, Nature was given over to universal warfare. In *In Memoriam* Tennyson has given fit poetic expression to the sombre, not to say gloomy, thoughts which force themselves upon the cultured observer of Nature. Now it is usually forgotten that in order to emphasize the rationality of his view of the origin of the marvellous variety and complexity of species, it was necessary for Darwin to call special attention to the struggle for existence and its prime cause, namely, the tendency of population to outrun the means of subsistence. There are two other tendencies, however, which, as not bearing on his particular problem, Darwin did not specify, but which must be taken into account in any philosophical survey of History, namely, the tendency of man, in order to relieve the intensity of the struggle for existence, to unite with his fellows, and the tendency of man towards increasing intelligence by which he can increase the productive power of nature, thereby checking the fierce struggle which in the animal world goes on between population and subsistence. See how these two tendencies give to human evolution the quality of hopefulness. The fierce struggle for existence,

which among animals leads to warfare, among men has the same result in the earlier days of primitive life. But by virtue of his dawning intelligence and the germs of co-operation developed in family life, men discover the advantages of union. Whereas animals fight one another for food which is more or less scarce, men by co-operative methods begin to grow food, thereby increasing the productive power of nature. In order to facilitate the process comes division of labor, which leads to barter; and thus, instead of a fierce struggle for existence between isolated individuals, we have the beginning of a new method, that of co-operative assistance in the struggle for existence, and for result great increase in the total means of subsistence, and great increase in the individual share. The individual who co-operates with his fellows may not get all he would like, but he gets infinitely more than if he had earned his livelihood in solitary fashion."

Troublous times lie before us ere modern statesmen incorporate into their foreign policy the great truth which Adam Smith taught, namely, that all human interests are harmonious. Mankind does not seem yet advanced enough ethically to make the passage from nationalism to internationalism in pacific fashion. On the path of civilization there are great stages—tribal, national, and international. The state of hostility, as we have seen, is the normal

state of the race in early times. Outside of the tribe all is hatred, revenge, and bloodshed. The necessities of life compel kindred tribes to amalgamate. Towards those tribes which remain outside the union a policy of hostility is still pursued. Another step is taken when the tribes amalgamate over a still larger area, and the nation evolves. Within the national area, we find reciprocity of interests taking the place of the old idea of antagonism of interests: the descendants of the old Highland clans live and work peacefully with one another, whereas their ancestors lived in a state of feud. What brought about this change? The necessities of life have taught the descendants of the old fighting clansmen the truth that peaceful co-operation is more profitable and pleasurable than the old régime of hostility. If the student desires to see how the tribal stage merges into the national, through the gradual substitution of co-operation for hostility, he has only to peruse Guizot's book on civilization, where the process is traced in impressive panoramic fashion. The nineteenth century has borne the greatest share in the work of nation-creation. Out of the chaos of conflicting interests have been evolved the various harmonies which give to the respective nationalities a common unity. The course of national evolution has reached its natural end, and the energies of the various peoples are seeking international outlets.

The scramble in China, the race for territory in South Africa, the expansion of Britain in Egypt, what are all these but evidence of the fact that civilization is beginning to overflow its old boundaries, and is becoming world-wide in its aspirations? It is a suggestive fact that humanity has always been under the delusion that war is a necessary factor at each evolutionary stage. We have had tribal wars and national wars, and now we have a widespread belief that international interests are so antagonistic that war is unavoidable. Thus we find influential public men so saturated with the idea of the necessity of war that the national resources are spent enthusiastically in increasing warlike armaments, and speeches are made by prominent leaders with the object of stirring up the war spirit of the nation. One day we are on the eve of war with Russia in China, another day we are all but in the death-grips with France in the Soudan, and at some future day we may find ourselves in conflict with America over the Open Door. The doctrine of Adam Smith and Richard Cobden is treated as an exploded superstition. But the time is coming when its principles will be found to have deep international significance. What Cobden saw with clear and unerring vision was that Free Trade, which, as was seen in the abolition of the Corn Laws, broke down the monopoly of landowners to the advantage of the consumer,

would, when logically developed, break down national monopolies in the interest of humanity as such, apart from purely national distinctions. And thus, by substituting reciprocity of interests for antagonism of interests, Free Trade would render huge armaments as needless between nations as hostile tariffs. Free Trade, according to Cobden, was something more than a bringer of cheap food to the people: it was the application of the moral law to international affairs by the simple process of making the interest of consumers all over the world to consist in peaceful industry and the free spontaneous exchange of the products of their labor for the common good. Not only is Cobdenism the practical application to industry of the ethics of Christianity from the side of economics, but it is also a potent factor in the development of humanity on historic lines as interpreted by the Evolution philosophy. The future of civilization depends upon the success with which statesmen grasp the fact that humanity is drawing a stage nearer the realization of the ideal of poets and prophets, the ideal of universal felicity through comradeship resting on the basis of reciprocity of interests.

Human history, beginning with a sordid struggle for existence and an ethical code steeped in blood, ends with a harmonious civilization resting upon the all-embracing conception of human brotherhood.

Man and society, no longer at war, are destined to form one harmonious whole on the basis of reciprocity of service. With the magic wands of Reason, Science, and Industry, man on the basis of an egoism which is gradually being transfigured by sympathy, will yet lay the foundation of a new social order, in which peace, not strife, shall reign. Above the din of conflicting interests and warring passions may be heard, by those who listen in the spirit of evolutionary science, the inspiring tones of the humanitarian evangel—Peace on earth, and good will among men.

To those who have been accustomed to look at man and society from the old point of view, this theory of ethical development will be sufficiently startling. But if the Spencerian theory is true, there is no escape from the conclusion that morality is a natural product of social evolution. It is the consequence rather than the cause of progress. No doubt as society advances the effect in turn becomes a cause. In a higher state of civilization morality is pursued as its own end. Like art and knowledge, morality becomes detached from utility, and is pursued for its own sake. From the realities of life ideals emerge. The artistic genius, enamoured of his ideals, pursues them without regard to immediate utility. The philosopher, consumed with a passion for knowledge, sets at naught the attractions of the market-place: he follows Truth though the heavens

fall. So, too, with the devotee of goodness. His mind responds intuitively to high and noble deeds, and his soul quivers with a subdued delight at the thought of virtue. In him the experiences of the race have become organic instincts; he thinks not of happiness—he soars into the ampler air of virtue. The good man is not good because of the connection between happiness and goodness; he is good because, thanks to the triumph of morality in the long ancestral past, his whole being is responsive to disinterested motives, and thrills with altruistic fervor. Such men increase the social fund of morality, and become in their turn potent causes in social development. In our devotion to general causes, let us not forget the part played in evolution by those rare souls who, by the purity of their lives and the magnetism of their natures, tune the souls of their fellows to noble issues. As I have expressed it elsewhere, many pleasures and pains are the fundamental elements of life, but they are no more to be identified with the ethical fruits of civilization than is the rose-bush and its fragrance with the soil at its roots. By means of the subtle chemistry of Sympathy man purifies the passions of human nature, and by pressing them into the service of the ideal invests them with an ethical purpose which, when incarnated in the moral pioneers of the race, becomes fragrant of the divine.

CHAPTER XI

THE EVOLUTION OF RELIGION

WHAT of religion? Is it also a natural product of the great evolutionary process? Here we enter upon a thorny path. The evolutionist who seeks to give a natural account of religion has to reckon at the outset with the two antagonists with whom he was confronted in the ethical arena — the Supernaturalist and the Intuitionist. The Supernaturalist's conception of religion follows naturally from his conception of man and his origin. Grant the truth of the biblical account of man's creation, probation, and fall, and a highly plausible theory is provided of man's religious history. In man's original relation to the Creator we have an explanation of the religious sentiment; and the fall of man abundantly accounts for the existence of evil which, like a malevolent being, has ever dogged the footsteps of humanity.

So true does this theory seem to be to human experience, that for centuries it did not occur to thinkers to doubt the authenticity of the biblical

record. Belief in the record was strengthened when the Old Testament was bound up with the history and fortunes of the Jews. Spinoza, in this as in much else centuries ahead of his time, threw doubt upon the biblical record ; and since his day, especially within the last fifty years, the attitude of thinkers, even within the Church, has undergone an entire change. By admitting the presence in the Bible of large slices of legendary matter, the Higher Critics have knocked away the foundation of the orthodox theory of religion. Relegate to the region of myth the supernatural creation of man and his disobedience, and at once the mind is prepared for the reception of the evolution theory of the rise of man. Human misery and wretchedness, no longer the result of Divine displeasure, become the natural consequences of man's unequal contest with his environment. Religion, like ethics, is seen to be determined by the struggle for existence—is, in short, the intellectual and emotional reflection of that struggle.

The Intuitionists, while admitting the breakdown of the supernatural theory, refuse to subscribe to the view that the religious sentiment has no immovable subjective roots. Many Intuitionists opposed supernaturalism on the ground that it failed to place religion on a rational basis. Rejecting the dogmas of the fall and original sin, the Intuitionists of the

eighteenth and nineteenth centuries fell back upon a supposed natural religion. Great as are the differences between the Deists of the last century and the Theists of to-day as represented by the late Dr. Martineau, they agree in holding that man is endowed with the capacity of forming enlightened views of Deity, and of rising by a process of intuition into a knowledge of, and communion with, Deity. In their view, supernaturalism as held in the Established Churches is a deformation of natural religion. In order to free religion from its supernatural corruptions, Lord Herbert published his famous treatise, in which he labored to show that Reason when interrogated on rational principles testified to the universality of belief in God, moral worship, and a future recompense. These truths, according to Lord Herbert, shone full upon primitive man till obscured by the fraud and deception of priests. The same idea prompted Locke in his work on *The Reasonableness of Christianity*. Christianity, in so far as it was a supernatural system, was simply the republication of Natural Religion. "Christianity in this view has introduced nothing new; it only brought the original true religion of reason again to light, by removing the false additions to it; but it soon again fell under the same fate of superstitious distortion by mysterious dogmas." As regards their fundamental positions, John Locke and James Martineau were at one.

In the sphere of religion as in philosophy, David Hume proved a destructive force. He combated the idea of intuitive religious ideas, just as he combated the belief in intuitive intellectual conceptions. In regard to religion, Hume went beyond mere theorizing; he justified his attack upon religious Intuitionism by his work *The Natural History of Religion*. In that work we have a precursor of the evolutionary theory as applied to religion. According to Hume, religion has its roots not in the reason but in the passions. Primitive man was not prompted to worship, as the Deists held, by feelings of gratitude, wonder, awe, aroused by calm contemplation of the works of Nature. Hume clearly saw that the faculty of contemplation, and the feelings of gratitude, wonder, and awe, were products of a high state of civilization, and could not exist in primitive man, who was really at the mercy of his passions and his imagination. In that case, Monotheism was not the oldest form of religion. The monotheistic conception demanded a higher type of intellect than early man possessed. Man's early religion, according to Hume, was not monotheistic but fetichistic. Ignorance of the forces of Nature drove primitive man to personify them, to clothe them with his own qualities greatly enlarged. In a word, man created God in his own image.

In the absence of definite knowledge of primitive

man, Hume's sketch of the origin and development of religion is largely speculative; but his main position, that religion takes its rise in the passions rather than the reason, is amply justified by the Evolution philosophy. Primitive man was not religious because he was a reasoning contemplative being: he was driven to religion through ignorance and fear. From one point of view, indeed, religion is just another name for primitive man's theory of the world and of his relation to it—a theory, observe, directly suggested to him by his contest with his environment. Just as primitive man's economic, political, and ethical ideals were determined by his environment, so his religious ideals had a like origin. To primitive man the environment was in the main hostile. Nature was as unfriendly as neighboring tribes. Ignorant of the laws and forces around him, primitive man must have lived in terror. How could he explain those forces except on the supposition that somehow or other they were manifestations of intelligences akin to the human, though vastly transcending it in power? What was the attitude of primitive man to those overwhelming nature-forces? Clearly the same in kind, though greatly differing in degree, as the attitude of man to a formidable tribesman, chief, or king, namely, the attitude of abject submission showing itself in conduct of a propitiatory kind. Out of this grew all

those rites and ceremonies whose object was to ward off the anger and obtain the favor of the god.

How did primitive man conceive of the mysterious power or powers which wielded the forces of nature? According to Mr. Spencer the gods were deified ancestors, and the earliest form of the religious sentiment was ancestor-worship. In his admirable little book, *The Idea of God*, Mr. John Fiske thus describes the Spencerian view of the origin of religion: "It was in accordance with this primitive theory of things that the earliest form of religious worship was developed. In all races of men, so far as can be determined, this was the worship of ancestors. The other self of the dead chieftain continued after death to watch over the interests of the tribe, to defend it against the attack of enemies, to reward brave warriors, and to punish traitors and cowards. His favor must be propitiated with ceremonies like those in which a subject does homage to a living ruler. If offended by neglect or irreverent treatment, defeat in battle, damage by flood or fire, visitations of famine or pestilence, were interpreted as marks of his anger." Ancestor-worship when reduced to its psychological root is found to rest upon primitive man's conceptions of a double personality. By means of it dreams, swoons, trances, are explained. What happens in sleep

and unconsciousness? The hypothesis of the *other self* explains the savage's wanderings during sleep, and accounts for the presence in his dreams of parents, comrades, or enemies known to be dead and buried. In swoons and trances the other self is believed to be temporarily absent from the body; and at death the soul is believed to have gone to the ghost world. It still exercises influence upon its old environment—friendly or hostile, according to its relations with its former associates. In the case of a departed chief two feelings spring up among the members of the tribe,—desire to do him honor, and a desire to secure his favor. Out of this spring sacred places. His tomb grows into a temple, the tomb itself becomes an altar upon which provisions are placed—a custom which is the germ of religious oblations and festivals. Closely connected with this are propitiatory sacrifices as a means of securing the favor and support of the god in battle.

By what process does ancestor-worship, with its few simple ceremonies, grow into Polytheism and Monotheism with their complex institutions, priesthoods, and ritual? Religious like ethical sentiments and ideas are determined by economic necessities and political structures. The expansion of the family into the tribe, and the tribe into the kingdom, leads to an expansion of the religious idea. Here, as in the economic and political spheres, war has great

influence in moulding the ideas and sentiments of primitive man. In the words of Mr. Spencer: "The overrunnings of tribe by tribe and nation by nation, which have been everywhere and always going on, have necessarily tended to impose one cult upon another, not destroying the worship of the conquered; the conquerors bring in their own worships—either carrying them on among themselves only, or making the conquered join in them." In either case the result is a multiplication of deities, priests, creeds, and rituals. The monotheistic idea does not evolve till one people either by superiority triumphs over all rivals, or where circumstances, as in the case of the Jews, render the worship of the tribal deity of such a fanatical and exclusive nature that no amount of military pressure can bring them to adopt the religion and worship the gods of the conquered.

One important fact to be noted in the evolution of religion is that the characters of the deities are also determined by the economic environment of the tribe. Where war is viewed as the natural method of tribal and national expansion, the deity is represented as favoring the warlike sentiments. The gods of Militarism demand human sacrifice, take delight in scenes of cruelty, authorize—as in the Old Testament—the wholesale slaughter of men, women, and children. No greater evidence that

the God of the Jews, and of Christianity, is a product of evolution could be had than the following, from Deuteronomy xx. 10-18: "And if it (the city) will make no peace with thee, but will make war against thee, then thou shalt besiege it: and when the Lord thy God hath delivered it into thine hands, thou shalt smite every male thereof with the edge of the sword. . . . But of the cities of these people, which the Lord thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou shalt save alive nothing that breatheth; but thou shalt utterly destroy them." How true is it that man creates God in his own image.

Highly suggestive is the fact that with the change from militarism to industrialism the character of the Deity also undergoes a change. Since mankind grasped the truth that national prosperity was better secured by industry than by war, two important results followed: the laws of Nature began to be studied, and encouragement was given to the industrial virtues, which favored peaceful co-operation, as opposed to the militant virtues, which made for strife. It was no coincidence that Christianity sprang up during a time when the world was at peace. The conception of the Deity under the figure of a Father filled with love and compassion, who showered his gifts alike on the just and the unjust, could not possibly have arisen during a time

of tribal or national warfare. It was no coincidence either that the sweet and winsome gospel of Jesus of Nazareth was transformed during the turmoil of the Middle Ages into a gospel of hate, and promulgated by means of the thumbscrew, the rack, the sword, and the scaffold. Nor is it a coincidence that to-day, when the war spirit is rampant, the clergy should be declaring that the Sermon on the Mount is impracticable, and that the powder-cart is a more potent factor in spreading civilization than the Cross of Christ. So long as nations act upon the belief that the prosperity of the one can only be had through the impoverishment of others, so long they will view war as a necessary factor in civilization, and so long will the clergy worship, not the All-Pitiful Father of Jesus Christ, but the bellicose tribal deity of the Jews.

In another way Industrialism strikes at the root of supernaturalism—by the rapidity with which it seizes and popularizes the conception of law. The primitive theory of the Universe rests upon the idea of the miraculous. Truth was sought not by observation but by divination; prosperity was the result not of industry but of war, tempered with faith in the god of battles; disease was not the result of breach of Nature's laws, but of spiritual possession. In such an atmosphere Industrialism could not possibly thrive; and accordingly we find

that when man began to turn his attention to pacific industry, study of Nature took the place of fantastic theorizings about extra-mundane existences, and activities which previously were lost in the quicksands of superstition were turned in the fruitful direction of intellectual progress and social amelioration. There is a striking connection between the decline of the theological spirit and the rise of the humanitarian spirit. In its early days Theology embraced in its sweep all phases of human activity — Politics, Industry, Art, Science, and Philosophy. The result was the stagnation of the human intellect and the hardening of the human heart. Even at its best the theological ideal as it affects society cannot compare with the humanitarian ideal. It is far more important, as Diderot has remarked, to work for the prevention of misery than to multiply places of refuge for the miserable.

The place hitherto occupied by Theology will henceforth be taken by Science. The religious sentiments will no longer be under the guidance of a theory of life which, under all its transformations, is identical at root with the ancestor-worship of primitive man. Science will increase rather than diminish the feelings of wonder, awe, and humility which are the real roots of religious feeling, and so long as this is the case, man need not fear that with the decay of Theology a blight will fall upon the earth.

The religious sentiment, so long distorted by Theology, is made up of two distinct feelings — a feeling of relationship with Nature as expressed by Wordsworth, which the Evolution philosophy has greatly intensified, and a deep sense of the unity, trustworthiness, and beneficence of the great cosmic forces. Now as of old it is true that underneath the righteous are the everlasting arms.

CHAPTER XII

THE PHILOSOPHIC ASPECT OF SPENCERISM

So far, the Spencerian theory has been presented on the purely scientific side as a philosophy of the Cosmos. In dealing with the knowable, Mr. Spencer's great aim has been to frame into one all-comprehensive generalization the separate generalizations of Science ; in other words, to trace from star to soul the working of one universal evolutionary process, scientifically interpretable in terms of Force. For purposes of convenience, phenomena are divided into astronomic, geologic, biologic, psychologic, and sociologic, but through these divisions one process holds sway. While the Cosmos as a whole is evolving from simplicity to complexity, by successive integrations and differentiations, the parts are also subject to the same law of evolution. "So understood," says Mr. Spencer, "evolution becomes not one in principle only, but in fact." But man is not satisfied with positive knowledge. For practical purposes science suffices, but no sooner has the philosophic mind brought phenomena within the sweep of mechanical explanations, than it discovers

that Force, which is the last word of science, is far from being the last word of philosophy. To the philosopher, Force is but a symbol; atoms and energies have only relative validity. What is the nature of that Reality of which Force is a symbol? The Spencerian answer to that question in no way affects the great evolutionary generalization as expounded in previous chapters. As remarked in an earlier portion of this book, "Spencerism stands on its merits as the philosophy of the knowable, and the only organized body of thought which has its roots in experience, and is a guide to the understanding of life theoretically and practically."

Apart from practical life, science has great intellectual and emotional bearings. Deeper than purely mechanical interpretations of Nature lie fundamental questions of thought and being. So long as man is endowed with intelligence, he will never cease from attempts to solve the great Sphinx riddle of existence. Generation after generation of storm-tossed thinkers have sighed in vain for a glimpse of the haven of intellectual and emotional rest. Oppressed by a sense of the unfathomable mystery of life, deeply reflective natures, with Job-like sadness, have been prostrated in the dust by a feeling of mental helplessness and moral perplexity. Undismayed by the failure of philosophers and religionists from Plato to Hegel,

and from Job to Newman, men to-day are as busy as ever in their attempts to find an answer to the riddle of the Sphinx. Behind phenomena with their fleetingness, is there a permanent Power, and, if so, can we discover its nature? Can we ascribe to it personality? Can science, as interpreted by philosophy, throw some light upon the great and fundamental question of purpose? Have the vast cosmical transformations which science reveals a definite significance? Is humanity, in the words of Mr. Fiske, a mere local incident in an endless series of aimless cosmical changes? What answer has the Spencerian philosophy to give to these questions? In philosophy as in science the starting-point of inquiry is self-consciousness. The evolution of consciousness has been traced by Mr. Spencer from its earliest dim manifestations in animal life to its highest manifestations as cultured intelligence. Here the task of the scientific evolutionist ends; but the philosophic evolutionist must proceed further; he has to determine, if possible, the nature and limits of intelligence. Is the mind of man rigidly confined to the world of positive verifiable fact, or does it possess capacities which link it to an extra-mundane existence?

Philosophy is rooted in Psychology. The central question upon which all other questions rest is this: ~~What~~ What is the nature of Knowledge? Upon Episte-

mology rest Cosmology and Ontology. It is useless to endeavor to discover the real significance of the World and Being until we discover the nature and limits of Knowledge. In differences of psychological theory, all differences among philosophers take their rise. What, then, is Mr. Spencer's psychological theory viewed from the standpoint of philosophy? The answer to the questions: How do we know? How does Knowledge develop? has already been given in the chapter dealing with the Evolution of Mind. The question now is: What is the nature and limitation of Knowledge? The answer to this is involved in the reply to this further question: What do we know? To this the Spencian reply is: We know things in their relations. This view is summed up in the phrase Relativity of Knowledge. Even since Hume, with his rigorous and somewhat sceptical analysis of mind, the idea of the relativity of human knowledge has held an important place in philosophical discussions. Kant, whose aim was to overthrow Hume's Empiricism, placed the doctrine of Relativity in a stronger position than ever by his artificial theory of the categories of knowledge. In his famous essay, Sir William Hamilton made the relativity of knowledge the basis of his attack on the Absolute of German philosophers. "We think in relation," said Hamilton, "and therefore by the very nature of the mind we are debarred

from knowledge of the unrelated, the Absolute." Mr. Spencer has elaborated and strengthened the Hamiltonian position by a careful analysis of the nature and the development of intelligence. If, as Mr. Spencer shows, all knowledge is classifying, obviously our knowledge of one thing is impossible, except through all knowledge of other things. "A thing is perfectly known only when it is in all respects like certain things previously observed; that in proportion to the number of respects in which it is unlike them is the extent to which it is unknown; and that hence, when it has absolutely no attribute in common with anything else, it must be absolutely beyond the bounds of knowledge."

The doctrine of Relativity is so abundantly in harmony with science, that it might be left to stand without further elaboration, were it not that it has been vigorously attacked in recent years by the Hegelian school of philosophers. Instead of dwelling, with Mr. Spencer, on the inherent relativity of intelligence, it may be desirable to look at the subject from a different point of view. Not only do we think in relation, but Nature itself is one huge mass of relativity. In dealing with Nature, we deal not with inherent substances but with bundles of relations. The impression which the observer first forms of Nature is, that it is composed of numerous independent passive substances which are energized

by independent forces. Of the actual existence of Matter as an independent substance, the observer entertains no doubt. Matter is supposed to exist in three forms,—solid, liquid, and gaseous,—each with its different properties, to which the individuality of objects is supposed to be due. The atomic theory is based upon the idea of Matter as made up of substances incomprehensively small, to whose properties and combinations the complexity of the Cosmos is due. Let us examine the so-called properties of atoms. That hardness is a property of the atom is not doubted by the man of science. But what is hardness? It is not a property at all—it is a relation. Hardness is simply the measure of the “resistance offered to the separation of molecules from one another.” Obviously, there is no sense in talking of hardness in a single atom. Again, we cannot conceive of atoms apart from color of some kind. But what is color? Is it a property of matter? Color is not a property of matter; it is due to certain vibratory motions in the atoms, and is related to the rate of energy. If all substances were at absolute zero in temperature, there would be no vibratory motions, and consequently no color. Substance itself would be invisible. The same holds good of inertia, mass, heat,—the primary as well as the secondary properties,—which are no longer viewed as properties but as conditions of matter.

Matter is not a thing but a state, and except in relation has no existence. No force in Nature can be isolated from other forces. As has been said, "What we call solids, liquids, and gases, with all the laws that belong to each of them, are simply the relations of heat-energy to groups of atoms, not the properties or laws that may be asserted of atoms as such." Nature resolves itself into a scene of unvarying activity, and what appear to us to be distinct existences, isolated and independent, are really relative conditions of that activity. For this view of Nature we are indebted to the theory of the conservation and transformation of Forces — which on the philosophic side rests on the view that Nature is not an assemblage of existences, but a bundle of forces whose existences are known to us by the relative states in which they manifest themselves. Helmholtz expresses the dynamic conception of Nature when he says, "Every property or quality of a thing is in reality nothing but its capability of producing certain effects on other things." Stallo, in his book *Concepts of Modern Science*, sums up the new view which has emerged from the doctrine of the conservation and transformation of Forces as follows: "The real existence of things is co-extensive with their qualitative and quantitative determinations, and both are in their nature relations, quality resulting from mutual action, and quantity being

simply a ratio between terms neither of which is absolute. Every objectively real thing is thus a term in a numberless series of mutual implications, and forms of reality beyond these implications are as unknown to experience as to thought. There is no absolute material quality, no absolute material substance, no absolutely physical unit, no absolutely simple physical entity, no absolute physical constant, no absolute standard, either of quantity or quality. There is no form of material existence which is either its own support or its own measure, and which abides either quantitatively or qualitatively otherwise than in perpetual change in an unceasing flow of mutations." And thus what Mr. Spencer finds to be true of mind, that it works on the principle of Relativity, science also finds to be true of the Cosmos, where Relativity reigns supreme.

How do the Hegelians get their Absolute? They quarrelled with Hamilton for making the Absolute equivalent to pure identity, an abstraction of the intellect, an absolute unit which the Hegelians have no difficulty in showing cannot possibly exist. The quarrel of the Hegelians with Hamilton and Spencer is that they identify the Absolute with something out of relation, and then declare that the Absolute is unknowable because they have placed it outside the arena of knowledge. The Absolute as the negation of all relation is an absurdity—it cannot be

known, because if it exists it exists out of relation to thought. How, then, do the Hegelians conceive the Absolute? Not as the negation of relations, but as the unification of relations. With Hegel the Absolute is not a barren identity, a sterile unity, but a unity reached through differences. The Absolute, according to Hegel, is an identity which manifests itself through distinctions. Now what, after all, is Hegel's Absolute but simply another name for the totality of cosmic relations? Hegel does not place the Absolute on one side and the Relative on the other. Viewing the Universe as a whole, and combining in thought process and product, he calls the result the Absolute. His system rests upon the relativity of thought and being, but by laying hold of the ideas of reciprocity and development, and looking at the process in its totality, Hegel makes Nature an absolute unity manifesting itself in perpetual differences. Hegel's system differs from Materialism simply in making logic instead of matter, the idea instead of the atom, the starting-point. Strip Hegelism of its misty phraseology, and its Absolute is no other than the Relative with its roots in human experience and human thought. As against Hamilton's notion of the Absolute, Hegel's polemic was highly effective; but reduced to its ultimate analysis, his Absolute differs in no essential from Spencer's doctrine of Relativity. Where

Spencer contents himself with tracing the evolution and defining the limits of self-consciousness, Hegel deifies the logical process and calls it God.

If, then, we can only know things in their relations, the question immediately emerges — What do we know of things? How does the world stand related to our consciousness? Is the material world really what it seems? A partial answer has been given by the insight which is obtained of the Universe when discussing the relativity of knowledge. The world is not what it seems, an assemblage of independent things composed of substances with their respective properties. The multifiform energies of Nature are reducible to one form of activity protean in its manifestations. The phenomena of Nature are due not to the combined action of numerous agents endowed with substance and acted upon by powers, but to the ceaseless transformations of Force or Energy. As James Hinton expresses it in one of his suggestive chapters on Nature: "We are obliged to think of the forces as one, because, in fact, they will not remain distinct. We cannot practically isolate any one of them, except for some special and temporary purpose: it is constantly escaping from us and passing off into other forms. Motion resolves itself in sound and heat; heat flies off in motion, in chemical or electric change; electricity is lost in sparks of light, in magnetism, in mechanical disrup-

tions, in the production of chemical power ; chemical power no sooner acts than it is no more chemical, and must be recognized in explosions, in electric currents, in heat. No force can be permanently retained ; if we need to preserve any one, we must perpetually generate it afresh. Nor can we isolate any of the forces from the rest in our thought of Nature, any more than in our operations upon her. To do so would be for the intellect to choose unreason ; to create disorder where order reigns. We should be perpetually losing our force without reason, and finding it reappear without necessity. We can only follow one, by recognizing the essential sameness of them all. . . . Owing to the limited capacity of our senses, which only perceive a few of the multitudinous processes which are really taking place in Nature, we continually lose the chain of her operations. Its links are ever passing out of the sphere of our perception ; and, reappearing at a distant spot or point of time, they produce on us the impression of original and disconnected actions. From this cause—from this imperfection of our senses—arose the false conception of the various forces as distinct existences or causes ; from this cause it was that that false conception so long maintained its sway. If our sense had been penetrating enough to follow the entire course of Nature's action, and to recognize it in every shape, that

thought never could have arisen. And thus it is that reason sets it aside, by supplementing sense, and teaching us to recognize the existence of that which we cannot see. By tracing the strict chain of causation throughout Nature, it substitutes unvarying activity for imaginary agents. . . . Nor can we better picture the activity of Nature to our minds than by conceiving it as a vast, even a limitless, multitude of vibrations—a rush and whirl, a maze, of actions to and fro; shifting their place, changing their mode, yielding to each other, modified and altered in endless ways; ceasing and recommencing in every quarter, with nothing constant but that the exactness of the balance be maintained.”

Is the conception of Force as the fundamental fact of the Universe philosophically satisfying? Many critics have assumed that Mr. Spencer is a Materialist because his system is founded upon the persistence of Force, overlooking the fact that Mr. Spencer, when viewing the Cosmos from the side of philosophy, distinctly states that Force is not the ultimate Reality, but simply the symbol of that Reality. To make Force the ultimate Reality would be to do violence to the principle of relativity, which forbids the reduction of the Universe to a unit. Unity and duality are relative conceptions, and therefore all materialistic theories, whether resting upon a static or dynamic concep-

tion,—the Atomic theory or the theory of Energy,—are ruled out of court. Mr. Spencer's theory of the world grows naturally and logically out of his Psychology. True to his doctrine of the relativity of knowledge, Mr. Spencer recognizes that Force, though a scientific ultimate, has only a relative value as a philosophic explanation, inasmuch as the idea of Force is derived from our muscular activity. On this point he is quite explicit. In *First Principles*, at the conclusion of the chapter, "The Persistence of Force," Mr. Spencer says: "But, now, what is the force of which we predicate persistence? It is not the force we are immediately conscious of in our own muscular efforts, for this does not persist. . . . By the persistence of Force, we really mean the persistence of some Cause which transcends our knowledge and conception. In asserting it we assert an Unconditioned Reality, without beginning or end." Similarly, in the concluding chapter, Mr. Spencer states his position thus: "Over and over again it has been shown, in various ways, that the deepest truths we can reach are simply statements of the widest uniformities in our experience of the relations of Matter, Motion, and Force—are but symbols of the unknown Reality. A power of which the nature remains forever inconceivable, and to which no limits in time or space can be imagined, works in us certain effects. . . . The interpretation

of all phenomena in terms of Matter, Motion, and Force is nothing more than the reduction of our complex symbols of thought to the simplest symbols; and when the equation has been brought to its lowest terms, the symbols remain symbols still." What compels us to treat Force, not as the ultimate Reality, but as a symbol? The theory of the relativity of knowledge. In the words of James Hinton: "Whatever be that secret activity in Nature of which all the 'forces' are exhibitions to our senses, we know one thing respecting it, namely, that it is not force. Force is a sensation of our own, and is no more to be attributed to the objects in connection with which we feel it than are the brightness of a color or the sweetness of a taste. . . . The feeling from which we derive the idea of force rests upon a consciousness of difficulty, of opposition, of imperfect ability. It arises from resisted effort. In fact, it is our own imperfection we ascribe to Nature when we imagine that our feeling of force truly represents its working."

The Spencerian philosophical attitude to the great problem is summed up in the concluding words of his "Ecclesiastical Institutions": "But one truth must grow ever clearer—the truth that there is an Inscrutable Existence everywhere manifested, to which we can neither find nor conceive beginning or end. Amid the mysteries which become the more mysterious the more they are thought about, there

will remain the one absolute certainty that he [the philosopher] is ever in presence of an Infinite and Eternal Energy from which all things proceed." Thus the Spencerian philosophy shades into religion, and finds expression in the note of interrogation of Zophar, the Naamathite, the friend of Job : "Canst thou by searching find out God? Canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection?"

CHAPTER XIII

THE RELIGIOUS ASPECT OF SPENCERISM

THAT the negative attitude of the Spencerian philosophy towards religion should give great dissatisfaction was only what was to be expected. The human mind is not easily reconciled to an attitude of suspense. Theologians challenged the views of Mr. Spencer on historical and religious grounds. They dissented from his evolutionary sketch of religion as originating in ancestor-worship, and they repudiated his conclusion that man's religious conceptions and aspirations are ineffective attempts to solve the insoluble, and have no objective validity. Idealistic philosophers, on the other hand, combated Spencerism on the ground that his religious negativism had its root in a defective psychology. If mind is chained to experience, if the senses are the only inlets of knowledge, there can be no pathway to the supernatural except by miraculous interposition, of which Idealistic philosophers are not enamoured. Clearly, if the supernatural was to be saved from the blight of nega-

tivity, it could only be by a new analysis of the mind in order to discover principles transcending experience. Of course, by this method, Christianity as a revealed religion could not hope to be vindicated. Indeed, the Idealist philosophers had no wish to come to the rescue of the religion of the churches. Hegelians, as a school, have turned their backs upon popular supernaturalism. Their aim rather has been to give a philosophical basis to Theism as opposed to Agnosticism.

The position of the Idealist has been stated thus: "There is something more in the world of experience than a mere succession of sense-data. Sense-experience sets the mind to working on its own account and causes it to deliver itself of truths which are not contained in any of our actual experiences or in all of them together, but which extend over a wider ground than experience can possibly cover." The theory of innate ideas is no longer held. The new view rather is that the mind is possessed of innate capacities, the power of assimilating and interpreting sense-data. Consciousness, say the Idealists, cannot at once be the product and the interpreter of experience. Self-consciousness, according to the Neo-Kantians, is impossible except on the assumption that in the mind there exists a unifying spiritual principle which, so to speak, sits at the loom of Time and weaves the isolated unre-

lated threads of experience into an organized coherent whole.

Have we not here an illustration of the tendency of the mind to which attention has already been called—that of personifying the processes of Nature, of converting the final product into an initial, all-controlling agent? Just as Idealistic biologists explained life-processes by means of an entity called the Vital Force, so Idealistic psychologists postulate an entity called the Self-conscious Principle as the primary agent in converting sense-data into Knowledge. These philosophers fall into their mistake through neglect of the great fact of relativity upon which Nature and Consciousness alike depend. They assume that Mind and Matter exist as separate independent entities, whereas they are simply relative existences. The one apart from the other is unthinkable. We know nothing of Mind apart from Matter, and nothing of Matter apart from Mind. As Professor Seth Pringle-Pattison has admirably pointed out: “The ultimate fact of knowledge is neither pure subject nor pure object, neither a mere sense nor a mere ego, but an ego or subject conscious of sensations. It is not a mere unity, but a unity in duality.” For purposes of analysis philosophers distinguish between the subject and the object, but when they forget that the distinction is purely logical, and has no counterpart

in Nature, when, in a word, they treat a logical abstraction as a concrete reality, they are guilty of the scholastic error of constructing the world out of universals. This is exactly the error into which Professor Green fell. Proceeding on the assumption that consciousness is not the result of the action and interaction of matter and mind, but is the work of a single spiritual principle, Professor Green bridges the gulf which separates the human and the divine by identifying this "Spiritual Principle" with the universal or divine self-consciousness. In his hands human consciousness, which he elevated to the rank of an entity, becomes a reproduction in the human organism of the eternal complete self-consciousness. Thus at one stroke the process of knowledge in the mind is transformed into an agent. By personifying knowledge Professor Green reaches the conception of an eternal Knower who sustains the world, and who reproduces himself in the mind of man.

Let us see to what this attempt to secure a Theistic ground for the universe leads. What support does religion get from the Neo-Kantian and Hegelian attempts to identify human consciousness with an eternal complete self-consciousness? "From a world of spirits to a supreme Spirit," says Professor Ward, "is a possible step." On this line of advance, Idealists like Green and Ward hope to secure a basis for Natural Theology. The great difficulty which

faces Idealism is the problem of personality. The basis of the system is the identity of the human and the divine self-consciousness. Now human self-consciousness is the product of two factors, the Ego and the Non-Ego. We cannot think of self-consciousness as a unity; it is a unity in duality. It manifests itself through a constant reduction of differences to identity. Can we conceive of a divine self-consciousness working by analogous methods? Manifestly, if the two forms of self-consciousness are the same in kind, if the human is a reproduction of the divine, God must be, like man, a thinking, feeling, progressive Intelligence. Hegel saw this difficulty, and boldly represented Deity as the product of evolution! Lotze, who opposed Hegelism, approached the problem from another point, but when he came to deal with the question of divine personality, he was intellectually stranded. Deal with generalities after the fashion of Green and Ward, claim a monopoly of intellectual haziness, and antagonistic views can live in the mind comfortably enough together, but bring them into the daylight of analysis, and the unity of Idealistic Theism is seen to be the unity of a landscape in a fog. How true this is may be seen by the shifts to which Lotze is driven to render intelligible his conception of a divine personality. In his *History of Modern Philosophy*, Dr. Höffding thus discusses the theistic

position of Lotze: "Lotze conceives the world-principle as an Absolute Personality, and he defends the transference of the concept of personality to the Absolute Being as follows: The Absolute Being must be personal, because personality alone possesses inner independence and originality, while the concept of personality only finds imperfect realization in finite beings who are dependent on external conditions. Lotze, it is true, admits that a personal life involves resistance to be overcome and the faculty of suffering and receiving as well as of working. But if it is asked, How can an Absolute Being, subject to no limitations, suffer? Lotze answers that the feeling of the Deity must be set in motion by the inner happenings of its own creative imagination! But it is a great question whether such a self-created opposition can have any serious significance, especially since it can at any moment be destroyed at will. Personalities, as we know them, at least have to fight against barriers which are neither self-created nor easily set aside; the analogy on which Lotze builds, therefore, seems to break down at the critical point. Moreover, according to the most probable interpretation of his confused and hesitating utterances on the subject, Lotze diverges from Weisse in holding that the form of time is not applicable to the Absolute Being; a personal being which does not develop in time, a timeless life and a

timeless suffering and working — these are concepts which make too great demands on our power of drawing analogies ! ”

The attempt to rise from the human self-consciousness to a divine self-consciousness by means of the principle of psychological identity lands us in bewildering contradictions. Abolish the idea of an environment and you abolish the exciting cause of man's psychical nature — his reason, his feelings, his will. But for God the Uncreated, the Eternal, there can be no environment, and consequently there can be no need for what is understood by reason, feeling, and will, which are all marks of imperfection, and have their root in biological phenomena. God the all-Perfect, the all-Knowing, cannot be conceived as reaching knowledge through a process of reasoning, and as little can He be conceived as loving and sorrowing, which are distinctive marks of finiteness. Considerations such as these led Spinoza to empty his conception of Deity of all anthropomorphic qualities. In his view, to make the term “God” embrace the conception of a magnified human personality, and of the Uncreated, the Related, the Eternal One, was as illogical as to embrace under the term “dog” the barking animal of that name and the dog-star, Sirius.

The same considerations led Mr. Spencer, in defining his philosophical attitude towards Theism, to

write as follows: "To believe in a divine consciousness men must refrain from thinking what is meant by consciousness—must stop short with verbal propositions; and propositions which they are debarred from rendering into thoughts will more and more fail to satisfy them. Of course like difficulties present themselves when the will of God is spoken of. So long as we refrain from giving a definite meaning to the word will, we may say that it is possessed by the Cause of All Things as readily as we may say that love of approbation is possessed by a circle; but when from the words we pass to the thoughts they stand for, we find that we can no more unite in consciousness the terms of the one proposition than we can those of the other. Whoever conceives any other will than his own must do so in terms of his own will, which is the sole will directly known to him, all other wills being only inferred. But will, as each is conscious of it, presupposes a motive, a prompting desire of some kind. Absolute indifference excludes the conception of will. Moreover will, as implying a prompting desire, connotes some end contemplated as one to be achieved, and ceases with the achievement of it; some other will referring to some other end taking its place. That is to say, will like emotion necessarily supposes a series of states of consciousness. The conception of a divine will, derived from that of the human

will, involves, like it, localization in space and time. The willing of each end excludes from consciousness for an interval the willing of other ends ; and therefore is inconsistent with that omnipresent activity which simultaneously works out an infinity of ends. It is the same with the ascription of intelligence. Not to dwell on the seriality and limitation implied as before, we may note that intelligence, as alone conceivable by us, presupposes existences independent of it and objective to it. It is carried on in terms of changes primarily wrought by alien activities — the impressions generated by things beyond consciousness, and the ideas derived from such impressions. To speak of an intelligence which exists in the absence of all such alien activities, is to use a meaningless word. If to the corollary that the First Cause, considered as intelligent, must be continually affected by independent objective activities, it is replied that these have become such by act of creation, and were previously included in the First Cause, then the reply is that in such case the First Cause could, before this creation, have had nothing to generate in it such changes as those constituting what we call intelligence, and must therefore have been unintelligent at the time when intelligence was most called for. Hence it is clear that the intelligence ascribed, answers in no respect to that which we know by the name. It is intelligence

out of which all the characters constituting it have vanished."

Suppose we accept as valid the Idealistic conception of a supreme self-conscious principle as the ground of existence, the question arises as to the relation to it of the human self-consciousness. Consciousness in man, according to Idealism, is the highest form in which existence appears. Apart from the Supreme Spiritual Principle, man has no existence. He is the incarnation under imperfect physical conditions of the Supreme Principle. What guarantee is there that this physically conditioned consciousness will exist as an entity after the break-up of material conditions? There is no more guarantee in the case of Idealism than in the case of Materialism. No thinker of any note now defends Materialism. Sun worship, indeed, is a more dignified attitude towards the Cosmos than atom worship, and prostration before the soul of the Universe is more creditable to the savage than deification of ether. To what were vagaries of materialistic scientists due? They were due to the neglect, common to men of science, of philosophic thinking. Materialists were entirely unaware of the fact that not one step can be taken in scientific generalization without the aid of certain all-embracing categories of thought. Philosophy has got past the stage of viewing the Universe as made up of an infinite

number of isolated particulars, or even as the outcome of one material force. To the highest philosophy of the day, the Universe is an organic unity. According to Idealism this cannot be mechanical. It can only be likened to one thing—the spiritual principle in man. For all practical purposes, however, it signifies little whether mind is the temporary embodiment of a Spiritual Principle or a specialized form of Matter. In either case man is a bubble on the great stream of time. We may discourse of the bubble in the language of poetry or of science; the result is the same—absorption in the universal. Idealism equally with Materialism leaves man a prisoner in the hands of necessity. The only difference is that while Materialism puts round the prisoner's neck a plain unpretentious noose, Idealism adds fringes and embroidery. Materialism in plain blunt language passes sentence of death, while Idealism indulges in a poetic funeral oration.

The conclusion that Idealism affords no resting-place for the religious instincts and aspirations of man is forcing itself upon the more thoughtful of orthodox theologians. Thus we find Professor Iverach in a review of the late Principal Caird's last work, writing as follows: "Idealism starts from the self, and strives to interpret the experience of the self. Our thought constitutes the world we know and live in. It exists for us in thinkable

relations, and it is easy to prove this, as is done in the book before us, that "this constant amidst the variable, not given by them but above them, is something which sense does not and cannot provide — is, and can only be, the self-conscious, spiritual self, the unifying, constitutive power of thought. From the self-conscious, spiritual self, idealism swiftly proceeds on its way to the conclusion that as for the world in which this self-conscious self lives and moves the self is necessary, so for the universe of things and persons an absolute self-consciousness, a constitutive power of thought, is necessary. As the objective world of the self is in relation to the self, so the universe is the objective of the absolute self. If the world is cast into the life of God, if the world is regarded as the other of God, one may strive as he may, but he cannot avoid the path which leads swiftly to pantheism."

Conscious of the weakness of Idealism, other expounders of Theism, such as Professor Fraser, the well-known editor of Berkeley, attack the problem from another point of view. In Professor Fraser's Gifford lectures there are no sleight of hand methods of the Hegelian type. The difficulties in the way of Theism are fairly faced. The Professor covers a large piece of historical and critical ground, in which he deals with Hume, Spinoza, Hegel, Spencer. Against all the arguments drawn from philosophy

and from contemplation of the evils of life, the Professor puts faith in the goodness and omnipotence of God—a position he takes up as the only way to give a rational meaning to life, and to ward off pessimistic despair. When we come to analyze the Professor's reasoning and study his results critically, we are surprised at the slender foundations upon which his Theistic structure rests. When the average man thinks of God, he thinks of Him as a Person who can be moved by appeals, and who possesses in infinite degree the best qualities of the best men. This conception of Deity lies at the root of the belief in miracles and revelation. Take away, or render pale and shadowy, the idea of personality, or tie the hands of Deity with the ropes of physical necessity and invariability of law, and at once the average man ceases to be interested in Theism, and hands it over to the philosopher. If Professor Fraser wishes to give vitality to Theism, he must bring into relief the idea of personality. If the God of philosophic thought is not personal in the understood sense of the term, philosophic Theism comes perilously near Agnosticism. Let us listen to Professor Fraser on this decisive point of personality: "The 'personality' of God need not mean that the Being adumbrated in Nature and Man is embodied and individual self-conscious life, like the human—that God is organized and extended, as man now is—or omnipresent as in sensuous imagi-

nation ; or that God has a conscious experience, that is subject like ours to change of conscious state. . . . Personality in man, moreover, implies memory; but we are not bound to suppose that the religious conception of the universe implies memory in the Perfect Person with whom all experience brings us into constant intercourse. Also a human intelligence of the world involves reasoning, on the part of human persons; but it does not follow that the Perfect Person who speaks to us in the universe of Nature and Man must be conscious of deducing conclusions from premises, or of generalizing under conditions of inductive calculation. The 'personality of God' is a formula which implies that, in relation to us — or at the human point of view — the Universal Power, manifested in nature and in man, must be regarded at last ethically, not physically — therefore as an imperfectly conceived Person, not as an imperfectly conceived Thing." After all, we do not get much beyond the conclusions reached by David Hume and Herbert Spencer. In his dialogues on religion, Hume admits that in the agency discoverable in the world we trace the operation of qualities akin to those we know as human. Spencer, too, admits that the Power of which all phenomena are manifestations may be more readily conceived under mental than material symbols. With Hume and Spencer, Professor Fraser admits the impossibility of

finding God by the cognitive process, and stumbles at the difficulties of reconciling the existence of evil with divine personality. What is the note which differentiates this view from Agnosticism? He falls back upon faith in the conception that the world is so framed as to give man in the long run rational and emotional satisfaction. The question at once arises—In matters of fundamental importance, are the dictates of the heart more authoritative than the conclusions of the head? Are man's aspirations the measure of Nature's possibilities? Or is it the duty of man to make his aspirations conform to Nature's actualities? To these questions all mythologies and theologies give one answer; science and critical philosophy give another.

Professor Fraser declares for Theism as the only breakwater to pessimism. If there is not a Deity for man to trust, and a future existence for man to expect, life must be declared a despairful tangle. Now, before Theism gives an optimist flavor to human thought, something would need to be known of the nature of the future existence postulated by Professor Fraser. There is nothing captivating in the thought of a prolongation of life, apart from its value and conditions. The Greeks believed in life after death, but they got little satisfaction out of their creed, because of the dreariness of their conceptions. Who, again, can rest satisfied with the conception of

immortality embodied in Calvinism? Who would not prefer the annihilation of the entire human race to a future in which a few revelled in heavenly bliss, while the vast majority endured forever the pangs of Tophet? To assume, therefore, as Theists do, that the bare expectation of life after death is a consoling thought, is to go in the teeth of history and human nature. In order to find a resting-point for his optimism, the Theist must declare for the necessity of a revelation. The supernaturalist can score against the Theist by simply asking whether it is reasonable to suppose that the great question of man's destiny would be left to vague surmisings and melancholy musings. Professor Fraser feels the force of this consideration. No doubt he realizes the fact that when once the miraculous element is introduced, the question enters the historical sphere, where again Hume meets us with his formidable essay on miracles. Speculative philosophy will help us little in dealing with Hume. Light, if it comes, will come from a deeper study of history, keener scientific penetration into the nature and purpose of life, and a more exhaustive psychological study of man. Already science, when reduced to its last analysis, supplies a rational basis for the belief in a mysterious awe-inspiring Power, and fosters a sense of dependence on that Power. It remains to be seen whether science, as interpreted by philosophy,

can throw some light upon the great and fundamental question of purpose. Already science, in the form of the Evolution theory, has lightened the burden of this question, so far as this earthly scene is concerned. The problem of evil and pain is not so formidable to us as it was to Hume. We are discovering significance in the earthly drama. A reverential Agnosticism does not preclude the hope that in the future man may secure for himself a harmonious conception of the world and human destiny, by means of which he will no longer find himself an orphan wandering in a dreary wilderness, but the heir of all the ages, the interpreter of Nature and co-worker with the Eternal.

Whatever the future has in store for philosophy, one prediction may confidently be made, that humanity will owe to Herbert Spencer an everlasting debt of gratitude. Forty years ago he set himself a colossal task. He resolved to give to the world a new system of philosophy. Ill-health dogged the footsteps of the philosopher all through the long spell of years, and at times it seemed as if the Synthetic Philosophy would be left an unfinished monument of splendid audacity. Handicapped by ill-health, uncheered by popular sympathy, unrewarded by the reading public, Herbert Spencer went his lonely way with a courage akin to heroism. Now he sees his task completed. Only those who have been privileged with Mr.

Spencer's friendship fully know the difficulties with which he had to battle, and can estimate the victory he has won. Many thinkers in the flush of opening manhood have conceived great systems of thought, and entered upon far-reaching projects. But too often the glow of intellectual enthusiasm has died away in presence of the daily drudgery of lonely toil. Even those who get beyond the Coleridgean stage of weaving philosophic dreams, find their ideal receding as they get entangled in the pleasures, anxieties, and ambitions of Vanity Fair. Herbert Spencer has refused to soil his robes in Vanity Fair. He has treated the baubles of the passing hour with philosophic indifference. Into old age he has carried the intellectual vigor of youth, and the mellow wisdom of ripe manhood. He has never wavered in his devotion to the great interpretative and constructive ideas with which his name is associated ; and thus the reader has the rare pleasure of studying a system of thought which, from start to finish, breathes the spirit of continuity. There are no gaps to fill in ; the various volumes hang on "First Principles" like golden beads upon a golden string. Herbert Spencer may rest from his labors with the proud consciousness that with his own right hand he has carved his path from obscurity to a philosophic throne. He now stands among the sceptred immortals.

INDEX

- Æschylus, 130.
 Age of Reason, foreseen, 2; and
 Materialism, 30; end of, 31;
 hopes entertained from, 97.
 Alcibiades, as soldier, 130.
 America, Spencer's admirers in,
 62, 64.
 Ancestor-worship, 194 ff.
 Antisthenes, 129.
Appleton's Popular Science
Monthly, article on Spencer in,
 45.
 Archytas, 129.
 Aristotle, on slavery, 130.
 Augustine, influence of, on world, 2.
 Australia, New Liberalism in, 166.

 Bacon, Francis, 20.
 Bentham, Jeremy, aids revival of
 Empiricism, 35; and Utilitarian-
 ism, 40, 41, 147; and Social Con-
 tract theory, 161 ff.; and Con-
 science, 171.
 Berkeley, 114-115.
 British Association, the, 19.
 Brotherhood of man, the, 180-181,
 186-188.
 Buckle, Henry Thomas, 4, 5;
 quoted, 129.
 Burghers, rise of, 133; and Magna
 Charta, 155; first represented in
 Parliament, 156; in Spain, Italy,
 and France, 156-158.

 Caird, Principal, 226.
 Calvin, influence of, on world, 2;
 conception of immortality, 231.
 Carlyle, Thomas, quoted, 1, 5; and
 Materialism, 33.
 Catholic Church, in Middle Ages,
 136.
 Chamberlain, Joseph, 165.
 Chateaubriand, 33.
 Chemical affinity not a cause,
 85.
 Christ, ethical theory of, 181.
Civil Engineer Journal, the, Spen-
 cer's papers in, 16.
 Civilization, modern, and social
 problem, 134 ff.
 Clan, the, 179.
 Cobden, Richard, 141, 185-186.
 Coleridge, 33, 233; Mill's essay on,
 quoted, 34.
 Collectivism, 159.
 Commerce, true theory of, first
 formulated, 139 ff.; and rights
 of man, 153.
 Communism, domestic, 126.
 Comte, Auguste, 4, 5, 73; merits of
 his work, 21-24; defects, 24-26;
 Spencer not a follower of, 43;
 on attempts to reduce phenom-
 ena to a single law, 50; on cell
 doctrine, 50; his philosophy and
 Spencer's, 52; on the cause of
 progress, 127, 161; mistakes cause

- of civilization, 136; his fine picture of the Middle Ages, 138.
- Concepts of Modern Physics*, Stallo's, 74.
- Concepts of Modern Science*, Stallo's, 207.
- Condorcet, 97.
- Conscience, Kant's views on, 169 ff.; the Utilitarians' idea of, 171.
- Consciousness, and Psychology, 109 ff.
- Conservation of Forces, 70, 71, 85, 207.
- Constitution of Man*, Combe's, 20.
- Continent, Spencer's disciples on the, 64.
- Co-operation, indispensable to man, 126; origin of, 183.
- Copyright Commission, Spencer's evidence before, 60.
- Corn Laws, the, 156, 185.
- Cortes, Spanish towns and the, 156-157.
- Cousin, Victor, 33.
- Cuvier, 56.
- Darwin, Charles, 67, 95, 117, 134, 182.
- Delage, Professor Yves, quoted, 102.
- Demosthenes, a soldier, 130.
- Descartes, 114.
- Deuteronomy, quoted, 197.
- Diderot, aims of writings of, 3; creed of, summed up by Holbach, 30-31; quoted, 199.
- Dissolution, definition of, 79.
- "Dynamic Element in Life, The," 87.
- Ecclesiastical Institutions*, Spencer's, 214.
- Eclecticism, 33.
- Economist*, the, Spencer sub-editor of, 17.
- Ego, German philosophers' self-acting, 115.
- Emerson, Ralph Waldo, quoted, 59.
- Encyclopædia of Sciences*, the, 3, 32.
- Encyclopædists, the, 3, 97.
- Epaminondas, 129.
- European Thought*, Merz's, 21.
- Evans, Mary Ann. See George Eliot.
- Experiential philosophy, the, 27-28; revival of, 34; Spencer's influence on, 38.
- Family, in social organization, 126 ff.; the ethical unit, 178-179.
- Fetichism man's early religion, 192.
- Feudalism, 132; despotism supreme under, 150.
- Fichte, Johann Gottlieb, 33.
- Fire Principle, Stahl's, 85.
- First Principles*, Spencer's, 10, 68, 76, 83, 94, 213.
- Fiske, John, quoted, 117-119, 203; on prolongation of infancy, 177; *The Idea of God*, 194.
- Foster, Sir Michael, 92-93.
- Fraser, Professor, criticised, 227 ff.
- Free Cities, in England, 137; rise of, 153; in Spain, Italy, and France, 156 ff.
- Free Trade, 139, 141, 156, 158; relation to ethics, 181 ff.; Cobden's clear view of, 185-186.
- French Revolution, the, 29-30, 157.
- Gauss's laws, 74.
- Genesis, Individuation and, 98.

- George Eliot, 9, 54-56.
 Godwin, William, 97.
 Goethe, 31, 123.
 Gravitation, law of, 71; a name and not a cause, 85.
 Great man theory, 1.
 Greece, cause of fall of, 130.
 Green, Professor, 219 ff.
 Grove, Sir William R., 75.
 Guilds, 151.
 Guizot, on Industrialism, 132-133; his book cited, 184.
 Gunton, 135.
- Hamilton, Sir William, 34, 68, 204-205, 208, 209.
 Happiness man's chief goal, 41.
 Hegel, 33, 115, 123; favorite in University circles, 13, 64; his Absolute, 208 ff.; represented Deity as product of Evolution, 220.
 Helmholtz, quoted, 75, 207.
 Helvetius, philosophic system of, 3.
 Hennell, Miss Sara, 55.
 Herbert, Lord, 191.
 Heredity, 100.
 Hero-worship, result of ignorance of law of evolution, 5, 6.
 Higher Criticism, the, 190.
 Hinton, James, quoted, 86, 210-212, 214.
History of Modern Philosophy, Höffding's, 220-222.
 Hobbes, Thomas, 147; and Social Contract theory, 161 ff.
 Höffding, Dr., 220-222.
 Holbach, philosophic system of, 3; his *System of Nature*, 31, 32.
 Hooker, Dr., 57.
 Hooker, Sir Joseph, 102-103.
- House of Commons, origin of, 156; conspicuous in modern civilization, 158.
 Hudson, Professor, quoted, 11-12, 45-46.
 Humanity, in Comte's philosophy, 52.
 Hume, David, 73, 204; his Agnosticism, 29; continues Locke and Berkeley's reasonings, 114-115; in sphere of religion, 192 ff.; dialogues on religion, 229; essay on miracles, 231.
 Huxley, T. H., criticises Comte, 4; and the Theologians, 28-29.
- Idea of God*, The, Fiske's, 194.
 Idealist, Spencer termed an, 89.
 Idealists, the, 216 ff.
 Ideas, part played by, in civilization, 127.
 India, Spencer's followers in, 64.
 Individual, subordinated to State in Greece and Rome, 131.
 Individuation and Genesis, 98.
 Industrialism, origin of, 132; growth of, 133; and Roman Catholicism, 136-137; and Militarism, 148; and religion, 197 ff.
 Infancy, comparative length of period of, 126; Fiske's theory of prolongation of, 177.
In Memoriam, 182.
 Instinct, Reason and, 112 ff.
 Intelligence, law of, 111.
 Intuitionists, the, 189 ff.
 Italy, Free Cities in, 157.
 Iverach, Professor, quoted, 226-227.
- Jackson, Dr. Hughlings, on *Principles of Psychology*, 120-121.

- Japan, Spencer's works welcomed in, 64.
 Job, 123, 203; quoted, 215.
 Joule, J. P., 75.
 Jurists, the Roman, 180.
- Kant, Immanuel, 33; explains stellar and planetary systems by law of gravitation, 71; roused to philosophic activity by Hume, 115, 204; on Conscience, 169 ff.
 Knowable, philosophy of the, 68.
- Labor, held in contempt by Greeks, 130; effect of substitution of machine for hand, 139, 142 ff.; division of, 183.
- Lankester, Professor Ray, 102.
 Laplace, 71.
 Law of gravitation, 71, 85.
 Law of the three stages, Comte's, 22, 84.
 Lecky, W. E. H., on Roman Catholicism and Industrialism, 136-137.
 Legislation, influence of, on economic progress, 158.
 Leibnitz, school of, criticised by John Fiske, 118.
 Lewes, George Henry, 31-32, 54, 55, 56.
 Liberalism, Old and New, 165 ff.
 Locke, John, 37, 147; metaphysical system of, 113 ff.; on co-operation, 127; and the Social Contract, 171; *The Reasonableness of Christianity*, 191.
Logic, J. S. Mill's, 27.
 Lotze, 220 ff.
 Lyell, Sir Charles, his *Principles of Geology*, 18.
- Machinery, effect of use of, 139, 142 ff.
- Magna Charta, 136, 154, 155, 158.
 Maistre, J. M. de, 33.
 Malthusianism, 97 ff.
Manners and Fashion, Spencer's, 44.
 Martineau, Dr. James, 191.
 Masson, David, on J. S. Mill's philosophy, 36-37.
 Materialism and apostles of Age of Reason, 30-31; regarded as system of philosophy, 32; fall of, 33; Hegel's Absolute system and, 209.
 Materialist, Spencer not a, 66 ff., 122-123, 177.
 Matter, and Motion, 79 ff.; Mind and, symbolic terms only, 122.
 Melissus, as military commander, 129.
 Mercier, Dr., on value of Spencer's work, 121.
 Merz, his *European Thought*, quoted, 21.
 Metaphysicians, the, and Cousin, 33.
 Middle Ages, narrow view of brotherhood of man in, 181.
 Middle class in England, 137, 142.
 Militarism, 128 ff., 148; formation of nations under, 152; Spencerian view of, 159-160; ethical code under, 179-180; human sacrifice under, 196.
 Mill, James, 7, 35.
 Mill, John Stuart, 4, 5, 73; admires Spencer, 15; his *Logic*, 27; and Sir William Hamilton, 34; and Empiricism, 35; Masson on, 36-37; his *Representative Government*, 42; offers Spencer financial assistance, 62; limit of his philosophy, 69; on formation of a law from inductions, 79; on the

- mind, 116; makes intellect chief cause of progress, 127; on evil effect of machinery, 139; on Conscience, 171.
- Mind and Matter, symbolic terms only, 122.
- Monotheism, Hume on, 192; growth from ancestor-worship, 195-196.
- Morality, impossible without sociality, 175; product of social evolution, 187.
- Morgan, Professor Lloyd, quoted, 101.
- Morley, John, 2.
- Motherhood, civilization rooted in, 126.
- Motion, direction and rhythm of, 76 ff.; Matter and, 79 ff.
- Natural History of Religion, The*, Hume's, 192.
- Natural Religion, 191.
- Natural Selection, law of, 95.
- Nature, aim of, in social evolution, 175 ff.
- Nebular Theory, 70, 71, 80.
- Neo-Kantianism, 116, 217, 219.
- Newton, Sir Isaac, 66-67, 71, 74; Spencer's work as compared to that of, 121.
- Nonconformist, The*, Spencer's papers in, 16, 39-40.
- Old Testament, slaughter of human beings authorized in the, 196-197.
- Orderliness of nature, due to what? 81.
- Organism, society compared to an, 147-148.
- Origin and Growth of the Moral Instinct*, Sutherland's, 173.
- Other self, hypothesis of the, 194-195.
- Paine, Thomas, 164.
- Parliament, burghers first represented in, 155-156.
- Paul, influence of, on world, 2.
- Pericles, as soldier, 130.
- Persistence of Force, Spencer's starting-point, 72 ff.
- Personality, Professor Fraser on, 228-229.
- Philosophy of Style*, Spencer's, 44.
- Philosophy, definition of, 30; duty of, according to Spencer, 51.
- Phlogiston, Stahl's doctrine of, 85.
- Plato, as soldier, 129.
- Political Economy*, Mill's, 139.
- Polybius, as soldier, 130.
- Polytheism, 195.
- Positivism and Spencerism, 49, 53; Comte claimed to be author of, 51.
- Principles of Biology*, Spencer's, 6, 83, 91 ff., 94; creates new era in study of Nature, 99 ff.; Lloyd Morgan on, 101; Professor Arthur Thomson on, 103-104.
- Principles of Geology*, Lyell's, 18.
- Principles of Psychology*, 44, 125; Dr. Hughlings Jackson's comments on, 120-121.
- Pringle-Pattison, Professor Seth, 116; quoted, 218.
- Progress: Its Law and Cause*, Spencer's, 44, 47.
- Progress, cause of social, 127; Spencerian definition of social, 144.
- Proper Sphere of Government, The*, Spencer's, 39.
- Protection, influence of, on trade

- and commerce, 140; a survival of military régime, 181.
- Protestant movement, the, 136.
- Psychology, revolutionized by Spencer, 107; science of, begins with dawning of consciousness, 109; philosophy rooted in, 203.
- "Radical programme," Chamberlain's, 165.
- Rational school, the, 27-28.
- Reason and Instinct, 112 ff.
- Reasonableness of Christianity, The*, Locke's, 191.
- Reasons for Dissenting from M. Comte*, Spencer's, 43.
- Redistribution of Matter and Motion, 72.
- Reflex action, 111.
- Reform Bill, the, 156, 158.
- Regimentation, method of, 149.
- Relativity of Knowledge, doctrine of, 34.
- Relativity, doctrine of, 204; attacked by Hegelian school, 205.
- Religion, influence of, on Mill and Spencer, 9.
- Representative Government*, Mill's, 42.
- Rights of Man*, Paine's, 164.
- Rome, cause of fall of, 131; ethical effect of world-wide conquest of, 180.
- Rousseau, a Deist, 30; his theory of state of nature, 42; on co-operation, 127; and Social Contract theory, 147, 161.
- Royalists, the, and Chateaubriand, 33.
- Schelling, 33.
- Science, definition of, 30.
- Sermon on the Mount, the, 181; to-day declared impracticable by clergy, 198.
- Slavery, among Greeks, 130; in Middle Ages, 133.
- Smith, Adam, 139 ff., 176, 181 ff.; his doctrine treated as an exploded superstition, 185.
- Social Contract, the, 127, 147, 161 ff.; Locke's, 171.
- Socialism, a retrograde movement, 159.
- Sociality, co-operation the germ of, 126; may exist without morality, 175.
- Social Statics*, Spencer's, 40, 46, 54, 60.
- Socrates, a soldier, 129; a citizen of the world, 180.
- Solon, 129.
- Sophocles, as soldier, 130.
- Spain, militarism dominant in, 156-157.
- Spencer, the elder, 7, 8.
- Spencer, Herbert, birth of, 6; unaffected by religious influences, 9, 10; education, 11-14; a civil engineer, 15; sub-editor of the *Economist*, 17; earliest products of his thinking, 39-40; personal characteristics, 54-65; relations with George Eliot, 56; and Americans, 62, 64; his influence in Europe and the East, 64, 102; disregards worldly honors, 65, 233.
- Spencer, Rev. Thomas, 11 ff.
- Spinoza, 190.
- Stallo, 74; his *Concepts of Modern Science*, 207-208.
- State, the, in Greece and Rome, 130-131; in Middle Ages, 136; in

- time of war, 150; modern view of duty of, 154-155; Spencerian view of, 159 ff.
- State of nature, theory of, 42.
- Structure of the Protoplasma*, Delage's, quoted, 102-103.
- Stuart dynasty, 154, 156.
- Sutherland, Alexander, 173.
- Sydney, meeting of unemployed in, 166.
- Sympathy, basis of morals, 176; purifies human nature, 188.
- Synthetic Philosophy*, Spencer's, prospectus issued, 54.
- System of Nature*, Holbach's, 31, 32.
- System of Philosophy*, Spencer's, 61.
- Taine, quoted, 28.
- Tennyson, Alfred, 182.
- Theists, the, 191.
- Themistocles, 129.
- Theology, Mill's philosophic conception that of, 28; Hume knocked props from, 115; supplanted by science, 199-200.
- Theory of Population*, Spencer's, 44.
- Thomson, Professor Arthur, quoted, 103-104.
- Three stages, Comte's law of the, 22, 84.
- Thucydides, as soldier, 130.
- Tocqueville, Alexis de, 135.
- Trade, true theory of, 139 ff.
- Trade Unionism, Spencerian view of, 159.
- Tribe, formation of the, 127 ff.; effect of expansion of, on the religious idea, 195-196.
- Turgot, quoted, 167.
- University cliques, opposition of, to Spencer, 13, 64.
- Utilitarianism, Spencer's feeling toward, 40 ff.
- Utilitarians, the, 40 ff.; and Conscience, 171 ff.
- Vestiges of Creation, The*, Spencer's, 20.
- Vital Force, 86; inadequate as explanation of biological phenomena, 87.
- Vital Principle, postulated, 86, 94; many scientists still cling to the, 105-106.
- Voltaire, aims of writings of, 3; a Deist, 30.
- Von Baer, 44, 45.
- Wages, effect of machinery on, 143-144.
- War, see Militarism.
- Ward, Professor, 24-25, 219 ff.
- Wealth, distribution of, in Greece and Rome, 130-131.
- Weismann, Professor, 100.
- Whewell, William, 20-21.
- Wordsworth, William, 200.
- Xenophon, as military commander, 130.
- Zophar, 215.

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY



138 443

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

that he was generally thus peevish. It will be seen that in the following year he had a very agreeable interview with Lord Marchmont, at his Lordship's house; and this very afternoon he soon forgot any fretfulness, and fell into conversation as usual.

I mentioned a reflection having been thrown out against four peers for having presumed to rise in opposition to the opinion of the twelve judges, in a cause in the House of Lords, as if that were indecent. JOHNSON: "Sir, there is no ground for censure. The peers are judges themselves; and supposing them really to be of a different opinion, they might from duty be in opposition to the judges, who were there only to be consulted."

In this observation I fully concurred with him; for unquestionably, all the peers are vested with the highest judicial powers; and when they are confident that they understand a cause, are not obliged, nay ought not to acquiesce in the opinion of the ordinary law judges, or even in that of those who from their studies and experience are called the law lords. I consider the peers in general as I do a jury, who ought to listen with respectful attention to the sages of the law; but, if after hearing them they have a firm opinion of their own, are bound as honest men to decide accordingly. Nor is it so difficult for them to understand even law questions, as is generally thought; provided they will bestow sufficient attention upon them. This observation was made by my honored relation the late Lord Cathcart, who had spent his life in camps and courts; yet assured me, that he could form a clear opinion upon most of the causes that came before the House of Lords, "as they were so well enucleated¹ in the cases."

Mrs. Thrale told us, that a curious clergyman of our acquaintance had discovered a licentious stanza, which Pope had originally in his "Universal Prayer," before the stanza,

"What conscience dictates to be done,
Or warns us [me] not to do," &c.

It was this:

"Can sins of moment claim the rod
Of everlasting fires?
And that offend great Nature's GOD,
Which Nature's self inspires?"

and that Dr. Johnson observed, "it had been borrowed from 'Guarini.'" There are, indeed, in 'Pastor Fido' many such

¹ "Enucleated: to solve, to clear." — Johnson's Dictionary.

flimsy superficial reasonings as that in the last two lines of this stanza.

BOSWELL: "In that stanza of Pope's, '*rod of fires*,' is certainly a bad metaphor." MRS. THRALE: "And '*sins of moment*' is a faulty expression; for its true import is *momentous*, which cannot be intended." JOHNSON: "It must have been written '*of moments*.' Of *moment*, is *momentous*; of *moments*, *momentary*. I warrant you however, Pope wrote ¹ this stanza, and some friend struck it out. Boileau wrote some such thing, and Arnauld ² struck it out, saying, '*Vous gagnerez deux ou trois impies, et perdrez je ne sais combien des honnêtes gens*.' These fellows want to say a daring thing, and do n't know how to go about it. Mere poets know no more of fundamental principles than —." Here he was interrupted somehow. Mrs. Thrale mentioned Dryden. JOHNSON: "He puzzled himself about predestination. How foolish it was in Pope to give all his friendship to lords who thought they honored him by being with him; and to choose such lords as Burlington, and Cobham, and Bolingbroke! Bathurst was negative, a pleasing man; and I have heard no ill of Marchmont; and then always saying, '*I do not value you for being a lord*;' which was a sure proof that he did. I never say, I do not value Boswell more for being born to an estate, because I do not care." BOSWELL: "Nor for being a Scotchman?" JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, I do value you more for being a Scotchman. You are a Scotchman without the faults of Scotchmen. You would not have been so valuable as you are had you not been a Scotchman."

Talking of divorces, I asked if Othello's doctrine was not plausible:

"He that is robb'd, not wanting what is stolen,
Let him not know 't, and he 's not robb'd at all."³

Dr. Johnson and Mrs. Thrale joined against this. JOHNSON: "Ask any man if he 'd wish not to know of such an injury." BOSWELL: "Would you tell your friend to make him unhappy?" JOHNSON: "Perhaps, Sir, I should not; but that would be from prudence on my own account. A man would tell his father." BOSWELL: "Yes; because he would not have spurious children to get any share of the family inheritance." MRS. THRALE: "Or he

¹ Mr. Elwin doubts the genuineness of this suppressed stanza.

² Antoine Arnauld (1612-1694) called "le grand," theologian and philosopher.

³ "Othello," Act iii. sc. 3.

would tell his brother." BOSWELL: "Certainly his *elder* brother." JOHNSON: "You would tell your friend of a woman's infamy, to prevent his marrying a whore: there is the same reason to tell him of his wife's infidelity, when he is married, to prevent the consequences of imposition. It is a breach of confidence not to tell a friend." BOSWELL: "Would you tell Mr. ———?" (naming a gentleman who assuredly was not in the least danger of such a miserable disgrace, though married to a fine woman.) JOHNSON: "No, Sir; because it would do no good: he is so sluggish, he'd never go to Parliament and get through a divorce."¹

He said of one of our friends, "He is ruining himself without pleasure. A man who loses at play, or who runs out his fortune at court, makes his estate less, in hopes of making it bigger (I am sure of this word, which was often used by him): but it is a sad thing to pass through the quagmire of parsimony, to the gulf of ruin. To pass over the flowery path of extravagance is very well."

Amongst the numerous prints pasted² on the walls of the dining-room at Streatham, was Hogarth's "Modern Midnight Conversation." I asked him what he knew of Parson Ford, who makes a conspicuous figure in the riotous group.³ JOHNSON: "Sir, he was my acquaintance and relation, my mother's nephew. He had purchased a living in the country, but not simoniacally. I never saw him but in the country. I have been told he was a man of great parts; very profligate, but I never heard he was impious." BOSWELL: "Was there not a story of his ghost having appeared?" JOHNSON: "Sir, it was believed. A waiter at the Hummums,⁴ in which house Ford died, had been absent for some time, and returned, not knowing that Ford was dead. Going down to the cellar, according to the story, he met him; going down again, he met him a second time. When he came up, he asked some of the people of the house what Ford could be doing there. They told him Ford was dead. The waiter took a fever, in which he lay for some time. When he recovered he said he had a message to deliver to some women from Ford;

¹ Both these paragraphs refer to Langton, to whom, as Croker justly observes, Boswell never lets slip a chance of an offensive allusion.

² We may wonder whether *pasted* is strictly used. It seems likely that the wealthy brewer, who had a taste for the fine arts, afforded Hogarth at least a frame. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ See *ante*, Vol. I., p. 16, note 2.

⁴ Baths are called Hummums in the East, and thence this hotel, where there were baths, was called by that name. — *Croker*.

but he was not to tell what, or to whom. He walked out; he was followed; but somewhere about St. Paul's they lost him. He came back, and said he had delivered the message, and the women exclaimed, 'Then we are all undone!' Dr. Pellet, who was not a credulous man, inquired into the truth of this story, and he said, the evidence was irresistible. My wife went to the Hummums; (it is a place where people get themselves cupped). I believe she went with intention to hear about this story of Ford. At first they were unwilling to tell her; but after they had talked to her, she came away satisfied that it was true. To be sure the man had a fever; and this vision may have been the beginning of it. But if the message to the women, and their behavior upon it, were true as related, there was something supernatural. That rests upon his word; and there it remains."

After Mrs. Thrale was gone to bed, Johnson and I sat up late. We resumed Sir Joshua Reynolds's argument on the preceding Sunday, that a man would be virtuous, though he had no other motive than to preserve his character. JOHNSON: "Sir, it is not true: for, as to this world, vice does not hurt a man's character." BOSWELL: "Yes, Sir, debauching a friend's wife will." JOHNSON: "No, Sir. Who thinks the worse of [Beauclerk] for it?" BOSWELL: "Lord [Bolingbroke] was not his friend."¹ JOHNSON: "That is only a circumstance, Sir, a slight distinction. He could not get into the house but by Lord [Bolingbroke]. A man is chosen Knight of the Shire not the less for having debauched ladies." BOSWELL: "What, Sir, if he debauched the ladies of gentlemen in the country, will not there be a general resentment against him?" JOHNSON: "No, Sir. He will lose those particular gentlemen; but the rest will not trouble their heads about it:" (warmly.) BOSWELL: "Well, Sir, I cannot think so." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, there is no talking with a man who will dispute what everybody knows: (angrily.) Don't you know this?" BOSWELL: "No, Sir; and I wish to think better of your country than you represent it. I knew in Scotland a gentleman obliged to leave it for debauching a lady; and in one of our counties an earl's brother lost his election, because he had debauched the lady of another earl in that county, and destroyed the peace of a noble family."

Still he would not yield. He proceeded: "Will you not allow, Sir, that vice does not hurt a man's character so as to obstruct his prosperity in life, when you know that [Lord Clive] was

¹ See *ante*, Vol. I., p. 442, and *note* 1.

loaded with wealth and honors: a man who had acquired his fortune by such crimes, that his consciousness of them impelled him to cut his own throat?"¹ BOSWELL: "You will recollect, Sir, that Dr. Robertson said, he cut his throat because he was weary of still life; little things not being sufficient to move his great mind." JOHNSON (very angry): "Nay, Sir, what stuff is this? You had no more this opinion after Robertson said it, than before. I know nothing more offensive than repeating what one knows to be foolish things, by way of continuing a dispute, to see what a man will answer, — to make him your butt!" (angrier still.) BOSWELL: "My dear Sir, I had no such intention as you seem to suspect: I had not indeed. Might not this nobleman have felt everything 'weary, stale, flat, and unprofitable,'² as Hamlet says?" JOHNSON: "Nay, if you are to bring in gabble, I'll talk no more. I will not, upon my honor." My readers will decide upon this dispute.

Next morning I stated to Mrs. Thrale at breakfast, before he came down, the dispute of last night as to the influence of character upon success in life. She said he was certainly wrong; and told me, that a baronet lost an election in Wales, because he had debauched the sister of a gentleman in the country, whom he made one of his daughters invite as her companion at his seat in the country, when his lady and his other children were in London. But she would not encounter Johnson upon the subject.

I stayed all this day with him at Streatham. He talked a great deal in very good humor.

Looking at Messrs. Dillys' splendid edition of Lord Chesterfield's miscellaneous works, he laughed, and said: "Here are now two speeches ascribed to him, both of which were written by me: and the best of it is, they have found out that one is like Demosthenes, and the other like Cicero."³

He censured Lord Kames's "Sketches of the History of Man," for misrepresenting Clarendon's account of the appearance of Sir George Villier's ghost, as if Clarendon were weakly credulous; when the truth is, that Clarendon only says, that the story was upon a better foundation of credit than usually such discourses are founded upon; nay, speaks thus of the person who was re-

¹ For the absurd stories about Clive's suicide, and the true cause of it, see Macaulay's essay, and Sir Charles Wilson's "Clive" (Macmillan's "Men of Action").

² "Hamlet," Act i. sc. 2.

³ The one compared to Demosthenes could not have been Johnson's because it was reported in *The Gentleman's Magazine* for July, 1737, nine months before his first contribution to that journal. — *Dr. Hill*.

ported to have seen the vision, "the poor man, *if he had been at all waking*;" which Lord Kames has omitted. He added: "In this book it is maintained that virtue is natural to man, and, that if we would but consult our own hearts, we should be virtuous. Now after consulting our own hearts all we can, and with all the helps we have, we find how few of us are virtuous. This is saying a thing which all mankind know not to be true." BOSWELL: "Is not modesty natural?" JOHNSON: "I cannot say, Sir, as we find no people quite in a state of nature; but I think the more they are taught, the more modest they are. The French are a gross, ill-bred, untaught people; a lady there will spit on the floor and rub it with her foot. What I gained by being in France was learning to be better satisfied with my own country. Time may be employed to more advantage from nineteen to twenty-four almost in any way than in travelling; when you set travelling against mere negation, against doing nothing, it is better to be sure; but how much more would a young man improve were he to study during those years. Indeed, if a young man is wild, and must run after women and bad company, it is better this should be done abroad, as, on his return, he can break off such connections, and begin at home a new man, with a character to form, and acquaintances to make. How little does travelling supply to the conversation of any man who has travelled; how little to Beauclerk?" BOSWELL: "What say you to Lord ———?" JOHNSON: "I never but once heard him talk of what he had seen, and that was of a large serpent in one of the pyramids of Egypt." BOSWELL: "Well, I happened to hear him tell the same thing, which made me mention him."¹

I talked of a country life. JOHNSON: "Were I to live in the country, I would not devote myself to the acquisition of popularity; I would live in a much better way, much more happily; I would have my time at my own command." BOSWELL: "But, Sir, is it not a sad thing to be at a distance from all our literary friends?" JOHNSON: "Sir, you will by and by have enough of this conversation which now delights you so much."

As he was a zealous friend of subordination, he was at all times watchful to repress the vulgar cant against the manners of the great. "High people, Sir," said he, "are the best; take a hundred ladies of quality, you'll find them better wives, better mothers, more willing to sacrifice their own pleasure to their

¹ James, first Earl of Charlemont. His lordship was to the last in the habit of telling this story rather too often. — *Croker*.

children, than a hundred other women. Tradeswomen (I mean the wives of tradesmen) in the City, who are worth from 10 to 15,000*l.* are the worst creatures upon the earth, grossly ignorant, and thinking viciousness fashionable. Farmers, I think, are often worthless fellows. Few lords will cheat; and if they do they 'll be ashamed of it: farmers cheat and are not ashamed of it: they have all the sensual vices too of the nobility, with cheating into the bargain. There is as much fornication and adultery amongst farmers as amongst noblemen." BOSWELL: "The notion of the world, Sir, however, is, that the morals of women of quality are worse than those in lower stations." JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir, the licentiousness of one woman of quality makes more noise than that of a number of women in lower stations; then, Sir, you are to consider the malignity of women in the City against women of quality, which will make them believe any thing of them, such as that they call their coachman to bed. No, Sir, so far as I have observed, the higher in rank, the richer ladies are, they are the better instructed and the more virtuous."

This year the Reverend Mr. Horne published his "Letter to Mr. Dunning, on the English Particle;" Johnson read it; and though not treated in it with sufficient respect, he had candor enough to say to Mr. Seward, "Were I to make a new edition of my Dictionary, I would adopt several¹ of Mr. Horne's etymologies; I hope they did not put the dog in the pillory for his libel; he has too much literature for that."

On Saturday, May 16, I dined with him at Mr. Beauclerk's with Mr. Langton, Mr. Steevens, Dr. Higgins, and some others. I regret very feelingly every instance of my remissness in recording his *memorabilia*; I am afraid it is the condition of humanity (as Mr. Windham, of Norfolk, once observed to me, after having made an admirable speech in the House of Commons, which was highly applauded, but which he afterwards perceived might have been better): "that we are more uneasy from thinking of our wants, than happy in thinking of our acquisitions." This is an unreasonable mode of disturbing our tranquillity, and should be corrected; let me then comfort myself with the large treasure of Johnson's conversation which I have preserved for my own enjoyment and that of the world, and let me exhibit what I have upon

¹ In Mr. Horne Tooke's enlargement of that "Letter," which he has since published with the title of "*Ἑμεᾶ πτεροειρη*," or, the Diversions of Purley;" he mentions this compliment, as if Dr. Johnson instead of *several* of his etymologies had said *all*. His recollection having thus magnified it, shows how ambitious he was of the approbation of so great a man. — B.

each occasion, whether more or less, whether a bulse,¹ or only a few sparks of a diamond.

He said, "Dr. Mead lived more in the broad sunshine of life than almost any man."²

The disaster of General Burgoyne's army was then the common topic of conversation.³ It was asked why piling their arms was insisted upon as a matter of such consequence, when it seemed to be a circumstance so inconsiderable in itself. JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, a French author says, '*Il y a beaucoup de puérilités dans la guerre.*' All distinctions are trifles, because great things can seldom occur, and those distinctions are settled by custom. A savage would as willingly have his meat sent to him in the kitchen, as eat it at the table here: as men become civilized, various modes of denoting honorable preference are invented."

He this day made the observations upon the similarity between "Rasselas" and "Candide:" which I have inserted in its proper place, when considering his admirable philosophical Romance. He said "Candide," he thought, had more power in it than anything that *Voltaire* had written.

He said: "The lyrical part of Horace never can be perfectly translated; so much of the excellence is in the numbers and the expression. Francis has done it the best; I'll take his, five out of six, against them all."

On Sunday, May 17, I presented to him Mr. Fullarton of Fullarton, who has since distinguished himself so much in India,⁴ to whom he naturally talked of travels, as Mr. Brydone accompanied him in his tour to Sicily and Malta. He said: "The information which we have from modern travellers is much more authentic than what we had from ancient travellers; ancient travellers guessed; modern travellers measure. The Swiss admit that there is but one error in Stanyan.⁵ If Brydone were more attentive to his Bible he would be a good traveller."

¹ *Bulse*, from *bolsa*, a Portuguese word signifying a *purse*; used in India for a certain quantity of diamonds.— Imp. Dict.

² See *ante*, Vol. I., p. 87, note 1.

³ His surrender to Gates at Saratoga, Oct. 17, 1777.— *Croker*.

⁴ William Fullarton, an Ayrshire gentleman, played a distinguished part in the Indian wars, first against Hyder Ali, and afterwards against his son Tippoo. He published a "View of the English Interests in India" in 1787. In later life he was less favorably known for his quarrel with Picton over the administration of Trinidad, which resulted in the latter being tried for the torture of a Spanish girl, and found guilty, though the verdict was reversed on appeal.

⁵ Temple Stanyan, at one time Minister to the Porte, author of an "Account of Switzerland" (1714) and a "History of Greece." He died in 1752.— *Croker*.

He said, "Lord Chatham was a Dictator; he possessed the power of putting the State in motion; now there is no power, all order is relaxed." BOSWELL: "Is there no hope of a change to the better?" JOHNSON: "Why, yes, Sir, when we are weary of this relaxation. So the City of London will appoint its mayors again by seniority." BOSWELL: "But is not that taking a mere chance for having a good or a bad mayor?" JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; but the evil of competition is greater than that of the worst mayor that can come; besides, there is no more reason to suppose that the choice of a rabble will be right, than that chance will be right."

On Tuesday, May 19, I was to set out for Scotland in the evening. He was engaged to dine with me at Mr. Dilly's; I waited upon him to remind him of his appointment and attend him thither; he gave me some salutary counsel, and recommended vigorous resolution against any deviation from moral duty. BOSWELL: "But you would not have me to bind myself by a solemn obligation?" JOHNSON (much agitated): "What! a vow—Oh, no, Sir, a vow is a horrible thing, it is a snare for sin. The man who cannot go to heaven without a vow—may go—" here standing erect, in the middle of his library, and rolling grand, his pause was truly a curious compound of the solemn and the ludicrous; he half-whistled in his usual way, when pleasant, and he paused, as if checked by religious awe. Methought he would have added—to Hell—but was restrained. I humored the dilemma. "What! Sir," said I, "*In cælum jussuris ibit*?"¹ alluding to his imitation of it,

"And bid him go to Hell, to Hell he goes."

I had mentioned to him a slight fault in his noble "Imitation of the Tenth Satire of Juvenal," a too near recurrence of the verb *spread*, in his description of the young enthusiast at College:

"Through all his veins the fever of renown
Spreads from the strong contagion of the gown;
 O'er Bodley's dome his future labors *spread*,
 And Bacon's mansion trembles o'er his head."

He had desired me to change *spreads* to *burns*, but for perfect authenticity, I now had it done with his own hand.² I thought

¹ Juvenal: "Sat." iii. 78.

² The slip of paper on which he made the correction, is deposited by me in the noble library to which it relates, and to which I have presented other pieces of his handwriting.—B. They are not now to be found in the Bodleian.—*Dr. Hill*,

this alteration not only cured the fault, but was more poetical, as it might carry an allusion to the shirt by which Hercules was inflamed.

We had a quiet comfortable meeting at Mr. Dilly's; nobody there but ourselves. Mr. Dilly mentioned somebody having wished that Milton's "Tractate on Education" should be printed along with his poems in the edition of the English Poets then going on. JOHNSON: "It would be breaking in upon the plan; but would be of no great consequence. So far as it would be anything, it would be wrong. Education in England has been in danger of being hurt by two of its greatest men, Milton and Locke. Milton's plan is impracticable, and I suppose has never been tried. Locke's, I fancy, has been tried often enough, but is very imperfect; it gives too much to one side, and too little to the other; it gives too little to literature—I shall do what I can for Dr. Watts; but my materials are very scanty. His poems are by no means his best works; I cannot praise his poetry itself highly; but I can praise its design."

My illustrious friend and I parted with assurances of affectionate regard.

I wrote to him on the 25th of May, from Thorpe in Yorkshire, one of the seats of Mr. Bosville, and gave him an account of my having passed a day at Lincoln, unexpectedly, and therefore without having any letters of introduction, but that I had been honored with civilities from the Rev. Mr. Simpson, an acquaintance of his, and Captain Broadley, of the Lincolnshire Militia; but more particularly from the Rev. Dr. Gordon, the Chancellor, who first received me with great politeness as a stranger, and, when I informed him who I was, entertained me at his house with the most flattering attention; I also expressed the pleasure with which I had found that our worthy friend, Langton, was highly esteemed in his own country town.

TO DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON.

EDINBURGH, June 18, 1773.

MY DEAR SIR:

Since my return to Scotland, I have been again at Lanark, and have had more conversation with Thomson's sister. It is strange that Murdoch, who was his intimate friend, should have mistaken his mother's maiden name, which he says was Hume, whereas Hume was the name of his grandmother by the mother's side. His mother's name was Beatrix Trotters,¹ a daughter

¹ Dr. Johnson was by no means attentive to minute accuracy in his "Lives of the Poets;" for notwithstanding my having detected this mistake, he has continued it.—B.

of Mr. Trotter, of Fogo, a small proprietor of land. Thomson had one brother, whom he had with him in England as his amanuensis; but he was seized with a consumption, and having returned to Scotland, to try what his native air would do for him, died young. He had three sisters, one married to Mr. Bell, minister of the parish of Strathaven; one to Mr. Craig, father of the ingenious architect who gave the plan of the New Town of Edinburgh; and one to Mr. Thomson, master of the grammar-school at Lanark. He was of a humane and benevolent disposition; not only sent valuable presents to his sisters, but a yearly allowance in money, and was always wishing to have it in his power to do them more good. Lord Lyttelton's observation that "he loathed much to write," was very true. His letters to his sister, Mrs. Thomson, were not frequent, and in one of them he says, "All my friends who know me, know how backward I am to write letters: and never impute the negligence of my hand to the coldness of my heart." I send you a copy of the last letter which she had from him; she never heard that he had any intention of going into holy orders. From this late interview with his sister, I think much more favourably of him, as I hope you will. I am eager to see more of your Prefaces to the Poets: I solace myself with the few proof-sheets which I have.

I send another parcel of Lord Hailes's "Annals," which you will please to return to me as soon as you conveniently can. He says, he wishes you would cut a little deeper; but he may be proud that there is so little occasion to use the critical knife. I ever am, my dear Sir, your faithful and affectionate humble servant,

JAMES BOSWELL.

Mr. Langton has been pleased, at my request, to favor me with some particulars of Dr. Johnson's visit to Warley Camp, where this gentleman was at the time stationed as a Captain in the Lincolnshire militia.¹ I shall give them in his own words in a letter to me:

It was in the summer of the year 1778, that he complied with my invitation to come down to the camp at Warley, and he stayed with me about a week; the scene appeared, notwithstanding a great degree of ill health that he seemed to labour under, to interest and amuse him, as agreeing with the disposition that I believe you know he constantly manifested towards inquiring into subjects of the military kind. He sat, with a patient degree of attention, to observe the proceedings of a regimental court-martial, that happened to be called, in the time of his stay with us; and one night, as late as at eleven o'clock, he accompanied the Major of the regiment in going what are styled the *Rounds*, where he might observe the forms of visiting the guards, for the seeing that they and their sentries are ready in their duty on their several posts. He took occasion to converse at times on military topicks, one in particular, that I see the mention of in your "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides" which lies open before me (3d ed. p. 111) as to gunpowder; which he spoke of to the same effect, in part, that you relate.

On one occasion, when the regiment were going through their exercise, he went quite close to the men at one of the extremities of it, and watched all

¹ England was at that time threatened with invasion by the united forces of France and Spain. — *Dr. Hill.*

their practices attentively; and, when he came away, his remark was, "The men indeed do load their muskets and fire with wonderful celerity." He was likewise particular in requiring to know what was the weight of the musquet balls in use, and within what distance they might be expected to take effect when fired off.

In walking among the tents, and observing the difference between those of the officers and private men, he said that the superiority of accommodation of the better conditions of life to that of the inferior ones was never exhibited to him in so distinct a view. The civilities paid to him in the camp were from the gentlemen of the Lincolnshire regiment, one of the officers of which accommodated him with a tent in which he slept; and from General Hall, who very courteously invited him to dine with him, where he appeared to be very well pleased with his entertainment, and the civilities he received on the part of the General,¹ the attention likewise of the General's aide-de-camp, Captain Smith, seemed to be very welcome to him, as appeared by their engaging in a great deal of discourse together. The gentlemen of the East York Regiment likewise, on being informed of his coming, solicited his company at dinner, but by that time he had fixed his departure, so that he could not comply with the invitation.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I have received two letters from you, of which the second complains of the neglect shown to the first. You must not tie your friends to such punctual correspondence. You have all possible assurances of my affection and esteem; and there ought to be no need of reiterated professions. When it may happen that I can give you either counsel or comfort, I hope it will never happen to me that I should neglect you; but you must not think me criminal or cold, if I say nothing when I have nothing to say.

You are now happy enough. Mrs. Boswell is recovered; and I congratulate you upon the probability of her long life. If general approbation will add anything to your enjoyment, I can tell you that I have heard you mentioned as *a man whom everybody likes*. I think life has little more to give.

[Langton] has gone to his regiment. He has laid down his coach, and talks of making more contractions of his expence: how he will succeed, I know not. It is difficult to reform a household gradually; it may be better done by a system totally new. I am afraid he has always something to hide. When we pressed him to go to [Langton], he objected the necessity of attending his navigation;² yet he could talk of going to Aberdeen, a place not much nearer his navigation. I believe he cannot bear the thought of living at [Langton] in a state of diminution; and of appearing among the gentlemen of the neighborhood *shorn of his beams*.³ This is natural, but it is cowardly. What I told him of the increasing expence of a growing family, seems to have struck him. He certainly had gone on with very confused views, and we have, I think, shewn him that he is wrong: though, with the common deficiency of advisers we have not shewn him how to do right.

¹ When I one day at Court expressed to General Hall my sense of the honor he had done my friend, he politely answered, "Sir, I did *myself* honor." — B.

² The Wey Canal from Guilford to Weybridge in which he had a considerable share. — *Croker*. Navigation: a canal; canal, an ornamental pool; for a time it seemed as though the former term might be applied to artificial rivers. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Dryden and Milton.

I wish you would a little correct or restrain your imagination, and imagine that happiness, such as life admits, may be had at other places as well as London. Without asserting Stoicism, it may be said, that it is our business to exempt ourselves as much as we can from the power of external things. There is but one solid basis of happiness; and that is, the reasonable hope of a happy futurity. This may be had every where.

I do not blame your preference of London to other places, for it is really to be preferred, if the choice is free; but few have the choice of their place, or their manner of life; and mere pleasure ought not to be the prime motive of action.

Mrs. Thrale, poor thing, has a daughter. Mr. Thrale dislikes the times, like the rest of us. Mrs. Williams is sick; Mrs. Desmoulins is poor. I have miserable nights. Nobody is well but Mr. Levett.

I am, dear Sir, your most, &c.,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, July 3, 1778.

In the course of this year there was a difference between him and his friend Mr. Strahan; the particulars of which it is unnecessary to relate. Their reconciliation was communicated to me in a letter from Mr. Strahan; ¹ in the following words:

The notes I shewed you that passed between him and me were dated in March last. The matter lay dormant till July 27, when he wrote to me as follows:

TO WILLIAM STRAHAN, ESQ.

SIR: It would be very foolish for us to continue strangers any longer. You can never by persistency make wrong right. If I resented too acrimoniously, I resented only to yourself. Nobody ever saw or heard what I wrote. You saw that my anger was over, for in a day or two I came to your house. I have given you a longer time; and I hope you have made so good use of it, as to be no longer on evil terms with, Sir, your, &c.,

SAM. JOHNSON.

On this I called upon him; and he has since dined with me.

After this time, the same friendship as formerly continued between Dr. Johnson and Mr. Strahan. My friend mentioned to me a little circumstance of his attention, which, though we may smile at it, must be allowed to have its foundation in a nice and true knowledge of human life. "When I write to Scotland," said he, "I employ Strahan to frank my letters, that he may have the consequence of appearing a Parliament-man among his countrymen."

¹ It was Mr. Strahan, the King's printer, to whom Franklin wrote the famous letter ending, "You are now my Enemy — and I am, yours, B. FRANKLIN."

TO CAPTAIN LANGTON,¹ WARLEY CAMP.

DEAR SIR: When I recollect how long ago I was received with so much kindness at Warley Common, I am ashamed that I have not made some enquiries after my friends.

Pray how many sheep-stealers did you convict? and how did you punish them? When are you to be cantoned in better habitations? The air grows cold, and the ground damp. Longer stay in the camp cannot be without much danger to the health of the common men if even the officers can escape.

You see that Dr. Percy is now Dean of Carlisle; about five hundred a year with a power of presenting himself to some good living. He is provided for.

The session of the CLUB is to commence with that of the Parliament. Mr. Banks² desires to be admitted; he will be a very honorable accession.

Did the King please you? The Coxheath men, I think, have some reason to complain; Reynolds says your camp is better than theirs.

I hope you find yourself able to encounter this weather. Take care of your own health; and as you can, of your men. Be pleased to make my compliments to all the gentlemen whose notice I have had, and whose kindness I have experienced.

I am, dear Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

OCTOBER 31, 1778.

I wrote to him on the 18th of August, the 18th of September, and the 6th of November, informing him of my having had another son born whom I had called James;³ that I had passed some time at Auchinleck; that the Countess of Loudoun, now in her ninety-ninth year, was as fresh as when he saw her, and remembered him with respect; and that his mother by adoption, the Countess of Eglinton, had said to me: "Tell Mr. Johnson I love him exceedingly;" that I had again suffered much from bad spirits; and that as it was very long since I heard from him, I was not a little uneasy.

The continuance of his regard for his friend Dr. Burney appears from the following letters:

TO THE REVEREND DR. WHEELER,⁴ OXFORD.

DEAR SIR: Dr. Burney, who brings this paper, is engaged in a History of Musick; and having been told by Dr. Markham of some MSS. relating to his subject, which are in the library of your college, is desirous to examine them. He is my friend: and therefore I take the liberty of entreating your

¹ Dr. Johnson here addresses his worthy friend, Bennet Langton, Esq., by his title as Captain of the Lincolnshire militia, in which he has since been most deservedly raised to the rank of Major. — B.

² President of the Royal Society.

³ James Boswell, Jr., was regarded as a smaller edition of his father. He died in 1822. — *Dr. Hill*.

⁴ Regius Professor of Divinity and Canon of Christ Church.

favour and assistance in his enquiry: and can assure you, with great confidence, that if you knew him he would not want any intervenient solicitation to obtain the kindness of one who loves learning and virtue as you love them.

I have been flattering myself all the summer with the hope of paying my annual visit to my friends; but something has obstructed me. I still hope not to be long without seeing you. I should be glad of a little literary talk; and glad to shew you, by the frequency of my visits, how eagerly I love it, when you talk it.

I am, dear Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, November 2, 1778.

TO THE REVEREND DR. EDWARDS,¹ OXFORD.

SIR: The bearer, DR. BURNEY, has had some account of a Welsh Manuscript in the Bodleian library, from which he hopes to gain some materials for his "*History of Musick*"; but being ignorant of the language, is at a loss where to find assistance. I make no doubt but you, Sir, can help him through his difficulties, and therefore take the liberty of recommending him to your favour, as I am sure you will find him a man worthy of every civility that can be shewn, and every benefit that can be conferred.

But we must not let Welsh drive us from Greek. What comes of Xenophon? If you do not like the trouble of publishing the book, do not let your commentaries be lost; contrive that they may be published somewhere.

I am, Sir, your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, November 2, 1778.

These letters procured Dr. Burney great kindness and friendly offices from both of these gentlemen, not only on that occasion, but in future visits to the University. The same year Dr. Johnson not only wrote to Dr. Joseph Warton in favor of Dr. Burney's youngest son, who was to be placed in the college of Winchester, but accompanied him when he went thither.

We surely cannot but admire the benevolent exertions of this great and good man, especially when we consider how grievously he was afflicted with bad health, and how uncomfortable his home was made by the perpetual jarring of those whom he charitably accommodated under his roof. He has sometimes suffered me to talk jocularly of his group of females, and call them his *Seraglio*. He thus mentions them together with honest Levett, in one of his letters to Mrs. Thrale: "Williams hates everybody; Levett hates Desmoulins, and does not love Williams: Desmou-

¹ Johnson in 1784 wrote: "Since I was there [at Oxford] my convivial friend Dr. Edwards and my learned friend Dr. Wheeler are both dead, and my probabilities of pleasure are very much diminished." In an early letter he spoke of Wheeler "as the man with whom he most delighted to converse." Dr. Edwards was preparing an edition of the "*Memorabilia*."

lins hates them both; Poll [Miss Carmichael] loves none of them."

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: It is indeed a long time since I wrote, and think you must have some reason to complain; however you must not let small things disturb you, when you have such a fine addition to your happiness as a new boy, and I hope your lady's health is restored by bringing him. It seems very probable that a little care will now restore her, if any remains of her complaints are left.

You seem, if I understand your letter, to be gaining ground at Auchinleck, an incident that would give me great delight.

When any fit of anxiety, or gloominess, or perversion of mind, lays hold upon you, make it a rule not to publish it by complaints, but exert your whole care to hide it; by endeavouring to hide it you will drive it away. Be always busy.

The CLUB is to meet with the Parliament; we talk of electing Banks, the traveller; he will be a reputable member.

Langton has been encamped with his company of militia on Warley-common; I spent five days amongst them; he signalized himself as a diligent officer, and has very high respect in the regiment. He presided when I was there at a court-martial; he is now quartered in Hertfordshire; his lady and little ones are in Scotland. Paoli came to the camp, and commended the soldiers.

Of myself I have no great matters to say, my health is not restored, my nights are restless and tedious. The best night that I have had these twenty years was at Fort-Augustus.

I hope soon to send you a few Lives to read.

I am, dear Sir, your most affectionate

SAM. JOHNSON.

NOVEMBER 21, 1778.

About this time the Rev. Mr. John Hussey, who had been some time in trade, and was then a clergyman of the Church of England, being about to undertake a journey to Aleppo and other parts of the East, which he accomplished, Dr. Johnson (who had long been in habits of intimacy with him,) honored him with the following letter:

TO MR. JOHN HUSSEY.

DEAR SIR: I have sent you the "Grammar," and have left you two books more, by which I hope to be remembered; write my name in them; we may perhaps see each other no more, you part with my good wishes, nor do I despair of seeing you return. Let no opportunities of vice corrupt you; let no bad example seduce you; let the blindness of Mahometans confirm you in Christianity. God bless you. I am, dear Sir, your affectionate humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

DECEMBER 29, 1778.

Johnson this year expressed great satisfaction at the publication of the first volume of "Discourses to the Royal Academy,"¹ by Sir Joshua Reynolds, whom he always considered as one of his literary school. Much praise indeed is due to those excellent Discourses which are so universally admired, and for which the author received from the Empress of Russia a gold snuff-box, adorned with her profile in *bas relief*, set in diamonds; and containing what is infinitely more valuable, a slip of paper, on which are written with her Imperial Majesty's own hand, the following words: "*Pour le Chevalier Reynolds en témoignage du contentement que j'ai ressentie [sic] à la lecture de ses excellens discours sur la peinture.*"

This year Johnson gave the world a luminous proof that the vigor of his mind in all its faculties, whether memory, judgment, or imagination, was not in the least abated; for this year came out the first four volumes of his "Prefaces, Biographical and Critical, to the most Eminent of the English Poets," * published by the booksellers of London. The remaining volumes came out in the year 1780 [1781]. The Poets were selected by the several booksellers who had the honorary copyright, which is still preserved among them by mutual compact, notwithstanding the decision of the House of Lords against the perpetuity of literary property. We have his own authority ["Life of Watts"], that by his recommendation the poems of Blackmore, Watts, Pomfret, and Yalden, were added to the collection. Of this work I shall speak more particularly hereafter.

On the 22d of January I wrote to him on several topics, and mentioned that as he had been so good as to permit me to have the proof sheets of his "Lives of the Poets," I had written to his servant Francis, to take care of them for me.

MR. BOSWELL TO DR. JOHNSON.

EDINBURGH, Feb. 2, 1779.

MY DEAR SIR: Garrick's death is a striking event; not that we should be surprised with the death of any man, who has lived sixty-two years; but because there was a *vivacity* in our late celebrated friend, which drove away the thoughts of *death* from any association with *him*. I am sure you will be tenderly affected with his departure; and I would wish to hear from you upon the subject. I was obliged to him in my days of effervescence in London, when poor Derrick was my governor; and since that time I received many civilities from him. Do you remember how pleasing it was, when I received a letter from him, at Inverary, upon our first return to civilized living after our

¹ Collected edition containing the first seven "Discourses."

Hebridean journey? I shall always remember him with affection as well as admiration.

On Saturday last, being the 30th of January,¹ I drank coffee and old port, and had solemn conversation with the Reverend Mr. Falconer, a nonjuring bishop, a very learned and worthy man. He gave two toasts, which you will believe I drank with cordiality, Dr. Samuel Johnson, and Flora Macdonald. I sat about four hours with him, and it was really as if I had been living in the last century. The Episcopal Church of Scotland, though faithful to the Royal House of Stuart, has never accepted of any *congé d'élire* since the Revolution: it is the only true Episcopal Church in Scotland, as it has its own succession of bishops. For as to the episcopal clergy who take the oaths to the present Government, they indeed follow the rites of the Church of England, but, as Bishop Falconer observed, "They are not *Episcopals*; for they are under no bishop, as a bishop can not have authority beyond his diocese." This venerable gentleman did me the honour to dine with me yesterday, and he laid his hands upon the heads of my little ones. We had a good deal of curious literary conversation, particularly about Mr. Thomas Ruddiman, with whom he lived in great friendship.

Any fresh instance of the uncertainty of life makes one embrace more closely a valuable friend. My dear and much respected Sir, may GOD preserve you long in this world while I am in it.

I am ever, your much obliged, and affectionate humble servant,

JAMES BOSWELL.

On the 23d of February I wrote to him again, complaining of his silence, as I had heard he was ill, and had written to Mr. Thrale for information concerning him; and I announced my intention of soon being again in London.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Why should you take such delight to make a bustle, to write to Mr. Thrale that I am negligent, and to Francis to do what is so very unnecessary: Thrale, you may be sure, cared not about it; and I shall spare Francis the trouble, by ordering a set both of the Lives and Poets to dear Mrs. Boswell,² in acknowledgment of her marmalade. Persuade her to accept them, and accept them kindly. If I thought she would receive them scornfully, I would send them to Miss Boswell, who, I hope, has yet none of her mamma's ill-will to me.

I would send sets of Lives, four volumes, to some other friends, to Lord Hailes first. His second volume lies by my bed-side; a book surely of great labour, and to every just thinker of great delight. Write me word to whom I shall send besides; would it please Lord Auchinleck? Mrs. Thrale waits in the coach.

I am, dear Sir, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

MARCH 13, 1779.

¹ The anniversary of the death of Charles I. — *Dr. Hill*.

² He sent a set elegantly bound and gilt, which was received as a very handsome present. — B.

This letter crossed me on the road to London, where I arrived on Monday, March 15, and next morning at a late hour, found Dr. Johnson sitting over his tea, attended by Mrs. Desmoulins, Mr. Levett, and a clergyman who had come to submit some poetical pieces to his revision. It is wonderful what a number and variety of writers, some of them even unknown to him, prevailed on his good-nature to look over their works, and suggest corrections and improvements.

My arrival interrupted for a little while the important business of this true representative of Bayes;¹ upon its being resumed, I found that the subject under immediate consideration was a translation, yet in manuscript, of the "*Carmen Seculare*" of Horace, which had this year been set to music, and performed as a public entertainment in London, for the joint benefit of Monsieur Philidor and Signor Baretti. When Johnson had done reading, the author asked him bluntly, "If upon the whole it was a good translation?" Johnson, whose regard for truth was uncommonly strict, seemed to be puzzled for a moment what answer to make, as he certainly could not honestly commend the performance; with exquisite address he evaded the question thus, "Sir, I do not say that it may not be made a very good translation." Here nothing whatever in favor of the performance was affirmed, and yet the writer was not shocked. A printed "Ode to the Warlike Genius of Britain," came next in review; the bard² was a lank bony figure, with short black hair; he was writhing himself in agitation while Johnson read, and showing his teeth in a grin of earnestness, exclaimed in broken sentences, and in a keen sharp tone, "Is that poetry, Sir? Is it *Pindar*?" JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, there is here a great deal of what is called poetry." Then turning to me, the poet cried, "My muse has not been long upon the town, and (pointing to the ode) it trembles under the hand of the great critic." Johnson, in a tone of displeasure, asked him, "Why do you praise Anson?"³ I did not trouble him by asking his reason for this question. He proceeded, "Here is an error, Sir; you have made Genius feminine." — "Palpable, Sir (cried the enthusiast); I know it. But (in a lower tone) it was to pay a compliment to the Duchess of Devonshire, with which her Grace was pleased. She is walk-

¹ In "The Rehearsal."

² A Mr. Tasker who was preparing a second edition of his ode. *The Gentleman's Magazine* speaking of it said: "It is well calculated to rouse the martial spirit of the nation." — *Dr. Hill*.

³ A mistake of Boswell's for Amherst. — *Dr. Hill*.

ing across Coxheath, in the military uniform, and I suppose her to be the Genius of Britain."¹ JOHNSON: "Sir, you are giving a reason for it; but that will not make it right. You may have a reason why two and two should make five; but they will still make but four."

Although I was several times with him in the course of the following days, such it seems were my occupations, or such my negligence, that I have preserved no memorial of his conversation till Friday, March 26, when I visited him. He said he expected to be attacked on account of his "Lives of the Poets." "However," said he, "I would rather be attacked than unnoticed. For the worst thing you can do to an author is to be silent as to his works. An assault upon a town is a bad thing; but starving it is still worse; an assault may be unsuccessful; you may have more men killed than you kill; but if you starve the town, you are sure of victory."

Talking of a friend² of ours associating with persons of very discordant principles and characters, I said he was a very universal man, quite a man of the world. JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; but one may be so much a man of the world, as to be nothing in the world. I remember a passage in Goldsmith's 'Vicar of Wakefield,' which he was afterwards fool enough to expunge: 'I do not love a man who is zealous for nothing.'" BOSWELL: "That was a fine passage." JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; there was another fine passage too, which he struck out: 'When I was a young man, being anxious to distinguish myself, I was perpetually starting new propositions. But I soon gave this over; for, I found that generally what was new was false.'" I said I did not like to sit with people of whom I had not a good opinion. JOHNSON: "But you must not indulge your delicacy too much; or you will be a *tête-à-tête* man all your life."

During my stay in London this spring,³ I find I was unaccountably negligent in preserving Johnson's sayings, more so than at any time when I was happy enough to have an opportunity of

¹ "Genius of Britain! to thy office true,
On Cox-heath reared the waving banners view.

In martial vest
By Venus and the graces drest
To yonder tent, who leads the way?
Art thou Britannia's Genius? Say!"

Tasker's "Ode."

² Probably Sir Joshua Reynolds. — *Dr. Hill.*

³ He was perhaps unusually dissipated this visit, — *Dr. Hill.*

nearing his wisdom and wit. There is no help for it now. I must content myself with presenting such scraps as I have. But I am nevertheless ashamed and vexed to think how much has been lost. It is not that there was a bad crop this year; but that I was not sufficiently careful in gathering it in. I, therefore, in some instances can only exhibit a few detached fragments.

Talking of the wonderful concealment of the author of the celebrated letters signed *Junius*, he said: "I should have believed Burke to be Junius, because I know no man but Burke who is capable of writing these letters; but Burke spontaneously denied it to me. The case would have been different, had I asked him if he was the author; a man so questioned, as to an anonymous publication, may think he has a right to deny it."

He observed that his old friend, Mr. Sheridan, had been honored with extraordinary attention in his own country, by having had an exception made in his favor in an Irish Act of Parliament concerning insolvent debtors. "Thus to be singled out," said he, "by legislature, as an object of public consideration and kindness, is a proof of no common merit."

At Streatham, on Monday, March 29, at breakfast, he maintained that a father had no right to control the inclinations of his daughters in marriage.

On Wednesday, March 31, when I visited him, and confessed an excess of which I had very seldom been guilty; that I had spent a whole night in playing at cards, and that I could not look back on it with satisfaction: instead of a harsh animadversion, he mildly said, "Alas, Sir, on how few things can we look back with satisfaction."

On Thursday, April 1, he commended one of the Dukes of Devonshire for "a dogged veracity."¹ He said too, "London is nothing to some people; but to a man whose pleasure is intellectual, London is the place. And there is no place where economy can be so well practised as in London: more can be had here for the money even by ladies, than anywhere else. You cannot play tricks with your fortune in a small place; you must make a uniform appearance. Here a lady may have well-furnished apartments, and elegant dress, without any meat in her kitchen."

I was amused by considering with how much ease and coolness he could write or talk to a friend, exhorting him not to suppose that happiness was not to be found as well in other places as in London; when he himself was at all times sensible of its being,

¹ See *ante*, p. 124.

comparatively speaking, a heaven upon earth.¹ The truth is, that by those who from sagacity, attention, and experience, have learnt the full advantage of London, its preëminence over every other place, not only for variety of enjoyment, but for comfort, will be felt with a philosophical exultation. The freedom from remark and petty censure, with which life may be passed there, is a circumstance which a man who knows the teasing restraint of a narrow circle must relish highly. Mr. Burke, whose orderly and amiable domestic habits might make the eye of observation less irksome to him than to most men, said once very pleasantly, in my hearing, "Though I have the honor to represent Bristol, I should not like to live there; I should be obliged to be so much *upon my good behavior*." In London, a man may live in splendid society at one time, and in frugal retirement at another, without animadversion. There, and there alone, a man's own house is truly his *castle*, in which he can be in perfect safety from intrusion whenever he pleases. I never shall forget how well this was expressed to me one day by Mr. Meynell: "The chief advantage of London," said he, "is, that a man is always *so near his burrow*."

He said of one of his old acquaintances: "He is very fit for a travelling governor. He knows French very well. He is a man of good principles; and there would be no danger that a young gentleman should catch his manner; for it is so very bad, that it must be avoided. In that respect he would be like the drunken Helot."

A gentleman has informed me, that Johnson said of the same person, "Sir, he has the most *inverted* understanding of any man whom I have ever known."

On Friday, April 2, being Good Friday, I visited him in the morning as usual; and finding that we insensibly fell into a train of ridicule upon the foibles of one of our friends, a very worthy man,³ I, by way of a check, quoted some good admonition from "The Government of the Tongue,"⁴ that very pious book. It happened also, remarkably enough, that the subject of the sermon preached to us to-day by Dr. Burrows, the rector of St. Clement Danes, was the certainty that at the last day we must give an account of "the deeds done in the body;"⁵ and amongst various

¹ In reference to Johnson's letter of July 3, 1778.

² Perhaps Mr. Elphinston. — *Dr. Hill*. See *ante*, Vol. I., p. 393.

³ Mr. Langton.

⁴ By the author of "The Whole Duty of Man."

⁵ II. Corinthians v. 10.

acts of culpability he mentioned evil-speaking. As we were moving slowly along in the crowd from church, Johnson jogged my elbow, and said, "Did you attend to the sermon?" — "Yes, Sir," said I, "it was very applicable to *us*." He, however, stood upon the defensive. "Why, Sir, the sense of ridicule is given us, and may be lawfully used. The author of 'The Government of the Tongue' would have us treat all men alike."

In the interval between morning and evening service, he endeavored to employ himself earnestly in devotional exercise; and, as he has mentioned in his "Prayers and Meditations" (p. 173), gave me "*Les Pensées de Pascal*," that I might not interrupt him. I preserve the book with reverence. His presenting it to me is marked upon it with his own hand, and I have found in it a truly divine unction. We went to church again in the afternoon.

On Saturday, April 3, I visited him at night, and found him sitting in Mrs. Williams's room, with her, and one who he afterwards told me was a natural son of the second Lord Southwell.¹ The table had a singular appearance, being covered with a heterogeneous assemblage of oysters and porter for his company, and tea for himself. I mentioned my having heard an eminent physician, who was himself a Christian, argue in favor of universal toleration, and maintain that no man could be hurt by another man's differing from him in opinion. JOHNSON: "Sir, you are to a certain degree hurt by knowing that even one man does not believe."

On Easter Day, after solemn service at St. Paul's, I dined with him: Mr. Allen the printer was also his guest. He was uncommonly silent; and I have not written down anything, except a single curious fact, which, having the sanction of his inflexible veracity, may be received as a striking instance of human insensibility and inconsideration. As he was passing by a fishmonger who was skinning an eel alive, he heard him "curse it, because it would not lie still."

On Wednesday, April 7, I dined with him at Sir Joshua Reynolds's. I have not marked what company was there. Johnson harangued upon the qualities of different liquors; and spoke with great contempt of claret, as so weak, that "a man would be drowned by it before it made him drunk." He was persuaded to drink one glass of it, that he might judge, not from recollection, which might be dim, but from immediate sensation. He

¹ Mauritius Lowe, the painter mentioned *ante* on p. 217. — *Croker*.

shook his head, and said: "Poor stuff! No, Sir, claret is the liquor for boys: port for men; but he who aspires to be a hero (smiling) must drink brandy. In the first place, the flavor of brandy is most grateful to the palate; and then brandy will do soonest for a man what drinking *can* do for him. There are, indeed, few who are able to drink brandy. That is a power rather to be wished for than attained. And yet (proceeded he), as in all pleasure hope is a considerable part, I know not but fruition comes too quick by brandy. Florence wine I think the worst; it is wine only to the eye; it is wine neither while you are drinking it, nor after you have drunk it; it neither pleases the taste, nor exhilarates the spirits." I reminded him how heartily he and I used to drink wine together, when we were first acquainted; and how I used to have a headache after sitting up with him. He did not like to have this recalled, or, perhaps, thinking that I boasted improperly, resolved to have a witty stroke at me; "Nay, Sir, it was not the *wine* that made your head ache, but the *sense* that I put into it." BOSWELL: "What, Sir, will sense make the head ache?" JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir (with a smile), when it is not used to it." No man who has a true relish of pleasantry could be offended at this; especially if Johnson in a long intimacy had given him repeated proofs of his regard and good estimation. I used to say, that as he had given me £1,000 in praise, he had a good right now and then to take a guinea from me.

On Thursday, April 8, I dined with him at Mr. Allan Ramsay's, with Lord Graham¹ and some other company. We talked of Shakespeare's witches. JOHNSON: "They are beings of his own creation; they are a compound of malignity and meanness, without any abilities; and are quite different from the Italian magician. King James says in his 'Dæmonology,' 'Magicians command the devils: witches are their servants.' The Italian magicians are elegant beings." RAMSAY: "Opera witches, not Drury Lane witches." Johnson observed, that abilities might be employed in a narrow sphere, as in getting money, which he said he believed no man could do without vigorous parts, though concentrated to a point. RAMSAY: "Yes, like a strong horse in a mill; he pulls better."

Lord Graham, while he praised the beauty of Loch Lomond, on the banks of which is his family seat, complained of the climate, and said he could not bear it. JOHNSON: "Nay, my Lord,

¹ Afterwards third Duke of Montrose, born in 1755, succeeded to the title in 1790, and died in 1836. — *Croker*.

do n't talk so: you may bear it well enough. Your ancestors have borne it more years than I can tell." This was a handsome compliment to the antiquity of the House of Montrose. His Lordship told me afterwards, that he had only affected to complain of the climate; lest, if he had spoken as favorably of his country as he really thought, Dr. Johnson might have attacked it. Johnson was very courteous to Lady Margaret Macdonald. "Madam," said he, "when I was in the Isle of Sky, I heard of the people running to take the stones off the road, lest Lady Margaret's horse should stumble."

Lord Graham commended Dr. Drummond at Naples as a man of extraordinary talents; and added, that he had a great love of liberty. JOHNSON: "He is *young*, my Lord," looking to his Lordship with an arch smile; "all *boys* love liberty, till experience convinces them they are not so fit to govern themselves as they imagined. We are all agreed as to our own liberty; we would have as much of it as we can get; but we are not agreed as to the liberty of others: for in proportion as we take, others must lose. I believe we hardly wish that the mob should have liberty to govern us. When that was the case some time ago, no man was at liberty not to have candles in his windows." RAMSAY: "The result is, that order is better than confusion." JOHNSON: "The result is, that order cannot be had but by subordination."

On Friday, April 16, I had been present at the trial of the unfortunate Mr. Hackman, who, in a fit of frantic jealous love had shot Miss Ray, the favorite of a nobleman.¹ Johnson, in whose company I had dined to-day with some other friends, was much interested by my account of what passed, and particularly with his prayer for the mercy of heaven.² He said, in a solemn fervid tone, "I hope he *shall* find mercy."

This day³ a violent altercation arose between Johnson and Beauclerk, which having made much noise at the time, I think it proper, in order to prevent any future misrepresentation, to give a minute account of it.

¹ Hackman was a clergyman who had been in the army. The nobleman was the Earl of Sandwich, at this time First Lord of the Admiralty.— *Croker*. She had lived with him seventeen years and borne him nine children, one of whom was Basil Montague, editor of "Bacon."

² On the following Monday Boswell was present at Hackman's execution, riding to Tyburn with him in a mourning coach.— *Dr. Hill*.

³ At the Club, when Johnson was President and the following members present: Lord Althorp, Sir Charles Bunbury, Beauclerk, Boswell, Sir Joseph Banks (the "eminent traveller"), Reynolds, and George Steevens.— *Napier*.

In talking of Hackman, Johnson argued, as Judge Blackstone had done, that his being furnished with two pistols was a proof that he meant to shoot two persons. Mr. Beauclerk said: "No; for that every wise man who intended to shoot himself, took two pistols, that he might be sure of doing it at once. Lord——'s cook shot himself with one pistol, and lived ten days in great agony. Mr. ——, who loved buttered muffins, but durst not eat them because they disagreed with his stomach, resolved to shoot himself; and then he ate three buttered muffins for breakfast, before shooting himself, knowing that he should not be troubled with indigestion: *he* had two charged pistols; one was found lying charged upon the table by him, after he had shot himself with the other."¹ "Well," said Johnson, with an air of triumph, "you see here one pistol was sufficient." Beauclerk replied smartly, "Because it happened to kill him." And either then or very little afterwards, being piqued at Johnson's triumphant remark, added, "This is what you do n't know, and I do." There was then a cessation of the dispute; and some minutes intervened, during which dinner and the glass went on cheerfully; when Johnson suddenly and abruptly exclaimed: "Mr. Beauclerk, how came you to talk so petulantly to me, as 'This is what you do n't know, but what I know?' One thing *I* know, which *you* do n't seem to know, that you are very uncivil." BEAUCLEBK: "Because *you* began by being uncivil (which you always are)." The words in parentheses were, I believe, not heard by Dr. Johnson. Here again there was a cessation of arms. Johnson told me, that the reason why he waited at first some time without taking any notice of what Mr. Beauclerk said, was because he was thinking whether he should resent it. But when he considered that there were present a young Lord and an eminent traveller, two men of the world with whom he had never dined before, he was apprehensive that they might think they had a right to take such liberties with him as Beauclerk did, and therefore resolved he would not let it pass; adding, "that he would not appear a coward." A little while after this, the conversation turned on the violence of Hackman's temper. Johnson then said: "It was his business to *command* his temper, as my friend, Mr. Beauclerk, should have done some time ago." BEAUCLEBK: "I should learn of *you*, Sir." JOHNSON: "Sir, you have given *me* opportunities enough of learning, when I have been in *your* company. No

¹ This looks like the origin of one of Sam Weller's famous anecdotes. "Pickwick," ch. 44.

man loves to be treated with contempt." BEAUCLERK (with a polite inclination towards Johnson): "Sir, you have known me twenty years, and however I may have treated others, you may be sure I could never treat you with contempt." JOHNSON: "Sir, you have said more than was necessary." Thus it ended; and Beauclerk's coach not having come for him till very late, Dr. Johnson and another gentleman sat with him a long time after the rest of the company were gone; and he and I dined at Beauclerk's on the Saturday se'nnight following.

After this tempest had subsided, I recollect the following particulars of his conversation:

"I am always for getting a boy forward in his learning; for that is a sure good. I would let him at first read *any* English book which happens to engage his attention; because you have done a great deal, when you have brought him to have entertainment from a book. He 'll get better books afterwards."

"Mallet, I believe, never wrote a single line of his projected life of the Duke of Marlborough. He groped for materials, and thought of it, till he had exhausted his mind. Thus it sometimes happens that men entangle themselves in their own schemes."

"To be contradicted in order to force you to talk is mighty unpleasing. You *shine*, indeed; but it is by being *ground*."

Of a gentleman who made some figure among the *Literati* of his time (Mr. Fitzherbert), he said, "What eminence he had was by a felicity of manner: he had no more learning than what he could not help."

On Saturday, April 24, I dined with him at Mr. Beauclerk's, with Sir Joshua Reynolds, Mr. Jones (afterwards Sir William), Mr. Langton, Mr. Steevens, Mr. Paradise, and Dr. Higgins. I mentioned that Mr. Wilkes had attacked Garrick to me, as a man who had no friend. JOHNSON: "I believe he is right, Sir. *Οἱ φίλοι, οὐ φίλος*¹ — He had friends but no friend. Garrick was so diffused, he had no man to whom he wished to unbosom himself. He found people always ready to applaud him, and that always for the same thing; so he saw life with great uniformity." I took upon me, for once, to fight with Goliath's weapons, and play the sophist. "Garrick did not need a friend, as he got from everybody all that he wanted. What is a friend? One who supports you and comforts you, while others do not. Friendship, you know, Sir, is the cordial drop, 'to make the nauseous

¹ Diogenes Laertius, bk. v. ch. i.; attributed to Aristotle: *ᾧ φίλοι οὐδείς φίλος*. — *Dr. Hill.*

draught of life go down : ' but if the draught be not nauseous, if it be all sweet, there is no occasion for that drop." JOHNSON : " Many men would not be content to live so. I hope I should not. They would wish to have an intimate friend, with whom they might compare minds, and cherish private virtues." One of the company mentioned Lord Chesterfield, as a man who had no friend. JOHNSON : " There were more materials to make friendship in Garrick, had he not been so diffused." BOSWELL : " Garrick was pure gold, but beat out to thin leaf. Lord Chesterfield was tinsel." JOHNSON : " Garrick was a very good man, the cheerfulest man of his age ; a decent liver in a profession which is supposed to give indulgence to licentiousness ; and a man who gave away, freely, money acquired by himself. He began the world with a great hunger for money ; the son of a half-pay officer, bred in a family whose study was to make fourpence do as much as others made fourpence-halfpenny do. But when he had got money, he was very liberal." I presumed to animadvert on his eulogy on Garrick, in his " Lives of the Poets." " You say, Sir, his death eclipsed the gayety of nations " [see Vol. I., p. 35]. JOHNSON : " I could not have said more nor less. It is the truth ; *eclipsed* not *extinguished* ; and his death *did* eclipse ; it was like a storm." BOSWELL : " But why nations ? Did his gayety extend farther than his own nation ?" JOHNSON : " Why, Sir, some exaggeration must be allowed. Besides, nations may be said — if we allow the Scotch to be a nation, and to have gayety, — which they have not. *You* are an exception, though. Come, gentlemen, let us candidly admit that there is one Scotchman who is cheerful." BEAUCLERK : " But he is a very unnatural Scotchman." I, however, continued to think the compliment to Garrick hyperbolically untrue. His acting had ceased sometime before his death ;² at any rate he had acted in Ireland but a short time, at an early period of his life, and never in Scotland. I objected also to what appears an anticlimax of praise, when contrasted with the preceding panegyric, — " and diminished the public stock of harmless pleasure ! " — " Is not *harmless pleasure* very tame ?" JOHNSON : " Nay, Sir, harmless pleasure is the highest praise. Pleasure is a word of dubious import ; pleasure is in general dangerous, and pernicious to virtue ; to be able therefore to furnish pleasure that is harmless, pleasure pure and

¹ Wilmot, Earl of Rochester : " A Letter from Artemisia." •

² Garrick retired in January, 1776, three years before his death. He visited Ireland in 1742 and again in 1743. — *Dr. Hill*.

unalloyed, is as great a power as man can possess." This was, perhaps, as ingenious a defence as could be made; still, however, I was not satisfied.

A celebrated wit¹ being mentioned, he said: "One may say of him as was said of a French wit, *Il n'a de l'esprit que contre Dieu*. I have been several times in company with him, but never perceived any strong power of wit. He produces a general effect by various means; he has a cheerful countenance and a gay voice. Besides his trade is wit. It would be as wild in him to come into company without merriment, as for a highwayman to take the road without his pistols."

Talking of the effects of drinking, he said: "Drinking may be practised with great prudence; a man who exposes himself when he is intoxicated, has not the art of getting drunk; a sober man who happens occasionally to get drunk, readily enough goes into a new company, which a man who has been drinking should never do. Such a man will undertake anything; he is without skill in inebriation. I used to slink home when I had drunk too much. A man accustomed to self-examination will be conscious when he is drunk, though an habitual drunkard will not be conscious of it. I knew a physician,² who for twenty years was not sober; yet in a pamphlet, which he wrote upon fevers, he appealed to Garrick and me for his vindication from a charge of drunkenness. A bookseller (naming him³) who got a large fortune by trade, was so habitually and equally drunk, that his most intimate friends never perceived that he was more sober at one time than another."

Talking of celebrated and successful irregular practisers in physic, he said: "Taylor⁴ was the most ignorant man I ever knew, but sprightly: Ward, the dullest. Taylor challenged me once to talk Latin with him (laughing). I quoted some of Horace, which he took to be a part of my own speech. He said a few words well enough." BEAUCLERK: "I remember, Sir, you said, that Taylor was an instance how far impudence could carry ignorance." Mr. Beauclerk was very entertaining this day, and told us a number of short stories in a lively elegant manner, and

¹ Not Horace Walpole who was not an acquaintance of Johnson's. Perhaps Richard Fitzpatrick, the cousin and "sworn brother" of Charles Fox and co-author of "The Rolliad."—*Dr. Hill*.

² Dr. James, author of a "Dissertation on Fevers."—*Wright*.

³ Croker thinks this was Andrew Millar, but Dr. Hill doubts it.

⁴ "The Chevalier Taylor, Ophthalmiotor Pontifical, Imperial and Royal," the celebrated oculist.—*Malone*. Ward was a well-known quack, satirized by Pope. "Imitations of Horace," Epist. 2, i. 180.

with that air of *the world* which has I know not what impressive effect, as if there were something more than is expressed, or than perhaps we could perfectly understand. As Johnson and I accompanied Sir Joshua Reynolds in his coach, Johnson said: "There is in Beauclerk a predominance over his company, that one does not like. But he is a man who has lived so much in the world, that he has a short story on every occasion; he is always ready to talk, and is never exhausted."

Johnson and I passed the evening at Miss Reynolds's, Sir Joshua's sister. I mentioned that an eminent friend¹ of ours, talking of the common remark that affection descends, said that, 'this was wisely contrived for the preservation of mankind; for which it was not so necessary that there should be affection from children to parents, as from parents to children; nay, there would be no harm in that view though children should at a certain age eat their parents.' JOHNSON: "But, Sir, if this were known generally to be the case, parents would not have affection for children." BOSWELL: "True, Sir; for it is in expectation of a return that parents are so attentive to their children; and I know a very pretty instance of a little girl of whom her father was very fond, who once when he was in a melancholy fit, and had gone to bed, persuaded him to rise in good humor by saying, 'My dear papa, please to get up, and let me help you on with your clothes, that I may learn to do it when you are an old man.'"

Soon after this time a little incident occurred, which I will not suppress, because I am desirous that my work should be, as much as is consistent with the strictest truth, an antidote to the false and injurious notions of his character, which have been given by others, and therefore I infuse every drop of genuine sweetness into my biographical cup.

TO DR. JOHNSON.

MY DEAR SIR: I am in great pain with an inflamed foot, and obliged to keep my bed, so am prevented from having the pleasure to dine at Mr. Ramsay's to-day, which is very hard; and my spirits are sadly sunk. Will you be so friendly as to come and sit an hour with me in the evening? I am ever your most faithful, and affectionate humble servant,

JAMES BOSWELL.

SOUTH AUDLEY-STREET;²
Monday, April 26.

Burke.

² General Paoli's residence where for some years Boswell was a frequent guest.
— Dr. Hill.

TO MR. BOSWELL.

MR. JOHNSON laments the absence of Mr. Boswell, and will come to him.
HARLEY-STREET.¹

He came to me in the evening, and brought Sir Joshua Reynolds. I need scarcely say, that their conversation, while they sat by my bedside, was the most pleasing opiate to pain that could have been administered.

Johnson being now better disposed to obtain information concerning Pope than he was last year [see p. 231], sent by me to my Lord Marchmont, a present of those volumes of his "Lives of the Poets," which were at this time published, with a request to have permission to wait on him; and his Lordship, who had called on him twice, obligingly appointed Saturday the 1st of May, for receiving us.

On that morning Johnson came to me from Streatham, and after drinking chocolate at General Paoli's in South Audley Street, we proceeded to Lord Marchmont's in Curzon Street. His Lordship met us at the door of his library, and with great politeness said to Johnson, "I am not going to make an encomium upon *myself*, by telling you the high respect I have for *you*, Sir." Johnson was exceedingly courteous; and the interview, which lasted about two hours, during which the Earl communicated his anecdotes of Pope, was as agreeable as I could have wished. When we came out, I said to Johnson, that, considering his Lordship's civility, I should have been vexed if he had again failed to come. "Sir," said he, "I would rather have given twenty pounds than not have come." I accompanied him to Streatham, where we dined, and returned to town in the evening.

On Monday, May 3, I dined with him at Mr. Dilly's; I pressed him this day for his opinion on the passage on Parnell, concerning which I had in vain questioned him in several letters, and at length obtained it in *due form of law*.

CASE for DR. JOHNSON'S Opinion;
3d of May, 1779.

"PARNELL, in his 'Hermit,' has the following passage:

" 'To clear this doubt, to know the world by sight,
To find if *books* and *swains* report it right;
(For yet by *swains alone* the world he knew,
Whose feet came wand'ring o'er the nightly dew.)'

¹ Allan Ramsay's residence. — *Cunningham*.

Is there not a contradiction in its being *first* supposed that the Hermit knew *both* what books and swains reported of the world; yet *afterwards* said, that he knew it by swains *alone*?"

"*I think it an inaccuracy. He mentions two instructors in the first line, and says he had only one in the next.*"¹

This evening I set out for Scotland.

TO MRS. LUCY PORTER, IN LICHFIELD.

DEAR MADAM: Mr. Green has informed me that you are much better: I hope I need not tell you that I am glad of it. I cannot boast of being much better; my old nocturnal complaint still pursues me, and my respiration is difficult, though much easier than when I left you the summer before last. Mr. and Mrs. Thrale are well; Miss has been a little indisposed; but she is got well again. They have since the loss of their boy had two daughters; but they seem likely to want a son.

I hope you had some books which I sent you. I was sorry for poor Mrs. Adey's death, and am afraid you will be sometimes solitary; but endeavour, whether alone or in company, to keep yourself cheerful. My friends likewise die very fast; but such is the state of man. I am, dear love, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MAY 4, 1779.

He had, before I left London, resumed the conversation concerning the appearance of a ghost at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, which Mr. John Wesley believed, but to which Johnson did not give credit. I was, however, desirous to examine the question closely, and at the same time wished to be made acquainted with

¹"I do not," says Mr. Malone, "see any difficulty in this passage, and wonder that Dr. Johnson should have acknowledged it to be *inaccurate*. The Hermit, it should be observed, had no actual experience of the world whatsoever: all his knowledge concerning it had been obtained in two ways; from *books* and from the *relations* of those country swains, who had seen a little of it. The plain meaning, therefore, is, 'To clear his doubts concerning Providence, and to obtain some knowledge of the world by actual experience; to see whether the accounts furnished by books, or by the oral communications of swains, were just representations of it; [I say, *swains*], for his oral or *vivâ voce* information had been obtained from that part of mankind *alone*, &c.' The word *alone* here does not relate to the whole of the preceding line, as has been supposed, but, by a common license, to the words, — *of all mankind*, which are understood, and of which it is restrictive." Mr. Malone, it must be owned, has shown much critical ingenuity in his explanation of this passage. His interpretation, however, seems to me much too recondite. The *meaning* of the passage may be certain enough; but surely the *expression* is confused, and one part of it contradictory to the other. — B. Croker has pointed out a misquotation which makes all the difference; the second line should run "books *or* swains." But in his letter of February 28, 1778, Boswell quoted the passage correctly. — *Napier*.

Mr. John Wesley ; for though I differed from him in some points, I admired his various talents, and loved his pious zeal. At my request, therefore, Dr. Johnson gave me a letter of introduction to him.

TO THE REVEREND MR. JOHN WESLEY.

SIR: Mr. Boswell, a gentleman who has been long known to me, is desirous of being known to you, and has asked this recommendation, which I give him with great willingness, because I think it very much to be wished that worthy and religious men should be acquainted with each other. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MAY 3, 1779.

Mr. Wesley being in the course of his ministry at Edinburgh, I presented this letter to him, and was very politely received. I begged to have it returned to me, which was accordingly done. His state¹ of the evidence as to the ghost did not satisfy me.

I did not write to Johnson, as usual, upon my return to my family ; but tried how he would be affected by my silence. Mr. Dilly sent me a copy of a note which he received from him on the 13th of July, in these words :

TO MR. DILLY.

SIR: Since Mr. Boswell's departure I have never heard from him; please to send word what you know of him, and whether you have sent my books to his lady. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

My readers will not doubt that his solicitude about me was very flattering.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: What can possibly have happened, that keeps us two such strangers to each other? I expected to have heard from you when you came home; I expected afterwards. I went into the country and returned, and yet there is no letter from Mr. Boswell. No ill I hope has happened; and if ill should happen, why should it be concealed from him who loves you? Is it a fit of humour that has disposed you to try who can hold out longest without writing? If it be, you have the victory. But I am afraid of something bad; set me free from my suspicions.

My thoughts are at present employed in guessing the reason of your silence; you must not expect that I should tell you anything, if I had anything to tell. Write, pray write to me, and let me know what is, or what has been the cause of this long interruption.

I am, dear Sir, your most affectionate humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JULY 13, 1779.

¹ State = statement.

TO DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON.

EDINBURGH, July 17, 1779.

MY DEAR SIR: What may be justly denominated a supine indolence of mind has been my state of existence since I last returned to Scotland. In a livelier state I had often suffered severely from long intervals of silence on your part; and I had even been chid by you for expressing my uneasiness. I was willing to take advantage of my insensibility, and while I could bear the experiment, to try whether your affection for me would, after an unusual silence on my part, make you write first. This afternoon I have had very high satisfaction by receiving your kind letter of inquiry, for which I most gratefully thank you. I am doubtful if it was right to make the experiment; though I have gained by it. I was beginning to grow tender, and to upbraid myself, especially after having dreamt two nights ago that I was with you. I and my wife, and my four children, are all well. I would not delay one post to answer your letter; but as it is late, I have not time to do more. You shall soon hear from me upon many and various particulars; and I shall never again put you to any test. I am, with veneration, my dear Sir, your much obliged, and faithful humble servant,

JAMES BOSWELL.

On the 22d of July, I wrote to him again; and gave an account of my last interview with my worthy friend Mr. Edward Dilly, at his brother's house at Southill in Bedfordshire, where he died soon after I parted from him, leaving me a very kind remembrance of his regard.

I informed him that Lord Hames, who had promised to furnish him with some anecdotes for his "*Lives of the Poets*," had sent me three instances of Prior's borrowing from *Gombauld*, in "*Recueil des Poètes*," tome 3. Epigram, "To John I owed great obligation," p. 25. "To the Duke of Noailles," p. 32. "Sauntering Jack and Idle Joan," p. 25.

My letter was a pretty long one, and contained a variety of particulars; but he, it should seem, had not attended to it; for his next to me was as follows:

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

MY DEAR SIR: Are you playing the same trick again, and trying who can keep silence longest? Remember that all tricks are either knavish or childish: and that it is as foolish to make experiments upon the constancy of a friend, as upon the chastity of a wife.

What can be the cause of this second fit of silence, I cannot conjecture: but after one trick, I will not be cheated by another, nor will harass my thoughts with conjectures about the motives of a man who, probably, acts only by caprice. I therefore suppose you are well, and that Mrs. Boswell is well too: and that the fine summer has restored Lord Auchinleck. I am much better than you left me; I think I am better than when I was in Scotland.

I forgot whether I informed you that poor Thrale has been in great danger.¹ Mrs. Thrale likewise has miscarried, and been much indisposed. Everybody else is well; Langton is in camp. I intend to put Lord Hailes's description of Dryden² into another edition, and as I know his accuracy, wish he would consider the dates, which I could not always settle to my own mind.

Mr. Thrale goes to Brighthelmston about Michaelmas, to be jolly and ride a hunting. I shall go to town or perhaps to Oxford. Exercise and gaiety, or rather carelessness, will, I hope, dissipate all remains of his malady; and I likewise hope by the change of place to find some opportunities of growing yet better myself. I am, dear Sir, your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

STREATHAM, Sept. 9, 1779.

My readers will not be displeased at being told every slight circumstance of the manner in which Dr. Johnson contrived to amuse his solitary hours. He sometimes employed himself in chemistry, sometimes in watering and pruning a vine, sometimes in small experiments, at which those who may smile, should recollect that there are moments which admit of being soothed only by trifles.³

On the 20th of September, I defended myself against his suspicion of me, which I did not deserve; and added: "Pray, let us write frequently. A whim strikes me, that we should send off a

¹ From a stroke of apoplexy which he suffered in June. But by the first of August, he had entirely recovered his faculties and vigor.—*Dr. Hill*.

² Which I communicated to him from his Lordship, but it has not yet been published. I have a copy of it.—*B.*

³ In one of his manuscript diaries, there is the following entry, which marks his curious minute attention.

"July 26, 1768. I shaved my nail by accident in whetting the knife, about an eighth of an inch from the bottom, and about a fourth from the top. This I measure that I may know the growth of nails; the whole is about five-eighths of an inch."

Another of the same kind appears, "Aug. 7, 1779, *Partem brachii dextri carpo proximam et cutem pectoris circa mamillam dextram rasi, ut notum fieret quanto temporis pili renovarentur.*" And, "Aug. 15, 1783, I cut from the vine 41 leaves, which weighed five oz. and a half and eight scruples: I lay them upon my book-case, to see what weight they will lose by drying."—*B.*

"Dr. Johnson" (Mrs. Piozzi's "Anecdotes," p. 237) "was always exceedingly fond of chemistry; and we made up a sort of laboratory at Streatham one summer, and diverted ourselves with drawing essences and coloring liquors. But the danger in which Mr. Thrale found his friend one day, when I had driven to London, and he had got the children and servants assembled around him to see some experiments performed, put an end to all our entertainment; as Mr. Thrale was persuaded that his short sight would have occasioned his destruction in a moment by bringing him close to a fierce and violent flame. Indeed it was a perpetual miracle that he did not set himself on fire reading abed, as was his constant custom, when quite unable even to keep clear of mischief with our best help; and accordingly the foretops of all his wigs were burned by the candle down to the very network. Future experiments in chemistry were, however, too dangerous, and Mr. Thrale insisted that we should do no more towards finding the philosopher's stone."—*Croker*. See *The Idler*, No. 31, in which Johnson gives a portrait of himself.

sheet once a week, like a stage coach, whether it be full or not; nay, though it should be empty. The very sight of your handwriting would comfort me: and were a sheet to be thus sent regularly, we should much oftener convey something were it only a few kind words."

My friend Colonel James Stuart,¹ second son of the Earl of Bute, who had distinguished himself as a good officer of the Bedfordshire militia, had taken a public-spirited resolution to serve his country in its difficulties, by raising a regular regiment, and taking the command of it himself. This, in the heir of the immense property of Wortley, was highly honorable. Having been in Scotland recruiting, he obligingly asked me to accompany him to Leeds, then the head-quarters of his corps; from thence to London for a short time, and afterwards to other places to which the regiment might be ordered. Such an offer, at a time of the year when I had full leisure, was very pleasing; especially as I was to accompany a man of sterling good sense, information, discernment, and conviviality; and was to have a second crop, in one year, of London and Johnson. Of this I informed my illustrious friend, in characteristic warm terms, in a letter dated the 30th of September, from Leeds.

On Monday, October 4, I called at his house before he was up. He sent for me to his bedside, and expressed his satisfaction at this incidental meeting, with as much vivacity as if he had been in the gayety of youth. He called briskly, "Frank, go and get coffee, and let us breakfast *in splendor*."

During this visit to London I had several interviews with him, which it is unnecessary to distinguish particularly. I consulted him as to the appointment of guardians to my children, in case of my death. "Sir," said he, "do not appoint a number of guardians. When there are many, they trust one to another, and the business is neglected. I would advise you to choose only one; let him be a man of respectable character, who, for his own credit, will do what is right; let him be a rich man, so that he may be under no temptation to take advantage; and let him be a man of business, who is used to conduct affairs with ability and expertness, to whom, therefore, the execution of the trust will not be burdensome."

¹ Colonel Stuart assumed successively the names of Stuart and Mackenzie, but was best known as Mr. Stuart-Wortley. He was father of the first Lord Wharncliffe, and died in 1814. — *Croker*.

² He made his will in his wife's lifetime and appointed her and Sir William Forbes, or the survivor of them, "tutors and curators" of his children. "Boswelliana," p. 186. — *Dr. Hill*.

On Sunday, October 10, we dined together at Mr. Strahan's. The conversation having turned on the prevailing practice of going to the East-Indies in quest of wealth; JOHNSON: "A man had better have 10,000*l.* at the end of ten years passed in England, than 20,000*l.* at the end of ten years passed in India, because you must compute what you *give* for money; and a man who has lived ten years in India, has given up ten years of social comfort, and all those advantages which arise from living in England. The ingenious Mr. Brown, distinguished by the name of *Capability Brown*,¹ told me, that he was once at the seat of Lord Clive, who had returned from India with great wealth; and that he showed him at the door of his bed-chamber a large chest, which he said he had once had full of gold; upon which Brown observed, 'I am glad you can bear it so near your bed-chamber.'"

We talked of the state of the poor in London. JOHNSON: "Saunders Welch, the Justice, who was once high-constable of Holborn, and had the best opportunities of knowing the state of the poor, told me that I under-rated the number, when I computed that twenty a week, that is above a thousand a year, died of hunger; not absolutely of immediate hunger, but of the wasting and other diseases which are the consequences of hunger. This happens only in so large a place as London, where people are not known. What we are told about the great sums got by begging is not true: the trade is overstocked. And you may depend upon it, there are many who cannot get work. A particular kind of manufacture fails; those who have been used to work at it can, for some time, work at nothing else. You meet a man begging: you charge him with idleness: he says, 'I am willing to labor. Will you give me work?' — 'I cannot.' — 'Why then you have no right to charge me with idleness.'"

We left Mr. Strahan's at seven, as Johnson had said he intended to go to evening prayers. As we walked along he complained of a little gout in his toe, and said: "I shan't go to prayers to-night; I shall go to-morrow: Whenever I miss church on a Sunday, I resolve to go another day. But I do not always do it." This was a fair exhibition of that vibration between pious resolutions and indolence, which many of us have too often experienced.

I went home with him, and we had a long quiet conversation. I read him a letter from Dr. Hugh Blair concerning Pope (in

¹ Head gardener at Hampton Court and Windsor. He got his name by saying that the grounds which he was asked to lay out had *Capabilities*.

writing whose Life he was now employed), which I shall insert as a literary curiosity.¹

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: In the year 1763, being at London, I was carried by Dr. John Blair, Prebendary of Westminster, to dine at old Lord Bathurst's; where we found the late Mr. Mallet, Sir James Porter, who had been Ambassador at Constantinople, the late Dr. Macaulay, and two or three more. The conversation turning on Mr. Pope, Lord Bathurst told us, that "The Essay on Man" was originally composed by Lord Bolingbroke in prose, and that Mr. Pope did no more than put it into verse: that he had read Lord Bolingbroke's manuscript in his own hand-writing: and remembered well, that he was at a loss whether most to admire the elegance of Lord Bolingbroke's prose, or the beauty of Mr. Pope's verse. When Lord Bathurst told this, Mr. Mallet bade me attend, and remember this remarkable piece of information; as, by the course of Nature, I might survive his Lordship, and be a witness of his having said so. The conversation was indeed too remarkable to be forgotten. A few days after, meeting with you, who were then also at London, you will remember that I mentioned to you what had passed on this subject, as I was much struck with this anecdote. But what ascertains² my recollection of it beyond doubt, is, that being accustomed to keep a journal of what passed when I was at London, which I wrote out every evening, I find the particulars of the above information, just as I have now given them, distinctly marked; and am thence enabled to fix this conversation to have passed on Friday, the 22d of April, 1763.

I remember also distinctly (though I have not for this the authority of my journal) that the conversation going on concerning Mr. Pope, I took notice of a report which had been sometimes propagated that he did not understand Greek. Lord Bathurst said to me that he knew that to be false; for the part of the *Iliad* was translated by Mr. Pope in his house in the country; and that in the morning when they assembled at breakfast, Mr. Pope used frequently to repeat, with great rapture, the Greek lines which he had been translating, and then to give them his version of them, and to compare them together.

If these circumstances can be of any use to Dr. Johnson, you have my full liberty to give them to him. I beg you will, at the same time, present to him my most respectful compliments, with best wishes for his success and

¹ The Rev. Dr. Law, Bishop of Carlisle, in the preface to his valuable edition of Archbishop King's "Essay on the Origin of Evil," mentions that the principles maintained in it had been adopted by Pope in his "Essay on Man;" and adds: "The fact, notwithstanding such denial (Bishop Warburton's) might have been strictly verified by an unexceptionable testimony, viz. that of the late Lord Bathurst who saw the very same system of the *ῥὸ βέλτιον* (taken from the Archbishop) in Lord Bolingbroke's own hand, lying before Mr. Pope, while he was composing his Essay." This is respectable evidence; but that of Dr. Blair is more direct from the fountain-head, as well as more full. Let me add to it that of Dr. Joseph Warton: "The late Lord Bathurst repeatedly assured me that he had read the whole scheme of 'The Essay on Man,' in the handwriting of Bolingbroke, and drawn up in a series of propositions, which Pope was to versify and illustrate." "Essay on the Genius and Writing of Pope," vol. ii. p. 62. — B.

² Ascertain, to establish. — Johnson's Dictionary.

fame in all his literary undertakings. I am, with great respect, my dearest Sir, your most affectionate, and obliged humble servant,

HUGH BLAIR.

BROUGHTON PARK, Sept. 21, 1779.

JOHNSON: "Depend upon it, Sir, this is too strongly stated. Pope may have had from Bolingbroke the philosophic *stamina* of his Essay; and admitting this to be true, Lord Bathurst did not intentionally falsify. But the thing is not true in the latitude that Blair seems to imagine; we are sure that the poetical imagery, which makes a great part of the poem, was Pope's own. It is amazing, Sir, what deviations there are from precise truth, in the account which is given of almost every thing. I told Mrs. Thrale, 'You have so little anxiety about truth, that you never tax your memory with the exact thing.' Now what is the use of the memory to truth, if one is careless of exactness? Lord Hailes's 'Annals of Scotland' are very exact; but they contain mere dry particulars. They are to be considered as a dictionary. You know such things are there; and may be looked at when you please. Robertson paints; but the misfortune is, you are sure he does not know the people whom he paints; so you cannot suppose a likeness. Characters should never be given by a historian, unless he knew the people whom he describes, or copies from those who knew them."

BOSWELL: "Why, Sir, do people play this trick which I observe now, when I look at your grate, putting the shovel against it to make the fire burn?" JOHNSON: "They play the trick, but it does not make the fire burn. *There* is a better (setting the poker perpendicularly up at right angles with the grate). In days of superstition they thought, as it made a cross with the bars, it would drive away the witch."

BOSWELL: "By associating with you, Sir, I am always getting an accession of wisdom. But perhaps a man, after knowing his own character—the limited strength of his own mind, should not be desirous of having too much wisdom, considering, *quid valeant humeri*,¹ how little he can carry." JOHNSON: "Sir, be as wise as you can; let a man be *aliis lætus, sapiens sibi*:

" 'Though pleas'd to see the dolphins play,
I mind my compass and my way.' ²

¹ Horace: "Ars Poet." l. 39.

² "The Spleen," a poem.—B. By Matthew Green.—*Dr. Hill*.

You may be as wise in your study in the morning, and gay in company at a tavern in the evening. Every man is to take care of his own wisdom and his own virtue, without minding too much what others think."

He said: "Dodsley first mentioned to me the scheme of an English Dictionary; but I had long thought of it." BOSWELL: "You did not know what you were undertaking." JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir, I knew very well what I was undertaking, — and very well how to do it, — and have done it very well." BOSWELL: "An excellent climax! and it *has* availed you. In your preface you say, 'What would it avail me in this gloom of solitude?' You have been agreeably mistaken."

In his *Life of Milton*, he observes, "I cannot but remark a kind of respect, perhaps unconsciously, paid to this great man by his biographers: every house in which he resided is historically mentioned, as if it were an injury to neglect naming any place that he honored by his presence." I had, before I read this observation, been desirous of showing that respect to Johnson, by various inquiries. Finding him this evening in a very good humor, I prevailed on him to give me an exact list of his places of residence, since he entered the metropolis as an author, which I subjoin in a note.¹

I mentioned to him a dispute between a friend of mine and his lady, concerning conjugal infidelity, which my friend had maintained was by no means so bad in the husband as in the wife. JOHNSON: "Your friend was in the right, Sir. Between a man and his Maker it is a different question: but between a man and his wife, a husband's infidelity is nothing. They are connected by children, by fortune, by serious considerations of community. Wise married women don't trouble themselves about infidelity in their husbands." BOSWELL: "To be sure there is a great difference between the offence of infidelity in a man and that of his wife." JOHNSON: "The difference is boundless. The man imposes no bastards upon his wife."

¹ (1) Exeter Street, off Catherine Street, Strand. [March, 1737.] (2) Greenwich. [July, 1737.] (3) Woodstock Street, near Hanover Square. [End of 1737.] (4) Castle Street, Cavendish Square, No. 6. [Spring and October, 1738.] (5) Strand. (6) Boswell Court. (7) Strand, again. (8) Bow Street. (9) Holborn. (10) Fetter Lane. (11) Holborn, again. (12) Gough Square. [Here "Rasselas" was written.] (13) Staple Inn. [He moved here March 23, 1759.] (14) Gray's Inn. (15) Inner Temple Lane, No. 1. (16) Johnson's Court, No. 7. (17) Bolt Court, No. 8. From about 1765, he had an "apartment" at Streat-ham and from about 1765 to about 1780 one at Southwark; from about the beginning of 1781 to the Spring of 1783, he had a room either in Grosvenor Square or Argyll Street. — B. *Dr. Hill*.

Here it may be questioned whether Johnson was entirely in the right. I suppose it will not be controverted that the difference in the degree of criminality is very great, on account of consequences: but still it may be maintained, that, independent of moral obligation, infidelity is by no means a light offence in a husband: because it must hurt a delicate attachment, in which a mutual constancy is implied, with such refined sentiments as Massinger has exhibited in his play of "The Picture." Johnson probably at another time would have admitted this opinion. And let it be kept in remembrance, that he was very careful not to give any encouragement to irregular conduct. A gentleman, not adverting to the distinction made by him upon this subject, supposed a case of singular perverseness in a wife, and heedlessly said, "That then he thought a husband might do as he pleased with a safe conscience." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, this is wild indeed (smiling); you must consider that fornication is a crime in a single man: and you cannot have more liberty by being married."

He this evening expressed himself strongly against the Roman Catholics; observing, "In everything in which they differ from us, they are wrong." He was even against the invocation of saints; in short, he was in the humor of opposition.

Having regretted to him that I had learnt little Greek, as is too generally the case in Scotland; that I had for a long time hardly applied at all to the study of that noble language, and that I was desirous of being told by him what method to follow; he recommended to me as easy helps, Sylvanus's "First Book of the Iliad;" Dawson's "Lexicon to the Greek New Testament;" and "Hesiod," with *Pasoris Lexicon* at the end of it.

On Tuesday, October 12, I dined with him at Mr. Ramsay's with Lord Newhaven,¹ and some other company, none of whom I recollect, but a beautiful Miss Graham,² a relation of his Lordship's, who asked Dr. Johnson to hob or nob with her. He was flattered by such pleasing attention, and politely told her he never drank wine; but if she would drink a glass of water, he was much at her service. She accepted. "Oho, Sir! (said Lord Newhaven) you are caught." JOHNSON: "Nay, I do not see *how* I am caught; but if I am caught, I don't want to get free again. If I am caught I hope to be kept." Then when the two glasses of water were brought, smiling placidly to the young lady, he said, "Madam, let us *reciprocate*."

¹One of a creation of eighteen Irish peers in 1776.—*Dr. Hill*.
Now the Lady of Sir Henry Dashwood, Bart.

Lord Newhaven and Johnson carried on an argument for some time concerning the Middlesex election. Johnson said: "Parliament may be considered as bound by law, as a man is bound where there is nobody to tie the knot. As it is clear that the House of Commons may expel, and expel again and again, why not allow of the power to incapacitate for that Parliament, rather than have a perpetual contest kept up between Parliament and the people." Lord Newhaven took the opposite side; but respectfully said, "I speak with great deference to you, Dr. Johnson; I speak to be instructed." This had its full effect upon my friend. He bowed his head almost as low as the table, to a complimenting nobleman; and called out, "My Lord, my Lord, I do not desire all this ceremony: let us tell our minds to one another quietly." After the debate was over, he said, "I have got lights on the subject to-day, which I had not before." This was a great deal from him, especially as he had written a pamphlet¹ upon it.

He observed: "The House of Commons was originally not a privilege of the people, but a check, for the Crown, on the House of Lords. I remember Henry the Eighth wanted them to do something; they hesitated in the morning, but did it in the afternoon. He told them, 'It is well you did; or half your heads should have been upon Temple Bar.'² But the House of Commons is now no longer under the power of the Crown, and therefore must be bribed." He added, "I have no delight in talking of public affairs."

Of his fellow-collegian, the celebrated Mr. George Whitefield, he said: "Whitefield never drew as much attention as a mountebank does; he did not draw attention by doing better than others, but by doing what was strange. Were Astley to preach a sermon standing upon his head on a horse's back, he would collect a multitude to hear him: but no wise man would say he had made a better sermon for that. I never treated Whitefield's ministry with contempt; I believe he did good. He had devoted himself to the lower classes of mankind, and among them he was of use. But when familiarity and noise claim the praise due to knowledge, art, and elegance, we must beat down such pretensions."

What I have preserved of his conversation during the re-

¹ "The False Alarm."

² Heads were first placed on Temple Bar in the time of William III. — *P. Cunningham*,

mainder of my stay in London at this time, is only what follows : I told him that when I objected to keeping company with a notorious infidel, a celebrated friend of ours said to me : " I do not think that men who live laxly in the world, as you and I do, can with propriety assume such an authority : Dr. Johnson may, who is uniformly exemplary in his conduct. But it is not very consistent to shun an infidel to-day, and get drunk to-morrow."

JOHNSON : " Nay Sir, this is sad reasoning. Because a man can not be right in all things, is he to be right in nothing? Because a man sometimes gets drunk, is he therefore to steal? This doctrine would very soon bring a man to the gallows."

After all, however, it is a difficult question how far sincere Christians should associate with the avowed enemies of religion ; for in the first place, almost every man's mind may be more or less " corrupted by evil communications ;" secondly, the world may very naturally suppose that they are not really in earnest in religion, who can easily bear its opponents ; and thirdly, if the profane find themselves quite well received by the pious, one of the checks upon an open declaration of their infidelity, and one of the probable chances of obliging them seriously to reflect, which their being shunned would do, is removed.

He, I know not why, showed upon all occasions an aversion to go to Ireland, where I proposed to him that we should make a tour. JOHNSON : " It is the last place where I should wish to travel." BOSWELL : " Should you not like to see Dublin, Sir?" JOHNSON : " No, Sir ; Dublin is only a worse capital." BOSWELL : " Is not the Giant's Causeway worth seeing?" JOHNSON : " Worth seeing? yes ; but not worth going to see."

Yet he had a kindness for the Irish nation, and thus generously expressed himself to a gentleman from that country, on the subject of an UNION which artful politicians have often had in view — " Do not make an union with us, Sir, we should unite with you only to rob you. We should have robbed the Scotch, if they had had anything of which we could have robbed them."

Of an acquaintance of ours, whose manners and everything about him, though expensive, were coarse, he said, " Sir, you see in him vulgar prosperity."

A foreign minister of no very high talents, who had been in his company for a considerable time quite overlooked, happened luckily to mention that he had read some of his *Rambler* in Italian, and admired it much. This pleased him greatly ; he observed that the title had been translated, " Il Genio errante,"

though I have been told it was rendered more ludicrously, "Il Vagabondo;"¹ and finding that this minister gave such a proof of his taste, he was all attention to him, and on the first remark which he made, however simple, exclaimed, "The ambassador says well; His Excellency observes —;" And then he expanded and enriched the little that had been said, in so strong a manner, that it appeared something of consequence. This was exceedingly entertaining to the company who were present, and many a time afterwards it furnished a pleasant topic of merriment: "*The ambassador says well*" became a laughable term of applause, when no mighty matter had been expressed.

I left London on Monday, October 18, and accompanied Colonel Stuart to Chester, where his regiment was to lie for some time.

MR. BOSWELL TO DR. JOHNSON.

CHESTER, October 22, 1779.

MY DEAR SIR: It was not till one o'clock on Monday morning, that Colonel Stuart and I left London; for we chose to bid a cordial adieu to Lord Mountstuart, who was to set out on that day on his embassy to Turin. We drove on excellently, and reached Lichfield in good time enough that night. The Colonel had heard so preferable a character of the George, that he would not put up at the Three Crowns, so that I did not see our host Wilkins. We found at the George as good accommodations as we could wish to have, and I fully enjoyed the comfortable thought that *I was in Lichfield again*. Next morning it rained very hard; and as I had much to do in a little time, I ordered a post-chaise, and between eight and nine sallied forth to make a round of visits. I first went to Mr. Green, hoping to have had him to accompany me to all my other friends, but he was engaged to attend the Bishop of Sodor and Man, who was then lying at Lichfield very ill of the gout. Having taken a hasty glance at the additions to Green's museum, from which it was not so easy to break away, I next went to the Friery, where I at first occasioned some tumult in the ladies, who were not prepared to receive *company* so early: but my *name*, which has by wonderful felicity come to be closely associated with yours, soon made all easy; and Mrs. Cobb and Miss Adye re-assumed their seats at the breakfast-table, which they had quitted with some precipitation. They received me with the kindness of an old acquaintance: and after we had joined in a cordial chorus to *your* praise, Mrs. Cobb gave *me* the high satisfaction of hearing that you said, "Boswell is a man who I believe never left a house without leaving a wish for his return." And she afterwards added, that she bid you tell me, that if ever I came to Lichfield, she hoped I would take a bed at the Friery. From thence I drove to Peter Garrick's, where I also found a very flattering welcome. He appeared to me to enjoy his usual cheerfulness; and he very kindly asked me to come when I

¹An Italian prince once dining with Dr. Johnson called out from the top of the table to the bottom, "At your health, Mr. Vagabond," and Mme. D'Arbly in her memoirs of Dr. Burney relates how General Paoli at Mrs. Thrale's table begged leave to give one toast, and with smiling pomposity, pronounced, "The great Vagabond." — *Dr. Hill*.

could, and pass a week with him. From Mr. Garrick's I went to the Palace to wait on Mr. Seward. I was first entertained by his lady and daughter, he himself being in bed with a cold, according to his valetudinary custom. But he desired to see me; and I found him drest in his black gown, with a white flannel night-gown above it; so that he looked like a Dominican friar. He was good-humoured and polite; and under his roof too my reception was very pleasing. I then proceeded to Stow-hill and first paid my respects to Mrs. Gastrell, whose conversation I was not willing to quit. But my sand-glass was now beginning to run low, as I could not trespass too long on the Colonel's kindness, who obligingly waited for me; so I hastened to Mrs. Aston's, whom I found much better than I feared I should; and there I met a brother-in-law of these ladies, who talked much of you, and very well too, as it appeared to me. It then only remained to visit Mrs. Lucy Porter, which I did, I really believe, with sincere satisfaction on both sides. I am sure I was glad to see her again; and, as I take her to be very honest, I trust she was glad to see me again; for she expressed herself so, that I could not doubt of her being in earnest. What a great key-stone of kindness, my dear Sir, were you that morning! for we were all held together by our common attachment to you. I cannot say that I ever passed two hours with more self-complacency than I did those two at Lichfield. Let me not entertain any suspicion that this is idle vanity. Will not you confirm me in my persuasion, that he who finds himself so regarded has just reason to be happy?

We got to Chester about midnight on Tuesday; and here again I am in a state of much enjoyment. Colonel Stuart and his officers treat me with all the civility I could wish; and I play my part admirably. *Lætus aliis, sapiens sibi*, the classical sentence which you, I imagine, invented the other day, is exemplified in my present existence. The Bishop,¹ to whom I had the honour to be known several years ago, shews me much attention; and I am edified by his conversation. I must not omit to tell you, that his Lordship admires, very highly, your Prefaces to the Poets. I am daily obtaining an extension of agreeable acquaintance, so that I am kept in animated variety; and the study of the place itself, by the assistance of books, and of the Bishop, is sufficient occupation. Chester pleases my fancy more than any town I ever saw. But I will not enter upon it at all in this letter.

How long I shall stay here I cannot yet say. I told a very pleasing young lady,² niece to one of the Prebendaries, at whose house I saw her, "I have come to Chester, Madam, I cannot tell how; and far less can I tell how I am to get away from it." Do not think me too juvenile. I beg it of you, my dear Sir, to favour me with a letter while I am here, and add to the happiness of a happy friend, who is ever, with affectionate veneration, most sincerely yours,

JAMES BOSWELL.

If you do not write directly, so as to catch me here, I shall be disappointed. Two lines from you will keep my lamp burning bright.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Why should you importune me so earnestly to write? Of what importance can it be to hear of distant friends, to a man who finds himself welcome wherever he goes, and makes new friends faster than he can

¹ Dr. Porteous, afterwards Bishop of London.— *Croker*.

² Miss Letitia Barnston.— B.

want them? If to the delight of such universal kindness of reception, any thing can be added by knowing that you retain my good-will, you may indulge yourself in the full enjoyment of that small addition.

I am glad that you made the round of Lichfield with so much success; the oftener you are seen, the more you will be liked. It was pleasing to me to read that Mrs. Aston was so well, and that Lucy Porter was so glad to see you.

In the place where you now are, there is much to be observed; and you will easily procure yourself skilful directors. But what will you do to keep away the *black dog* that worries you at home? If you would, in compliance with your father's advice, inquire into the old tenures and old characters of Scotland, you would certainly open to yourself many striking scenes of the manners of the Middle Ages. The feudal system, in a country half-barbarous, is naturally productive of great anomalies in civil life. The knowledge of past times is naturally growing less in all cases not of public record; and the past time of Scotland is so unlike the present, that it is already difficult for a Scotchman to image the œconomy of his grandfather. Do not be tardy nor negligent; but gather up eagerly what can yet be found.¹

We have, I think, once talked of another project, a history of the late insurrection in Scotland, with all its incidents. Many falsehoods are passing into uncontradicted history. Voltaire, who loved a striking story, has told what he could not find to be true.²

You may make collections for either of these projects, or for both, as opportunities occur, and digest your materials at leisure. The great direction which Burton has left to men disordered like you, is this, *Be not solitary; be not idle*:³ which I would thus modify; If you are idle be not solitary; if you are solitary, be not idle.

There is a letter for you, from your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, October 27, 1779.

TO DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON.

CARLISLE, Nov. 7, 1779.

MY DEAR SIR: That I should importune you to write to me at Chester, is not wonderful, when you consider what an avidity I have for delight; and that the *amor* of pleasure, like the *amor nummi*,⁴ increases in proportion with the quantity which we possess of it. Your letter, so full of polite kindness and masterly counsel, came like a large treasure upon me, while already glittering with riches. I was quite enchanted at Chester, so that I could with difficulty quit it. But the enchantment was the reverse of that of Circé; for so far was there from being any thing sensual in it, that I was *all mind*. I do not mean all reason only: for my fancy was kept finely in play. And why not?—If you please I will send you a copy, or an abridgment of my Chester journal, which is truly a log-book of felicity.

¹ I have a valuable collection made by my father, which with some additions and illustrations of my own, I intend to publish. I have some hereditary claim to be an antiquary; not only from my father, but as being descended, by the mother's side, from the able and learned Sir John Skene, whose merit bids defiance to all the attempts which have been made to lessen his fame.—B.

² In chapters xxiv. and xxv. of his "*Siècle de Louis XV.*"

³ Burton: "*The Anatomy of Melancholy.*"

⁴ Juvenal, xiv. 139.

The Bishop treated me with a kindness which was very flattering. I told him that you regretted you had seen so little of Chester. His Lordship bade me tell you, that he should be glad to shew you more of it. I am proud to find the friendship with which you honour me is known in so many places.

I arrived here late last night. Our friend the Dean¹ has been gone from hence some months; but I am told at my inn, that he is very *populous* (popular). However, I found Mr. Law, the Archdeacon, son to the Bishop, and with him I have breakfasted and dined very agreeably. I got acquainted with him at the assizes here about a year and a half ago; he is a man of great variety of knowledge, uncommon genius, and, I believe, sincere religion. I received the holy sacrament in the cathedral in the morning, this being the first Sunday in the month; and was at prayers there in the morning. It is divinely cheering to me to think that there is a cathedral so near Auchinleck; and I now leave Old England in such a state of mind as I am thankful to God for granting me.

The *black dog* that worries me at home I cannot but dread; yet as I have been for some time past in a military train, I trust I shall *repulse* him. To hear from you will animate me like the sound of a trumpet; I therefore hope, that soon after my return to the northern field, I shall receive a few lines from you.

Colonel Stuart did me the honour to escort me in his carriage to shew me Liverpool, and from thence back again to Warrington, where we parted.² In justice to my valuable wife, I must inform you she wrote to me, that as I was so happy, she would not be so selfish as to wish me to return sooner than business absolutely required my presence. She made my clerk write to me a post or two after to the same purpose, by commission from her; and this day a kind letter from her met me at the Post-Office here, acquainting me that she and the little ones were well, and expressing all their wishes for my return home. I am, more and more, my dear Sir, your affectionate and obliged humble servant,

JAMES BOSWELL.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Your last letter was not only kind but fond. But I wish you to get rid of all intellectual excesses, and neither to exalt your pleasures, nor aggravate your vexations beyond their real and natural state. Why should you not be as happy at Edinburgh as at Chester? *In culpa est animus, qui se non effugit usquam.*³ Please yourself with your wife and children, and studies, and practice.

I have sent a petition⁴ from Lucy Porter, with which I leave it to your discretion whether it is proper to comply. Return me her letter, which I have sent, that you may know the whole case, and not be seduced to any thing

¹ Dean Percy.

² His regiment was afterwards ordered to Jamaica, where he accompanied it, and almost lost his life by the climate. This impartial order I should think a sufficient refutation of the idle rumor that "there was still something behind the throne greater than the throne itself."—B. Boswell refers to the influence over the King attributed to Lord Bute, which might have been supposed sufficient to save his son's regiment from being ordered to Jamaica.

³ Horace: "Epistles," i. 14, 13.

⁴ Requesting me to inquire concerning the family of a gentleman who was then paying his addresses to Miss Doxy.—B.

that you may afterwards repent. Miss Doxy perhaps you know to be Mr. Garrick's niece.

If Dean Percy can be popular at Carlisle, he may be very happy. He has in his disposal two livings, each equal, or almost equal in value to the deanery; he may take one himself, and give the other to his son.

How near is the cathedral to Auchinleck, that you are so much delighted with it? It is, I suppose, at least an hundred and fifty miles off.¹ However, if you are pleased, it is so far well.

Let me know what reception you have from your father, and the state of his health. Please him as much as you can, and add no pain to his last years.

Of our friends here I can recollect nothing to tell you. I have neither seen nor heard of Langton. Beauchamp is just returned from Brighthelmston, I am told, much better. Mr. Thrale and his family are still there; and his health is said to be visibly improved: he has not bathed but hunted.

At Bolt-court there is much malignity, but of late little open hostility.² I have had a cold but it is gone.

Make my compliments to Mrs. Boswell, &c.

I am, Sir, your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Nov. 13, 1779.

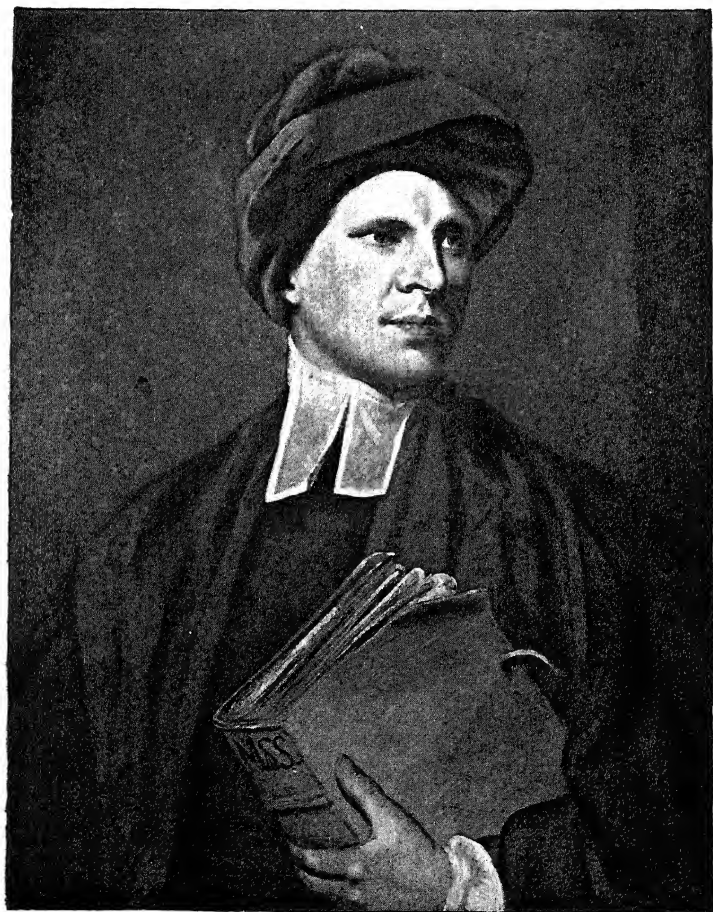
On November 22, and December 21, I wrote to him from Edinburgh, giving a very favorable report of the family of Miss Doxy's lover; that after a good deal of inquiry I had discovered the sister of Mr. Francis Stewart, one of his amanuenses when writing his Dictionary; that I had, as desired by him, paid her a guinea for an old pocket-book of her brother's which he had retained; and that the good woman, who was in very moderate circumstances, but contented and placid, wondered at his scrupulous and liberal honesty, and received the guinea as if sent her by Providence. That I had repeatedly begged of him to keep his promise to send me his letter to Lord Chesterfield, and that this *memento*, like *Delenda est Carthago*, must be in every letter that I should write to him, till I had obtained my object.

In 1780, the world was kept in impatience for the completion of his "Lives of the Poets," upon which he was employed so far as his indolence allowed him to labor.

I wrote to him on January 1, and March 13, sending him my notes of Lord Marchmont's information concerning Pope; complaining that I had not heard from him for almost four months, though he was two letters in my debt; that I had suffered again from melancholy; hoping that he had been in so much better company (the Poets), that he had not time to think of his distant friends; for if that were the case, I should have some recompense

¹ It is little more than half that distance. — *Dr. Hill*.

² See p. 247, Nov., 1778.



BISHOP PERCY.

for my uneasiness; that the state of my affairs did not admit of my coming to London this year; and begging he would return me Goldsmith's two poems, with his lines marked.

His friend Dr. Lawrence having now suffered the greatest affliction to which a man is liable, and which Johnson himself had felt in the most severe manner; Johnson wrote to him in an admirable strain of sympathy and pious consolation.

TO DR. LAWRENCE.

DEAR SIR: At a time when all your friends ought to shew their kindness, and with a character which ought to make all that know you your friends, you may wonder that you have yet heard nothing from me.

I have been hindered by a vexatious and incessant cough, for which within these ten days I have been bled once, fasted four or five times, taken physick five times, and opiates, I think, six. This day it seems to remit.

The loss, dear Sir, which you have lately suffered, I felt many years ago, and know therefore how much has been taken from you, and how little help can be had from consolation. He that outlives a wife whom he has long loved, sees himself disjoined from the only mind that has the same hopes, and fears, and interest; from the only companion with whom he has shared much good or evil; and with whom he could set his mind at liberty, to retrace the past or anticipate the future. The continuity of being¹ is lacerated; the settled course of sentiment and action is stopped; and life stands suspended and motionless, till it is driven by external causes into a new channel. But the time of suspense is dreadful.

Our first recourse in this distressed solitude, is, perhaps for want of habitual piety, to a gloomy acquiescence in necessity. Of two mortal beings, one must lose the other; but surely there is a higher and better comfort to be drawn from the consideration of that Providence which watches over all, and a belief that the living and the dead are equally in the hands of GOD, who will reunite those whom he has separated; or who sees that it is best not to reunite. I am, dear Sir, your most affectionate, and most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JAN. 20, 1780.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Well, I had resolved to send you the Chesterfield letter; but I will write once again without it. Never impose tasks upon mortals. To require two things is the way to have them both undone.

For the difficulties which you mention in your affairs, I am sorry; but difficulty is now very general: it is not therefore less grievous, for there is less hope of help. I pretend not to give you advice, not knowing the state of your affairs; and general counsels about prudence and frugality would do you little good. You are, however, in the right not to increase your own perplexity by a journey hither; and I hope that by staying at home you will please your father.

¹ "Solution of continuity" was a favorite phrase with English surgeons when a bone was broken or the flesh, &c., cut or lacerated.—*Dr. Hill.*

Poor dear Beauclerk — *nec, ut soles, dabis joca*.¹ His wit and his folly, his acuteness and maliciousness, his merriment and reasoning, are now over. Such another will not often be found among mankind. He directed himself to be buried by the side of his mother, an instance of tenderness which I hardly expected. He has left his children to the care of Lady Di, and if she dies, of Mr. Langton, and of Mr. Leicester, his relation, and a man of good character. His library has been offered to sale to the Russian ambassador.²

Dr. Percy, notwithstanding all the noise of the newspapers, has had no literary loss.³ Clothes and movables were burnt to the value of about 100*l*.; but his papers, and I think his books, were all preserved.

Poor Mr. Thrale has been in extreme danger from an apoplectical disorder, and recovered, beyond the expectation of his physicians; he is now at Bath, that his mind may be quiet, and Mrs. Thrale and Miss are with him.

Having told you what has happened to your friends, let me say something to you of yourself. You are always complaining of melancholy, and I conclude from those complaints that you are fond of it. No man talks of that which he is desirous to conceal, and every man desires to conceal that of which he is ashamed. Do not pretend to deny it; *manifestum habemus furem*; make it an invariable and obligatory law to yourself, never to mention your own mental diseases; if you are never to speak of them you will think on them but little, and if you think little of them, they will molest you rarely. When you talk of them, it is plain that you want either praise or pity; for praise there is no room, and pity will do you no good; therefore, from this hour speak no more, think no more, about them.

Your transaction with Mrs. Stewart gave me great satisfaction; I am much obliged to you for your attention. Do not lose sight of her; your countenance may be of great credit, and of consequence of great advantage to her. The memory of her brother is yet fresh in my mind; he was an ingenious and worthy man.

Please to make my compliments to your lady and to the young ladies. I should like to see them, pretty loves. I am, dear Sir, yours affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

APRIL 8, 1780.

Mrs. Thrale being now at Bath with her husband, the correspondence between Johnson and her was carried on briskly. I shall present my readers with one of her original letters to him at this time, which will amuse them probably more than those well-written but studied epistles which she has inserted in her collection, because it exhibits the easy vivacity of their literary intercourse. It is also of value as a key to Johnson's answer, which she has printed by itself, and of which I shall subjoin extracts.

¹ From the famous poem beginning "Animula, vagula, blandula." See *Spectator*, No. 532.

² Topham Beauclerk died March 11, 1780, aged 40. His library was sold by public auction in April and May, 1781, for 5,011*l*. — *Malone*.

³ By a fire in Northumberland House, where he had an apartment, in which I have passed many an agreeable hour. — B.

MRS. THRALE TO DR. JOHNSON.

I had a very kind letter from you yesterday, dear Sir, with a most circumstantial date.¹ You took trouble with my circulating letter,² Mr. Evans writes me word, and I thank you sincerely for so doing: one might do mischief else not being on the spot.

Yesterday's evening was passed at Mrs. Montagu's: there was Mr. Melmoth;³ I do not like him *though*, nor he me; it was expected we should have pleased each other; he is, however, just Tory enough to hate the Bishop of Peterborough [Dr. John Hinchliffe] for Whiggism, and Whig enough to abhor you for Toryism.

Mrs. Montagu flattered him finely; so he had a good afternoon on 't. This evening we spend at a concert. Poor Queeney's⁴ sore eyes have just released her: she had a long confinement, and could neither read nor write, so my master [Mr. Thrale] treated her very good-naturedly with the visits of a young woman in this town, a taylor's daughter, who professes musick, and teaches so as to give six lessons a day to ladies, at five and threepence a lesson. Miss Burney says she is a great performer; and I respect the wench for getting her living so prettily; she is very modest and pretty-mannered, and not seventeen years old.

You live in a fine whirl indeed: if I did not write regularly you would half forget me, and that would be very wrong, for I *felt* my regard for you in my *face* last night, when the criticisms were going on.

This morning it was all connoisseurship; we went to see some pictures painted by a gentleman-artist, Mr. Taylor, of this place; my master makes one every where, and has got a good dawling⁵ companion to ride with him now. . . . He looks well enough, but I have no notion of health for a man whose mouth cannot be sewed up. Burney and I and Queeney tease him every meal he eats, and Mrs. Montagu is quite serious with him; but what *can* one do? He will eat, I think, and if he does eat I know he will not live; it makes me very unhappy, but I must bear it. Let me always have your friendship. I am, most sincerely,

Dear Sir, your faithful servant,

H. L. T.

BATH, Friday, April 28.

DR. JOHNSON TO MRS. THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM: Mr. Thrale never will live abstinently, till he can persuade himself to live by rule.⁶ . . . Encourage, as you can, the musical girl.

Nothing is more common than mutual dislike, where mutual approbation is particularly expected. There is often on both sides a vigilance not over-

¹ Johnson had dated his letter "London, April 25, 1780," and added, "now there is a date; look at it." In his reply he wrote: "London, May 1, 1780. Mark that — you did not put the year to the last." — *Dr. Hill*.

² "An Address to the Electors of Southwark."

³ Author of "Fitzosborne's Letters," and translator of the letters of Pliny and Cicero. — *Croker*.

⁴ A kind of nick-name given to Mrs. Thrale's eldest daughter, whose name being *Esther* she might be assimilated to a *Queen*. — B.

⁵ Neither dawling nor dawdling is in Johnson's Dictionary.

⁶ I have taken the liberty to leave out a few lines [about diet and physic]. — B.

benevolent; and as attention is strongly excited, so that nothing drops unheeded, any difference in taste or opinion, and some difference where there is no restraint will commonly appear, immediately generates dislike.

Never let criticisms operate on your face or your mind; it is very rarely that an authour is hurt by his critics. The blaze of reputation cannot be blown out, but it often dies in the socket; a very few names may be considered as perpetual lamps that shine unconsumed. From the authour of "*Fitzosborne's Letters*" I can not think myself in much danger. I met him only once about thirty years ago, and in some small dispute reduced him to whistle; having not seen him since, that is the last impression. Poor Moore,¹ the fabulist, was one of the company.

Mrs. Montagu's long stay, against her own inclination, is very convenient. You would, by your own confession, want a companion; and she is *par pluri-bus*; conversing with her, you may find variety in one.²

LONDON, May 1, 1780.

On the 2d of May I wrote to him, and requested that we might have another meeting somewhere in the North of England, in the autumn of this year.

From Mr. Langton I received soon after this time a letter, of which I extract a passage, relative both to Mr. Beauclerk and Dr. Johnson.

The melancholy information you have received concerning Mr. Beauclerk's death is true. Had his talents been directed in any sufficient degree as they ought, I have always been strongly of opinion that they were calculated to make an illustrious figure; and that opinion, as it had been in part formed upon Dr. Johnson's judgement, receives more and more confirmation by hearing what, since his death, Dr. Johnson has said concerning them: a few evenings ago, he was at Mr. Vesey's, where Lord Althorpe,³ who was one of a numerous company there, addressed Dr. Johnson on the subject of Mr. Beauclerk's death, saying, "Our CLUB has had a great loss since we met last." He replied, "A loss, that perhaps the whole nation could not repair!" The Doctor then went on to speak of his endowments, and particularly extolled the wonderful ease with which he uttered what was highly excellent. He said, that "no man ever was so free when he was going to say a good thing, from a *look* that expressed that it was coming; or, when he has said it, from a look that expressed that it had come." At Mr. Thrale's, some days before when we were talking on the same subject, he said, referring to the same idea of his wonderful facility, "That Beauclerk's talents were those which he had felt himself more disposed to envy, than those of any whom he had known."

On the evening I have spoken of above, at Mr. Vesey's, you would have been much gratified, as it exhibited an instance of the high importance in

¹ Edward Moore, author of "*Fables for the Female Sex*," and of the tragedy of "*The Gamester*."

² Line of a song in *The Spectator*, No. 470. — Croker.

³ Second Earl Spencer, first Lord of the Admiralty under Pitt, and father of Lord Althorpe who was leader of the House of Commons under Earl Grey. — *Dr. Hill*.

which Dr. Johnson's character is held, I think even beyond any I ever before was witness to. The company consisted chiefly of ladies, among whom were the Duchess Dowager of Portland, the Duchess of Beaufort, whom I suppose from her rank I must name before her mother Mrs. Boscawen and her elder sister Mrs. Lewson, who was likewise there; Lady Lucan, Lady Clermont, and others of note both for their station and understandings. Among the gentlemen were Lord Althorpe, whom I have before named, Lord Macartney, Sir Joshua Reynolds, Lord Lucan, Mr. Wraxall, whose book you have probably seen, "The Tour to the Northern Parts of Europe;" a very agreeable ingenious man; Dr. Warren, Mr. Pepys, the Master in Chancery, whom I believe you know, and Dr. Barnard, the Provost of Eton.¹ As soon as Dr. Johnson was come in, and had taken a chair, the company began to collect round him till they became not less than four, if not five deep; those behind standing, and listening over the heads of those that were sitting near him. The conversation for some time was chiefly between Dr. Johnson and the Provost of Eton, while the others contributed occasionally their remarks. Without attempting to detail the particulars of the conversation, which perhaps if I did, I should spin my account out to a tedious length, I thought, my dear Sir, this general account of the respect with which our valued friend was attended to, might be acceptable.

TO THE REVEREND DR. FARMER.

MAY 25, 1780.

SIR: I know your disposition to second any literary attempt, and therefore venture upon the liberty of entreating you to procure from College or University registers, all the dates or other informations which they can supply relating to Ambrose Philips, Broome, and Gray, who were all of Cambridge, and of whose lives I am to give such accounts as I can gather. Be pleased to forgive this trouble from, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

While Johnson was thus engaged in preparing a delightful literary entertainment for the world, the tranquillity of the metropolis of Great Britain was unexpectedly disturbed by the most horrid series of outrages that ever disgraced a civilized country. A relaxation of some of the severe penal provisions against our fellow-subjects of the Catholic communion had been granted by the legislature, with an opposition so inconsiderable, that the genuine mildness of Christianity, united with liberal policy, seemed to have become general in this island. But a dark and malignant spirit of persecution soon showed itself, in an unworthy petition for the repeal of the wise and humane statute. That petition was brought forward by a mob, with the evident purpose of intimidation, and was justly rejected. But the attempt was accompanied and followed by such daring violence as is unexampled in history. Of this extraordinary tumult, Dr.

¹ Unequalled in powers of conversation. See Nichol's "Lit. Anec." viii. p. 548.

Johnson has given the following concise, lively, and just account in his "Letters to Mrs. Thrale :"¹

On Friday [June 2], the good Protestants met in Saint George's Fields, at the summons of Lord George Gordon, and marching to Westminster, insulted the Lords and Commons, who all bore it with great tameness. At night the outrages began by the demolition of the mass-house² by Lincoln's Inn.

An exact journal of a week's defiance of government I cannot give you. On Monday Mr. Strahan, who had been insulted, spoke to Lord Mansfield, who had I think been insulted too, of the licentiousness of the populace; and his Lordship treated it as a very slight irregularity. On Tuesday night they pulled down Fielding's house [in Bow Street], and burnt his goods in the street. They had gutted on Monday Sir George Savile's house [in Leicester Square], but the building was saved. On Tuesday evening, leaving Fielding's ruins, they went to Newgate to demand their companions, who had been seized demolishing the chapel. The keeper could not release them but by the Mayor's permission, which he went to ask; at his return he found all the prisoners released, and Newgate in a blaze. They then went to Bloomsbury, and fastened upon Lord Mansfield's house, which they pulled down; and as for his goods, they totally burnt them. They have since gone to Caenwood, but a guard was there before them. They plundered some Papists, I think, and burnt a mass-house in Moorfields the same night.

On Wednesday I walked with Dr. Scot to look at Newgate, and found it in ruins, with the fire yet glowing. As I went by, the Protestants were plundering the Sessions-house at the Old Bailey. There were not, I believe, a hundred; but they did their work at leisure, in full security, without sentinels, without trepidation, as men lawfully employed in full day. Such is the cowardice of a commercial place. On Wednesday they broke open the Fleet, and the King's-Bench, and the Marshalsea, and Wood-street Compter, and Clerkenwell Bridewell, and released all the prisoners.

At night they set fire to the Fleet, and to the King's-Bench, and I know not how many other places; and one might see the glare of conflagration fill the sky from many parts. The sight was dreadful. Some people were threatened: Mr. Strahan advised me to take care of myself. Such a time of terror you have been happy in not seeing.

The King said in council, "That the magistrates had not done their duty, but that he would do his own:" and a proclamation was published directing us to keep our servants within doors, as the peace was now to be preserved by force. The soldiers were sent out to different parts, and the town is now [June 9] at quiet.

The soldiers are stationed so as to be everywhere within call: there is no longer any body of rioters, and the individuals are hunted to their holes, and led to prison; Lord George was last night sent to the Tower. Mr. John Wilkes was this day [with a party of soldiers] in my neighbourhood, to seize the publisher of a seditious paper.

Several chapels have been destroyed, and several inoffensive Papists have

¹ Vol. ii., p. 133 *et seq.* I have selected passages from several letters, without mentioning dates. — B.

² Baretti in a marginal note on this passage says: "So illiberal was Johnson made by religion that he calls the chapel a mass-house."

been plundered, but the high sport was to burn the jails. This was a good rabble trick. The debtors and the criminals were all set at liberty; but of the criminals, as has always happened, many are already retaken; and two pirates have surrendered themselves, and it is expected that they will be pardoned.

Government now acts again with its proper force; and we are all [again] under the protection of the King and the law. I thought that it would be agreeable to you and my master to have my testimony to the public security; and that you would sleep more quietly when I told you that you are safe.

There has, indeed, been an universal panick, from which the King was the first that recovered. Without the concurrence of his ministers, or the assistance of the civil magistrates, he put the soldiers in motion, and saved the town from calamities, such as a rabble's government must naturally produce.

The publick has escaped a very heavy calamity. The rioters attempted the Bank on Wednesday night, but in no great number: and like other thieves, with no great resolution. Jack Wilkes headed the party that drove them away. It is agreed, that if they had seized the Bank on Tuesday, at the height of the panick, when no resistance had been prepared, they might have carried irrecoverably away whatever they had found. Jack, who was always zealous for order and decency, declares, that if he be trusted with power, he will not leave a rioter alive. There is, however, now no longer any need of heroism or bloodshed; no blue ribband¹ is any longer worn.

Such was the end of this miserable sedition, from which London was delivered by the magnanimity of the Sovereign himself. Whatever some may maintain, I am satisfied that there was no combination or plan, either domestic or foreign; but that the mischief spread by a gradual contagion of frenzy, augmented by the quantities of fermented liquors, of which the deluded populace possessed themselves in the course of their depredations.

I should think myself very much to blame, did I here neglect to do justice to my esteemed friend Mr. Akerman,² the keeper of Newgate, who long discharged a very important trust with a uniform intrepid firmness, and at the same time a tenderness and a liberal charity, which entitle him to be recorded with distinguished honor.

Upon this occasion, from the timidity and negligence of magistracy on the one hand, and the almost incredible exertions of the mob on the other, the first prison of this great country was laid open, and the prisoners set free; but that Mr. Akerman, whose house was burned, would have prevented all this, had proper aid been sent him in due time, there can be no doubt.

¹ Lord George Gordon and his followers, during these outrages, wore blue ribbons in their hats. — *Malone*.

² He died Nov. 19, 1792, leaving a fortune of about 20,000*l*. He is supposed to have greatly mitigated the horrors of Newgate. — *Dr. Hill*.

Many years ago, a fire broke out in the brick part which was built as an addition to the old jail of Newgate. The prisoners were in consternation and tumult, calling out, "We shall be burnt—we shall be burnt! Down with the gate! Down with the gate!" Mr. Akerman hastened to them, showed himself at the gate, and having, after some confused vociferation of "Hear him—hear him!" obtained a silent attention, he then calmly told them, that the gate must not go down; that they were under his care, and that they should not be permitted to escape: but that he could assure them, they need not be afraid of being burned, for that the fire was not in the prison, properly so called, which was strongly built with stone; and that if they would engage to be quiet, he himself would come in to them, and conduct them to the farther end of the building, and would not go out till they gave him leave. To this proposal they agreed; upon which Mr. Akerman, having first made them fall back from the gate, went in, and with a determined resolution ordered the outer turnkey upon no account to open the gate, even though the prisoners (though he trusted they would not), should break their word, and by force bring himself to order it. "Never mind me," said he, "should that happen." The prisoners peaceably followed him, while he conducted them through passages of which he had the keys, to the extremity of the jail, which was most distant from the fire. Having by this very judicious conduct fully satisfied them that there was no immediate risk, if any at all, he then addressed them thus: "Gentlemen, you are now convinced that I told you true. I have no doubt that the engines will soon extinguish this fire; if they should not, a sufficient guard will come and you shall be all taken out and lodged in the Compters.¹ I assure you, upon my word and honor, that I have not a farthing insured. I have left my house that I might take care of you. I will keep my promise, and stay with you if you insist upon it; but if you will allow me to go out and look after my family and property, I shall be obliged to you." Struck with his behavior, they called out, "Master Akerman, you have done bravely; it was very kind in you: by all means go and take care of your own concerns." He did so accordingly, while they remained, and were all preserved.

Johnson has been heard to relate the substance of this story with high praise, in which he was joined by Mr. Burke. My illustrious friend, speaking of Mr. Akerman's kindness to his

¹ Two city-prisons so called.

prisoners, pronounced this eulogy upon his character: "He who has long had constantly in his view the worst of mankind, and is yet eminent for the humanity of his disposition, must have had it originally in a great degree, and continued to cultivate it very carefully."

In the course of this month my brother David waited upon Dr. Johnson, with the following letter of introduction, which I had taken care should be lying ready on his arrival in London.

TO DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON.

EDINBURGH, April 29, 1780.

MY DEAR SIR: This will be delivered to you by my brother David, on his return from Spain. You will be glad to see the man who vowed to "stand by the old castle of Auchinleck, with heart, purse and sword;" that romantick family solemnity devised by me, of which you and I talked with complacency upon the spot. I trust that twelve years of absence have not lessened his feudal attachment; and that you will find him worthy of being introduced to your acquaintance. I have the honour to be, with affectionate veneration, my dear Sir, your most faithful humble servant,

JAMES BOSWELL.

Johnson received him very politely, and has thus mentioned him in a letter to Mrs. Thrale: ¹ "I have had with me a brother of Boswell's, a Spanish merchant,² whom the war has driven from his residence at Valencia; he is gone to see his friends, and will find Scotland but a sorry place after twelve years' residence in a happier climate. He is a very agreeable man, and speaks no Scotch."

TO DR. BEATTIE, AT ABERDEEN.

SIR: More years³ than I have any delight to reckon, have passed since you and I saw one another: of this, however, there is no reason for making reprehensory complaint; — *Sic fata ferunt*. But methinks there might pass some small interchange of regard between us. If you say that I ought to have written, I now write; and I write to tell you, that I have much kindness for you and Mrs. Beattie; and that I wish your health better, and your life long. Try change of air, and come a few degrees southwards; a softer climate may do you both good; winter is coming on; and London will be warmer, and gayer, and busier, and more fertile of amusement than Aberdeen.

My health is better; but that will be little in the balance, when I tell you that Mrs. Montagu has been very ill, and is I doubt now but weakly. Mr. Thrale has been very dangerously disordered; but is much better, and I hope will totally recover. He has withdrawn himself from business the whole sum-

¹ Vol. ii., p. 163. Mrs. Piozzi has omitted the name, she best knows why. — B.

² Now settled in London. — B.

³ I had been five years absent from London. — *Dr. Beattie*.

mer. Sir Joshua and his sister are well; and Mr. Davies has got great success as an authour,¹ generated by the corruption of a bookseller. More news I have not to tell you, and therefore you must be contented with hearing, what I know not whether you much wish to hear, that I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

BOLT-COURT, FLEET-STREET,
Aug. 21, 1780.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I find you have taken one of your fits of taciturnity, and have resolved not to write till you are written to; it is but a peevish humour, but you shall have your way.

I have sat at home in Bolt-court all the summer, thinking to write the *Lives*, and a great part of the time only thinking. Several of them, however, are done, and I still think to do the rest.

Mr. Thrale and his family have, since his illness, passed their time first at Bath, and then at Brighthelmston; but I have been at neither place. I would have gone to Lichfield if I could have had time, and I might have had time if I had been active: but I have missed much, and done little.

In the late disturbances, Mr. Thrale's house and stock were in great danger; the mob was pacified at their first invasion, with about 50*l.* in drink and meat; and at their second, were driven away by the soldiers. Mr. Strahan got a garrison into his house, and maintained them a fortnight; he was so frightened that he removed part of his goods. Mrs. Williams took shelter in the country.

I know not whether I shall get a ramble this autumn. It is now about the time when we were travelling. I have, however, better health than I had then, and hope you and I may yet shew ourselves on some part of Europe, Asia, or Africa.² In the mean time let us play no trick, but keep each other's kindness by all means in our power.

The bearer of this is Dr. Dunbar of Aberdeen, who has written and published a very ingenious book,³ and who I think has a kindness for me, and will, when he knows you, have a kindness for you.

I suppose your little ladies are grown tall: and your son has become a learned young man. I love them all, and I love your naughty lady, whom I never shall persuade to love me. When the *Lives* are done, I shall send

¹ Meaning his entertaining "Memoirs of David Garrick," of which Johnson (as Davies informed me) wrote the first sentence; thus giving, as it were, the keynote to the performance. It is, indeed, very characteristic of its author, beginning with a maxim, and proceeding to illustrate. "All excellence has a right to be recorded. I shall, therefore, think it superfluous to apologize for writing the life of a man, who, by an uncommon assemblage of private virtues, adorned the highest eminence in a public profession. — B. Davies had become bankrupt a few years before. His "Memoirs of Garrick" quickly reached its third edition.

² It will no doubt be remarked how he avoids the *rebellious* land of America. This puts me in mind of an anecdote for which I am obliged to my worthy social friend, Governor Richard Penn: "At one of Miss E. Herve's assemblies, Dr. Johnson was following her up and down the room; upon which Lord Abington observed to her, "Your great friend is very fond of you; you can go no where without him." — "Ay," said she, "he would follow me to any part of the world." — "Then," said the Earl, "ask him to go with you to *America*." — B.

³ "Essays on the History of Mankind." — B.

them to complete her collection, but must send them in paper, as for want of a pattern, I cannot bind them to fit the rest. I am, Sir, yours most affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Aug. 21, 1780.

This year he wrote to a young clergyman¹ in the country the following very excellent letter, which contains valuable advice to divines in general :

DEAR SIR: Not many days ago Dr. Lawrence shewed me a letter, in which you make mention of me: I hope, therefore, you will not be displeased that I endeavour to preserve your good-will by some observations which your letter suggested to me.

You are afraid of falling into some improprieties in the daily service by reading to an audience that requires no exactness. Your fear, I hope, secures you from danger. They who contract absurd habits are such as have no fear. It is impossible to do the same thing very often, without some peculiarity of manner; but that manner may be good or bad, and a little care will at least preserve it from being bad: to make it good, there must, I think, be something of natural or casual felicity, which cannot be taught.

Your present method of making your sermons seems very judicious. Few frequent preachers can be supposed to have sermons more their own than yours will be. Take care to register, somewhere or other, the authours from whom your several discourses are borrowed; and do not imagine that you shall always remember, even what perhaps you now think it impossible to forget.

My advice, however, is, that you attempt, from time to time, an original sermon; and in the labour of composition, do not burthen your mind with too much at once; do not exact from yourself at one effort of excogitation, propriety of thought and elegance of expression. Invent first, and then embellish. The production of something, where nothing was before, is an act of greater energy than the expansion or decoration of the thing produced. Set down diligently your thoughts as they rise in the first words that occur; and when you have matter, you will easily give it form: nor, perhaps, will this method be always necessary; for by habit, your thoughts and diction will flow together.

The compositions of sermons is not very difficult: the divisions not only help the memory of the hearer, but direct the judgement of the writer; they supply sources of invention, and keep every part in its proper place.

What I like least in your letter is your account of the manners of your parish; from which I gather, that it has been long neglected by the parson. The Dean of Carlisle [Dr. Percy], who was then a little rector in Northamptonshire, told me, that it might be discerned whether or no there was a clergyman resident in a parish, by the civil or savage manner of the people. Such a congregation as yours stands in need of much reformation; and I would not have you think it impossible to reform them. A very savage parish was civilized by a decayed gentlewoman, who came among them to teach a petty school. My learned friend Dr. Wheeler of Oxford, when he was a young man, had the care of a neighbouring parish for fifteen pounds a year, which he was never paid; but he counted it a convenience, that it compelled him to

¹ Probably the Rev. Mr. Hoole. — *Dr. Hill.*

make a sermon weekly. One woman he could not bring to the communion; and when he reproved or exhorted her, she only answered, that she was no scholar. He was advised to set some good woman or man of the parish, a little wiser than herself, to talk to her in a language level to her mind. Such honest, I may call them holy, artifices, must be practised by every clergyman; for all means must be tried by which souls may be saved. Talk to your people, however, as much as you can; and you will find, that the more frequently you converse with them upon religious subjects, the more willingly they will attend, and the more submissively they will learn. A clergyman's diligence always makes him venerable. I think I have now only to say, that in the momentous work you have undertaken, I pray GOD to bless you. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

BOLT-COURT, Aug. 30, 1780.

My next letters to him were dated August 24, September 6, and October 1, and from them I extract the following passages:

My brother David and I find the long indulged fancy of our comfortable meeting again at Auchinleck, so well realized, that it in some degree confirms the pleasing hope of *O! preclarum diem!*¹ in a future state.

I beg that you may never again harbour a suspicion of my indulging a peevish humour, or playing tricks; you will recollect, that when I confessed to you, that I had once been intentionally silent to try your regard, I gave you my word and honour that I would not do so again.

I rejoice to hear of your good state of health: I pray GOD to continue it long. I have often said, that I would willingly have ten years added to my life, to have ten taken from yours; I mean, that I would be ten years older to have you ten years younger. But let me be thankful for the years during which I have enjoyed your friendship, and please myself with the hopes of enjoying it many years to come in this state of being, trusting always, that in another state, we shall meet never to be separated. Of this we can form no notion; but the thought, though indistinct, is delightful, when the mind is calm and clear.

The riots in London were certainly horrible; but you give me no account of your own situation during the barbarous anarchy. A description of it by DR. JOHNSON would be a great painting;² you might write another "LONDON, A POEM."

I am charmed with your condescending affectionate expression, "let us keep each other's kindness by all the means in our power:" my revered Friend! how elevating it is to my mind, that I am found worthy to be a companion to Dr. Samuel Johnson! All that you have said in grateful praise of Mr. Walmsley³ I have long thought of you: but we are both Tories, which has a very general influence upon our sentiments. I hope that you will agree to meet me at York, about the end of this month; or if you will come to Carlisle, that would be better still, in case the Dean be there. Please to consider, that to keep each other's kindness, we should every year have that free and intimate communication of mind which can be had only when we are together. We should have both our solemn and our pleasant talk.

¹ Cicero: "De Senectute," c. 23.

² I had not then seen his letters to Mrs. Thrale. — B.

³ In the "Life of Edmund Smith."

I write now for the third time, to tell you that my desire for our meeting this autumn is much increased. I wrote to 'Squire Godfrey Bosville, my Yorkshire chief, that I should, perhaps, pay him a visit, as I was to hold a conference with Dr. Johnson at York. I give you my word and honour that I said not a word of his inviting you; but he wrote to me as follows:

"I need not tell you I shall be happy to see you here the latter end of this month, as you propose; and I shall likewise be in hopes that you will persuade Dr. Johnson to finish the conference here. It will add to the favour of your own company, if you prevail upon such an associate to assist your observations. I have often been entertained with his writings, and I once belonged to a club of which he was a member, and I never spent an evening there, but I heard something from him well worth remembering."

We have thus, my dear Sir, good comfortable quarters in the neighbourhood of York, where you may be assured we shall be heartily welcome. I pray you then resolve to set out; and let not the year 1780 be a blank in our social calendar, and in that record of wisdom and wit, which I keep with so much diligence, to your honour, and the instruction and delight of others.

Mr. Thrale had now another contest for the representation in Parliament of the borough of Southwark, and Johnson kindly lent him his assistance, by writing advertisements and letters for him. I shall insert one as a specimen: *

TO THE WORTHY ELECTORS OF THE BOROUGH OF SOUTHWARK.

GENTLEMEN: A new Parliament being now called, I again solicit the honour of being elected for one of your representatives; and solicit it with the greater confidence, as I am not conscious of having neglected my duty, or of having acted otherwise than as becomes the independent representative of independent constituents; superiour to fear, hope, and expectation, who has no private purposes to promote, and whose prosperity is involved in the prosperity of his country. As my recovery from a very severe distemper is not yet perfect, I have declined to attend the Hall, and hope an omission so necessary will not be harshly censured.

I can only send my respectful wishes, that all your deliberations may tend to the happiness of the kingdom, and the peace of the borough.

I am, Gentlemen, your most faithful and obedient servant,

HENRY THRALE.

SOUTHWARK, Sept. 5, 1780.

On his birthday, Johnson has this note :

I am now beginning the seventy-second year of my life, with more strength of body, and greater vigor of mind, than I think is common at that age.

But still he complains of sleepless nights and idle days, and forgetfulness, or neglect of resolutions. He thus pathetically expresses himself:

Surely I shall not spend my whole life with my own total disapprobation.¹

¹ "Pravers and Meditations," p. 185.—B.

Mr. Macbean, whom I have mentioned more than once as one of Johnson's humble friends, a deserving but unfortunate man, being now oppressed by age and poverty, Johnson solicited the Lord Chancellor Thurlow to have him admitted into the Charterhouse.¹ I take the liberty to insert his Lordship's answer, as I am eager to embrace every occasion of augmenting the respectable notion which should ever be entertained of my illustrious friend :

TO DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON.

LONDON, October 24, 1780.

SIR: I have this moment received your letter dated the 19th, and returned from Bath.

In the beginning of the summer I placed one in the Chartreux, without the sanction of a recommendation so distinct and so authoritative as yours of Macbean; and I am afraid, that according to the establishment of the House, the opportunity of making the charity so good amends will not soon recur. But whenever a vacancy shall happen, if you'll favour me with notice of it, I will try to recommend him to the place, even though it should not be my turn to nominate.

I am, Sir, with great regard, your most faithful and obedient servant,
THURLOW.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I am sorry to write you a letter that will not please you, and yet it is at last what I resolve to do. This year must pass without an interview; the summer has been foolishly lost, like many other of my summers and winters. I hardly saw a green field, but staid in town to work, without working much.

Mr. Thrale's loss of health has lost him the election: he is now going to Brighthelmston, and expects me to go with him; and how long I shall stay, I can not tell. I do not much like the place, but yet I shall go, and stay while my stay is desired. We must, therefore, content ourselves with knowing what we know as well as man can know the mind of man, that we love one another, and that we wish each other's happiness, and that the lapse of a year cannot lessen our mutual kindness.

I was pleased to be told that I accused Mrs. Boswell unjustly, in supposing

¹ Macbean was admitted to the Charterhouse on Lord Thurlow's nomination in April, 1781: on which occasion Johnson wrote the following letter:

"TO THE REV. DR. VYSE, at *Lambeth*.

"BOLT-COURT, April 10, 1781.

"REVEREND SIR: The bearer is one of my old friends, a man of great learning, whom the Chancellor has been pleased to nominate to the Chartreux. He attends his Grace the Archbishop, to take the oath required: and being a modest scholar, will escape embarrassment, if you are so kind as to introduce him, by which you will do a kindness to a man of great merit, and add another to those favours which have already been conferred by you on, Sir, your most humble servant,

"SAM. JOHNSON." — *Malone*.

that she bears me ill-will. I love you so much, that I would be glad to love all that love you, and that you love; and I have love very ready for Mrs. Boswell, if she thinks it worthy of acceptance. I hope all the young ladies and gentlemen are well.

I take a great liking to your brother. He tells me that his father received him kindly, but not fondly; however, you seemed to have lived well enough at Auchinleck, while you staid. Make your father as happy as you can.

You lately told me of your health: I can tell you in return, that my health has been for more than a year past better than it has been for many years before. Perhaps it may please GOD to give us some time together before we are parted. I am, dear Sir, yours most affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

OCTOBER 17, 1780.

Being disappointed in my hopes of meeting Johnson this year, so that I could hear none of his admirable sayings, I shall compensate for this want¹ by inserting a collection of them, for which I am indebted to my worthy friend, Mr. Langton, whose kind communications have been separately interwoven in many parts of this work. Very few articles of this collection were committed to writing by himself, he not having that habit; which he regrets, and which those who know the numerous opportunities he had of gathering the rich fruits of *Johnsonian* wit and wisdom, must ever regret. I however found, in conversation with him, that a good store of JOHNSONIANA was treasured in his mind; and I compared it to Herculanum, or some old Roman field, which when dug, fully rewards the labor employed. The authenticity of every article is unquestionable. For the expression, I, who wrote them down in his presence, am partly answerable.

"Theocritus is not deserving of very high respect as a writer; as to the pastoral part, Virgil is very evidently superior. He wrote, when there had been a larger influx of knowledge into the world than when Theocritus lived. Theocritus does not abound in description, though living in a beautiful country: the manners painted are coarse and gross. Virgil has much more description, more sentiment, more of nature, and more of art. Some of the most excellent parts of Theocritus are, where Castor and Pollux, going with the other Argonauts, land on the Bebrycian coast, and there fall into a dispute with Amycus, the king of that country; which is as well conducted as Euripides could have done it; and the battle is well related. Afterwards they carry off a

¹A loss to be deeply regretted. Johnson's health was better than it had been for long, and his mind happier perhaps than it had ever been. At no time had he gone more into society, and at no time was he seen to have enjoyed it with greater relish.—*Dr. Hill.*

woman, whose two brothers come to recover her, and expostulate with Castor and Pollux on their injustice; but they pay no regard to the brothers, and a battle ensues, where Castor and his brother are triumphant. Theocritus seems not to have seen that the brothers have the advantage in their argument over his Argonaut heroes. 'The Sicilian Gossips' is a piece of merit."¹

"Callimachus is a writer of little excellence. The chief thing to be learned from him is his account of rites and mythology; which, though desirable to be known for the sake of understanding other parts of ancient authors, is the least pleasing or valuable part of their writings."

"Mattaire's account of the Stephani² is a heavy book. He seems to have been a puzzle-headed man, with a large share of scholarship, but with a little geometry or logic in his head, without method, and possessed of little genius. He wrote Latin verses from time to time, and published a set in his old age, which he called 'Senila;'³ in which he shows so little learning or taste in writing, as to make *Carteret* a dactyl. In matters of genealogy it is necessary to give the bare names as they are; but in poetry, and in prose of any elegance in the writing, they require to have inflection given to them. His book of the Dialects⁴ is a sad heap of confusion; the only way to write on them is to tabulate them with notes, added at the bottom of the page, and references."

"It may be questioned, whether there is not some mistake as to the methods of employing the poor, seemingly on a supposition that there is a certain portion of work left undone for want of persons to do it; but if that is otherwise, and all the materials we have are actually worked up, or all the manufactures we can use or dispose of are already executed, then what is given to the poor, who are to be set at work, must be taken from some who now have it: as time must be taken for learning (according to Sir William Petty's observation), a certain part of those very materials that, as it is, are properly worked up, must be spoiled by the unskilfulness of novices. We may apply to well-meaning, but misjudging persons in particulars of this nature, what Gian-

¹ See Matthew Arnold's "Essays in Criticism" (1st series, "Pagan and Medieval Religious Sentiment") for an exquisite translation of this, the 15th, idyll.

² "Stephanorum Historia, vitas ipsorum ac libros complectens." London, 1709.

³ Published in 1742. The line on which Johnson animadverts is on p. 101, "*mel, nervos, fulgur, Carteret, unus, habes.*"—Dr. Hill.

⁴ Graecae Linguae Dialecti in Scholae Westmonast. usum," 1738.

none¹ said to a monk, who wanted what he called to *convert* him: '*Tu sei santo, ma tu non sei filosofo.*' It is an unhappy circumstance that one might give away five hundred pounds in a year to those that importune in the streets, and not do any good."

"There is nothing more likely to betray a man into absurdity, than *condescension*; when he seems to suppose his understanding too powerful for his company."

"Having asked Mr. Langton if his father and mother had sat for their pictures, which he thought it right for each generation of a family to do, and being told they had opposed it, he said, 'Sir, among the anfractuosit²ies of the human mind, I know not if it may not be one, that there is a superstitious reluctance to sit for a picture.'"

"John Gilbert Cooper related, that soon after the publication of his Dictionary, Garrick, being asked by Johnson what people said of it, told him, that among other animadversions, it was objected that he cited authorities which were beneath the dignity of such a work, and mentioned Richardson. 'Nay,' said Johnson, 'I have done worse than that: I have cited *thee*, David.'"

"Talking of expense, he observed, with what munificence a great merchant will spend his money, both from his having it at command, and from his enlarged views by calculation of a good effect upon the whole. 'Whereas,' said he, 'you will hardly ever find a country gentleman, who is not a good deal disconcerted at an unexpected occasion for his being obliged to lay out ten pounds.'"

"When in good humor, he would talk of his own writings with a wonderful frankness and candor, and would even criticise them with the closest severity. One day, having read over one of his *Ramblers*, Mr. Langton asked him, how he liked that paper; he shook his head, and answered, 'too wordy.' At another time, when one was reading his tragedy of 'Irene,' to a company at a house in the country, he left the room: and somebody having asked him the reason of this, he replied, 'Sir, I thought it had been better.'"³

¹ An Italian historian (1676-1748) whose attacks on the Church in his "History of the Kingdom of Naples" lodged him in prison where, despite a retraction, he died.—*Dr. Hill*.

² Anfractuosity: fulness of windings and turnings.—Johnson's Dictionary. Anfractuosity is not given.

³ Sir Walter Scott corroborates this opinion by an amusing anecdote ("Croker Papers," ii. 32, 2d edit. 1885). "I was told that a gentleman called Pot, or some such name, was introduced to him as a particular admirer of his. The Doctor

"Talking of a point of delicate scrupulosity of moral conduct, he said to Mr. Langton, 'Men of harder minds than ours will do many things from which you and I would shrink; yet, Sir, they will, perhaps, do more good in life than we. But let us try to help one another. If there be a wrong twist, it may be set right. It is not probable that two people can be wrong the same way.'"

"Of the preface to Capel's Shakespeare, he said, 'If a man would have come to me, I would have endeavored to endow his purposes with words;' for as it is, he doth 'gabble monstrously.'"

"He related, that he had once in a dream a contest of wit with some other person, and that he was very much mortified by imagining that his opponent had the better of him. 'Now,' said he, 'one may mark here the effect of sleep in weakening the power of reflection; for had not my judgment failed me, I should have seen that the wit of this supposed antagonist, by whose superiority I felt myself depressed, was as much furnished by me, as that which I thought I had been uttering in my own character.'"

"One evening in company, an ingenious and learned gentleman read to him a letter of compliment which he had received from one of the Professors of a foreign University. Johnson, in an irritable fit, thinking there was too much ostentation, said: 'I never receive any of these tributes of applause from abroad. One instance I recollect of a foreign publication, in which mention is made of *l'illustre Lockman*.'"¹

"Of Sir Joshua Reynolds, he said, 'Sir, I know no man who has passed through life with more observation than Reynolds.'"

"He repeated to Mr. Langton, with great energy in the Greek, our SAVIOUR'S gracious expression concerning the forgiveness of Mary Magdalen, Ἡ πίστις σου σέσωκέ σε πορεύου εἰς εἰρήνην. 'Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.' (St. Luke vii. 50.) He said, 'The manner of this dismissal is exceedingly affecting.'"

"He thus defined the difference between physical and moral truth: 'Physical truth is, when you tell a thing as it actually is.

growled and took no further notice. 'He admires in especial your "Irene" as the finest tragedy of modern times;' to which the Doctor replied, 'If Pot says so, Pot lies.'"

¹ Secretary to the British Herring Fishery, remarkable for an extraordinary number of occasional verses, not of eminent merit.—B. He was also an indefatigable translator for the booksellers, having acquired a knowledge of languages, as Johnson told Hawkins, by living at coffee-houses frequented by foreigners, and, according to Tyers, a very worthy man, much loved by his friends and respected even by Pope.—*Croker*.

Moral truth is when you tell a thing sincerely and precisely as it appears to you. I say such a one walked across the street; if he really did so, I told a physical truth. If I thought so, though I should have been mistaken, I told a moral truth.”

“Huggins, the translator of Ariosto, and Mr. Thomas Warton, in the early part of his literary life, had a dispute concerning that poet, of whom Mr. Warton, in his ‘Observations on Spenser’s “Fairly Queen,”’ gave some account which Huggins attempted to answer with violence, and said, ‘I will *militate* no longer against his *nescience*.’ Huggins was master of the subject, but wanted expression. Mr. Warton’s knowledge of it was then imperfect, but his manner lively and elegant. Johnson said, ‘It appears to me, that Huggins has ball without powder, and Warton powder without ball.’”

“Talking of the farce of ‘High Life below Stairs,’ he said, ‘Here is a farce, which is really very diverting, when you see it acted; and yet one may read it and not know that one has been reading anything at all.’”

“He used at one time to go occasionally to the green-room of Drury Lane Theatre, where he was much regarded by the players, and was very easy and facetious with them. He had a very high opinion of Mrs. Clive’s comic powers, and conversed more with her than with any of them. He said, ‘Clive, Sir, is a good thing to sit by; she always understands what you say.’ And she said of him, ‘I love to sit by Dr. Johnson; he always entertains me.’ One night, when ‘The Recruiting Officer’ was acted, he said to Mr. Holland,¹ who had been expressing an apprehension that Dr. Johnson would disdain the works of Farquhar: ‘No, Sir, I think Farquhar a man whose writings have considerable merit.’”

“His friend Garrick was so busy in conducting the drama, that they could not have so much intercourse as Mr. Garrick used to profess an anxious wish that there should be. There might, indeed, be something in the contemptuous severity as to the merit of acting, which this old preceptor nourished in himself, that would mortify Garrick after the great applause which he received from the audience. For though Johnson said of him, ‘Sir, a man who has a nation to admire him every night, may well be expected to be somewhat elated;’ yet he would treat theatrical matters

¹ The actor: —

Next Holland came. With truly tragic stalk
He creeps, he flies. “A Hero should not walk.

Churchill: “The Rosciad.”

with a ludicrous slight. He mentioned one evening, 'I met David coming off the stage, dressed in a woman's riding hood, when he acted in "The Wonder";¹ I came full upon him, and I believe he was not pleased.'

"Once he asked Tom Davies, whom he saw dressed in a fine suit of clothes, 'And what art thou to-night?' Tom answered, 'The Thane of Ross;' (which it will be recollected is a very considerable character.) 'O brave!' said Johnson."

"Of Mr. Longley, at Rochester,² a gentleman of very considerable learning, whom Dr. Johnson met there, he said: 'My heart warms towards him. I was surprised to find in him such a nice acquaintance with the metre in the learned languages: though I was somewhat mortified that I had it not so much to myself as I should have thought.'"

"Talking of the minuteness with which people will record the sayings of eminent persons, a story was told, that when Pope was on a visit to Spence at Oxford, as they looked from the window they saw a gentleman-commoner, who was just come in from riding, amusing himself with whipping at a post. Pope took occasion to say, 'That young gentleman seems to have little to do.' Mr. Beauclerk observed, 'Then, to be sure, Spence turned round and wrote that down;' and went on to say to Dr. Johnson, 'Pope, Sir, would have said the same of you, if he had seen you distilling.' JOHNSON: 'Sir, if Pope had told me of my distilling, I would have told him of his grotto.'"

"He would allow no settled indulgence of idleness upon principle, and always repelled every attempt to urge excuses for it. A friend one day suggested, that it was not wholesome to study soon after dinner. JOHNSON: 'Ah, Sir, do n't give way to such a fancy. At one time of my life I had taken it into my head that it was not wholesome to study between breakfast and dinner.'"

"Mr. Beauclerk one day repeated to Dr. Johnson Pope's lines,

" 'Let modest Foster, if he will, excel
Ten metropolitans in preaching well: ' "

then asked the Doctor, 'Why did Pope say this?' JOHNSON: 'Sir, he hoped it would vex somebody.'"

¹ "The Wonder! A Woman Keeps a Secret," by Mrs. Centlivre. First acted in 1714 at Drury Lane. Revived by Garrick in 1757.—*Dr. Hull*.

² Recorder of Rochester and father of Archbishop Longley.—*Dr. Hull*.

³ "Epilogue to the Satires," i. 131.

"Dr. Goldsmith, upon occasion of Mrs. Lennox's bringing out a play,¹ said to Dr. Johnson at the CLUB, that a person had advised him to go and hiss it, because she had attacked Shakespeare in her book called 'Shakespeare Illustrated.' JOHNSON: 'And did you not tell him that he was a rascal?' GOLDSMITH: 'No, Sir, I did not. Perhaps he did not mean what he said.' JOHNSON: 'Nay, Sir, if he lied, it is a different thing.' Colman slyly said, (but it is believed Dr. Johnson did not hear him,) 'Then the proper expression should have been, — Sir, if you do n't lie, you are a rascal.'"

"His affection for Topham Beauclerk was so great, that when Beauclerk was laboring under that severe illness which at last occasioned his death, Johnson said, (with a voice faltering with emotion,) 'Sir, I would walk to the extent of the diameter of the earth to save Beauclerk.'"

"One night at the CLUB he produced a translation of an epitaph which Lord Elibank had written in English for his Lady, and requested of Johnson to turn it into Latin for him. Having read *Domina de North et Gray*, he said to Dyer,² 'You see, Sir, what barbarism we are compelled to make use of, when modern titles are to be specifically mentioned in Latin inscriptions.' When he had read it once aloud, and there had been a general approbation expressed by the company, he addressed himself to Mr. Dyer³ in particular, and said, 'Sir, I beg to have your judgment, for I know your nicety.' Dyer then very properly desired to read it over again; which having done, he pointed out an incongruity in one of the sentences. Johnson immediately assented to the observation, and said: 'Sir, this is owing to an alteration of a part of the sentence, from the form in which I had first written it: and I believe, Sir, you may have remarked, that the making a partial change, without a due regard to the general structure of the sentence, is a very frequent cause of error in composition.'"

"Johnson was well acquainted with Mr. Dossie, author of a treatise on Agriculture;⁴ and said of him, 'Sir, of the objects which the Society of Arts have chiefly in view, the chemical effects of bodies operating upon other bodies, he knows more than almost any man.' Johnson, in order to give Mr. Dossie

¹ Probably "The Sisters," a comedy performed one night only, at Covent Garden in 1769. Dr. Goldsmith wrote an excellent epilogue to it.—*Malone*.

² The words in the epitaph are *Domino North et Gray*, and refer to the lady's first husband. — *Croker*.

³ Said by Malone to be the author of the Junius Letters. He was "A man of profound and general erudition." — *Burke*.

⁴ "Memoirs of Agriculture and other Œconomical Arts." London, 1768-82.

his vote to be a member of this Society, paid up an arrear which had run on for two years. On this occasion he mentioned a circumstance as characteristic of the Scotch. 'One of that nation,' said he, 'who had been a candidate, against whom I had voted, came up to me with a civil salutation. Now, Sir, this is their way. An Englishman would have stomached it, and been sulky, and never have taken farther notice of you ; but a Scotchman, Sir, though you vote nineteen times against him, will accost you with equal complaisance after each time, and the twentieth time, Sir, he will get your vote.'"

"Talking on the subject of toleration, one day when some friends were with him in his study, he made his usual remark, that the State has a right to regulate the religion of the people, who are the children of the State. A clergyman having readily acquiesced in this, Johnson, who loved discussion, observed : 'But, Sir, you must go round to other states than our own. You do not know what a Brahmin has to say for himself.' In short, Sir, I have got no farther than this : every man has a right to utter what he thinks truth, and every other man has a right to knock him down for it. Martyrdom is the test.'"

"A man, he observed, should begin to write soon : for, if he waits till his judgment is matured, his inability, through want of practice to express his conceptions, will make the disproportion so great between what he sees and what he can attain, that he will probably be discouraged from writing at all. As a proof of the justness of this remark, we may instance what is related of the great Lord Granville ;² that after he had written his letter, giving an account of the battle of Dettingen, he said, 'Here is a letter, expressed in terms not good enough for a tallow-chandler to have used.'"

"Talking of a court-martial that was sitting upon a very momentous public occasion,³ he expressed much doubt of an

¹ Here Lord Macartney remarks, "A Brahmin or any caste of the Hindoos will neither admit you to be of their religion, nor be converted to yours ; a thing which struck the Portuguese with the greatest astonishment, when they first discovered the East Indies."—B.

² John, Lord Carteret and first Earl Granville, who died, January 2, 1763.—*Malone*. Lord Chesterfield said of him : "He had brought away with him from Oxford a great stock of Greek and Latin and had made himself master of all the modern languages. He was one of the best speakers in the House of Lords, both in the declamative and argumentative way."

³ Probably the court-martial which sat at Portsmouth in 1779 on Admiral Keppel for his conduct of the action with the French fleet off Ushant on July 27, 1778, and acquitted him on every charge. The excitement was great in London, where the mob were all on Keppel's side. See Mahon's "*Hist. of Eng.*" vi. 256-8.

enlightened decision; and said, that perhaps there was not a member of it, who in the whole course of his life, had ever spent an hour by himself in balancing probabilities."

"Goldsmith one day brought to the CLUB a printed ode, which he, with others, had been hearing read by its author in a public room, at the rate of five shillings each for admission. One of the company having read it aloud, Dr. Johnson said, 'Bolder words and more timorous meaning, I think never were brought together.'"

"Talking of Gray's Odes, he said, 'They are forced plants, raised in a hotbed; and they are poor plants; they are but cucumbers after all.' A gentleman present, who had been running down ode-writing in general, as a bad species of poetry, unluckily said, 'Had they been literally cucumbers, they had been better things than odes. — 'Yes, Sir,' said Johnson, 'for a hog.'"

"His distinction of the different degrees of attainment of learning was thus marked upon two occasions. Of Queen Elizabeth he said, 'She had learning enough to have given dignity to a bishop;' and of Mr. Thomas Davies, he said, 'Sir, Davies has learning enough to give credit to a clergyman.'"

"He used to quote, with great warmth, the saying of Aristotle recorded by Diogenes Laertius;¹ 'That there was the same difference between one learned and unlearned, as between the living and the dead.'"

"It is very remarkable, that he retained in his memory very slight and trivial, as well as important things. As an instance of this, it seems that an inferior domestic of the Duke of Leeds had attempted to celebrate his grace's marriage in such homely rhymes as he could make: and this curious composition having been sung to Dr. Johnson, he got it by heart, and used to repeat it in a very pleasant manner. Two of the stanzas were these:

" 'When the Duke of Leeds shall married be,
To a fine young lady of high quality,
How happy will that gentlewoman be
In his grace of Leeds's good company.

" 'She shall have all that 's fine and fair,
And the best of silk and satin shall wear;
And ride in a coach to take the air,
And have a house in St. James's Square.' "

¹ Bk. v. ch. i.

² The correspondent of *The Gentleman's Magazine* who subscribes himself SCIOLUS, furnishes the following supplement: "A lady of my acquaintance re-

To hear a man, of the weight and dignity of Johnson, repeating such humble attempts at poetry, had a very amusing effect. He, however, seriously observed of the last stanza repeated by him, that it nearly comprised all the advantages that wealth can give."

"An eminent foreigner, when he was shown the British Museum, was very troublesome with many absurd inquiries. 'Now there, Sir,' said he, 'is the difference between an Englishman and a Frenchman. A Frenchman must be always talking, whether he knows anything of the matter or not; an Englishman is content to say nothing, when he has nothing to say.'"

"His unjust contempt for foreigners was, indeed, extreme. One evening, at Old Slaughter's coffee-house, when a number of them were talking loud about little matters, he said, 'Does not this confirm old Meynell's observation — *For anything I see, foreigners are fools?*'"

"He said, that once, when he had a violent toothache, a Frenchman accosted him thus: '*Ah, Monsieur, vous étudiez trop.*'"

"Having spent an evening at Mr. Langton's with the Reverend Dr. Parr, he was much pleased with the conversation of that learned gentleman; and, after he was gone, said to Mr. Langton: 'Sir, I am obliged to you for having asked me this evening. Parr is a fair man. I do not know when I have had an occasion of such free controversy. It is remarkable how much of a man's life may pass without meeting with any instance of this kind of open discussion.'"

"We may fairly institute a criticism between Shakespeare and Corneille,¹ as they both had, though in a different degree, the lights of a latter age. It is not so just between the Greek dra-

members to have heard her uncle sing those homely stanzas more than forty-five years ago. He repeated the second thus:

" 'She shall breed young lords and ladies fair,
And ride abroad in a coach and three pair,
And the best, &c.
And have a house, &c.'"

And remembered a third which seems to have been the introductory one, and is believed to have been the only remaining one:

" 'When the Duke of Leeds shall have made his choice
Of a charming young lady that 's beautiful and wise,
She 'll be the happiest young gentlewoman under the skies,
As long as the sun and moon shall rise,
And how happy shall, &c.'"

It is with pleasure I add that this stanza could never be more truly applied than at this present time [1792].—B.

¹ "Corneille is to Shakespeare as a clipped hedge is to a forest,"—*Dr. Johnson*.

matic writers and Shakespeare.¹ It may be replied to what is said by one of the remarkers on Shakespeare, that though Darius's shade had *prescience*, it does not necessarily follow that he had all *past* particulars revealed to him."

"Spanish plays, being wildly and improbably farcical, would please children here, as children are entertained with stories full of prodigies; their experience not being sufficient to cause them to be so readily startled at deviations from the natural course of life. The machinery of the Pagans is uninteresting to us: when a goddess appears in Homer or Virgil, we grow weary; still more so in the Grecian tragedies, as in that kind of composition a nearer approach to Nature is intended. Yet there are good reasons for reading romances; as — the fertility of invention, the beauty of style and expression, the curiosity of seeing with what kind of performances the age and country in which they were written was delighted: for it is to be apprehended that at the time when very wild improbable tales were well received, the people were in a barbarous state, and so on the footing of children, as has been explained."

"It is evident enough that no one who writes now can use the Pagan deities and mythology; the only machinery, therefore, seems that of ministering spirits, the ghosts of the departed, witches, and fairies, though these latter, as the vulgar superstition concerning them (which, while in its force, infected at least the imagination of those that had more advantage in education, though their reason set them free from it), is every day wearing out, seem likely to be of little further assistance in the machinery of poetry. As I recollect, Hammond introduces a hag or witch into one of his love-elegies, where the effect is unmeaning and disgusting."

"The man who uses his talent of ridicule in creating or grossly exaggerating the instances he gives, who imputes absurdities that did not happen, or when a man was a little ridiculous, describes him as having been very much so, abuses his talents greatly. The great use of delineating absurdities is, that we may know how far human folly can go; the account, therefore, ought of absolute necessity to be faithful. A certain character (naming the person) as to the general cast of it, is well described by Garrick, but a great deal of the phraseology he uses in it, is quite his own, particularly in the proverbial comparisons, 'obstinate as a pig,' &c., but I don't know whether it might not be true of

¹ See Mrs. Montagu's "Essay on Shakespeare,"

Lord ——¹ that from a too great eagerness of praise and popularity, and a politeness carried to a ridiculous excess, he was likely, after asserting a thing in general, to give it up again in parts. For instance, if he had said Reynolds was the first of painters, he was capable enough of giving up, as objections might happen to be severally made, first, his outline, — then the grace in form, — then the coloring, — and lastly, to have owned that he was such a mannerist, that the disposition of his pictures was all alike."

"For hospitality, as formerly practised, there is no longer the same reason; heretofore the poorer people were more numerous, and from want of commerce, their means of getting a livelihood more difficult; therefore the supporting them was an act of great benevolence; now that the poor can find maintenance for themselves, and their labor is wanted, a general undiscerning hospitality tends to ill, by withdrawing them from their work to idleness and drunkenness. Then, formerly rents were received in kind, so that there was a great abundance of provisions in possession of the owners of the lands, which, since the plenty of money afforded by commerce, is no longer the case."

"Hospitality to strangers and foreigners in our country is now almost at an end, since, from the increase of them that come to us, there have been a sufficient number of people that have found an interest in providing inns and proper accommodations, which is in general a more expedient method for the entertainment of travellers. Where the travellers and strangers are few, more of that hospitality subsists, as it has not been worth while to provide places of accommodation. In Ireland there is still hospitality to strangers, in some degree; in Hungary and Poland probably more."

"Colman, in a note on his translation of Terence, talking of Shakespeare's learning, asks, 'What says Farmer to this? What says Johnson?'" Upon this he observed, 'Sir, let Farmer answer for himself: *I* never engaged in this controversy. I always said, Shakespeare had Latin enough to grammaticize his English.'"

"A clergyman, whom he characterized as one who loved to say little oddities, was affecting one day, at a bishop's table, a sort of slyness and freedom not in character, and repeated, as if part of 'The Old Man's Wish,' a song by Dr. Walter Pope, a verse bordering on licentiousness. Johnson rebuked him in the finest

¹ Perhaps Lord Corke and Orrery. — *Croker*.

² See Colman's "Terence," ii. 390.

manner, by first showing that he did not know the passage he was aiming at, and thus humbling him; 'Sir, that is not the song: it is thus.' And he gave it right. Then looking steadfastly on him, 'Sir, there is a part of that song which I should wish to exemplify in my own life:

“ ‘ May I govern my passions with absolute sway ! ’ ”

“ Being asked if Barnes knew a good deal of Greek, he answered, ‘ I doubt, Sir, he was *unoculus inter cæcos*. ’ ”

“ He used frequently to observe, that men might be very eminent in a profession, without our perceiving any particular power of mind in them in conversation. ‘ It seems strange,’ said he, ‘ that a man should see so far to the right, who sees so short a way to the left. Burke is the only man whose common conversation corresponds with the general fame which he has in the world. Take up whatever topic you please, he is ready to meet you. ’ ”

“ A gentleman, by no means deficient in literature, having discovered less acquaintance with one of the classics than Johnson expected, when the gentleman left the room, he observed, ‘ You see, now, how little any body reads.’ Mr. Langton happening to mention his having read a good deal in Clenardus’s Greek Grammar, ‘ Why, Sir,’ said he, ‘ who is there in this town who knows any thing of Clenardus but you and I ? ’ And upon Mr. Langton’s mentioning that he had taken the pains to learn by heart the Epistle of St. Basil, which is given in that grammar as a praxis, ‘ Sir,’ said he, ‘ I never made such an effort to attain Greek. ’ ”

“ Of Dodsley’s ‘ Public Virtue, a Poem,’ he said, ‘ It was fine *blank*; (meaning to express his usual contempt for blank verse :) however, this miserable poem did not sell, and my poor friend Doddy said, Public Virtue was not a subject to interest the age. ’ ”

“ Mr. Langton, when a very young man, read Dodsley’s ‘ Cleone, a Tragedy,’ to him, not aware of his extreme impatience to be read to. As it went on he turned his face to the back of his chair, and put himself into various attitudes, which marked his uneasiness. At the end of an act, however, he said, ‘ Come, let’s have some more, let’s go into the slaughter-house again, Lanky. But I am afraid there is more blood than brains.’ Yet he afterwards said, ‘ When I heard you read it I thought

higher of its power of language: when I read it myself, I was more sensible of its pathetic effect; and then he paid it a compliment which many will think very extravagant. 'Sir,' said he, 'if Otway had written this play, no other of his pieces would have been remembered.' Dodsley himself, upon this being repeated to him, said, 'It was too much: it must be remembered, that Johnson always appeared not to be sufficiently sensible of the merit of Otway.'¹

"'Snatches of reading,' said he, 'will not make a Bentley or a Clarke. They are, however, in a certain degree advantageous. I would put a child into a library (where no unfit books are) and let him read at his choice. A child should not be discouraged from reading anything that he takes a liking to, from a notion that it is above his reach. If that be the case, the child will soon find it out and desist; if not, he of course gains the instruction; which is so much the more likely to come, from the inclination with which he takes up the study.'"

"Though he used to censure carelessness with great vehemence, he owned, that he once, to avoid the trouble of locking up five guineas, hid them, he forgot where, so that he could not find them."

"A gentleman who introduced his brother to Dr. Johnson, was earnest to recommend him to the Doctor's notice, which he did by saying, 'When we have sat together some time, you'll find my brother grow very entertaining.'—'Sir,' said Johnson, 'I can wait.'"

"When the rumor was strong that we should have a war, because the French would assist the Americans, he rebuked a friend with some asperity for supposing it, saying, 'No, Sir, national faith is not yet sunk so low.'"

"In the latter part of his life, in order to satisfy himself whether his mental faculties were impaired, he resolved that he would try to learn a new language, and fixed upon the Low Dutch, for that purpose, and this he continued till he had read about one half of 'Thomas à Kempis; and finding that there appeared no abatement of his power of acquisition, he then desisted, as thinking the experiment had been duly tried. Mr. Burke justly observed, that this was not the most vigorous trial, Low Dutch being a language so near to our own; had it been one of

¹ This assertion concerning Johnson's insensibility to the pathetic powers of Otway is too *round*. I once asked him, whether he did not think Otway frequently tender: when he answered, "Sir, he is all tenderness."—*Burney*.

the languages entirely different, he might have been very soon satisfied."

"Mr. Langton and he having gone to see a freemason's funeral procession, when they were at Rochester, and some solemn music being played on French horns, he said, 'This is the first time that I have ever been affected by musical sounds;' adding, 'that the impression made upon him was of a melancholy kind.' Mr. Langton saying, that this effect was a fine one: JOHNSON: 'Yes, if it softens the mind so as to prepare it for the reception of salutary feelings, it may be good: but inasmuch as it is melancholy *per se*, it is bad.'"

"Goldsmith had long a visionary project, that some time or other when his circumstances should be easier, he would go to Aleppo, in order to acquire a knowledge, as far as might be, of any arts peculiar to the East, and introduce them into Britain. When this was talked of in Dr. Johnson's company, he said: 'Of all men Goldsmith is the most unfit to go out upon such an inquiry; for he is utterly ignorant of such arts as we already possess, and consequently could not know what would be accessions to our present stock of mechanical knowledge. Sir, he would bring home a grinding-barrow, which you see in every street in London, and think he had furnished a wonderful improvement.'"

"Greek, Sir," said he, "is like lace; every man gets as much of it as he can."¹

"When Lord Charles Hay, after his return from America, was preparing his defence to be offered to the court-martial, which he had demanded, having heard Mr. Langton as high in expressions of admiration of Johnson, as he usually was, he requested that Dr. Johnson might be introduced to him; and Mr. Langton having mentioned it to Johnson, he very kindly and readily agreed; and being presented by Mr. Langton to his Lordship, while under arrest, he saw him several times; upon one of which occasions Lord Charles read to him what he had prepared, which Johnson signified his approbation of, saying, 'It is a very good soldierly defence.' Johnson said, that he had advised his Lordship that, as it was in vain to contend with those who were in possession of power, if they would offer him the rank of lieutenant-general and a government, it would be better judged to desist from urging his complaints. It is well known that his Lordship died before the sentence was made known."

¹ This was written when lace was very generally worn. — *Malone*.

"Dr. Johnson one day gave high praise to Dr. Bentley's verses¹ in Dodsley's Collection, which he recited with his usual energy Dr. Adam Smith, who was present, observed in his decisive professorial manner, 'Very well — very well.' Johnson however added, 'Yes, they *are* very well, Sir; but you may observe in what manner they are well. They are the forcible verses of a man of a strong mind, but not accustomed to write verse; for there is some uncouthness in the expression.'"²

¹ Dr. Johnson, in his *Life of Cowley*, says, that these are "the only English verses which Bentley is known to have written." I shall here insert them, and hope my readers will apply them.

"Who strives to mount Parnassus' hill
And thence poetic laurels bring,
Must first acquire due force and skill,
Must fly with swan's or eagle's wing.

"Who Nature's treasures would explore,
Her mysteries and arcana know;
Must high as lofty Newton soar,
Must stoop as delving Woodward low.

"Who studies ancient laws and rites;
Tongues, arts, and arms, and history:
Must drudge, like Selden, days and nights,
And in the endless labor die.

"Who travels in religious jars,
(Truth mixed with error, shades with rays,)
Like Whiston, wanting pyx or stars,
In ocean wide or sinks or strays.

"But grant our hero's hope, long toil
And comprehensive genius crown,
All sciences, all arts his spoil,
Yet what reward, or what renown?

"Envy, innate in vulgar souls,
Envy steps in and stops his rise;
Envy with poison'd tarnish fouls
His lustre, and his worth decries.

"Inglorious or by wants enthralled,
To college and old books confin'd
A pedant from his learning called,
Dunces advanced, he 's left behind:
Yet left content, a genuine Stoic he,
Great without patron, rich without South Sea." — B.

The last stanza is corrected from a better copy found by J. Boswell, jr. — *Croker*.

² The difference between Johnson and Smith is apparent even in this slight instance. Smith was a man of extraordinary application, and had his mind crowded with all manner of subjects; but the force, acuteness, and vivacity of Johnson were not to be found there. He had book-making so much in his thoughts, and was so chary of what might be turned to account in that way, that he once said to Sir Joshua Reynolds, that he made it a rule when in company, never to talk of what he understood. Beauclerk had for a short time a pretty high opinion of Smith's conversation. Garrick after listening to him for a while, as to one of whom his expectations had been raised, turned slyly to a friend, and whispered him, "What say you to this? — eh? *flabby*, I think." — B.

" Drinking tea one day at Garrick's with Mr. Langton, he was questioned if he was not somewhat of a heretic as to Shakespeare; said Garrick, 'I doubt he is a little of an infidel.' — 'Sir,' said Johnson, 'I will stand by the lines I have written on Shakespeare in my prologue at the opening of your theatre.' Mr. Langton suggested, that in the line

" ' And panting Time toil'd after him in vain;'

Johnson might have had in his eye the passage in the 'Tempest,' where Prospero says of Miranda,

" ' . . . She will outstrip all praise,
And make it halt behind her.' ¹

Johnson said nothing. Garrick then ventured to observe, 'I do not think that the happiest line in the praise of Shakespeare.' Johnson exclaimed, smiling, 'Prosaical rogues! Next time I write, I'll make both time and space pant.' ²

" It is well known that there was formerly a rude custom for those who were sailing upon the Thames, to accost each other as they passed in the most abusive language they could invent, generally, however, with as much satirical humor as they were capable of producing. Addison gives a specimen of this ribaldry, in Number 383 of *The Spectator*, when Sir Roger de Coverly and he are going to Spring Garden (Vauxhall). Johnson was once eminently successful in this species of contest; a fellow having attacked him with some coarse raillery, Johnson answered him thus, 'Sir, your wife, *under pretence of keeping a bawdy-house*, is a receiver of stolen goods.' One evening when he and Mr. Burke and Mr. Langton were in company together, and the admirable

¹ "The Tempest," Act iv. sc. 1.

² I am sorry to see in the "Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh," vol. ii., "An Essay of the Character of Hamlet," written, I should suppose, by a very young man, though called "Reverend;" who speaks of presumptuous petulance of the first literary character of his age. Amidst a cloudy confusion of words (which hath of late too often passed in Scotland for *metaphysics*), he thus ventures to criticise one of the noblest lines in our language: "Dr. Johnson has remarked, that 'time toiled after him in vain.' But I should apprehend, that this is *entirely to mistake the character*. Time toils after *every great man*, as well as after Shakespeare. The *workings* of an ordinary mind *keep pace*, indeed, with time; they move no faster; *they have their beginning, their middle, and their end*; but superior natures can *reduce these into a point*. They do not, indeed, *suppress* them; but they *suspend*, or they *lock them up in the breast*." The learned Society, under whose sanction such gabble is ushered into the world, would do well to offer a premium to any one who will discover its meaning. — B.

scolding of Timon of Athens was mentioned, this instance of Johnson's was quoted, and thought to have at least equal excellence."

"As Johnson always allowed the extraordinary talents of Mr. Burke, so Mr. Burke was fully sensible of the wonderful powers of Johnson. Mr. Langton recollects having passed an evening with both of them, when Mr. Burke repeatedly entered upon topics which it was evident he would have illustrated with extensive knowledge and richness of expression; but Johnson always seized upon the conversation, in which, however, he acquitted himself in a most masterly manner. As Mr. Burke and Mr. Langton were walking home, Mr. Burke observed that Johnson had been very great that night; Mr. Langton joined in this, but added, he could have wished to hear more from another person (plainly intimating that he meant Mr. Burke); 'Oh, no,' said Mr. Burke, 'it is enough for me to have rung the bell to him.'"

"Beauclerk having observed to him of one of their friends, that he was awkward at counting money, 'Why, Sir,' said Johnson, 'I am likewise awkward at counting money. But then, Sir, the reason is plain; I have had very little money to count.'"

"He had an abhorrence of affectation. Talking of old Mr. Langton, of whom he said, 'Sir, you will seldom see such a gentleman, such are his stores of literature, such his knowledge in divinity, and such his exemplary life;' he added, 'and Sir, he has no grimace, no gesticulation, no bursts of admiration on trivial occasions; he never embraces you with an overacted cordiality.'"

"Being in company with a gentleman who thought fit to maintain Dr. Berkeley's ingenious philosophy, that nothing exists but as perceived by some mind; when the gentleman was going away, Johnson said to him, 'Pray, Sir, don't leave us; for we may perhaps forget to think of you, and then you will cease to exist.'"

"Goldsmith upon being visited by Johnson one day in the Temple, said to him with a little jealousy of the appearance of his accommodation, 'I shall soon be in better chambers than these.' Johnson at the same time checked him and paid him a handsome compliment, implying that a man of his talents should be above attention to such distinctions. — 'Nay, Sir, never mind that. *Nil te quæsiveris extra.*'"

"At the time when his pension was granted to him, he said

with a noble literary ambition, 'Had this happened twenty years ago, I should have gone to Constantinople to learn Arabic, as Pococke did.'

"As an instance of the niceness of his taste, though he praised West's translation of Pindar, he pointed out the following passages as faulty, by expressing a circumstance so minute as to detract from the general dignity which should prevail:

" 'Down then from thy glittering *nail*,
Take, O muse, thy Dorian lyre.' "

"When Mr. Vesey was proposed as a member of the LITERARY CLUB, Mr. Burke began by saying that he was a man of gentle manners. 'Sir,' said Johnson, 'you need say no more. When you have said a man of gentle manners, you have said enough.' "

"The late Mr. Fitzherbert told Mr. Langton, that Johnson said to him: 'Sir, a man has no more right to *say* an uncivil thing, than to *act* one; no more right to say a rude thing to another than to knock him down.' "

" 'My dear friend Dr. Bathurst,' said he, with a warmth of approbation, 'declared, he was glad that his father, who was a West Indian planter, had left his affairs in total ruin, because having no estate, he was not under the temptation of having slaves.' "

"Richardson had little conversation, except about his own works, of which Sir Joshua Reynolds said he was always willing to talk, and glad to have them introduced. Johnson when he carried Mr. Langton to see him, professed that he could bring him out into conversation, and used this allusive expression, 'Sir, I can make him *rear*.' But he failed; for in that interview Richardson said little else than that there lay in the room a translation of his 'Clarissa' into German."¹

¹ A literary lady has favored me with a characteristic anecdote of Richardson. One day at his country house at Northend, where a large company was assembled at dinner, a gentleman who was just returned from Paris, willing to please Mr. Richardson, mentioned to him a very flattering circumstance, — that he had seen his 'Clarissa' lying on the King's brother's table. Richardson observing that part of the company were engaged in talking to each other, affected then not to attend to it. But by and by, when there was a general silence, and he thought that the flattery might be fully heard, he addressed himself to the gentleman, 'I think, Sir, you were saying something about —,' pausing in a high flutter of expectation. The gentleman provoked at his inordinate vanity, resolved not to indulge it, and with an exquisitely sly air of indifference, answered, 'A mere trifle, Sir, not worth repeating.' The mortification of Richardson was visible, and he did not speak ten words more the whole day. Dr. Johnson was present, and appeared to enjoy it much. — B.

"Once when somebody produced a newspaper in which there was a letter of stupid abuse of Sir Joshua Reynolds, of which Johnson himself came in for a share, — 'Pray,' said he, 'let us have it read aloud from beginning to end;' which being done, he with a ludicrous earnestness, and not directing his look to any particular person, called out, 'Are we alive after all this satire!'"

"He had a strong prejudice against the political character of Secker,¹ one instance of which appeared at Oxford, where he expressed great dissatisfaction at his varying the old established toast, 'Church and King.' 'The Archbishop of Canterbury,' said he (with an affected smooth smiling grimace), 'drinks, Constitution in Church and State.' Being asked what difference there was between the two toasts, he said, 'Why, Sir, you may be sure he meant something.' Yet when the life of that prelate, prefixed to his sermons by Dr. Porteus and Dr. Stinton, his chaplains, first came out, he read it with the utmost avidity, and said, 'It is a life well written, and that well deserves to be recorded.'"

"Of a certain noble Lord, he said, 'Respect him, you could not; for he had no mind of his own. Love him you could not; for that which you could do with him, every one else could.'"

"Of Dr. Goldsmith he said, 'No man was more foolish when he had not a pen in his hand, or more wise when he had.'"

"He told in his lively manner the following literary anecdote: 'Green and Guthrie, an Irishman and a Scotchman, undertook a translation of Duhalde's history of China. Green said of Guthrie, that he knew no English, and Guthrie of Green, that he knew no French; and these two undertook to translate Duhalde's history of China. In this translation there was found "the twenty-sixth day of the new moon." Now as the whole age of the moon is but twenty-eight days, the moon instead of being new, was nearly as old as it could be. The blunder arose from their mistaking the word *neuvième* ninth, for *nouvelle* or *neuve*, new.'"

"Talking of Dr. Blagden's copiousness and precision of communication, Dr. Johnson said, 'Blagden, Sir, is a delightful fellow.'"

"On occasion of Dr. Johnson's publishing his pamphlet of 'The False Alarm,' there came out a very angry answer (by many supposed to be by Mr. Wilkes). Dr. Johnson determined on not answering it; but, in conversation with Mr. Langton, mentioned a particular or two, which if he *had* replied to it, he might perhaps have inserted. In the answerer's pamphlet, it had been

¹ Archbishop of Canterbury, died Aug. 3, 1768.

said with solemnity, 'Do you consider, Sir, that a House of Commons is to the people as a creature is to its Creator?'—'To this question,' said Dr. Johnson, 'I could have replied, that—in the first place—the idea of a CREATOR must be such as that he has a power to unmake or annihilate his creature. Then it cannot be conceived that a creature can make laws for its CREATOR.'"¹

"'Depend upon it,' said he, 'that if a man *talks* of his misfortunes, there is something in them that is not disagreeable to him; for where there is nothing but pure misery, there never is any recourse to the mention of it.'"

"A man must be a poor beast, that should *read* no more in quantity than he could *utter* aloud."

"Imlac in 'Rasselas,' I spelt with a *c* at the end, because it is less like English, which should always have the Saxon *k* added to the *c*."²

"Many a man is mad in certain instances, and goes through life without having it perceived: for example, a madness has seized a person of supposing himself obliged literally to pray continually; had the madness turned the other way, and the person thought it a crime ever to pray, it might not improbably have continued unobserved."

"He apprehended that the delineation of *characters* in the end of the first book of the 'Retreat of the Ten Thousand,' was the first instance of the kind that was known."

"Supposing," said he, "a wife to be of a studious³ or argumentative turn, it would be very troublesome: for instance,—if a woman should continually dwell upon the subject of the Arian heresy."

"No man speaks concerning another, even suppose it be in his praise, if he thinks he does not hear him exactly as he would, if he thought he was within hearing."

"'The applause of a single human being is of great consequence.' This he said to me with great earnestness of manner,

¹ His profound adoration of the GREAT FIRST CAUSE was such as to set him above that "philosophy and vain deceit," with which men of narrow conceptions have been infected. I have heard him strongly maintain that "what is right is not so from any natural fitness, but because GOD wills it to be right;" and it is certainly so, because he has predisposed the relations of things so as that which he wills must be right.—B.

² I hope the authority of the great master of our language will stop that curtailing innovation, by which we see *critic*, *public*, &c., frequently written instead of *critick*, *publick*, &c.—B. "If the work should at any future period be reprinted, I hope care will be taken of my orthography.—*Preface* to Boswell's "Corsica."

³ He gave Miss Burney and Mrs. Thrale lessons in Latin and once remarked that "no woman was the worse for sense and knowledge."—*Dr. Hill*.

very near the time of his decease, on occasion of having desired me to read a letter addressed to him from some person in the North of England; which when I had done, and he asked me what the contents were, as I thought being particular upon it might fatigue him, it being of great length, I only told him in general that it was highly in his praise; and then he expressed himself as above."

"He mentioned with an air of satisfaction what Baretti had told him that, meeting, in the course of his studying English, with an excellent paper in the *Spectator*, one of four¹ that were written by the respectable Dissenting Minister, Mr. Grove of Taunton, and observing the genius and energy of mind that it exhibits, it greatly quickened his curiosity to visit our country; as he thought, if such were the lighter periodical essays of our authors, their productions on more weighty occasions must be wonderful indeed!"

"He observed once, at Sir Joshua Reynolds's, that a beggar in the street will more readily ask alms from a *man*, though there should be no marks of wealth in his appearance, than from even a well-dressed *woman*;² which he accounted for from the great degree of carefulness as to money that is to be found in women; saying farther upon it, that, the opportunities in general that they possess of improving their condition are much fewer than men have; and adding, as he looked round the company, which consisted of men only, — there is not one of us who does not think he might be richer, if he would use his endeavor."

"He thus characterized an ingenious writer of his acquaintance: 'Sir, he is an enthusiast by rule.'"³

"*'He may hold up that SHIELD against all his enemies;'* was an observation on Homer, in reference to his description of the shield of Achilles, made by Mrs. Fitzherbert wife to his friend Mr. Fitzherbert of Derbyshire, and respected by Dr. Johnson as a very fine one. He had in general a very high opinion of that lady's understanding."

"An observation of Bathurst's may be mentioned, which Johnson repeated, appearing to acknowledge it to be well founded; namely, it was somewhat remarkable how seldom on occasion of coming into the company of any new person, one felt any wish or inclination to see him again."

¹ Nos. 588, 601, 626, and 635.

² Sterne is of a direct contrary opinion. See his "Sentimental Journey," article, "The Mystery." — B.

³ Very likely Dr. Warton, — *Dr. Hill*.

This year the Reverend Dr. Francklin having published a translation of "Lucian," inscribed to him the "Demonax" thus:

To Dr. SAMUEL JOHNSON, the Demonax of the present age, this piece is inscribed by a sincere admirer of his respectable talents,

THE TRANSLATOR.

Though upon a particular comparison of Demonax and Johnson, there does not seem to be a great deal of similarity between them, this dedication is a just compliment from the general character given by Lucian of the ancient Sage, "*ἄριστον ὃν οἶδα ἐγὼ φιλοσόφων γενόμενον*, the best philosopher whom I have ever seen or known."

In 1781, Johnson at last completed his "Lives of the Poets," of which he gives this account: "Some time in March I finished the 'Lives of the Poets,' which I wrote in my usual way, dilatorily and hastily, unwilling to work, and working with vigor and haste." ("Prayers and Meditations," p. 190.) In a memorandum previous to this, he says of them: "Written, I hope, in such a manner as may tend to the promotion of piety." ("Prayers and Meditations," p. 174.)

This is the work, which of all Dr. Johnson's writings will perhaps be read most generally, and with most pleasure. Philology and biography were his favorite pursuits, and those who lived most in intimacy with him, heard him upon all occasions, when there was a proper opportunity, take delight in expatiating upon the various merits of the English Poets: upon the niceties of their characters, and the events of their progress through the world which they contribute to illuminate. His mind was so full of that kind of information, and it was so well arranged in his memory, that in performing what he had undertaken in this way, he had little more to do than to put his thoughts upon paper; exhibiting first each poet's life, and then subjoining a critical examination of his genius and works. But when he began to write, the subject swelled in such a manner, that instead of prefaces to each poet, of no more than a few pages, as he had originally intended,¹ he produced an ample, rich, and most entertaining view

¹ His design is thus announced in his "Advertisement": "The booksellers having determined to publish a body of English Poetry, I was persuaded to promise them a preface to the works of each author; an undertaking, as it was then presented to my mind, not very tedious or difficult. My purpose was only to have allotted to every poet an advertisement, like that [those] which we find in the French Miscellanies, containing a few dates, and a general character; but I have been led beyond my intention, I hope by the honest desire of giving useful pleasure." — B.

of them in every respect. In this he resembled Quintilian, who tells us, that in the composition of his *Institutions of Oratory*,¹ "*Latius se tamen aperiente materia, plus quam imponebatur oneris sponte suscepti.*" The booksellers, justly sensible of the great additional value of the copyright, presented him with another hundred pounds, over and above two hundred, for which his agreement was to furnish such prefaces as he thought fit.²

This was, however, but a small recompense for such a collection of biography, and such principles and illustrations of criticism, as, if digested and arranged in one system, by some modern Aristotle or Longinus, might form a code upon that subject, such as no other nation can show. As he was so good as to make me a present of the greatest part of the original and indeed only manuscript of this admirable work, I have an opportunity of observing with wonder the correctness with which he rapidly struck off such glowing composition. He may be assimilated to the Lady in Waller, who could impress with "Love at first sight:"

"Some other nymphs with colors faint,
And pencil slow, may Cupid paint,
And a weak heart in time destroy;
She has a stamp, and prints the boy."

That he, however, had a good deal of trouble, and some anxiety in carrying on the work, we see from a series of letters to Mr. Nichols, the printer,³ whose variety of literary inquiry

¹ "*Institutiones*," lib. i. procemium 3.

² On this occasion, Dr. Johnson observed to me: "Sir, I always said the booksellers were a generous set of men. Nor in the present instance have I reason to complain. The fact is not that they have paid me too little, but that I have written too much. The '*Lives*' were soon published in a separate edition; when for a very few corrections he was presented with another hundred guineas." Nichols's "*Literary Anecdotes*," viii. 416.

³ Thus: "In the '*Life of Waller*,' Mr. Nichols will find a reference to the '*Parliamentary History*,' from which a long quotation is to be inserted. If Mr. Nichols cannot easily find the book, Mr. Johnson will send it from Streatham." "Clarendon is here returned." "By some accident, I laid *your* note upon Duke up so safely, that I cannot find it. Your informations have been of great use to me. I must beg it again: with another list of our authors, for I have laid that with the other. I have sent Stepney's Epitaph. Let me have the revises as soon as can be. Dec., 1778." "I have sent Philips, with his epitaphs, to be inserted. The fragment of a preface is hardly worth the impression, but that we may seem to do something. It may be added to the '*Life of Philips*.' The Latin page is to be added to the '*Life of Smith*.' I shall be at home to revise the two sheets of Milton. March 1, 1779." "Please to get me the last edition of Hughes's letters; and try to get Dennis upon Blackmore, and upon Cato, and anything of the same writer against Pope. Our materials are defective." "As Waller professed to have imitated Fairfax, do you think a few pages of Fairfax would enrich our edition? Few readers have seen it, and it may please them. But it is not necessary." "An account of the lives and

and obliging disposition, rendered him useful to Johnson. Mr. Steevens appears, from the papers in my possession, to have supplied him with some anecdotes and quotations; and I observe the fair hand of Mrs. Thrale as one of his copyists, of select passages. But he was principally indebted to my steady friend Mr. Isaac Reed, of Staple Inn, whose extensive and accurate knowledge of English literary history I do not express with exaggeration, when I say it is wonderful; indeed his labors¹ have proved it to the world; and all who have the pleasure of his acquaintance can bear testimony to the frankness of his communications in private society.

It is not my intention to dwell upon each of Johnson's "Lives of the Poets," or attempt an analysis of their merits, which, were I able to do it, would take up too much room in this work; yet I shall make a few observations upon some of them, and insert a few various readings.

The Life of COWLEY he himself considered as the best of the whole, on account of the dissertation which it contains on the *Metaphysical Poets*. Dryden, whose critical abilities were equal to his poetical, had mentioned them in his excellent dedication of his "Juvenal," but had barely mentioned them. Johnson has exhibited them at large, with such happy illustration from their writings, and in so luminous a manner, that indeed he may be allowed the full merit of novelty, and to have discovered to us, as it were, a new planet in the poetical hemisphere.

It is remarked by Johnson, in considering the works of a poet,² that "amendments are seldom made without some token of a rent;" but I do not find that this is applicable to prose. We shall see that though his amendments in this work are for the better, there is nothing of the *pannus assutus*;³ the texture is

works of some of the most eminent English Poets. By, &c. 'The English Poets, biographically and critically considered, by SAM. JOHNSON.' Let Mr. Nichols take his choice, or make another to his mind. May, 1781." "You somehow forgot the advertisement for the new edition. It was not enclosed. Of Gay's letters, I see not that any use can be made, for they give no information of any thing. That he was a member of a Philosophical Society is something; but surely he could be but a corresponding member. However, not having his life here, I know not how to put it in, and it is of little importance." See several more in *The Gentleman's Magazine*, 1785. The editor of that Miscellany, in which Johnson wrote for several years, seems justly to think that every fragment of so great a man is worthy of being preserved. — B.

¹ He published in 1782 a revised edition of Baker's "Biographia Dramatica." — *Dr. Hill*.

² The Life of Sheffield (Duke of Buckinghamshire). — B. Boswell had just previously recorded a very similar observation on alterations in prose. See p. 301.

³ Horace: "Ars Poet." 15.

uniform: and indeed, what had been there at first, is very seldom unfit to have remained.

VARIOUS READINGS¹ IN THE LIFE OF COWLEY.

All [future votaries of] *that may hereafter pant for solitude.*

To conceive and execute the [agitation or perception] *pains and the pleasures* of other minds.

The wide effulgence of [the blazing] *a summer* noon.

In the Life of WALLER, Johnson gives a distinct and animated narrative of public affairs in that variegated period, with strong yet nice touches of character; and having a fair opportunity to display his political principles, does it with an unqualified manly confidence, and satisfies his readers how nobly he might have executed a *Tory History* of his country.

So easy is his style in these Lives, that I do not recollect more than three uncommon or learned² words; one, when giving an account of the approach of Waller's mortal disease, he says, "he found his legs grow *tumid*;" by using the expression his legs *swelled*, he would have avoided this; and there would have been no impropriety in its being followed by the interesting question to his physician, "What that *swelling* meant?" Another, when he mentions that Pope had *emitted* proposals; when *published*, or *issued*, would have been more readily understood; and a third, when he calls Orrery and Dr. Delany, writers both undoubtedly *veracious*; when *true*, *honest*, or *faithful*, might have been used. Yet, it must be owned, that none of these are *hard* or *too big* words: that custom would make them seem as easy as any other; and that a language is richer and capable of more beauty of expression, by having a greater variety of synonyms.

His dissertation upon the unfitness of poetry for the awful subjects of our holy religion, though I do not entirely agree with him, has all the merit of originality, with uncommon force and reasoning.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF WALLER.

Consented to [the insertion of their names] *their own nomination.*

[After] *paying* a fine of ten thousand pounds.

Congratulating Charles the Second on his [coronation] *recovered right.*

¹ The original reading is enclosed in crotchets, and the present one is printed in italics. — B.

² Dr. Hill supplies several other examples: "Languages divaricate;" "The melliflence of Pope's numbers;" "A subject flux and transitory;" "His prose is pure without scrupulosity;" "His style is sometimes concatenated."

He that has flattery ready for all whom the vicissitudes of the world happen to exalt, must be [confessed to degrade his powers] *scorned as a prostituted mind.*

The characters by which Waller intended to distinguish his writings are [elegance] *sprightliness* and dignity.

Blossoms to be valued only as they [fetch] *foretell* fruits.

Images such as the superficies of nature [easily] *readily* supplies.

[His] *Some* applications [are sometimes] *may be thought* too remote and un consequential.

His images are [sometimes confused] *not always distinct.*

Against his Life of MILTON, the hounds of Whiggism have opened in full cry. But of Milton's great excellence as a poet, where shall we find such a blazon as by the hand of Johnson? I shall select only the following passage concerning "Paradise Lost :"

Fancy can hardly forbear to conjecture with what temper Milton surveyed the silent progress of his work, and marked his reputation stealing its way in a kind of subterraneous current, through fear and silence. I cannot but conceive him calm and confident, little disappointed, not at all dejected, relying on his own merit with steady consciousness, and waiting without impatience, the vicissitudes of opinion, and the impartiality of a future generation.

Indeed even Dr. Towers, who may be considered as one of the warmest zealots of *The Revolution Society* itself, allows, that "Johnson has spoken in the highest terms of the abilities of that great poet, and has bestowed on his principal poetical compositions the most honorable encomiums."¹

That a man, who venerated the Church and Monarchy as Johnson did, should speak with a just abhorrence of Milton as a politician, or rather as a daring foe to good polity, was surely to be expected ; and to those who censure him, I would recommend his commentary on Milton's celebrated complaint of his situa-

¹ See "An Essay on the Life, Character, and Writings of Dr. Samuel Johnson," London, 1787; which is very well written, making a proper allowance for the democratical bigotry of its author: whom I cannot however but admire for his liberality in speaking thus of my illustrious friend:—"He possessed extraordinary powers of understanding, which were much cultivated by study, and still more by meditation and reflection. His memory was remarkably retentive, his imagination uncommonly vigorous, and his judgment keen and penetrating. He had a strong sense of the importance of religion; his piety was sincere, and sometimes ardent; and his zeal for the interests of virtue was often manifested in his conversation and his writings. The same energy which was displayed in his literary productions was exhibited also in his conversation, which was various, striking, and instructive; and perhaps no man ever equalled him for nervous and pointed repartees. His Dictionary, his moral Essays, and his productions in polite literature, will convey useful instruction, and elegant entertainment, as long as the language in which they are written shall be understood."—B.

tion, when by the lenity of Charles the Second, "a lenity of which (as Johnson well observes) the world has had perhaps no other example, he, who had written in justification of the murder of his Sovereign, was safe under an *Act of Oblivion* "

No sooner is he safe than he finds himself in danger, *fallen on evil days and tongues, with darkness and with dangers compassed round*.¹ This darkness, had his eyes been better employed, had undoubtedly deserved compassion: but to add the mention of danger, was ungrateful and unjust. He was fallen, indeed, on *evil days*; the time was come in which regicides could no longer boast their wickedness. But of *evil tongues* for Milton to complain, required impudence at least equal to his other powers; Milton, whose warmest advocates must allow, that he never spared any asperity of reproach, or brutality of insolence.

I have, indeed, often wondered how Milton, "an acrimonious and surly republican," — "a man who in his domestic relations was so severe and arbitrary," and whose head was filled with the hardest and most dismal tenets of Calvinism, should have been such a poet; should not only have written with sublimity, but with beauty, and even gayety; should have exquisitely painted the sweetest sensations of which our nature is capable; imaged the delicate raptures of connubial love; nay, seemed to be animated with all the spirit of revelry. It is a proof that in the human mind the departments of judgment and imagination, perception and temper, may sometimes be divided by strong partitions, and that the light and shade in the same character may be kept so distinct as never to be blended.²

In the Life of Milton, Johnson took occasion to maintain his own and the general opinion of the excellence of rhyme over blank verse, in English poetry; and quotes this apposite illustration of it by "an ingenious critic," that *it seems to be verse only to the eye*.³ The gentleman whom he thus characterizes, is (as he told Mr. Seward) Mr. Locke, of Norbury Park in Surrey, whose knowledge and taste in the fine arts is universally celebrated; with whose elegance of manners the writer of the present work has felt himself much impressed, and to whose virtues a

¹ "Paradise Lost," vii. 26.

² Mr. Malone thinks it is rather a proof that he felt nothing of those cheerful sensations which he has described: that on these topics it is the *poet*, and not the *man*, that writes. — B.

³ One of the most natural instances of the effect of blank verse occurred to the late Earl of Hopetoun. His Lordship observed one of his shepherds poring in the fields upon Milton's "Paradise Lost;" and having asked him what book it was, the man answered, "An't please your Lordship, this is a very odd sort of an author; he would fain rhyme, but cannot get at it." — B.

common friend, who has known him long and is not much addicted to flattery, gives the highest testimony.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF MILTON.

I cannot find any meaning but this which [his most bigoted advocates] *even kindness and reverence* can give.

[Perhaps no] *scarcely any* man ever wrote so much, and praised so few.

A certain [rescue] *preservative* from oblivion.

Let me not be censured for this digression, as [contracted] *pedantic* or paradoxical.

Socrates rather was of opinion, that what we had to learn was how to [obtain and communicate happiness] *do good and avoid evil*.

Its elegance [who can exhibit?] *is less attainable*.

I could, with pleasure, expatiate upon the masterly execution of the Life of DRYDEN, which we have seen (*ante*, p. 47) was one of Johnson's literary projects at an early period, and which it is remarkable, that after desisting from it, from a supposed scantiness of materials, he should, at an advanced age, have exhibited so amply.

His defence of that great poet against the illiberal attacks upon him, as if his embracing the Roman Catholic communion had been a time-serving measure, is a piece of reasoning at once able and candid. Indeed, Dryden himself, in his "Hind and Panther," hath given such a picture of his mind, that they who know the anxiety for repose as to the awful subject of our state beyond the grave, though they may think his opinion ill-founded, must think charitably of his sentiment :

" But, gracious GOD, how well dost thou provide
For erring judgments an unerring guide !
Thy throne is darkness in the abyss of light,
A blaze of glory that forbids the sight.
O ! teach me to believe thee thus conceal'd,
And search no farther than thyself reveal'd ;
But Her alone for my director take,
Whom thou hast promis'd never to forsake.
My thoughtless youth was wing'd with vain desires ;
My manhood long misled by wand'ring fires,
Follow'd false lights ; and when their glimpse was gone,
My pride struck out new sparkles of her own.
Such was I, such by nature still I am ;
Be thine the glory, and be mine the shame.
Good life be now my task : my doubts are done ;
What more could shock [fright] my faith than Three in One ? " ¹

¹ It may be found interesting to compare the sentiments expressed in these lines with those of Newman's famous hymn, " Lead, kindly light," &c.

In drawing Dryden's character, Johnson has given, though I suppose unintentionally, some touches of his own. Thus :

The power that predominated in his intellectual operations was rather strong reason than quick sensibility. Upon all occasions that were presented, he studied rather than felt; and produced sentiments not such as Nature enforces, but meditation supplies. With the simple and elemental passions as they spring separate in the mind, he seems not much acquainted. He is, therefore, with all his variety of excellence, not often pathetic; and had so little sensibility of the power of effusions purely natural, that he did not esteem them in others.

It may indeed be observed, that in all the numerous writings of Johnson, whether in prose or verse, and even in his tragedy, of which the subject is the distress of an unfortunate princess, there is not a single passage that ever drew a tear.¹

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF DRYDEN.

The reason of this general perusal, Addison has attempted to [find in] *derive from the delight which the mind feels in the investigation of secrets.*

His best actions are but [convenient] *inability* of wickedness.

When once he had engaged himself in disputation, [matter] *thoughts* flowed in on either side.

The abyss of an un-ideal [emptiness] *vacancy.*

These, like [many other harlots,] *the harlots of other men*, had his love though not his approbation.

He [sometimes displays] *descends to display* his knowledge with pedantic ostentation.

French words which [were then used in] *had then crept into* conversation.

The "Life of Pope" was written by Johnson *con amore*, both from the early possession which that writer had taken of his mind, and from the pleasure which he must have felt, in forever silencing all attempts to lessen his poetical fame, by demonstrating his excellence, and pronouncing the following triumphant eulogium :

After all this, it is surely superfluous to answer the question that has once been asked, whether Pope was a poet? otherwise than by asking in return, if Pope be not a poet, where is poetry to be found? To circumscribe poetry by a definition, will only show the narrowness of the definer; though a definition which shall exclude Pope, will not easily be made. Let us look round upon the present time, and back upon the past; let us inquire to whom the voice of mankind has decreed the wreath of poetry; let their productions be examined, and their claims stated, and the pretensions of Pope will be no more disputed.

¹ Sir Walter Scott declared that "the deep and pathetic morality of 'The Vanity of Human Wishes' had often extracted tears from those whose eyes wander dry over the pages of professed sentimentality." Johnson himself was affected to tears by his own works. — *Dr. Hill.*

I remember once to have heard Johnson say, "Sir, a thousand years may elapse before there shall appear another man with a power of versification equal to that of Pope." That power must undoubtedly be allowed its due share in enhancing the value of his captivating composition.

Johnson who had done liberal justice to Warburton in his edition of Shakespeare, which was published during the life of that powerful writer, with still greater liberality took an opportunity, in the Life of Pope, of paying the tribute due to him when he was no longer in "high place," but numbered with the dead.¹

It seems strange, that two such men as Johnson and Warburton, who lived in the same age and country, should not only not have

¹ Of Johnson's conduct towards Warburton, a very honorable notice is taken by the editor of "Tracts by Warburton and a Warburtonian, not admitted into the Collection of their respective Works." After an able and "fond, though not undistinguishing," consideration of Warburton's character, he says: "In two immortal works Johnson has stood forth in the foremost rank of his admirers. By the testimony of such a man, impertinence must be abashed, and malignity itself must be softened. Of literary merit, Johnson, as we all know, was a sagacious, but a most severe judge. Such was his discernment, that he pierced into the most secret springs of human actions; and such was his integrity, that he always weighed the moral characters of his fellow-creatures, in the 'balance of the sanctuary.' He was too courageous to propitiate a rival, and too proud to truckle to a superior. Warburton he knew, as I know him, and as every man of sense and virtue would wish to be known,—I mean, both from his own writings, and from the writings of those who dissented from his principles, or who envied his reputation. But, as to favors, he had never received or asked any from the Bishop of Gloucester: and if my memory fails me not, he had seen him only once, when they met almost without design, conversed without much effort, and parted without any lasting impression of hatred or affection. Yet, with all the ardor of sympathetic genius, Johnson had done that spontaneously and ably, which, by some writers, had been before attempted injudiciously, and which, by others, from whom more successful attempts might have been expected, has not *hitherto* been done at all. He spoke well of Warburton, without insulting those whom Warburton despised. He suppressed not the imperfections of this extraordinary man, while he endeavored to do justice to his numerous and transcendental excellences. He defended him when living, amidst the clamors of his enemies; and praised him when dead, amidst the *silence of his friends*." Having availed myself of this editor's eulogy on my departed friend, for which I warmly thank him, let me not suffer the lustre of his reputation, honestly acquired by profound learning and vigorous eloquence, to be tarnished by a charge of illiberality. He has been accused of invidiously dragging again into light certain writings of a person respectable by his talents, his learning, his station, and his age, which were published a great many years ago, and have since, it is said, been silently given up by their author. But when it is considered that these writings were not *sins of youth* but deliberate works of one well advanced in life, overflowing at once with flattery to a great man of great interest in the Church, and with unjust and acrimonious abuse of two men of eminent merit; and that, though it would have been unreasonable to expect a humiliating recantation, no apology whatever has been made in the cool of the evening, for the oppressive fervor of the heat of the day; no slight relenting indication has appeared in any note, or any corner of later publications; is it not fair to understand him as superciliously persevering? When he allows the shafts to remain in the wounds, and will not stretch forth a lenient hand, is it wrong, is it not generous to become an indignant avenger? — B. The editor was Dr. Parr, and the Warburtonian Bishop Hurd.—*Croker*.

been in any degree of intimacy, but been almost personally unacquainted. But such instances, though we must wonder at them, are not rare. If I am rightly informed, after a careful inquiry, they never met but once, which was at the house of Mrs. French, in London, well known for her elegant assemblies, and bringing eminent characters together. The interview proved to be mutually agreeable.

I am well informed, that Warburton said of Johnson, "I admire him, but I cannot bear his style:" and that Johnson being told of this, said, "That is exactly my case as to him." The manner in which he expressed his admiration of the fertility of Warburton's genius and of the variety of materials, was: "The table is always full, Sir. He brings things from the north, and the south, and from every quarter. In his 'Divine Legation,' you are always entertained. He carries you round and round, without carrying you forward to the point; but then you have no wish to be carried forward." He said to the Reverend Mr. Strahan, "Warburton is perhaps the last man who has written with a mind full of reading and reflection."

It is remarkable, that in the "Life of Broome," Johnson takes notice of Dr. Warburton using a mode of expression which he himself used, and that not seldom, to the great offence of those who did not know him. Having occasion to mention a note, stating the different parts which were executed by the associated translators of "The Odyssey," he says, "Dr. Warburton told me, in his warm language, that he thought the relation given in the note *a lie*. The language is *warm* indeed; and, I must own, cannot be justified in consistency with a decent regard to the established forms of speech." Johnson had accustomed himself to use the word *lie*, to express a mistake or an error in relation; in short, when the *thing was not so as told*, though the relator did not *mean* to deceive. When he thought there was intentional falsehood in the relator, his expression was, "He *lies* and he *knows* he *lies*."

Speaking of Pope's not having been known to excel in conversation, Johnson observes that, "Traditional memory retains no sallies of raillery, [n]or sentences of observation; nothing either pointed or solid, [either] wise or merry; and that one apophthegm only is recorded."¹ In this respect Pope differed widely from Johnson, whose conversation was, perhaps, more admirable than even his writings, however excellent. Mr. Wilkes has, however,

¹ "Stands upon record" is the original.

avored me with one repartee of Pope, of which Johnson was not informed. Johnson, after justly censuring him for having "nursed in his mind a foolish disesteem of kings," tells us, "yet a little regard shown him by the Prince of Wales melted his obduracy ; and he had not much to say when he was asked by his Royal Highness, *how he could love a prince, while he disliked kings ?*" The answer which Pope made, was, "The young lion is harmless, and even playful ; but when his claws are full grown he becomes cruel, dreadful, and mischievous."

But although we have no collection of Pope's sayings, it is not therefore to be concluded, that he was not agreeable in social intercourse ; for Johnson has been heard to say, that "the happiest conversation is that of which nothing is distinctly remembered, but a general effect of pleasing impression." The late Lord Somerville,¹ who saw much of great and brilliant life, told me, that he had dined in company with Pope, and that after dinner the *little man*, as he called him, drank his bottle of Burgundy, and was exceedingly gay and entertaining.

I cannot withhold from my great friend a censure of at least culpable inattention, to a nobleman, who, it has been shown, behaved to him with uncommon politeness. He says, "Except Lord Bathurst, none of Pope's noble friends were such as that a good man would wish to have his intimacy with them known to posterity." This will not apply to Lord Mansfield, who was not ennobled in Pope's lifetime ; but Johnson should have recollected, that Lord Marchmont was one of those noble friends. He includes his Lordship along with Lord Bolingbroke, in a charge of neglect of the papers which Pope left by his will ; when in truth, as I myself pointed out to him, before he wrote that poet's life, the papers were "committed to *the sole care and judgment* of Lord Bolingbroke, unless he (Lord Bolingbroke) shall not survive me ;" so that Lord Marchmont had no concern whatever with them. After the first edition of the *Lives*, Mr. Malone, whose love of justice is equal to his accuracy, made, in my hearing, the same remark to Johnson ; yet he omitted to correct the

¹ Let me here express my grateful remembrance of Lord Somerville's kindness to me, at a very early period. He was the first person of high rank that took particular notice of me in the way most flattering to a young man fondly ambitious of being distinguished for his literary talents : and by the honor of his encouragement made me think well of myself, and aspire to deserve it better. He had a happy art of communicating his varied knowledge of the world, in short remarks and anecdotes, with a quiet pleasant gravity that was exceedingly engaging. Never shall I forget the hours which I enjoyed with him at his apartments in the Royal Palace of Holyrood House, and at his seat near Edinburgh, which he himself had formed with an elegant taste. — B.

erroneous statement. These particulars I mention, in the belief that there was only forgetfulness in my friend; but I owe this much to the Earl of Marchmont's reputation, who, were there no other memorials, will be immortalized by that line of Pope, in the verses on his grotto:

"And the bright flame was shot through Marchmont's soul."

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF POPE.

[Somewhat free] *sufficiently bold* in his criticism.

All the gay [niceties] *varieties* of diction.

Strikes the imagination with far [more] *greater* force.

It is [probably] *certainly* the noblest version of poetry which the world has ever seen.

Every sheet enabled him to write the next with [less trouble] *more facility*.

No man sympathizes with [vanity depressed] *the sorrows of vanity*.

It had been [criminal] *less easily excused*.

When he [threatened to lay down] *talked of laying down* his pen.

Society [is so named emphatically in opposition to] *politically regulated*, *is a state contradistinguished from* a state of nature.

A fictitious life of an [absurd] *insatuated* scholar.

A foolish [contempt, disregard] *disesteem* of kings.

His hopes and fears, his joys and sorrows [were like those of other mortals] *acted strongly upon his mind*.

Eager to pursue knowledge and attentive to [accumulate] *retain it*.

A mind [excursive] *active*, ambitious, and adventurous.

In its [noblest] *widest* searches still longing to go forward.

He wrote in such a manner as might expose him to few [neglects] *hazards*.

The [reasonableness] *justice* of my determination.

A [favorite] *delicious* employment of the poets.

More terrific and more powerful [beings] *phantoms* perform on the stormy ocean.

The inventor of [those] *this* petty [beings] *nation*.

The [mind] *heart* naturally loves truth.

In the Life of ADDISON we find an unpleasant account of his having lent Steele a hundred pounds, and "reclaimed his loan by an execution." In the new edition of the "Biographia Britannica," the authenticity of this anecdote is denied. But Mr. Malone has obliged me with the following note concerning it:

Many persons having doubts concerning this fact, I applied to Dr. Johnson, to learn on what authority he asserted it. He told me, he had it from Savage, who lived in intimacy with Steele, and who mentioned, that Steele told him the story with tears in his eyes. Ben Victor,¹ Dr. Johnson said,

¹ Benjamin Victor, author of a "Letter to Steele" (1722) and "Letters, Dramatic Pieces and Poems" (1776).

likewise informed him of this remarkable transaction, from the relation of Mr. Wilks the comedian, who was also an intimate of Steele's.¹ Some in defence of Addison, have said, that "the act was done with the good-natured view of rousing Steele, and correcting that profusion which always made him necessitous." — "If that were the case," said Johnson, "and that he only wanted to alarm Steele, he would afterwards have *returned* the money to his friend, which it is not pretended he did." — "This, too," he added, "might be retorted by an advocate for Steele, who might allege, that he did not repay the loan *intentionally*, merely to see whether Addison would be mean and ungenerous enough to make use of legal process to recover it. But of such speculations there is no end; we cannot dive into the hearts of men; but their actions are open to observation."

I then mentioned to him that some people thought that Mr. Addison's character was so pure, that the fact, *though true*, ought to have been suppressed. He saw no reason for this. If nothing but the bright side of characters should be shown, we should sit down in despondency, and think it utterly impossible to imitate them in *any thing*. The sacred writers (he observed) related the vicious as well as the virtuous actions of men; which had this moral effect, that it kept mankind from *despair*, into which otherwise they would naturally fall, were they not supported by the recollection that others had offended like themselves, and by penitence and amendment of life had been restored to the favor of Heaven. — E. M.

MARCH 15, 1782.

The last paragraph of this note is of great importance; and I request that my readers may consider it with particular attention. It will be afterwards referred to in this work.²

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF ADDISON.

[But he was our first example] *He was, however, one of our earliest examples of correctness.*

And [overlook] *despise* their masters.

His instructions were such as the [state] *character* of his [own time] *readers* made [necessary] *proper*.

His purpose was to [diffuse] *infuse* literary curiosity by gentle and unsuspected conveyance [among] *into* the gay, the idle, and the wealthy.

Framed rather for those that [wish] *are learning* to write.

Domestic [manners] *scenes*.

In his Life of PARNELL, I wonder that Johnson omitted to insert an epitaph which he had long before composed for that amiable man, without ever writing it down, but which he was so good as, at my request, to dictate to me, by which means it has been preserved.

¹ The late Mr. Burke informed me, in 1782, that Lady Dorothea Primrose, who died at a great age, I think in 1768, and had been well acquainted with Steele, told him the same story. — *Malone*.

² Dec. 2, 1784.

"*Hic requiescit* THOMAS PARNELL, *S. T. P.*

"Qui sacerdos pariter et poeta,
 Utasque partes ita implevit,
 Ut neque sacerdoti suavitas poetæ,
 Nec poetæ sacerdotis sanctitas, deesset."

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF PARNELL.

About three years [after] *afterwards*.

[Did not much want] *was in no great need of* improvement.

But his prosperity *did not last long* [was clouded with that which took away all his powers of enjoying either profit or pleasure, the death of his wife, whom he is said to have lamented with such sorrow, as hastened his end¹]. His end, whatever was the cause, was now approaching.

In the Hermit, the [composition] *narrative*, as it is less airy, is less pleasing.

In the Life of BLACKMORE, we find that writer's reputation generously cleared by Johnson from the cloud of prejudice which the malignity of contemporary wits had raised around it. In this spirited exertion of justice, he has been imitated by Sir Joshua Reynolds, in his praise of the architecture of Vanbrugh.

We trace Johnson's own character in his observations on Blackmore's "magnanimity as an author." "The incessant attacks of his enemies, whether serious or merry, are never discovered to have disturbed his quiet, or to have lessened his confidence in himself." Johnson, I recollect, once told me, laughing heartily, that he understood it had been said of him, "He *appears* not to feel; but when he is *alone*, depend upon it, he *suffers sadly*." I am as certain as I can be of any man's real sentiments, that he *enjoyed* the perpetual shower of little hostile arrows as evidences of his fame.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF BLACKMORE.

To [set] *engage* poetry [on the side] *in the cause* of virtue.

He likewise [established] *enforced* the truth of Revelation.

[Kindness] *benevolence* was ashamed to favor.

His practice, which was once [very extensive] *invidiously great*.

There is scarcely any distemper of dreadful name [of] which he has not [shown] *taught his reader* how [it is to be opposed] *to oppose*.

Of this [contemptuous] *indecent* arrogance.

[He wrote] *but produced* likewise a work of a different kind.

¹ I should have thought that Johnson, who had felt the severe affliction from which Parnell never recovered, would have preserved this passage. — B. A reference to the "Life" might have shown Boswell that Johnson did preserve the sense of it in another passage, and also the reason of this alteration.

At least [written] *compiled* with integrity.

Faults which many tongues [were desirous] *would have made haste* to publish.

But though he [had not] *could not boast* of much critical knowledge.

He [used] *waited for* no felicities of fancy.

Or had ever elated his [mind] *views* born to that ideal perfection which every [mind] *genius* born to excel is condemned always to pursue and never overtake.

The [first great] *fundamental* principle of wisdom and of virtue.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF PHILIPS.

His dreadful [rival] *antagonist* Pope.

They [have not often much] *are not loaded with* thought.

In his translation from Pindar, he [will not be denied to have reached] *found the art of reaching* all the obscurity of the Theban bard.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF CONGREVE.

Congreve's conversation must surely have been *at least* equally pleasing with his writings.

It apparently [requires] *pre-supposes* a familiar knowledge of many characters.

Reciprocation of [similes] *conceits*.

The dialogue is quick and [various] *sparkling*.

Love for Love; a comedy [more drawn from life] *of nearer alliance to life*.

The general character of his miscellanies, is that they show little wit and [no] *little* virtue.

[Perhaps] *certainly* he had not the fire requisite for the higher species of lyric poetry.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF TICKELL.

[Longed] *long wished* to peruse it.

At the [accession] *arrival* of King George.

Fiction [unnaturally] *unskillfully* compounded of Grecian deities and Gothic fairies.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF AKENSIDE.

For [another] *a different* purpose.

A [furious] *an unnecessary* and outrageous zeal.

[Something which] *what* he called and thought liberty.

A [favorer of innovation] *lover of contradiction*.

Warburton's [censure] *objections*.

His rage [for liberty] *of patriotism*.

Mr. Dyson with [a zeal] *an ardor* of friendship.¹

¹ There is a passage in Johnson's criticism on Akenside's Odes which may be commended to our reviewers: "To examine such compositions singly, cannot be required; they have doubtless brighter and darker parts: but, when once they are found to be generally dull, all further labor may be spared; for to what use can the work be criticised that will not be read?"

In the Life of LYTTTELTON, Johnson seems to have been not favorably disposed towards that nobleman. Mrs. Thrale suggests that he was offended by *Molly Aston's* preference of his Lordship to him.¹ I can by no means join in the censure bestowed by Johnson on his Lordship, whom he calls "poor Lyttelton," for returning thanks to the Critical Reviewers, for having "kindly commended" his "Dialogues of the Dead." Such "acknowledgments," says my friend, "never can be proper, since they must be paid either for flattery or for justice." In my opinion, the most upright man, who has been tried on a false accusation, may, when he is acquitted, make a bow to his jury. And when those, who are so much the arbiters of literary merit, as in a considerable degree to influence the public opinion, review an author's work, *placido lumine*,² when I am afraid mankind in general are better pleased with severity, he may surely express a grateful sense of their civility.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF LYTTTELTON.

He solaced [himself] *his grief* by writing a long poem to her memory.
 The production rather [of a mind that means well than thinks vigorously] *as it seems of leisure than of study, rather effusions than compositions.*
 His last literary [work] *production.*
 [Found the way] *undertook* to persuade.

As the introduction to his critical examination of the genius and writings of YOUNG, he did Mr. Herbert Croft, then a Barrister of Lincoln's Inn, now a clergyman, the honor to adopt a life

¹ Let not my readers smile to think of Johnson's being a candidate for female favor; Mr. Peter Garrick assured me, that he was told by a lady, that in her opinion, Johnson was "a very *seducing man*." Disadvantages of person and manner may be forgotten, where intellectual pleasure is communicated to a susceptible mind; and that Johnson was capable of feeling the most delicate and disinterested attachment, appears from the following letter which is published by Mrs. Thrale, with some others to the same person, of which the excellence is not so apparent.

TO MISS BOOTHBY.

JANUARY, 1775.

DEAREST MADAM: Though I am afraid your illness leaves you little leisure for the reception of airy civilities, yet I cannot forbear to pay you my congratulations on the new year; and to declare my wishes that your years to come may be many and happy. In this wish, indeed, I include myself, who have none but you on whom my heart reposes; yet surely I wish your good, even though your situation were such as should permit you to communicate no gratifications to, dearest, dearest Madam, your, &c.,

SAM. JOHNSON. — B.

It was not Molly Aston, but this same Miss Hill Boothby, of whom Mrs. Thrale wrote. — *Dr. Hill.*

² Horace: "Odes," iv. 3. 2.

of Young written by that gentleman, who was the friend of Dr. Young's son, and wished to vindicate him from some very erroneous remarks to his prejudice. Mr. Croft's performance was subjected to the revision of Dr. Johnson, as appears from the following note to Mr. John Nichols :

This life of Dr. Young was written by a friend of his son. What is crossed with black is expunged by the author, what is crossed with red is expunged by me. If you find anything more that can be well omitted, I shall not be sorry to see it yet shorter. — *Gent. Mag.* lv. 10.

It has always appeared to me to have a considerable share of merit, and to display a pretty successful imitation of Johnson's style. When I mentioned this to a very eminent literary character [Burke], he opposed me vehemently exclaiming, "No, no, it is *not* a good imitation of Johnson : it has all his pomp without his force ; it has all the nodosities of the oak without its strength." This was an image so happy, that one might have thought he would have been satisfied with it ; but he was not. And setting his mind again to work, he added, with exquisite felicity, "It has all the contortions of the Sibyl, without the inspiration."

Mr. Croft very properly guards us against supposing that Young was a gloomy man ; and mentions, that "His parish was indebted to the good-humor of the author of the 'Night Thoughts' for an Assembly and a Bowling-Green." A letter from a noble foreigner is quoted, in which he is said to have been "very pleasant in conversation."

Mr. Langton, who frequently visited him, informs me, that there was an air of benevolence in his manner, but that he could obtain from him less information than he had hoped to receive from one who had lived so much in intercourse with the brightest men of what has been called the Augustan age of England ; and that he showed a degree of eager curiosity concerning the common occurrences that were then passing, which appeared somewhat remarkable in a man of such intellectual stores, of such an advanced age, and who had retired from life with declared disappointment in his expectations.

An instance at once of his pensive turn of mind, and his cheerfulness of temper, appeared in a little story which he himself told to Mr. Langton, when they were walking in his garden : "Here," said he, "I had put a handsome sun-dial, with this inscription, *Eheu fugaces!*¹ which (speaking with a smile) was sadly

¹ Horace : "Odes," ii. 14. 1.

verified, for by the next morning my dial had been carried off."¹

It gives me much pleasure to observe, that however Johnson may have casually talked, yet when he sits, as "an ardent judge zealous to his trust, giving sentence"² upon the excellent works of Young, he allows them the high praise to which they are justly entitled. "'The Universal Passion,'" says he, "is indeed a very great performance, — his distichs have the weight of solid sentiment, and his points the sharpness of resistless truth."

But I was most anxious concerning Johnson's decision upon "Night Thoughts," which I esteem as a mass of the grandest and richest poetry that human genius has ever produced: and was delighted to find this character of that work: "In his 'Night Thoughts,' he has exhibited a very wide display of original poetry, variegated with deep reflection and striking allusions: a wildness of thought, in which the fertility of fancy scatters flowers of every hue and of every odor. This is one of the few poems in which blank verse could not be changed for rhyme but with disadvantage." And afterwards: "Particular lines are not to be regarded; the power is in the whole; and in the whole there is a magnificence like that ascribed to Chinese plantation,³ the magnificence of vast extent and endless diversity."

But there is in this poem not only all that Johnson so well brings in view, but a power of the *pathetic* beyond almost any example that I have seen. He who does not feel his nerves shaken, and his heart pierced by many passages in this extraordinary work, particularly by that most affecting one, which describes the gradual torment suffered by the contemplation of an object of affectionate attachment visibly and certainly decaying into dissolution, must be of a hard and obstinate frame.⁴

To all the other excellences of "Night Thoughts" let me add the great and peculiar one, that they contain not only the noblest

¹ The late Mr. James Ralph told Lord Macartney, that he passed an evening with Dr. Young at Lord Melcombe's (then Mr. Doddington) at Hammersmith. The Doctor happening to go out into the garden, Mr. Doddington observed to him on his return, that it was a dreadful night, as in truth it was, there being a violent storm of rain and wind. "No, Sir," replied the Doctor, "it is a very fine night. THE LORD is abroad." — B.

² Pope: "Essay on Criticism," l. 677.

³ Johnson refers to Chambers's "Dissertation on Oriental Gardening" ridiculed in the "Heroic Epistle." — Dr. Hill.

⁴ Dr. Hill has pointed out that this reference is to the death of Narcissa in the third of the "Night Thoughts." While Boswell was engaged on his great work his wife was dying of consumption in "the rigid north." She was dead nearly two years before the Life was published.

sentiments of virtue, and contemplations on immortality, but the *Christian Sacrifice*, the *Divine Propitiation*, with all its interesting circumstances, and consolations to "a wounded spirit," solemnly and poetically displayed in such imagery and language, as cannot fail to exalt, animate, and soothe the truly pious. No book whatever can be recommended to young persons, with better hopes of seasoning their minds with *vital religion*, than YOUNG'S "Night Thoughts."

In the Life of SWIFT, it appears to me that Johnson had a certain degree of prejudice against that extraordinary man, of which I have elsewhere had occasion to speak. Mr. Thomas Sheridan imputed it to a supposed apprehension in Johnson, that Swift had not been sufficiently active in obtaining for him an Irish degree when it was solicited (see Vol. I., p. 69), but of this there was not sufficient evidence; and let me not presume to charge Johnson with injustice, because he did not think so highly of the writings of this author as I have done from my youth upwards. Yet that he had an unfavorable bias is evident, were it only from that passage in which he speaks of Swift's practice of saving, as, "first ridiculous and at last detestable;" and yet after some examination of circumstances, finds himself obliged to own that, "It will perhaps appear that he only liked one mode of expense better than another, and saved merely that he might have something to give."

One observation which Johnson makes in Swift's life should be often inculcated :

It may be justly supposed, that there was in his conversation what appears so frequently in his letters, an affectation of familiarity with the great, an ambition of momentary equality, sought and enjoyed by the neglect of those ceremonies which custom has established as the barriers between one order of society and another. This transgression of regularity was by himself and his admirers termed greatness of soul; but a great mind disdains to hold anything by courtesy, and therefore never usurps what a lawful claimant may take away. He that encroaches on another's dignity, puts himself in his power; he is either repelled with helpless indignity, or endured by clemency and condescension.

VARIOUS READINGS IN THE LIFE OF SWIFT.

Charity may be persuaded to think that it might be written by a man of a peculiar [opinions] *character*, without ill intention.

He did not [disown] *deny* it.

[To] *by* whose kindness it is not unlikely that he was [indebted for] *advanced* to his benefices.

[With] *for* this purpose he had recourse to Mr. Harley.

Sharpe, whom he [represents] *describes* as "the harmless tool of others' hate."

Harley was slow because he was [irresolute] *doubtful*.

When [readers were not many] *we were not yet a nation of readers*.

[Every man who] *he that could say he* knew him.

Every man of known influence has so many [more] petitions [than] *which* he [can] *cannot* grant, that he must necessarily offend more than he [can gratify] *gratifies*.

Ecclesiastical [preferments] *benefices*.

Swift [procured] *contrived* an interview.

[As a writer] *In his works* he has given very different specimens.

On all common occasions he habitually [assumes] *affects* a style of [superiority] *arrogance*.

By the [omission] *neglect* of those ceremonies.

That their merits filled the world [and] *or that* there was no [room for] *hope* of more.

I have not confined myself to the order of the "Lives," in making my few remarks. Indeed a different order is observed in the original publication, and in the collection of Johnson's Works. And should it be objected, that many of my various readings are inconsiderable, those who make an objection will be pleased to consider, that such small particulars are intended for those who are nicely critical in composition, to whom they will be an acceptable selection.

"Spence's Anecdotes," which are frequently quoted and referred to in Johnson's "Lives of the Poets," are in a manuscript collection, made by the Reverend Mr. Joseph Spence,¹ containing a number of particulars concerning eminent men. To each anecdote is marked the name of the person on whose authority it is mentioned. This valuable collection is the property of the Duke of Newcastle, who, upon the application of Sir Lucas Pepys, was pleased to permit it to be put into the hands of Dr. Johnson, who I am sorry to think made but an awkward return. "Great assistance," says he, "has been given me by Mr. Spence's Collection, of which I consider the communication as a favor worthy of public acknowledgment: " but he has not owned to whom he was obliged, so that the acknowledgment is unappropriated to his Grace.

While the world in general was filled with admiration of Johnson's "Lives of the Poets," there were narrow circles in which

¹ The Rev. Joseph Spence, A.M., Rector, of Great Harwood in Buckinghamshire, and Prebendary of Durham, died at Byfleet in Surrey, August 20, 1768. He was a Fellow of New College in Oxford, and held the office of Professor of Poetry in that University from 1728 to 1738. — *Malone*. The Anecdotes were first published in 1820 by Murray, with notes by Malone, and other editions have since been issued. See *Quart. Rev.*, xxiii. 400.

prejudice and resentment were fostered, and from which attacks of different sorts issued against him.¹ By some violent Whigs he was arraigned of injustice to Milton; by some Cambridge men of depreciating Gray; and his expressing with a dignified freedom what he really thought of George Lord Lyttelton, gave offence to some of the friends of that nobleman, and particularly produced a declaration of war against him from Mrs. Montagu, the ingenious Essayist on Shakespeare, between whom and his Lordship a commerce of reciprocal compliments had long been carried on. In this war the smallest powers in alliance with him were of course led to engage, at least on the defensive, and thus I for one, was excluded from the enjoyment of "A Feast for Reason," such as Mr. Cumberland has described, with a keen, yet just and delicate pen, in his *Observer*.² These minute inconveniences gave not the least disturbance to Johnson. He nobly said, when I talked to him of the feeble, though shrill outcry which had been raised: "Sir, I considered myself as intrusted with a certain portion of truth. I have given my opinion sincerely; let them show where they think me wrong."

While my friend is thus contemplated in the splendor derived from his last and perhaps most admirable work, I introduce him with peculiar propriety as the correspondent of WARREN HASTINGS! a man whose regard reflects dignity even upon JOHNSON; a man the extent of whose abilities was equal to that of his power; and who, by those who are fortunate enough to know him in private life, is admired for his literature and taste, and beloved for the candor, moderation, and mildness of his character. Were I capable of paying a suitable tribute of admiration to him, I should certainly not withhold it at a moment³ when it is not possible that I should be suspected of being an interested flatterer. But how weak would be my voice after that of the millions whom he governed. His condescending and obliging compliance with my solicitation, I with humble gratitude acknowledge: and while by publishing his letter to me, accompanying the valuable communi-

¹ From this disreputable class, I except an ingenious, though not satisfactory defence of HAMMOND, which I did not see till lately, by the favor of its author, my amiable friend, the Reverend Mr. Bevill, who published it without his name. It is a juvenile performance, but elegantly written, with classical enthusiasm of sentiment, and yet with a becoming modesty, and great respect for Dr. Johnson. — B.

² A periodical described by the author as "a body of original essays" and claimed by him to be "fairly enrolled amongst the standard classics of our native language." The "Feast of Reason" is in No. 25.

³ January, 1791. — B. Hastings's trial was now just entering on its third year. It began in 1788 and ended in 1795.

cation, I do eminent honor to my great friend, I shall entirely disregard any invidious suggestions, that as I in some degree participate in the honor, I have, at the same time, the gratification of my own vanity in view.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

PARK LANE, Dec. 2, 1790.

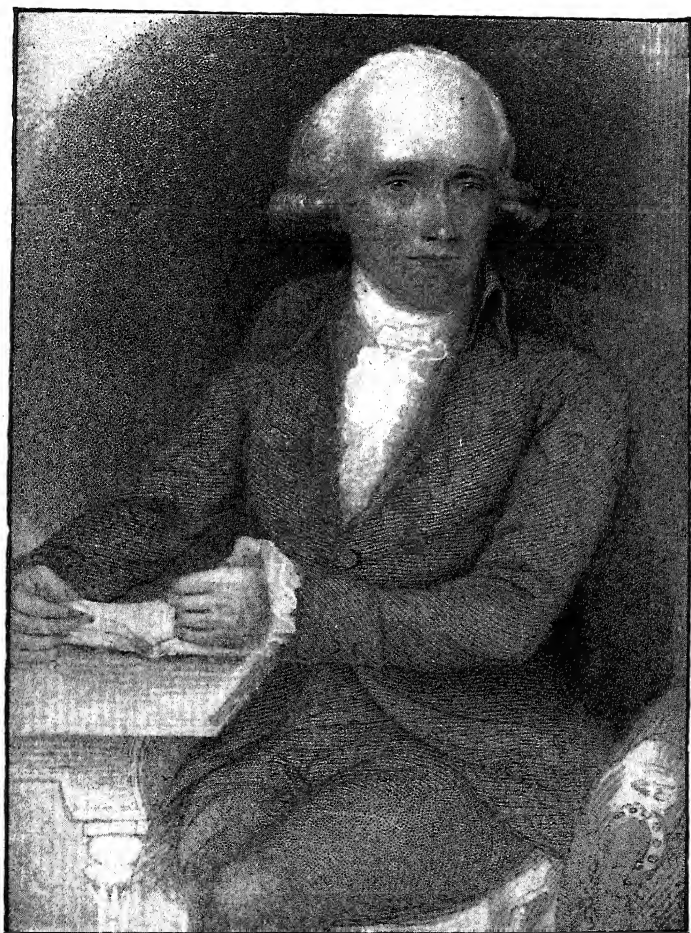
SIR: I have been fortunately spared the troublesome suspense of a long search, to which in performance of my promise I had devoted this morning, by lighting upon the objects of it among the first papers that I laid my hands on: my veneration for your great and good friend, Dr. Johnson, and the pride, or I hope something of a better sentiment, which I indulge in possessing such memorials of his good will towards me, having induced me to bind them in a parcel containing other select papers, and labelled with the titles appertaining to them. They consist but of three letters which I believe were all that I ever received from Dr. Johnson. Of these, one which was written in quadruplicate, under the different dates of its respective dispatches, has already been made publick,¹ but not from any communication of mine. This, however, I have joined to the rest; and have now the pleasure of sending them to you for the use to which you informed me it was your desire to destine them.

My promise was pledged with the condition, that if the letters were found to contain any thing which should render them improper for the publick eye, you would dispense with the performance of it. You will have the goodness, I am sure, to pardon my recalling this stipulation to your recollection, as I shall be loath to appear negligent of that obligation which is always implied in an epistolary confidence. In the reservation of that right I have read them over with the most scrupulous attention, but have not seen in them the slightest cause on that ground to withhold them from you. But, though not on that, yet on another ground I own I feel a little, yet but a little, reluctance to part with them: I mean on that of my own credit, which I fear will suffer by the information conveyed by them, that I was early in the possession of such valuable instructions for the beneficial employment of the influence of my late station, and (as it may seem) have so little availed myself of them. Whether I could, if it were necessary, defend myself against such an imputation, it little concerns the world to know. I look only to the effect which these relics may produce, considered as evidences of the virtues of their authour: and believing that they will be found to display an uncommon warmth of private friendship, and a mind ever attentive to the improvement and extension of useful knowledge, and solicitous for the interests of mankind, I can cheerfully submit to the little sacrifice of my own fame, to contribute to the illustration of so great and venerable a character. They cannot be better applied, for that end, than by being entrusted to your hands. Allow me, with this offering, to infer from it a proof of the very great esteem with which I have the honour to profess myself, Sir, your most obedient and most humble servant,

WARREN HASTINGS.

P.S. At some future time, and when you have no further occasion for these papers, I shall be obliged to you if you would return them.

¹ *Gent. Mag.* for 1785, p. 412.



Wanen Hastings.

The last of the three letters thus graciously put into my hands, and which has already appeared in public, belongs to this year; but I shall previously insert the first two in the order of their dates. They altogether form a grand group in my biographical picture.

TO THE HONOURABLE WARREN HASTINGS, ESQ.

SIR: Though I have had but little personal knowledge of you, I have had enough to make me wish for more; and though it be now a long time since I was honoured by your visit, I had too much pleasure from it to forget it. By those whom we delight to remember, we are unwilling to be forgotten; and therefore I cannot omit this opportunity of reviving myself in your memory by a letter which you will receive from the hands of my friend Mr. Chambers;¹ a man, whose purity of manners and vigour of mind are sufficient to make every thing welcome that he brings.

That this is my only reason for writing, will be too apparent by the uselessness of my letter to any other purpose. I have no questions to ask; not that I want curiosity after either the ancient or present state of regions, in which have been seen all the power and splendour of wide-extended empire; and which, as by some grant of natural superiority, supply the rest of the world with almost all that pride desires, and luxury enjoys. But my knowledge of them is too scanty to furnish me with proper topics of enquiry; I can only wish for information; and hope that a mind comprehensive like yours will find leisure amidst the cares of your important station, to enquire into many subjects of which the European world either thinks not at all or thinks with deficient intelligence and uncertain conjecture. I shall hope, that he who once intended to increase the learning of his country by the introduction of the Persian language,² will examine nicely the traditions and histories of the East; that he will survey the wonders of its ancient edifices, and trace the vestiges of its ruined cities; and that, at his return, we shall know the arts and opinions of a race of men, from whom very little has been hitherto derived.

You, Sir, have no need of being told by me, how much may be added by your attention and patronage to experimental knowledge and natural history. There are arts of manufacture practised in the countries in which you preside, which are yet very imperfectly known here, either to artificers or philosophers. Of the natural productions, animate and inanimate, we yet have so little intelligence, that our books are filled, I fear, with conjectures about things which an Indian peasant knows by his senses.

Many of those things my first wish is to see; my second to know, by such accounts as a man like you will be able to give.

As I have not skill to ask proper questions, I have likewise no such access to great men as can enable me to send you any political information. Of the agitations of an unsettled Government, and the struggles of a feeble Ministry,³ care is doubtless taken to give you more exact accounts than I can obtain. If you are inclined to interest yourself much in publick transactions it is no misfortune to you to be so distant from them.

That literature is not totally forsaking us, and that your favourite language

¹ Afterwards Sir Robert Chambers, one of his Majesty's Judges in India. — B.

² See Macaulay's "Essays," ed. 1884, iii. 220.

³ Lord North's: which lasted till 1782.

is not neglected, will appear from the book,¹ which I should have pleased myself more with sending, if I could have presented it bound; but time was wanting. I beg, however, Sir, that you will accept it from a man very desirous of your regard; and that if you think me able to gratify you by anything more important you will employ me.

I am now going to take leave, perhaps a very long leave, of my dear Mr. Chambers. That he is going to live where you govern, may justly alleviate the regard of parting; and the hope of seeing both him and you again, which I am not willing to mingle with doubt, must at present comfort, as it can, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MARCH 30, 1774.

TO THE SAME.

SIR: Being informed that by the departure of a ship, there is now an opportunity of writing to Bengal, I am unwilling to slip out of your memory by my own negligence, and therefore take the liberty of reminding you of my existence, by sending you a book which is not yet made publick.

I have lately visited a region less remote, and less illustrious than India, which afforded some occasions for speculation; what has occurred to me I have put into the volume, ["Journey to the Western Islands of Scotland,"] of which I beg your acceptance.

Men in your station seldom have presents totally disinterested; my book is received, let me now make my request.

There is, Sir, somewhere within your government, a young adventurer, one Chauncey Lawrence, whose father is one of my oldest friends. Be pleased to shew the young man what countenance is fit, whether he wants to be restrained by your authority, or encouraged by your favour. His father is now President of the College of Physicians, a man venerable for his knowledge, and more venerable for his virtue.

I wish you a prosperous government, a safe return, and a long enjoyment of plenty and tranquillity. I am, Sir, your most obedient and most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.*

LONDON, Dec. 20, 1774.

TO THE SAME.

JAN. 9, 1781.

SIR: Amidst the importance and multiplicity of affairs in which your great office engages you, I take the liberty of recalling your attention for a moment to literature, and will not prolong the interruption by an apology which your character makes needless.

Mr. Hoole, a gentleman long known, and long esteemed in the India House, after having translated Tasso, has undertaken Ariosto. How well he is qualified for his undertaking he has already shewn. He is desirous, Sir, of

¹ [Sir W.] Jones's "Persian Grammar" [published in 1771].—B.

² It is a remarkable circumstance that one of the letters of Hastings to Dr. Johnson [the answer to the above] bears date a very few hours after the death of Nuncomar. While the whole settlement was in commotion, while a mighty and ancient priesthood were weeping over the remains of their chief, the conqueror in that deadly grapple sat down, with characteristic self-possession, to write about the "Tour to the Hebrides," Jones's "Persian Grammar," and the history, traditions, arts, and natural productions of India.—*Macaulay*.

your favour in promoting his proposals, and flatters me by supposing that my testimony may advance his interest.

It is a new thing for a clerk of the India House to translate poets;—it is new for a Governour of Bengal to patronize learning. That he may find his ingenuity rewarded, and that learning may flourish under your protection, is the wish of, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

I wrote to him in February, complaining of having been troubled by a recurrence of the perplexing question of liberty and necessity; and mentioning that I hoped soon to meet him again in London.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I hoped you had got rid of all this hypocrisy of misery. What have you to do with Liberty and Necessity? Or what more than to hold your tongue about it? Do not doubt but I shall be most heartily glad to see you here again, for I love every part about you but your affectation of distress.

I have at last finished my Lives, and have laid up for you a load of copy, all out of order, so that it will amuse you a long time to set it right. Come to me, my dear Bozzy, and let us be as happy as we can. We will go again to the Mitre, and talk old times over. I am, dear Sir, yours affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MARCH 14, 1781.

On Monday, March 19, I arrived in London, and on Tuesday the 20th met him in Fleet Street, walking, or rather indeed moving, along; for his peculiar march is thus described in a very just and picturesque manner in a short *Life*¹ of him published very soon after his death: "When he walked the streets, what with the constant roll of his head, and the concomitant motion of his body, he appeared to make his way by that motion, independent of his feet." That he was often much stared at while he advanced in this manner, may easily be believed; but it was not safe to make sport of one so robust as he was. Mr. Langton saw him one day, in a fit of absence, by a sudden start, drive the load off a porter's back, and walk forward briskly without being conscious of what he had done. The porter was very angry but stood still,

¹ Published by Kearsley, with this well-chosen motto:

" . . . From his cradle
He was a SCHOLAR, and a ripe and good one:
And, to add greater honors to his age
Than man could give him, he died fearing Heaven."

SHAKESPEARE.—B.

Dr. Hill calls the quotation "a patched-up one." But, with the exception of *Heaven* for *God*, which may be Boswell's mistake in transcribing, the words are quite correct. They are from the beginning and the end of Griffith's defence of Wolsley Katherine, "Henry VIII." iv. 2.

and eyed the huge figure with much earnestness, till he was satisfied that his wisest course was to be quiet and take up his burden again.

Our accidental meeting in the street after a long separation, was a pleasing surprise to us both. He stepped aside with me into Falcon Court, and made kind inquiries about my family, and as we were in a hurry going different ways, I promised to call on him next day; he said he was engaged to go out in the morning. "Early, Sir?" said I. JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, a London morning does not go with the sun."

I waited on him next evening, and he gave me a great portion of his original manuscript of his "Lives of the Poets," which he had preserved for me.

I found on visiting his friend, Mr. Thrale, that he was now very ill, and had removed, I suppose by the solicitation of Mrs. Thrale, to a house in Grosvenor Square. I was sorry to see him sadly changed in his appearance.

He told me I might now have the pleasure to see Dr. Johnson drink wine again, for he had lately returned to it. When I mentioned this to Johnson, he said, "I drink it now sometimes, but not socially." The first evening that I was with him at Thrale's I observed that he poured a large quantity of it into a glass, and swallowed it greedily. Everything about his character and manners was forcible and violent; there never was any moderation; many a day did he fast, many a year did he refrain from wine; but when he did eat, it was voraciously; when he did drink wine, it was copiously. He could practise abstinence, but not temperance.

Mrs. Thrale and I had a dispute, whether Shakespeare or Milton had drawn the most admirable picture of a man.¹ I was

¹ Shakespeare makes Hamlet thus describe his father:

"See what a grace was seated on this brow:—
Hyperion's curls, the front of Jove himself,
An eye like Mars, to threaten and command;
A station like the herald Mercury
New-lighted on a heaven-kissing hill;
A combination and a form, indeed,
Where every god did seem to set his seal,
To give the world assurance of a man."

[Act iii. sc. 4.]

Milton thus portrays our first parent, Adam:

"His fair large front and eye sublime declar'd
Absolute rule; and hyacinthin locks
Round from his parted forelock manly hung
Clust'ring, but not beneath his shoulders broad."

[P. L. iv. 300.] — B

for Shakespeare ; Mrs. Thrale for Milton ; and after a fair thinking, Johnson decided for my opinion.

I told him of one of Mr. Burke's playful sallies upon Dean Marlay :¹ " I don't like the Deanery of *Ferns*, it sounds so like a *barren* title." — " Dr. *Heath* should have it ;" said I. Johnson laughed, and, condescending to trifle in the same mode of conceit, suggested Dr. *Moss*.

He said, " Mrs. Montagu has dropped me. Now, Sir, there are people whom one should like very well to drop, but would not wish to be dropped by." He certainly was vain of the society of ladies, and could make himself very agreeable to them, when he chose it ; Sir Joshua Reynolds agreed with me that he could. Mr. Gibbon, with his usual sneer, controverted it, perhaps in resentment of Johnson's having talked with some disgust of his ugliness, which one would think a *philosopher* would not mind. Dean Marlay wittily observed, " A lady may be vain, when she can turn a wolf-dog into a lap-dog."

The election for Ayrshire, my own county, was this spring tried upon a petition before a Committee of the House of Commons. I was one of the counsel for the sitting member, and took the liberty of previously stating different points to Johnson, who never failed to see them clearly, and to supply me with some good hints. He dictated to me the following note upon the registration of deeds :

All laws are made for the convenience of the community; what is legally done should be legally recorded, that the state of things may be known, and that wherever evidence is requisite, evidence may be had. For this reason, the obligation to frame and establish a legal register is enforced by a legal penalty, which penalty is the want of that perfection and plenitude of right which a register would give. Thence it follows, that this is not an objection merely legal; for the reason on which the law stands being equitable, makes it an equitable objection.

" This," said he, " you must enlarge on, when speaking to the Committee. You must not argue there, as if you were arguing in the school ;² close reasoning will not fix their attention ; you

¹ Dr. Richard Marlay, afterwards Lord Bishop of Waterford, a very amiable, benevolent, and ingenious man. He was chosen a member of the LITERARY CLUB in 1777, and died in Dublin, July 2, 1802, in his 75th year. — *Malone*. It was he who, when his coachman objected to fetching water from the well, on the ground that it was his business to drive and the footman's to run on errands, ordered the man to bring out the coach and four and drive to the well with the pitcher inside. — *Dr. Hill*.

² That is, at a University.

must say the same thing over and over again, in different words. If you say it but once, they miss it in a moment of inattention. It is unjust, Sir, to censure lawyers for multiplying words, when they argue; it is often *necessary* for them to multiply words."

His notion of the duty of a member of Parliament sitting upon an election-committee was very high; and when he was told of a gentleman upon one of those committees, who read the newspapers part of the time and slept the rest, while the merits of a vote were examined by the counsel; and as an excuse, when challenged by the chairman for such behavior, bluntly answered, "I had made up my mind upon that case;" Johnson, with an indignant contempt, said, "If he was such a rogue as to make up his mind upon a case without hearing it, he should not have been such a fool as to tell it." — "I think," said Mr. Dudley Long, now North, "the Doctor has pretty plainly made him out to be both rogue and fool."

Johnson's profound reverence for the hierarchy made him expect from bishops the highest degree of decorum; he was offended even at their going to taverns: "A bishop," said he, "has nothing to do at a tippling-house. It is not indeed immoral in him to go to a tavern; neither would it be immoral in him to whip a top in Grosvenor Square: but if he did, I hope the boys would fall upon him, and apply the whip to *him*. There are gradations in conduct; there is morality, — decency, — propriety. None of these should be violated by a bishop. A bishop should not go to a house where he may meet a young fellow leading out a wench." BOSWELL: "But, Sir, every tavern does not admit women." JOHNSON: "Depend upon it, Sir, any tavern will admit a well-dressed man and a well-dressed woman; they will not perhaps admit a woman whom they see every night walking by their door in the street. But a well-dressed man may lead in a well-dressed woman to any tavern in London. Taverns sell meat and drink, and will sell them to anybody who can eat and can drink. You may as well say, that a mercer will not sell silks to a woman of the town."

He also disapproved of bishops going to routs, at least of their staying at them longer than their presence commanded respect. He mentioned a particular bishop. "Poh!" said Mrs. Thrale, "the Bishop of [St. Asaph] is never minded at a rout." BOSWELL: "When a bishop places himself in a situation where he has no distinct character and is of no consequence, he degrades

the dignity of his order." JOHNSON: "Mr. Boswell, Madam, has said it as correctly as it could be."

Nor was it only in the dignitaries of the Church that Johnson required a particular decorum and delicacy of behavior; he justly considered that the clergy, as persons set apart for the sacred office of serving at the altar, and impressing the minds of men with the awful concerns of a future state, should be somewhat more serious than the generality of mankind, and have a suitable composure of manners. A due sense of the dignity of their profession, independent of higher motives, will ever prevent them from losing their distinction in an indiscriminate sociality; and did such as affect this, know how much it lessens them in the eyes of those whom they think to please by it, they would feel themselves much mortified.

Johnson, and his friend Beauclerk, were once together in company with several clergymen, who thought that they should appear to advantage by assuming the lax jollity of *men of the world*; which, as it may be observed in similar cases, they carried to noisy excess. Johnson, who they expected would be *entertained*, sat grave and silent for some time; at last, turning to Beauclerk, he said, by no means in a whisper, "This merriment of parsons is mighty offensive."

Even the dress of a clergyman should be in character, and nothing can be more despicable than conceited attempts at avoiding the appearance of the clerical order; attempts which are as ineffectual as they are pitiful. Dr. Porteus, now Bishop of London, in his excellent charge when presiding over the diocese of Chester, justly animadverted upon this subject; and observes of a reverend fop, that he "can be but *half a beau*."

Addison, in *The Spectator*,¹ has given us a fine portrait of a clergyman, who is supposed to be a member of his *Club*; and Johnson has exhibited a model, in the character of Mr. Mudge (Vol. I., p. 213), which has escaped the collectors of his works, but which he owned to me and which indeed he showed to Sir Joshua Reynolds at the time when it was written. It bears the genuine marks of Johnson's best manner, and is as follows:

The Reverend Mr. *Zachariah Mudge*, Prebendary of Exeter, and Vicar of St. Andrew's in Plymouth; a man equally eminent for his virtues and abilities, and at once beloved as a companion and revered as a pastor. He had the general curiosity to which no kind of knowledge is indifferent or

¹ No. 2.

superfluous; and that general benevolence by which no order of men is hated or despised.

His principles both of thought and action were great and comprehensive. By a solicitous examination of objections, and judicious comparison of opposite arguments, he attained what inquiry never gives but to industry and perspicuity, a firm and unshaken settlement of conviction. But his firmness was without asperity; for, knowing with how much difficulty truth was sometimes found, he did not wonder that many missed it.

The general course of his life was determined by his profession; he studied the sacred volumes in the original languages; with what diligence and success, his Notes upon the Psalms give sufficient evidence. He once endeavored to add the knowledge of Arabic to that of Hebrew; but finding his thoughts too much diverted from other studies, after some time desisted from his purpose.

His discharge of parochial duties was exemplary. How his *sermons* were composed, may be learned from the excellent volume which he has given to the public; but how they were delivered, can be known only to those that heard them; for as he appeared in the pulpit, words will not easily describe him. His delivery, though unconstrained, was not negligent, and though forcible was not turbulent; disdaining anxious nicety of emphasis, and labored artifice of action, it captivated the hearer by its natural dignity, it roused the sluggish, and fixed the volatile, and detained the mind upon the subject without directing it to the speaker.

The grandeur and solemnity of the preacher did not intrude upon his general behavior; at the table of his friends he was a companion communicative and attentive, of unaffected manners, of manly cheerfulness, willing to please and easy to be pleased. His acquaintance was universally solicited, and his presence obstructed no enjoyment which religion did not forbid. Though studious he was popular; though argumentative he was modest; though inflexible he was candid: and though metaphysical yet orthodox.”¹

On Friday, March 30, I dined with him at Sir Joshua Reynolds's, with the Earl of Charlemont, Sir Annesley Stewart, Mr. Eliot of Port Eliot, Mr. Burke, Dean Marlay, Mr. Langton; a most agreeable day, of which I regret that every circumstance is not preserved; but it is unreasonable to require such a multiplication of felicity.

Mr. Eliot, with whom Dr. Walter Harte (see Vol. I., p. 361) had travelled, talked to us of his “History of Gustavus Adolphus,” which he said was a very good book in the German translation. JOHNSON: “Harte was excessively vain. He put copies of his book in manuscript into the hand of Lord Chesterfield and Lord Granville, that they might revise it. Now how absurd was it to suppose that two such noblemen would revise so big a manuscript. Poor man! he left London the day of the publication of his book that he might be out of the way of the great praise he was to

¹ *London Chronicle*, May 2, 1769. This respectable man is there mentioned as have died on the 3d of April, that year, at Coffleet, the seat of Thomas Veale, Esq., in his way to London. — B.

receive; and he was ashamed to return, when he found how ill his book had succeeded. It was unlucky in coming out on the same day with Robertson's 'History of Scotland.'¹ His husbandry,² however, is good." BOSWELL: "So he was fitter for that than for heroic history: he did well when he turned his sword into a ploughshare."

Mr. Eliot mentioned a curious liquor peculiar to his country, which the Cornish fishermen drink. They call it *mahogany*; and it is made of two parts gin, and one part treacle; well beaten together. I begged to have some of it made, which was done with proper skill by Mr. Eliot. I thought it very good liquor; and said it was a counterpart of what is called *Athol porridge* in the Highlands of Scotland, which is a mixture of whiskey and honey. JOHNSON said, "That must be a better liquor than the Cornish, for both its component parts are better." He also observed, "*Mahogany* must be a modern name; for it is not long since the wood called mahogany was known in this country." I mentioned his scale of liquors: claret for boys, — port for men, — brandy for heroes. "Then," said Mr. Burke, "let me have claret: I love to be a boy; to have the careless gayety of boyish days." JOHNSON: "I should drink claret too, if it would give me that; but it does not: it neither makes boys men, nor men boys. You'll be drowned by it before it has any effect upon you."

I ventured to mention a ludicrous paragraph in the newspapers, that Dr. Johnson was learning to dance of Vestris. Lord Charlemont, wishing to excite him to talk, proposed in a whisper that he should be asked whether it was true. "Shall I ask him?" said his Lordship. We were, by a great majority, clear for the experiment. Upon which his Lordship very gravely, and with a courteous air, said, "Pray, Sir, is it true that you are taking lessons of Vestris?" This was risking a good deal, and required the boldness of a General of Irish Volunteers to make the attempt. Johnson was at first startled, and in some heat answered, "How can your Lordship ask so simple a question?" But immediately recovering himself, whether from unwillingness to be deceived, or to appear deceived, or whether from real good humor, he kept up the joke: "Nay, but if anybody were to answer the paragraph, and contradict it, I'd have a reply, and would say, that he who contradicted it was no friend either to Vestris

¹ Robertson's "Scotland" came out in February, 1759: Harte's "Gustavus Adolphus" and Humes's "England" in March, 1759.

² "Essays on Husbandry," 1764.

or me. For why should not Dr. Johnson add to his other powers a little corporeal agility? Socrates learnt to dance at an advanced age, and Cato learnt Greek at an advanced age. Then it might proceed to say, that this Johnson, not content with dancing on the ground, might dance on the rope; and they might introduce the elephant dancing on the rope. A nobleman¹ wrote a play called 'Love in a Hollow Tree.' He found out that it was a bad one, and therefore wished to buy up all the copies, and burn them. The Duchess of Marlborough had kept one; and when he was against her at an election, she had a new edition of it printed, and prefixed to it, as a frontispiece, an elephant dancing on a rope; to show, that his Lordship's writing comedy was as awkward as an elephant dancing on a rope."

On Sunday, April 1, I dined with him at Mr. Thrale's, with Sir Philip Jennings Clerk and Mr. Perkins [Vol. I. p., 468], who had the superintendence of Mr. Thrale's brewery, with a salary of five hundred pounds a year. Sir Philip had the appearance of a gentleman of ancient family, well advanced in life. He wore his own white hair in a bag of goodly size, a black velvet coat, with an embroidered waistcoat, and very rich laced ruffles; which Mrs. Thrale said were old fashioned, but which, for that reason, I thought the more respectable, more like a Tory; yet Sir Philip was then in Opposition in Parliament. "Ah, Sir," said Johnson, "ancient ruffles and modern principles do not agree." Sir Philip defended the Opposition to the American war ably and with temper, and I joined him. He said the majority of the nation was against the Ministry. JOHNSON: "I, Sir, am against the Ministry; but it is for having too little of that, of which Opposition thinks they have too much. Were I minister, if any man wagged his finger against me, he should be turned out; for that which it is in the power of the Government to give at pleasure to one or to another, should be given to the supporters of Government. If you will not oppose at the expense of losing your place, your opposition will not be honest, you will feel no serious grievance; and the present opposition is only a contest to get what others have. Sir Robert Walpole acted as I would do. As to the American war, the *sense* of the nation is *with* the Ministry. The majority of those who can *understand* is with it; the majority of

¹ William, the first Viscount Grimston. — B. Two editions were published, apparently by Grimston himself, one bearing his name but no date, the other the date of 1705, but no name. The third edition with the elephant on the tight-rope was published in 1736. The election was for St. Alban's, for which borough he was thrice returned. — *Dr. Hill*.

those who can only *hear*, is against it; and as those who can only hear are more numerous than those who can understand, and Opposition is always loudest, a majority of the rabble will be for Opposition."

This boisterous vivacity entertained us: but the truth in my opinion was, that those who could understand the best were against the American war, as almost every man now is, when the question has been coolly considered.

Mrs. Thrale gave high praise to Mr. Dudley Long, (now North). JOHNSON: "Nay, my dear lady, do n't talk so. Mr. Long's character is very *short*. It is nothing. He fills a chair. He is a man of genteel appearance, and that is all.¹ I know nobody who blasts by praise as you do: for whenever there is exaggerated praise, everybody is set against a character. They are provoked to attack it. Now, there is Pepys;² you praised that man with such disproportion, that I was incited to lessen him, perhaps more than he deserves. His blood is upon your head. By the same principle, your malice defeats itself; for your censure is too violent. And yet (looking to her with a leering smile) she is the first woman in the world, could she but restrain that wicked tongue of hers; she would be the only woman, could she but command that little whirligig."

Upon the subject of exaggerated praise I took the liberty to say, that I thought there might be very high praise given to a known character which deserved it, and therefore it would not be exaggerated. Thus, one might say of Mr. Edmund Burke, he is a very wonderful man. JOHNSON: "No, Sir, you would not be safe, if another man had a mind perversely to contradict. He might answer, 'Where is all the wonder? Burke is, to be sure, a man of uncommon abilities, with a great quantity of matter in his mind, and a great fluency of language in his mouth. But we are not to be stunned and astonished by him.' So you see, Sir, even Burke would suffer, not from any fault of his own, but from your folly."

¹ Here Johnson condescended to play upon the words *Long* and *short*. But little did he know that, owing to Mr. Long's reserve in his presence, he was talking thus of a gentleman distinguished amongst his acquaintance for acuteness of wit, one to whom I think the French expression, *il pétille d'esprit*, is particularly suited. He has gratified me by mentioning that he heard Dr. Johnson say, "Sir, if I were to lose Boswell, it would be a limb amputated." — B.

² William Weller Pepys, Esq., one of the Masters in the High Court of Chancery, and well known in polite circles. My acquaintance with him is not sufficient to enable me to speak of him from my own judgment. But I know that both at Eton and Oxford he was the intimate friend of the late Sir James Macdonald, the *Marcellus* of Scotland, whose extraordinary talents, learning, and virtues, will ever be remembered with admiration and regret. — B.

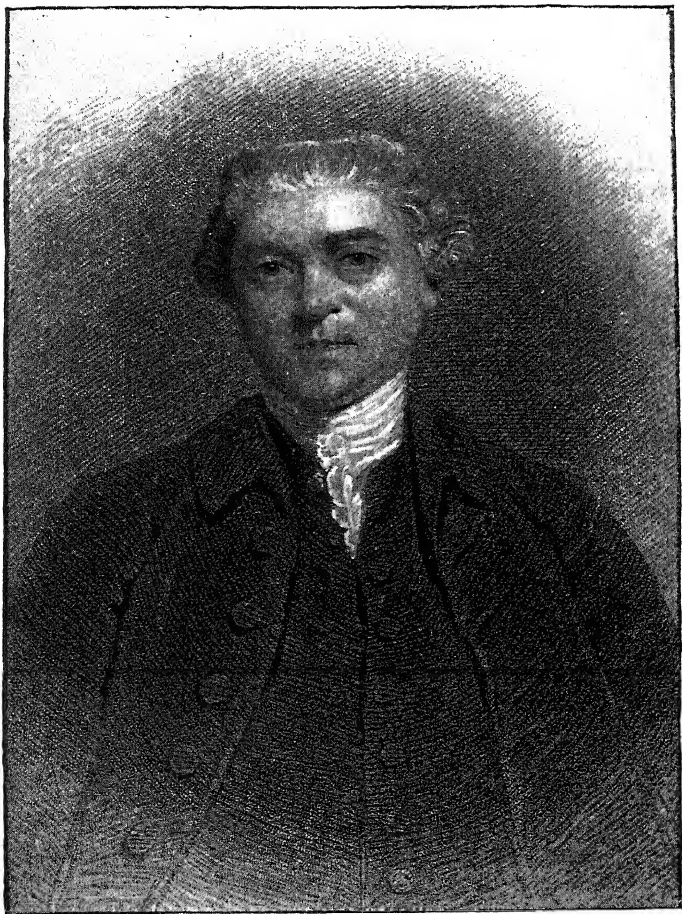
Mrs. Thrale mentioned a gentleman who had acquired a fortune of 4000*l.* a year in trade, but was absolutely miserable because he could not talk in company; so miserable, that he was impelled to lament his situation in the street to ——¹ whom he hates, and who he knows despises him. "I am a most unhappy man," said he. "I am invited to conversations. I go to conversations; but, alas! I have no conversation." JOHNSON: "Man commonly cannot be successful in different ways. This gentleman has spent, in getting 4000*l.* a year, the time in which he might have learnt to talk; and now he cannot talk." Mr. Perkins made a shrewd and droll remark: "If he had got his 4000*l.* a year as a mountebank, he might have learnt to talk at the same time that he was getting his fortune."

Some other gentlemen came in. The conversation concerning the person whose character Dr. Johnson had treated so slightly, as he did not know his merit, was resumed. Mrs. Thrale said, "You think so of him, Sir, because he is quiet, and does not exert himself with force. You'll be saying the same thing of Mr. —— there, who sits as quiet —." This was not well-bred; and Johnson did not let it pass without correction. "Nay, Madam, what right have you to talk thus? Both Mr. —— and I have reason to take it ill. *You* may talk of Mr. ——; but why do you make *me* do it. Have I said anything against Mr. ——? You have *set* him, that I might shoot him: but I have not shot him."

One of the gentlemen said, he had seen three folio volumes of Dr. Johnson's sayings collected by me. "I must put you right, Sir," said I; "for I am very exact in authenticity. You could not see folio volumes, for I have none: you might have seen some in quarto and octavo. This is an inattention which one should guard against." JOHNSON: "Sir, it is a want of concern about veracity. He does not know that he saw *any* volumes. If he had seen them he could have remembered their size."

Mr. Thrale appeared very lethargic to-day. I saw him again on Monday evening, at which time he was not thought to be in immediate danger; but early in the morning of Wednesday the 4th, he expired. Johnson was in the house, and thus mentions the event: "I felt almost the last flutter of his pulse, and looked for the last time upon the face that for fifteen years had never been turned upon me but with respect and benignity." ("Prayers and Meditations," p. 191.) Upon that day there was a *Call* of

¹ Probably Mr. Seward, who was constantly at the Thrales'. — *Dr. Hill.*



H. Thrale

the LITERARY CLUB; but Johnson apologized for his absence by the following note :

MR. JOHNSON knows that Sir Joshua Reynolds and the other gentlemen will excuse his incomppliance with the call, when they are told that Mr. Thrale died this morning.

WEDNESDAY.

Mr. Thrale's death was a very essential loss to Johnson, who, although he did not foresee all that afterwards happened, was sufficiently convinced that the comforts which Mr. Thrale's family afforded him would now in a great measure cease. He, however, continued to show a kind attention to his widow and children as long as it was acceptable: and he took upon him, with a very earnest concern, the office of one of his executors, the importance of which seemed greater than usual to him, from his circumstances having been always such, that he had scarcely any share in the real business of life. His friends of the CLUB were in hopes that Mr. Thrale might have made a liberal provision for him for his life, which, as Mr. Thrale left no son and a very large fortune, it would have been highly to his honor to have done; and, considering Dr. Johnson's age, could not have been of long duration; but he bequeathed him only two hundred pounds, which was the legacy given to each of his executors. I could not but be somewhat diverted by hearing Johnson talk in a pompous manner of his new office, and particularly of the concerns of the brewery, which it was at last resolved should be sold. Lord Lucan tells a very good story, which, if not precisely exact, is certainly characteristic: that when the sale of Thrale's brewery was going forward, Johnson appeared bustling about, with an inkhorn and pen in his button-hole, like an exciseman; and on being asked what he really considered to be the value of the property which was to be disposed of, answered, "We are not here to sell a parcel of boilers and vats, but the potentiality of growing rich beyond the dreams of avarice."¹

On Friday, April 6, he carried me to dine at a club, which, at his desire, had been lately formed at the Queen's Arms in St. Paul's Churchyard. He told Mr. Hoole that he wished to have a *City Club*, and asked him to collect one; but, said he, "Do n't

¹ The brewery was sold to Barclay & Perkins for £135,000. — *Wright*. Baretti, in a MS. note on the "Piozzi Letters," i. 369, says that in the two last years of Thrale's life his brewery brought him £30,000 a year net profit. — *Dr. Hill*.

let them be *patriots*.”¹ The company were to-day very sensible, well-behaved men. I have preserved only two particulars of his conversation. He said he was glad Lord George Gordon² had escaped, rather than that a precedent should be established for hanging a man for *constructive treason*; which, in consistency with his true, manly, constitutional Toryism, he considered would be a dangerous engine of arbitrary power. And upon its being mentioned that an opulent and very indolent Scotch nobleman, who totally resigned the management of his affairs to a man of knowledge and abilities, had claimed some merit by saying, “The next best thing to managing a man’s own affairs well, is being sensible of incapacity, and not attempting it, but having full confidence in one who can do it.” JOHNSON: “Nay, Sir, this is paltry. There is a middle course. Let a man give application, and depend upon it he will soon get above a despicable state of helplessness, and attain the power of acting for himself.”

On Saturday, April 7, I dined with him at Mr. Hoole’s with Governor Bouchier and Captain Orme, both of whom had been long in the East Indies; and being men of good sense and observation, were very entertaining. Johnson defended the oriental regulation of different *castes* of men, which was objected to as totally destructive of the hopes of rising in society by personal merit. He showed that there was a *principle* in it sufficiently plausible by analogy. “We see,” said he, “in metals that there are different species; and so likewise in animals, though one species may not differ very widely from another, as in the species of dogs, — the cur, the spaniel, and the mastiff. The Brahmins are the mastiffs of mankind.”

On Thursday, April 12, I dined with him at a bishop’s, where were Sir Joshua Reynolds, Mr. Berenger, and some more company. He had dined the day before at another bishop’s. I have unfortunately recorded none of his conversation at the bishops where we dined together:³ but I have preserved his ingenious defence of his dining twice abroad in Passion Week; a laxity, in which I am convinced he would not have indulged himself at the time when he wrote his solemn paper in *The*

¹ In the fourth edition of his Dictionary published in 1773, Johnson introduced a second definition of patriot: “It is sometimes used for a factious disturber of the government.” — *Dr. Hill*.

² He was tried on Feb. 5 and 6, 1781.

³ Dr. Hill quotes a passage from Hannah More’s “Memoirs” (i. 210) to show that the bishop was Dr. Shipley of St. Asaph, and the reason for Boswell having left the conversation unrecorded was that he was too drunk to remember it.

Rambler,¹ upon that awful season. It appeared to me, that by being much more in company, and enjoying more luxurious living, he had contracted a keener relish for pleasure, and was consequently less rigorous in his religious rites. This he would not acknowledge; but he reasoned with admirable sophistry, as follows: "Why, Sir, a bishop's calling company together in this week, is, to use the vulgar phrase, not *the thing*. But you must consider laxity is a bad thing; but preciseness is also a bad thing; and your general character may be more hurt by preciseness than by dining with a bishop in Passion Week. There might be a handle for reflection. It might be said, 'He refuses to dine with a bishop in Passion Week, but was three Sundays absent from church.'" BOSWELL: "Very true, Sir. But suppose a man to be uniformly of good conduct, would it not be better that he should refuse to dine with a bishop in this week, and so not encourage a bad practice by his example?" JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, you are to consider whether you might not do more harm by lessening the influence of a bishop's character by your disapprobation in refusing him, than by going to him."

TO MRS. LUCY PORTER, IN LICHFIELD.

DEAR MADAM: Life is full of troubles. I have just lost my dear friend Thrale. I hope he is happy; but I have had a great loss. I am otherwise pretty well. I require some care of myself, but that care is not ineffectual; and when I am out of order, I think it often my own fault.

The spring is now making quick advances. As it is the season in which the whole world is enlivened and invigorated, I hope that both you and I shall partake of its benefits. My desire is to see Lichfield; but being left executor to my friend, I know not whether I can be spared; but I will try, for it is now long since we saw one another, and how little we can promise ourselves many more interviews we are taught by hourly examples of mortality. Let us try to live so as that mortality may not be an evil. Write to me soon, my dearest; your letters will give me great pleasure.

I am sorry that Mr. Porter has not had his box; but by sending it to Mr. Matthias, who very readily undertook its conveyance, I did the best I could, and perhaps before now he has it.

Be so kind as to make my compliments to my friends; I have a great value for their kindness, and hope to enjoy it before summer is past. Do write to me. I am, dearest love, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, April 12, 1781.

On Friday, April 13, being Good Friday, I went to St. Clement's Church with him as usual. There I saw again his old fellow-col-

¹ No. 7.

legian, Edwards, to whom I said, "I think, Sir, Dr. Johnson and you meet only at church."—"Sir," said he, "it is the best place we can meet in, except heaven, and I hope we shall meet there too." Dr. Johnson told me that there was very little communication between Edwards and him, after their unexpected renewal of acquaintance. "But," said he, smiling, "he met me once, and said, 'I am told you have written a very pretty book called *The Rambler*.' I was unwilling that he should leave the world in total darkness, and sent him a set."

Mr. Berenger¹ visited him to-day, and was very pleasing. We talked of an evening society for conversation at a house in town, of which we were all members, but of which Johnson said: "It will never do, Sir. There is nothing served about there, neither tea, nor coffee, nor lemonade, nor anything whatever; and depend upon it, Sir, a man does not love to go to a place from whence he comes out exactly as he went in." I endeavored for argument's sake, to maintain that men of learning and talents might have very good intellectual society, without the aid of any little gratifications of the senses. Berenger joined with Johnson, and said, that without these any meeting would be dull and insipid. He would therefore have all the slight refreshments; nay, it would not be amiss to have some cold meat, and a bottle of wine upon a sideboard. "Sir (said Johnson to me, with an air of triumph), Mr. Berenger knows the world. Every body loves to have good things furnished to them without any trouble. I told Mrs. Thrale once, that as she did not choose to have card-tables, she should have a profusion of the best sweetmeats, and she would be sure to have company enough come to her." I agreed with my illustrious friend upon this subject; for it has pleased God to make man a composite animal, and where there is nothing to refresh the body, the mind will languish.

On Sunday, April 15, being Easter Day, after solemn worship in St. Paul's Church, I found him alone; Dr. Scott, of the Commons, came in. He talked of its having been said, that Addison wrote some of his best papers in *The Spectator*, when warm with wine. Dr. Johnson did not seem willing to admit this. Dr. Scott, as a confirmation of it, related, that Blackstone, a sober man, composed his "Commentaries" with a bottle of port

¹ Richard Berenger, Esq., many years Gentleman of the Horse to his present Majesty, and author of "The History and Art of Horsemanship," 1771. — *Malone*. Hannah More ("Memoirs," i. 175) has described him as "all chivalry, blank verse, and anecdote" (*Croker*); and Mrs. Piozzi ("Anec." 156), as Johnson's "standard of true elegance." — *Dr. Hill*.

before him; and found his mind invigorated and supported in the fatigue of his great work by a temperate use of it.

I told him that, in a company where I had lately been, a desire was expressed to know his authority for the shocking story of Addison's sending an execution into Steele's house. "Sir," said he, "it is generally known; it is known to all who are acquainted with the literary history of that period: it is as well known, as that he wrote 'Cato.'" Mr. Thomas Sheridan once defended Addison to me, by alleging that he did it in order to cover Steele's goods from other creditors, who were going to seize them.

We talked of the difference between the mode of education at Oxford and that in those colleges where instruction is chiefly conveyed by lectures. JOHNSON: "Lectures were once useful; but now, when all can read, and books are so numerous, lectures are unnecessary. If your attention fails, and you miss a part of the lecture, it is lost; you can not go back as you do upon a book." Dr. Scott agreed with him. "But yet," said I, "Dr. Scott, you yourself gave lectures at Oxford."¹ He smiled. "You laughed, then," said I, "at those who came to you."

Dr. Scott left us, and soon afterwards we went to dinner. Our company consisted of Mrs. Williams, Mrs. Desmoulins, Mr. Levett, Mr. Allen, the printer, [Mr. Macbean] and Mrs. Hall, sister of the Reverend Mr. John Wesley, and resembling him, as I thought, both in figure and manner. Johnson produced now, for the first time, some handsome silver salvers, which he told me he had bought fourteen years ago; so it was a great day. I was not a little amused by observing Allen perpetually struggling to talk in the manner of Johnson, like the little frog in the fable blowing himself up to resemble the stately ox.

I mentioned a kind of religious Robin Hood Society, which met every Sunday evening at Coachmakers' Hall, for free debate;² and that the subject for this night was, the text which relates, with other miracles which happened at our SAVIOUR's death: "And the graves were opened, and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many."³ Mrs. Hall said it was a very curious subject, and she should like to hear it discussed. JOHNSON (somewhat warmly): "One would

¹ William Scott (Lord Stowell) was a tutor at University College for ten years, from 1765-1775. — *Dr. Hill*.

² Dr. Hill refers to Prior's "Life of Goldsmith," i. 420 for an amusing story concerning this Society, of which Goldsmith was once a member and, it is said, Burke.

³ Matthew xxvii. 52.

not go to such a place to hear it, — one would not be seen in such a place, — to give countenance to such a meeting." I, however, resolved that I would go. "But, Sir," said she, to Johnson, "I should like to hear *you* discuss it." He seemed reluctant to engage in it. She talked of the resurrection of the human race in general, and maintained that we shall be raised with the same bodies. JOHNSON: "Nay, Madam, we see that it is not to be the same body; for the Scripture uses the illustration of grain sown, and we know that the grain which grows is not the same with what is sown.¹ You cannot suppose that we shall rise with a diseased body; it is enough if there be such a sameness as to distinguish identity of person." She seemed desirous of knowing more, but he left the question in obscurity.

Of apparitions, he observed: "A total disbelief of them is adverse to the opinion of the existence of the soul between death and the last day; the question simply is, whether departed spirits ever have the power of making themselves perceptible to us: a man who thinks he has seen an apparition, can only be convinced himself; his authority will not convince another; and his conviction, if rational, must be founded on being told something which cannot be known but by supernatural means."

He mentioned a thing as not unfrequent, of which I had never heard before, — being *called*, that is, hearing one's name pronounced by the voice of a known person at a great distance, far beyond the possibility of being reached by any sound uttered by human organs. "An acquaintance, on whose veracity I can depend, told me, that walking home one evening to Kilmarnock, he heard himself called from a wood by the voice of a brother who had gone to America; and the next packet brought accounts of that brother's death." Macbean asserted that this inexplicable calling was a thing very well known. Dr. Johnson said, that one day at Oxford, as he was turning the key of his chamber, he heard his mother distinctly call — *Sam*. She was then at Lichfield; but nothing ensued. This phenomenon is, I think, as wonderful as any other mysterious fact, which many people are very slow to believe, or rather, indeed, reject with an obstinate contempt.

Some time after this, upon his making a remark which escaped my attention, Mrs. Williams and Mrs. Hall were both together striving to answer him. He grew angry, and called out loudly, "Nay, when you both speak at once, it is intolerable." But

¹ I. Corinthians xv. 37.

checking himself, and softening, he said, "This one may say, though you *are* ladies." Then he brightened into gay humor, and addressed them in the words of one of the songs in "The Beggar's Opera":

"But two at a time there 's no mortal can bear."¹

"What, Sir," said I, "are you going to turn Captain Macheath?" There was something as pleasantly ludicrous in this scene as can be imagined. The contrast between Macheath, Polly and Lucy — and Dr. Samuel Johnson; blind, peevish Mrs. Williams; and lean, lank, preaching Mrs. Hall, was exquisite.

I stole away to Coachmakers' Hall, and heard the difficult text of which we had talked discussed with great decency, and some intelligence, by several speakers. There was a difference of opinion as to the appearance of ghosts in modern times, though the arguments for it, supported by Mr. Addison's authority,² preponderated. The immediate subject of debate was embarrassed by the *bodies* of the saints having been said to rise, and by the question what became of them afterwards: did they return again to their graves? or were they translated to heaven? Only one evangelist mentions the fact, (St. Matthew, xxvii. 52, 3,) and the commentators whom I have looked at do not make the passage clear. There is, however, no occasion for our understanding it farther, than to know that it was one of the extraordinary manifestations of divine power, which accompanied the most important event that ever happened.

On Friday, April 20, I spent with him one of the happiest days that I remember to have enjoyed in the whole course of my life. Mrs. Garrick, whose grief for the loss of her husband was, I believe, as sincere as wounded affection and admiration could produce, had this day, for the first time since his death, a select party of his friends to dine with her.³ The company was Miss Hannah More, who lived with her and whom she called her chaplain, Mrs. Boscawen, Mrs. Elizabeth Carter, Sir Joshua Reynolds, Dr. Burney, Dr. Johnson, and myself. We found ourselves very elegantly entertained at her house in the Adelphi, where I have passed many a pleasing hour with him "who gladdened

¹ "One wife is too much for most husbands to hear;

But two at a time there 's no mortal can bear." Act iii. sc. 4.

² *Spectator*, No. 110.

³ Garrick had been dead a little more than two years: since Jan. 20, 1779.

life."¹ She looked well, talked of her husband with complacency, and, while she cast her eyes on his portrait which hung over the chimney-piece, said, that "death was now the most agreeable object to her." The very semblance of David Garrick was cheering. Mr. Beauclerk, with happy propriety, inscribed under that fine portrait of him, which by Lady Diana's kindness is now the property of my friend Mr. Langton, the following passage from his beloved Shakespeare :

" . . . A merrier man,
Within the limit of becoming mirth,
I never spent an hour's talk withal:
His eye begets occasion for his wit;
For every object that the one doth catch
The other turns to a mirth-moving jest;
Which his fair tongue, conceit's expositor,
Delivers in such apt and gracious words,
That aged years play truant at his tales
And younger hearings are quite ravished;
So sweet and voluble is his discourse."

"Love's Labour's Lost," ii. 1.

We were all in fine spirits; and I whispered to Mrs. Boscawen, "I believe this is as much as can be made of life." In addition to a splendid entertainment, we were regaled with Lichfield ale, which had a peculiar appropriate value. Sir Joshua, and Dr. Burney, and I, drank cordially of it to Dr. Johnson's health; and though he would not join us, he as cordially answered, "Gentlemen, I wish you all as well as you do me."

The general effect of this day dwells upon my mind in fond remembrance; but I do not find much conversation recorded. What I have preserved shall be faithfully given.

One of the company mentioned Mr. Thomas Hollis, the strenuous Whig, who used to send over Europe presents of democratical books with their boards stamped with daggers and caps of Liberty. Mrs. Carter said, "He was a bad man: he used to talk uncharitably." JOHNSON: "Poh! poh! Madam; who is the worse for being talked of uncharitably? Besides, he was a dull poor creature as ever lived: and I believe he would not have done harm to a man whom he knew to be of very opposite principles to his own. I remember once at the Society of Arts, when an advertisement was to be drawn up, he pointed me out as the

¹ Boswell quotes from Johnson's eulogium on Garrick in his "Life of Edmund Smith." — *Dr. Hill*.

man who could do it best. This, you will observe, was kindness to me. I however slipped away and escaped it."

Mrs. Carter having said of the same person, "I doubt he was an atheist." JOHNSON: "I do n't know that. He might perhaps have become one, if he had had time to ripen. (Smiling.) He might have *exuberated* into an atheist."

Sir Joshua Reynolds praised Mudge's "Sermons." JOHNSON: "Mudge's 'Sermons' are good, but not practical. He grasps more sense than he can hold; he takes more corn than he can make into meal; he opens a wide prospect, but it is so distant, it is indistinct. I love Blair's 'Sermons.' Though the dog is a Scotchman, and a Presbyterian, and every thing he should not be, I was the first to praise them. Such was my candor." (Smiling.) Mrs. BOSCAWEN: "Such his great merit, to get the better of all your prejudices." JOHNSON: "Why, Madam, let us compound the matter; let us ascribe it to my candor, and his merit."

In the evening we had a large company in the drawing-room; several ladies, the Bishop of Killaloe, Dr. Percy, Mr. Chamberlayne of the Treasury, &c. &c. Somebody said, the life of a mere literary man could not be very entertaining. JOHNSON: "But it certainly may. This is a remark which has been made, and repeated, without justice; why should the life of a literary man be less entertaining than the life of any other man? Are there not as interesting varieties in such a life? As a *literary life* it may be very entertaining." BOSWELL: "But it must be better surely, when it is diversified with a little active variety—such as his having gone to Jamaica; — or his having gone to the Hebrides." Johnson was not displeased at this.

Talking of a very respectable author, he told us a curious circumstance in his life, which was, that he had married a printer's devil. REYNOLDS: "A printer's devil, Sir! Why, I thought a printer's devil was a creature with a black face and in rags." JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir. But I suppose he had her face washed, and put clean clothes on her." (Then looking very serious, and very earnest.) "And she did not disgrace him; the woman had a bottom of good sense." The word *bottom* thus introduced was so ludicrous when contrasted with his gravity, that most of us could not forbear tittering and laughing; though I recollect that the Bishop of Killaloe kept his countenance with perfect steadiness, while Miss Hannah More slyly hid her face behind a lady's back who sat on the same settee with her. His pride could not bear that any expression of his should excite ridicule, when he

did not intend it; he therefore resolved to assume and exercise despotic power, glanced sternly around, and called out in a strong tone, "Where 's the merriment?" Then collecting himself, and looking awful, to make us feel how he could impose restraint, and as it were searching his mind for a still more ludicrous word, he slowly pronounced, "I say the *woman* was *fundamentally* sensible;" as if he had said, hear this now, and laugh if you dare. We all sat composed as at a funeral.

He and I walked away together; we stopped a little while by the rails of the Adelphi, looking on the Thames, and I said to him with some emotion, that I was now thinking of two friends we had lost, who once lived in the buildings behind us, Beauclerk and Garrick. "Ay, Sir," said he, tenderly, "and two such friends as can not be supplied."

For some time after this day I did not see him very often, and of the conversation which I did enjoy I am sorry to find I have preserved but little. I was at this time engaged in a variety of other matters, which required exertion and assiduity, and necessarily occupied almost all my time.

One day, having spoken very freely of those who were then in power, he said to me, "Between ourselves, Sir, I do not like to give Opposition the satisfaction of knowing how much I disapprove of the Ministry." And when I mentioned that Mr. Burke had boasted how quiet the nation was in George the Second's reign, when Whigs were in power, compared with the present reign, when Tories governed: "Why, Sir," said he, "you are to consider that Tories having more reverence for government, will not oppose with the same violence as Whigs, who being unrestrained by that principle, will oppose by any means."

This month he lost not only Mr. Thrale, but another friend, Mr. William Strahan junior, printer, the eldest son of his old and constant friend, Printer to his Majesty.

TO MRS. STRAHAN.

DEAR MADAM: The grief which I feel for the loss of a very kind friend, is sufficient to make me know how much you suffer by the death of an amiable son; a man, of whom I think it may be truly said, that no one knew him who does not lament him. I look upon myself as having a friend, another friend, taken from me.

Comfort, dear Madam, I would give you, if I could; but I know how little the forms of consolation can avail. Let me, however, counsel you not to waste your health in unprofitable sorrow, but go to Bath, and endeavour

to prolong your own life; but when we have all done all that we can, one friend must in time lose the other. I am, dear Madam, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

APRIL 23, 1781.

On Tuesday, May 8, I had the pleasure of again dining with him and Mr. Wilkes, at Mr. Dilly's. No *negotiation* was now required to bring them together; for Johnson was so well satisfied with the former interview, that he was very glad to meet Wilkes again, who was this day seated between Dr. Beattie and Dr. Johnson (between *Truth* and *Reason*, as General Paoli said, when I told him of it). WILKES: "I have been thinking, Dr. Johnson, that there should be a bill brought into Parliament that the controverted elections for Scotland should be tried in that country, at their own abbey of Holyrood House, and not here; for the consequence of trying them here is, that we have an inundation of Scotchmen who come up and never go back again. Now here is Boswell, who is come upon the election for his own county, which will not last a fortnight." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, I see no reason why they should be tried at all; for, you know, one Scotchman is as good as another." WILKES: "Pray, Boswell, how much may be got in a year by an advocate at the Scotch bar?" BOSWELL: "I believe two thousand pounds." WILKES: "How can it be possible to spend that money in Scotland?" JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, the money may be spent in England; but there is a harder question. If one man in Scotland gets possession of two thousand pounds, what remains for all the rest of the nation?" WILKES: "You know, in the last war, the immense booty which Thurot carried off by the complete plunder of seven Scotch isles; he re-embarked with *three and sixpence*." ¹ Here again Johnson and Wilkes joined in extravagant sportive raillery upon the supposed poverty of Scotland which Dr. Beattie and I did not think it worth our while to dispute.

The subject of quotation being introduced, Mr. Wilkes censured it as pedantry. JOHNSON: "No, Sir, it is a good thing; there is a community of mind in it. Classical quotation is the *parole* of literary men all over the world." WILKES: "Upon the Continent they all quote the Vulgate Bible. Shakespeare is

¹Thurot's squadron was the only one of those destined for the French invasion of England in 1759-60 which had succeeded in escaping our Channel fleet. He was eventually killed and his ships taken in an engagement off Carrickfergus, which he had just plundered.

chiefly quoted here; and we quote also Pope, Prior, Butler, Waller, and sometimes Cowley.

We talked of letter-writing. JOHNSON: "It is now become so much the fashion to publish letters, that in order to avoid it, I put as little into mine as I can." BOSWELL: "Do what you will, Sir, you cannot avoid it. Should you even write as ill as you can, your letters would be published as curiosities:

" 'Behold a miracle! instead of wit,
See two dull lines with Stanhope's pencil writ.' " 1

He gave us an entertaining account of *Bet Flint*, a woman of the town, who, with some eccentric talents and much effrontery, forced herself upon his acquaintance. "Bet," said he, "wrote her own Life in verse,² which she brought to me, wishing that I would furnish her with a preface to it. (Laughing.) I used to say of her, that she was generally slut and drunkard; occasionally whore and thief. She had, however, genteel lodgings, a spinnet on which she played, and a boy that walked before her chair. Poor Bet was taken up on a charge of stealing a counterpane, and tried at the Old Bailey. Chief Justice [Willes], who loved a wench, summed up favorably, and she was acquitted.³ After which, Bet said, with a gay and satisfied air, 'Now that the counterpane is *my own*, I shall make a petticoat of it.'"

Talking of oratory, Mr. Wilkes described it as accompanied with all the charms of poetical expression. JOHNSON: "No, Sir; oratory is the power of beating down your adversary's arguments, and putting better in their place." WILKES: "But this does not move the passions." JOHNSON: "He must be a weak man, who is to be so moved." WILKES (naming a celebrated orator):

¹ "Accept a miracle," &c. Young told Spence ("Anecdotes," 377) that the lines were his own, and written with Lord Chesterfield's diamond on a drinking-glass at a club called "The World," held at the King's Head in Pall Mall.

² Johnson, whose memory was wonderfully retentive, remembered the first four lines of this curious production, which have been communicated to me by a young lady of his acquaintance:

"When first I drew my vital breath,
A little minikin I came upon earth;
And then I came from a dark abode,
Into this gay and gaudy world." — B.

³ The account which Johnson had received on this occasion, was not quite accurate. BET was tried at the Old Bailey in September, 1758, not by the Chief Justice here alluded to (who however tried another cause on the same day), but before Sir William Moreton, Recorder; and she was acquitted, not in consequence of any *favorable summing up* of the judge, but because the prosecutrix, Mary Walthow, could not prove that the goods charged to have been stolen (a counterpane, a silver spoon, two napkins, &c.) were her property. — *Malone*.

"Amidst all the brilliancy of [Burke's] imagination, and the exuberance of his wit, there is a strange want of *taste*. It was observed of Apelles's Venus, that her flesh seemed as if she had been nourished by roses: his oratory would sometimes make one suspect that he eats potatoes and drinks whiskey."

Mr. Wilkes observed, how tenacious we are of forms in this country; and gave as an instance, the vote of the House of Commons for remitting money to pay the army in America *in Portugal pieces*, when in reality, the remittance is made not in Portugal money, but in our specie. JOHNSON: "Is there not a law, Sir, against exporting the current coin of the realm?" WILKES: "Yes, Sir; but might not the House of Commons, in case of real evident necessity, order our own current coin to be sent into our own colonies?" Here Johnson, with that quickness of recollection which distinguished him so eminently, gave the *Middlesex Patriot* an admirable retort upon his own ground. "Sure, Sir, you do n't think a *resolution of the House of Commons* equal to the *law of the land*." WILKES (at once perceiving the application): "God forbid, Sir." To hear what had been treated with such violence in "The False Alarm," now turned into pleasant repartee, was extremely agreeable. Johnson went on: "Locke observes well, that a prohibition to export the current coin is impolitic; for when the balance of trade happens to be against a state, the current coin *must* be exported."

Mr. Beauclerk's great library¹ was this season sold in London by auction. Mr. Wilkes said, he wondered to find in it such a numerous collection of sermons: seeming to think it strange that a gentleman of Mr. Beauclerk's character in the gay world, should have chosen to have many compositions of that kind. JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, you are to consider, that sermons make a considerable branch of English literature; so that a library must be very imperfect if it has not a numerous collection of sermons;² and

¹ It contained upwards of 30,000 volumes; and the sale extended over fifty days. It brought £5000.

² Mr. Wilkes probably did not know that there is an English sermon the most comprehensive and lively account of that entertaining faculty, for which he himself was so much admired. It is in Barrow's first volume, and fourteenth sermon, "*Against foolish Talking and Jestings*." My old acquaintance, the late Corbryn Morris, in his ingenious "Essay on Wit, Humor, and Ridicule," calls it "*a profuse description of wit*:" but I do not see how it could be curtailed without leaving out some good circumstance of discrimination. As it is not generally known, and may perhaps dispose some to read sermons, from which they may receive real advantage, while looking only for entertainment, I shall here subjoin it. "But first (says the learned preacher) it may be demanded, what the thing we speak of is? Or what this facetiousness (or *wit*, as he calls it before) doth import? To which questions I might reply, as Democritus did to him that asked the definition of a

in all collections, Sir, the desire of augmenting them grows stronger in proportion to the advance in acquisition; as motion is accelerated by the continuance of the *impetus*. Besides, Sir (looking at Mr. Wilkes with a placid but significant smile), a man may collect sermons with intention of making himself better by them. I hope Mr. Beauclerk intended, that some time or other that should be the case with him."

Mr. Wilkes said to me, loud enough for Dr. Johnson to hear, "Dr. Johnson should make me a present of his 'Lives of the Poets' as I am a poor patriot, who cannot afford to buy them." Johnson seemed to take no notice of this hint; but in a little while, he called to Mr. Dilly, "Pray, Sir, be so good as to send a set of my 'Lives' to Mr. Wilkes, with my compliments." This was accordingly done; and Mr. Wilkes paid Dr. Johnson a visit, was courteously received, and sat with him a long time.

man, "T is that which we all see and know." Any one better apprehends what it is by acquaintance, than I can inform him by description. It is, indeed, a thing so versatile and multiform, appearing in so many shapes, so many postures, so many garbs, so variously apprehended by several eyes and judgments, that it seemeth no less hard to settle a clear and certain notion thereof, than to make a portrait of Proteus, or to define the figure of the fleeting air. Sometimes it lieth in pat allusion to a known story, or in seasonable application of a trivial saying, or in forging an apposite tale; sometimes it playeth in words and phrases, taking advantage from the ambiguity of their sense, or the affinity of their sound: sometimes it is wrapped in a dress of humorous expression: sometimes it lurketh under an odd similitude: sometimes it is lodged in a sly question, in a smart answer, in a quirkish reason, in a shrewd intimation, in cunningly diverting or cleverly retorting an objection: sometimes it is couched in a bold scheme of speech, in a tart irony, in a lusty hyperbole, in a startling metaphor, in a plausible reconciling of contradictions, or in acute nonsense: sometimes a scenical representation of persons or things, a counterfeit speech, a mimical look or gesture, passeth for it: sometimes an affected simplicity, sometimes a presumptuous bluntness giveth it being: sometimes it riseth only from a lucky hitting upon what is strange: sometimes from a crafty wresting obvious matter to the purpose. Often it consisteth in one knows not what, and springeth up one can hardly tell how. Its ways are unaccountable, and inexplicable; being answerable to the numberless roivings of fancy, and windings of language. It is, in short, a manner of speaking out of the simple and plain way (such as reason teacheth and proveth things by), which by a pretty surprising uncouthness in conceit or expression, doth affect and amuse the fancy, stirring in it some wonder, and breeding some delight thereto. It raiseth admiration as signifying a nimble sagacity of apprehension, a special felicity of invention, a vivacity of spirit, and reach of wit more than vulgar: it seeming to argue a rare quickness of parts, that one can fetch in remote conceits applicable; a notable skill, that he can dexterously accommodate them to the purpose before him; together with a lively briskness of humor, not apt to damp those sportful flashes of imagination. (Whence in Aristotle such persons are termed *εὐδέξιοι*, dexterous men, and *εὐτροποι*, men of facile or versatile manners, who can easily turn themselves to all things, or turn all things to themselves.) It also procureth delight, by gratifying curiosity with its rareness, as semblance of difficulty (as monsters, not for their beauty, but their rarity: as juggling tricks, not for their use, but their abstruseness, are beheld with pleasure): by diverting the mind from its road of serious thoughts; by instilling gayety and airiness of spirit; by provoking to such dispositions of spirit in way of emulation or complaisance: and by seasoning matters, otherwise distasteful or insipid, with an unusual and thence grateful tang." — B.

The company gradually dropped away. Mr. Dilly himself was called down-stairs upon business; I left the room for some time; when I returned, I was struck with observing Dr. Samuel Johnson and John Wilkes, Esq., literally *tête-à-tête*; for they were reclined upon their chairs, with their heads leaning almost close to each other, and talking earnestly, in a kind of confidential whisper, of the personal quarrel between George the Second and the King of Prussia.¹ Such a scene of perfectly easy sociality between two such opponents in the war of political controversy, as that which I now beheld, would have been an excellent subject for a picture. It presented to my mind the happy days which are foretold in Scripture, when the lion shall lie down with the kid.²

After this day there was another pretty long interval, during which Dr. Johnson and I did not meet. When I mentioned it to him with regret, he was pleased to say, "Then, Sir, let us live double."

About this time it was much the fashion for several ladies to have evening assemblies, where the fair sex might participate in conversation with literary and ingenious men, animated by a desire to please. These societies were denominated *Blue-stockng Clubs*, the origin of which title being little known, it may be worth while to relate it. One of the most eminent members of those societies, when they first commenced, was Mr. Stillingfleet,³ whose dress was remarkably grave, and in particular it was observed, that he wore blue stockings. Such was the excellence of his conversation, that his absence was felt as so great a loss, that it used to be said, "We can do nothing without the *blue stockngs*;" and thus by degrees the title was established. Miss Hannah More has admirably described a *Blue-stockng Club*, in her "Bas Bleu," a poem in which many of the persons who were most conspicuous there are mentioned.

Johnson was prevailed with to come sometimes into these circles, and did not think himself too grave even for the lively Miss Monckton (now Countess of Cork,) who used to have the finest *bit of blue* at the house of her mother, Lady Galway. Her vivacity enchanted the Sage, and they used to talk together with all

¹ The quarrel arose from the destruction by George II. of George I.'s will. The King of Prussia, Frederick the Great, was George I.'s grandson, and thought his mother had been remembered in the will. — *Dr. Hill*.

² When I mentioned this to the Bishop of Killaloe, "With the *goat*," said his Lordship. Such, however, was the engaging politeness and pleasantry of Mr. Wilkes, and such the social good humor of the Bishop, that when they dined together at Mr. Dilly's where I also was, they were mutually agreeable. — B.

³ Mr. Benjamin Stillingfleet, author of tracts relating to natural history, &c. — B.

imaginable ease. A singular instance happened one evening, when she insisted that some of Sterne's writings were very pathetic. Johnson bluntly denied it. "I am sure," said she, "they have affected *me*." — "Why," said Johnson, smiling, and rolling himself about, "that is, because, dearest, you're a dunce." When she some time afterwards mentioned this to him, he said with equal truth and politeness, "Madam, if I had thought so, I certainly should not have said it."

Another evening Johnson's kind indulgence towards me had a pretty difficult trial. I had dined at the Duke of Montrose's with a very agreeable party, and his Grace, according to his usual custom, had circulated the bottle very freely. Lord Graham and I went together to Miss Monckton's, where I certainly was in extraordinary spirits, and above all fear or awe. In the midst of a great number of persons of the first rank, amongst whom I recollect with confusion a noble lady of the most stately decorum, I placed myself next to Johnson, and thinking myself now fully his match, talked to him in a loud and boisterous manner, desirous to let the company know how I could contend with *Ajax*. I particularly remember pressing him upon the value of the pleasures of the imagination, and as an illustration of my argument, asking him, "What, Sir, supposing I were to fancy that the ——— (naming the most charming duchess in his Majesty's dominions) were in love with me, should I not be very happy?" My friend with much address evaded my interrogatories, and kept me as quiet as possible; but it may easily be conceived how he must have felt.¹ However, when a few days afterwards I waited upon

¹ Next day I endeavored to give what had happened the most ingenious turn I could, by the following verses:

TO THE HONORABLE MISS MONCKTON.

Not that with th' excellent Montrose
I had the happiness to dine;
Not that I late from table rose,
From Graham's wit, from generous wine.

It was not these alone which led
On sacred manners to encroach;
And made me feel what most I dread,
JOHNSON'S just frown, and self-reproach.

But when I enter'd, not abash'd,
From your bright eyes were shot such rays,
At once intoxication flash'd,
And all my frame was in a blaze!

But not a brilliant blaze I own,
Of the dull smoke I'm yet asham'd;

him and made an apology, he behaved with the most friendly gentleness. While I remained in London this year, Johnson and I dined together at several places. I recollect a placid day at Dr. Butler's, who had now removed from Derby to Lower Grosvenor Street, London; but of his conversation on that and other occasions during this period, I neglected to keep any regular record, and shall therefore insert here some miscellaneous articles which I find in my Johnsonian notes.

His disorderly habits when "making provision for the day that was passing over him," appear from the following anecdote communicated to me by Mr. John Nichols: "In the year 1763, a young bookseller, who was an apprentice to Mr. Whiston, waited on him with a subscription to his 'Shakspeare': and observing that the Doctor made no entry in any book of the subscriber's name, ventured diffidently to ask, whether he would please to have the gentleman's address, that it might be properly inserted in the printed list of subscribers. '*I shall print no list of subscribers,*' said Johnson, with great abruptness, but almost immediately recollecting himself, added, very complacently, 'Sir, I have two very cogent reasons for not printing any list of subscribers; one, that I have lost all the names, — the other, that I have spent all the money.'

Johnson could not brook appearing to be worsted in argument, even when he had taken the wrong side, to show the force and dexterity of his talents. When, therefore, he perceived that his opponent gained ground, he had recourse to some sudden mode of robust sophistry. Once when I was pressing upon him with visible advantage, he stopped me thus: "My dear Boswell, let's have no more of this; you'll make nothing of it. I'd rather have you whistle a Scotch tune."

Care, however, must be taken to distinguish between Johnson when he "talked for victory," and Johnson when he had no desire but to inform and illustrate. "One of Johnson's principal talents (says an eminent friend of his [Gerard Hamilton]), was shown in maintaining the wrong side of an argument, and in a

I was a dreary ruin grown,
And not enlighten'd though inflam'd.

Victim at once to wine and love,
I hope, MARIA, you'll forgive;
While I invoke the powers above,
That henceforth I may wiser live.

The lady was generously forgiving, returned me an obliging answer, and I thus obtained an *Act of Oblivion*, and took care never to offend again. — B.

splendid perversion of the truth. If you could contrive to have his fair opinion on a subject, and without any bias from personal prejudice, or from a wish to be victorious in argument, it was wisdom itself, not only convincing, but overpowering."

He had, however, all his life habituated himself to consider conversation as a trial of intellectual vigor and skill; and to this, I think, we may venture to ascribe that unexampled richness and brilliancy which appeared in his own. As a proof at once of his eagerness for colloquial distinction, and his high notion of this eminent friend, he once addressed him thus: "———, we now have been several hours together; and you have said but one thing for which I envied you."

He disliked much all speculative desponding considerations, which tended to discourage men from diligence and exertion. He was in this like Dr. Shaw,¹ the great traveller, who, Mr. Daines Barrington told me, used to say, "I hate a *cui bono* man." Upon being asked by a friend² what he should think of a man who was apt to say *non est tanti*; "That he's a stupid fellow, Sir," answered Johnson: "What would these *tanti* men be doing the while?" When I, in a low-spirited fit, was talking to him with indifference of the pursuits which generally engage us in a course of action, and inquiring a *reason* for taking so much trouble: "Sir," said he, in an animated tone, "it is driving on the system of life."

He told me, that he was glad that I had, by General Oglethorpe's means, become acquainted with Dr. Shebbeare. Indeed that gentleman, whatever objections were made to him, had knowledge and abilities much above the class of ordinary writers, and deserves to be remembered as a respectable name in literature, were it only for his admirable "Letters on the English Nation," under the name of Battista Angeloni, a Jesuit."³

Johnson and Shebbeare,⁴ were frequently named together, as having in former reigns had no predilection for the family of Hanover. The author of the celebrated "Heroic Epistle to Sir William Chambers," introduces them in one line, in a list of those "who tasted the sweets of his present Majesty's reign."

¹ Thomas Shaw, D.D., author of "Travels to Barbary and the Levant."

² Probably Boswell himself.

³ "Letters on the English Nation," by Battista Angeloni, a Jesuit, who resided many years in London. Translated from the original Italian by the author of "The Marriage Act." A novel. 2 vols. 1755. Shebbeare published also six "Letters to the People of England," the last of which brought him to the pillory. — *Dr. Hill*.

⁴ I recollect a ludicrous paragraph in the newspapers that the King had pensioned both a *He* bear and a *She*-bear. — B.

Such was Johnson's candid relish of the merit of that satire, that he allowed Dr. Goldsmith, as he told me, to read it to him from beginning to end, and did not refuse his praise to its execution.

Goldsmith could sometimes take adventurous liberties with him, and escape unpunished. Beauclerk told me that when Goldsmith talked of a project for having a third theatre in London solely for the exhibition of new plays, in order to deliver authors from the supposed tyranny of managers, Johnson treated it slightly, upon which Goldsmith said, "Ay, ay, this may be nothing to you, who can now shelter yourself behind the corner of a pension;" and that Johnson bore this with good-humor.

Johnson praised the Earl of Carlisle's poems, which his Lordship had published with his name, as not disdaining to be a candidate for literary fame.¹ My friend was of opinion, that when a man of rank appeared in that character, he deserved to have his merit handsomely allowed.² In this I think he was more liberal than Mr. William Whitehead, in his "Elegy to Lord Villiers," in which, under the pretext of "superior toils demanding all their care," he discovers a jealousy of the great paying their court to the Muses:

¹ Frederick, fifth Earl of Carlisle, the kinsman and guardian to whom Byron dedicated the second edition of "Hours of Idleness," and whom he satirized in "English Bards and Scotch Reviewers," for which however he subsequently made amends in the third canto of "Childe Harold."

² Men of rank and fortune however should be pretty well assured of having a real claim to the approbation of the public, as writers, before they venture to stand forth. Dryden in his preface to "All for Love," thus expresses himself: "Men of pleasant conversation (at least esteemed so) and endued with a trifling kind of fancy, perhaps helped out by a smattering of Latin, are ambitious to distinguish themselves from the herd of gentlemen, by their poetry;

'Rarus enim fermè sensus communis in illa
Fortuna.'

[JUVENAL. "Sat." viii. 73.]

And is not this a wretched affectation, not to be contented with what fortune has done for them, and sit down quietly with their estates, but they must call their wits in question, and needlessly expose their nakedness to public view? Not considering that they are not to expect the same approbation from sober men which they have found from their flatterers after the third bottle: If a little glittering in discourse has passed them on us for witty men, where was the necessity of undecieving the world? Would a man, who has an ill title to an estate, but yet is in possession of it, would he bring it out of his own accord to be tried at Westminster? We who write, if we want the talents, yet have the excuse that we do it for a poor subsistence; but what can be urged in their defence, who, not having the vocation of poverty to scribble, out of mere wantonness take pains to make themselves ridiculous? Horace was certainly in the right when he said, 'That no man is satisfied with his own condition.' A poet is not pleased, because he is not rich; and the rich are discontented because the poets will not admit them of their number,"

—B.

“ . . . to the chosen few
 Who dare excel, thy fost'ring aid afford;
 Their arts, their magic powers, with honors due
 Exalt; but be thyself what they record.”

Johnson had called twice on the Bishop of Killaloe before his Lordship set out for Ireland, having missed him the first time. He said: “It would have hung heavy on my heart if I had not seen him. No man ever paid more attention to another than he has done to me; ¹ and I have neglected him, not wilfully, but from being otherwise occupied. Always, Sir, set a high value on spontaneous kindness. He whose inclination prompts him to cultivate your friendship of his own accord, will love you more than one whom you have been at pains to attach to you.”

Johnson told me, that he was once much pleased to find that a carpenter, who lived near him, was very ready to show him some things in his business which he wished to see: “It was paying,” said he, “respect to literature.”

I asked him, if he was not dissatisfied with having so small a share of wealth, and none of those distinctions in the state which are the objects of ambition. He had only a pension of three hundred a year. Why was he not in such circumstances as to keep his coach? Why had he not some considerable office? JOHNSON: “Sir, I have never complained of the world; nor do I think that I have reason to complain. It is rather to be wondered at that I have so much. My pension is more out of the usual course of things than any instance that I have known. Here, Sir, was a man avowedly no friend to Government at the time, who got a pension without asking for it. I never courted the great; they sent for me; but I think they now give me up. They are satisfied: they have seen enough of me.” Upon my observing that I could not believe this, for they must certainly be highly

¹ This gave me very great pleasure, for there had been once a pretty smart altercation between Dr. Barnard and him, upon a question, whether a man could improve himself after the age of forty-five; when Johnson in a hasty humor, expressed himself in a manner not quite civil. Dr. Barnard made it the subject of a copy of pleasant verses, in which he supposed himself to learn different perfections from different men. They concluded with delicate irony:

“ Johnson shall teach me how to place
 In fairest light each borrow'd grace;
 From him I 'll learn to write:
 Copy his clear familiar style,
 And by the roughness of his file
 Grow, like *himself*, *polite*.”

I know not whether Johnson ever saw the poem, but I had occasion to find that as Dr. Barnard and he knew each other better, their mutual regard increased. — B.

pleased by his conversation : conscious of his own superiority, he answered, "No, Sir ; great lords and great ladies do n't love to have their mouths stopped." This was very expressive of the effect which the force of his understanding and brilliancy of his fancy could not but produce ; and, to be sure, they must have found themselves strangely diminished in his company. When I warmly declared how happy I was at all times to hear him : "Yes, Sir," said he ; "but if you were Lord Chancellor, it would not be so : you would then consider your own dignity."

There was much truth and knowledge of human nature in this remark. But certainly one should think, that in whatever elevated state of life a man who *knew* the value of the conversation of Johnson might be placed, though he might prudently avoid a situation in which he might appear lessened by comparison ; yet he would frequently gratify himself in private with the participation of the rich intellectual entertainment which Johnson could furnish. Strange, however, is it, to consider how few of the great sought his society ; so that if one were disposed to take occasion for satire on that account, very conspicuous objects present themselves. His noble friend, Lord Elibank, well observed, that if a great man procured an interview with Johnson, and did not wish to see him more, it showed a mere idle curiosity, and a wretched want of relish for extraordinary powers of mind. Mrs. Thrale justly and wittily accounted for such conduct by saying, that Johnson's conversation was by much too strong for a person accustomed to obsequiousness and flattery ; it was *mustard in a young child's mouth* !

One day, when I told him that I was a zealous Tory, but not enough "according to knowledge," and should be obliged to him for "a reason," he was so candid, and expressed himself so well, that I begged of him to repeat what he had said, and I wrote down as follows :

OF TORY AND WHIG.

A wise Tory and a wise Whig, I believe, will agree. Their principles are the same, though their modes of thinking are different. A high Tory makes government unintelligible : it is lost in the clouds. A violent Whig makes it impracticable : he is for allowing so much liberty to every man, that there is not power enough to govern any man. The prejudice of the Tory is for establishment ; the prejudice of the Whig is for innovation. A Tory does not wish to give more real power to government ; but that government should have more reverence. Then they differ as to the Church. The Tory is not for giving more legal power to the clergy, but wishes they should have a considerable influence, founded on the opinion of mankind ; the Whig is for limiting and watching them with a narrow jealousy.

TO MR. PERKINS.

SIR: However often I have seen you, I have hitherto forgotten the note, but I have now sent it: with my good wishes for the prosperity of you and your partner,¹ of whom, from our short conversation, I could not judge otherwise than favourably. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JUNE 2, 1781.

On Saturday, June 2, I set out for Scotland, and had promised to pay a visit in my way, as I sometimes did, at Southill, in Bedfordshire, at the hospitable mansion of 'Squire Dilly, the elder brother of my worthy friends, the booksellers in the Poultry. Dr. Johnson agreed to be of the party this year, with Mr. Charles Dilly and me, and to go and see Lord Bute's seat at Luton Hoe. He talked little to us in the carriage, being chiefly occupied in reading Dr. Watson's² second volume of "Chemical Essays," which he liked very well, and his own "Prince of Abyssinia," on which he seemed to be intensely fixed; having told us, that he had not looked at it since it was first published. I happened to take it out of my pocket this day, and he seized upon it with avidity. He pointed out to me the following remarkable passage:

"By what means," said the prince, "are the Europeans thus powerful? or why, since they can so easily visit Asia and Africa for trade or conquest, cannot the Asiatics and Africans invade their coasts, plant colonies in their ports, and give laws to their natural princes? The same wind that carried them back would bring us thither."—"They are more powerful, Sir, than we," answered Imlac, "because they are wiser. Knowledge will always predominate over ignorance, as man governs the other animals. But why their knowledge is more than ours, I know not what reason can be given, but the unsearchable will of the Supreme Being."

He said, "This, Sir, no man can explain otherwise."

We stopped at Welwyn, where I wished much to see, in company with Johnson, the residence of the author of "Night Thoughts," which was then possessed by his son, Mr. Young.

¹ Mr. Barclay, a descendant of Robert Barclay, of Ury, the celebrated apologist of the people called Quakers, and remarkable for maintaining the principles of his venerable progenitor, with as much of the elegance of modern manners as is consistent with primitive simplicity. — B.

² Now Bishop of Llandaff, one of the *poorest* bishoprics in this Kingdom. His Lordship has written with much zeal to show the propriety of *equalizing* the revenues of bishops. He has informed us that he has burnt all his chemical papers. The friends of our excellent constitution, now assailed on every side by innovators and levellers, would have less regretted the suppression of some of his Lordship's other writings. — B.

Here some address was requisite, for I was not acquainted with Mr. Young, and had I proposed to Dr. Johnson that we should send to him, he would have checked my wish, and perhaps been offended. I therefore concerted with Mr. Dilly, that I should steal away from Dr. Johnson and him, and try what reception I could procure from Mr. Young; if unfavorable, nothing was to be said; but if agreeable, I should return and notify it to them. I hastened to Mr. Young's, found he was at home, sent in word that a gentleman desired to wait upon him, and was shown into a parlor, where he and a young lady, his daughter, were sitting. He appeared to be a plain, civil country gentleman; and when I begged pardon for presuming to trouble him, but that I wished much to see his place, if he would give me leave, he behaved very courteously, and answered, "By all means, Sir, we are just going to drink tea; will you sit down?" I thanked him, but said that Dr. Johnson had come with me from London, and I must return to the inn to drink tea with him; that my name was Boswell, I had travelled with him in the Hebrides. "Sir," said he, "I should think it a great honor to see Dr. Johnson here. Will you allow me to send for him?" Availing myself of this opening, I said that "I would go myself and bring him, when he had drunk tea; he knew nothing of my calling here." Having been thus successful, I hastened back to the inn, and informed Dr. Johnson that, "Mr. Young, son of Dr. Young, the author of 'Night Thoughts,' whom I had just left, desired to have the honor of seeing him at the house where his father lived." Dr. Johnson luckily made no inquiry how this invitation had arisen but agreed to go, and when we entered Mr. Young's parlor, he addressed him with a very polite bow, "Sir, I had a curiosity to come and see this place. I had the honor to know that great man, your father." We went into the garden, where we found a gravel walk, on each side of which was a row of trees, planted by Dr. Young, which formed a handsome Gothic arch. Dr. Johnson called it a fine grove. I beheld it with reverence.

We sat some time in the summer-house, on the outside wall of which was inscribed, "*Ambulantes in horto audiebant vocem Dei*;"¹ and, in reference to a brook by which it is situated, "*Vivendi recte qui prorogat horam*,"² &c. I said to Mr. Young, that I had been told his father was cheerful. "Sir," said he, "he was too well-bred a man not to be cheerful in company;

¹ Genesis iii. 8.

² Horace: "Epist." i. 2. 41.

but he was gloomy when alone. He never was cheerful after my mother's death, and he had met with many disappointments." Dr. Johnson observed to me afterward: "That this was no favorable account of Dr. Young; for it is not becoming in a man to have so little acquiescence in the ways of Providence, as to be gloomy because he has not obtained as much perferment as he expected; nor to continue gloomy for the loss of his wife. Grief has its time." The last part of this censure was theoretically made. Practically, we know that grief for the loss of a wife may be continued very long, in proportion as affection has been sincere. No man knew this better than Dr. Johnson.

We went into the church, and looked at the monument erected by Mr. Young to his father. Mr. Young mentioned an anecdote, that his father had received several pounds of subscription-money for his "Universal Passion," but had lost it in the South Sea.¹ Dr. Johnson thought this must be a mistake; for he had never seen a subscription-book.

Upon the road we talked of the uncertainty of profit with which authors and booksellers engage in the publication of literary works. JOHNSON: "My judgment I have found is no certain rule as to the sale of a book." BOSWELL: "Pray, Sir, have you been much plagued with authors sending you their works to revise?" JOHNSON: "No, Sir; I have been thought a sour, surly fellow." BOSWELL: "Very lucky for you, Sir,—in that respect." I must however observe, that notwithstanding what he now said, which he no doubt imagined at the time to be the fact, there was, perhaps, no man who more frequently yielded to the solicitations even of very obscure authors, to read their manuscripts, or more liberally assisted them with advice and correction.

He found himself very happy at 'Squire Dilly's, where there is always abundance of excellent fare, and hearty welcome.

On Sunday, June 3, we all went to Southill church, which is very near to Mr. Dilly's house. It being the first Sunday of the month, the holy sacrament was administered, and I stayed to partake of it. When I came afterwards into Dr. Johnson's room, he said, "You did right to stay and receive the communion; I had not thought of it." This seemed to imply that he did not choose to approach the altar without a previous preparation, as

¹ This assertion is disproved by a comparison of dates. The first four satires of Young were published in 1725. The South Sea scheme (which appears to be meant), was in 1720. — *Malone*.

to which good men entertain different opinions, some holding that it is irreverent to partake of that ordinance without considerable premeditation; others, that whoever is a sincere Christian, and in a proper frame of mind to discharge any other ritual duty of our religion, may, without scruple, discharge this most solemn one. A middle notion I believe to be the just one, which is, that communicants need not think a long train of preparatory forms indispensably necessary; but neither should they rashly and lightly venture upon so awful and mysterious an institution. Christians must judge each for himself what degree of retirement and self-examination is necessary upon each occasion.

Being in a frame of mind which, I hope for the felicity of human nature, many experience, — in fine weather, — at the country-house of a friend, — consoled and elevated by pious exercises, I expressed myself with an unrestrained fervor to my “guide, philosopher, and friend:”¹ “My dear Sir, I would fain be a good man; and I am very good now.”² I fear God, and honor the King, I wish to do no ill, and to be benevolent to all mankind.” He looked at me with a benignant indulgence; but took occasion to give me wise and salutary caution. “Do not, Sir, accustom yourself to trust to *impressions*. There is a middle state of mind between conviction and hypocrisy, of which many are conscious. By trusting to impressions, a man may gradually come to yield to them, and at length be subject to them, so as not to be a free agent, or what is the same thing in effect, to *suppose* that he is not a free agent. A man who is in that state, should not be suffered to live; if he declares he cannot help acting in a particular way, and is irresistibly impelled, there can be no confidence in him, no more than in a tiger. But, Sir, no man believes himself to be impelled irresistibly; we know that he who says he believes it, lies. Favorable impressions at particular moments, as the state of our souls, may be deceitful and dangerous. In general no man can be sure of his acceptance with God; some, indeed, may have had it revealed to them. St. Paul, who wrought miracles, may have had a miracle wrought on himself, and may have obtained supernatural assurance of pardon, and mercy, and beatitude; yet St. Paul, though he expresses strong hope, also expresses fear, lest having preached to others, he himself should be a cast-away.”

¹ Pope: “Essay on Man,” iv. 390.

² He had within the last seven weeks gone up drunk, at least twice, to a lady's drawing-room. — *Dr. Hill*.

The opinion of a learned bishop of our acquaintance, as to there being merit in religious faith, being mentioned: JOHNSON: "Why, yes, Sir, the most licentious man, were hell open before him, would not take the most beautiful strumpet to his arms. We must, as the Apostle says, live by faith, not by sight."¹

I talked to him of original sin,² in consequence of the fall of man, and of the atonement made by our SAVIOUR. After some conversation, which he desired me to remember, he, at my request, dictated to me as follows:

With respect to original sin, the inquiry is not necessary; for whatever is the cause of human corruption, men are evidently and confessedly so corrupt, that all the laws of heaven and earth are insufficient to restrain them from crimes.

Whatever difficulty there may be in the conception of vicarious punishments, it is an opinion which has had possession of mankind in all ages. There is no nation that has not used the practice of sacrifices. Whoever, therefore, denies the propriety of vicarious punishments, holds an opinion which the sentiments and practice of mankind have contradicted, from the beginning of the world. The great sacrifice for the sins of mankind was offered at the death of the MESSIAH, who is called in Scripture "The Lamb of GOD, that taketh away the sins of the world." To judge of the reasonableness of the scheme of redemption, it must be considered as necessary to the government of the universe, that GOD should make known his perpetual and irreconcilable detestation of moral evil. He might indeed punish, and punish only the offenders; but as the end of punishment is not revenge of crimes, but propagation of virtue, it was more becoming the Divine clemency to find another manner of proceeding, less destructive to man, and at least equally powerful to promote goodness. The end of punishment is to reclaim and warn. *That* punishment will both reclaim and warn, which shows evidently such abhorrence of sin in GOD, as may deter us from it, or strike us with dread of vengeance when we have committed it. This is effected by vicarious punishment. Nothing could more testify the opposition between the nature of GOD and moral evil, or more amply display his justice, to men and angels, to all orders and successions of beings, than that it was necessary for the highest and purest nature, even for DIVINITY itself, to pacify the demands of vengeance, by a painful death; of which the natural effect will be, that when justice is appeased, there is a proper place for the exercise of mercy; and that such propitiation shall supply in some degree, the imperfections of our obedience, and the inefficacy of our repentance: for, obedience and repentance,

¹ II. Corinthians v. 7.

² Dr. Ogen, in his second sermon "On the Articles of the Christian Faith," with admirable acuteness thus addresses the opposers of that doctrine, which accounts for the confusion, sin, and misery, which we find in this life: "It would be severe in GOD, you think, to *degrade* us to such a sad state as this, for the offence of our first parents: but you can allow him to *place* us in it without any inducement. Are our calamities lessened for not being ascribed to Adam? If your condition be unhappy, is it not still unhappy, whatever was the occasion? with the aggravation of this reflection, that if it was as good as it was at first designed, there seems to be somewhat the less reason to look for its amendment." — B.

such as we can perform, are still necessary. Our SAVIOUR has told us, that he did not come to destroy the law but to fulfil: to fulfil the typical law, by the performance of what those types had foreshown; and the moral law, by precepts of greater purity and higher exaltation.

Here he said, "God bless you with it." I acknowledged myself much obliged to him; but I begged that he would go on as to the propitiation being the chief object of our most holy faith. He then dictated this one other paragraph:

The peculiar doctrine of Christianity is, that of a universal sacrifice, and perpetual propitiation. Other prophets only proclaimed the will and the threatenings of GOD. CHRIST satisfied his justice.

The Reverend Mr. Palmer,¹ Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge, dined with us. He expressed a wish that a better provision were made for parish clerks. JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir, a parish clerk should be a man who is able to make a will, or write a letter for anybody in the parish."

I mentioned Lord Monboddo's notion² that the ancient Egyptians, with all their learning, and all their arts, were not only black, but woolly-haired. Mr. Palmer asked how did it appear upon examining the mummies? Dr. Johnson approved of this test.

Although upon most occasions I never heard a more strenuous advocate for the advantages of wealth than Dr. Johnson, he this day, I know not from what caprice, took the other side. "I have not observed," said he, "that men of very large fortunes enjoy anything extraordinary that makes happiness. What has

¹ This unfortunate person, whose full name was Thomas Fysche Palmer, afterwards went to Dundee in Scotland, where he officiated as minister to a congregation of the sect who call themselves *Unitarians*, from a notion that they distinctively worship ONE GOD, because they *deny* the mysterious doctrine of the TRINITY. They do not advert that the great body of the Christian Church in maintaining that mystery, maintain also the *Unity* of the GODHEAD; the "TRINITY IN UNITY!—three persons and ONE GOD." The Church humbly adores the DIVINITY as exhibited in the holy Scriptures. The Unitarian sect vainly presumes to comprehend and define the ALMIGHTY. Mr. Palmer having heated his mind with political speculations, became so much dissatisfied with our excellent constitution, as to compose, publish, and circulate writings, which were found to be so seditious and dangerous, that upon being found guilty by a jury, the Court of Justiciary in Scotland sentenced him to transportation for fourteen years. A loud clamor against this sentence was made by some Members of both Houses of Parliament; but both Houses approved of it by a great majority; and he was conveyed to the settlement for convicts in New South Wales.—B. He died on his return from Botany Bay, in the year 1803.—*Malone*. Dr. Hill shows from the *Ann. Reg.* for 1793 that Palmer's sentence was seven, not fourteen years. His colleague, Muir, an advocate, was sentenced to the longer term.

² Taken from "Herodotus." [Book ii. ch. 104.] — B.

the Duke of Bedford? What has the Duke of Devonshire? The only great instance that I have ever known of the enjoyment of wealth was, that of Jamaica Dawkins,¹ who going to visit Palmyra, and hearing that the way was infested by robbers, hired a troop of Turkish horse to guard him."

Dr. Gibbons,² the Dissenting minister, being mentioned, he said, "I took to Dr. Gibbons." And addressing himself to Mr. Charles Dilly, added, "I shall be glad to see him. Tell him if he'll call on me, and dawdle over a dish of tea in an afternoon, I shall take it kind."

The Reverend Mr. Smith, Vicar of Southill, a very respectable man, with a very agreeable family, sent an invitation to us to drink tea. I remarked Dr. Johnson's very respectful politeness. Though always fond of changing the scene, he said, "We must have Mr. Dilly's leave. We cannot go from your house, Sir, without your permission." We all went, and were well satisfied with our visit. I however remember nothing particular, except a nice distinction which Dr. Johnson made with respect to the power of memory, maintaining that forgetfulness was a man's own fault. "To remember and to recollect," said he, "are different things. A man has not the power to recollect what is not in his mind; but when a thing is in his mind he may remember it."

The remark was occasioned by my leaning back on a chair, which a little before I had perceived to be broken, and pleading forgetfulness as an excuse. "Sir," said he, "its being broken was certainly in your mind."

When I observed that a housebreaker was in general very timorous — JOHNSON: "No wonder, Sir; he is afraid of being shot getting *into* a house, or hanged when he has got *out* of it."

He told us, that he had in one day written six sheets of a translation from the French;³ adding: "I should be glad to see it now. I wish that I had copies of all the pamphlets written against me, as it is said Pope had. Had I known that I should make so much noise in the world, I should have been at pains to collect them. I believe there is hardly a day in which there is not something about me in the newspapers."

On Monday, June 4, we all went to Luton Hoe, to see Lord Bute's magnificent seat, for which I had obtained a ticket. As

¹ He visited Palmyra in 1752.

² Author of a "Life of Watts" quoted by Johnson. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Courayer's "Life of Paul Sarpi and Notes," of which some sheets were printed off. — *Dr. Hill*.

we entered the park, I talked in a high style of my old friendship with Lord Mountstuart, and said, "I shall probably be much at this place." The Sage, aware of human vicissitudes, gently checked me: "Do n't you be too sure of that." He made two or three peculiar observations; as when shown the botanical garden, "Is not *every* garden a botanical garden?" When told that there was a shrubbery to the extent of several miles: "That is making a very foolish use of the ground; a little of it is very well." When it was proposed that we should walk on the pleasure-ground; "Do n't let us fatigue ourselves. Why should we walk there? Here's a fine tree, let's get to the top of it." But upon the whole, he was very much pleased. He said: "This is one of the places I do not regret having come to see. It is a very stately place, indeed; in the house magnificence is not sacrificed to convenience, nor convenience to magnificence. The library is very splendid; the dignity of the rooms is very great; and the quantity of pictures is beyond expectation, beyond hope."

It happened without any previous concert, that we visited the seat of Lord Bute upon the King's birthday; we dined and drank his Majesty's health at an inn in the village of Luton.

In the evening I put him in mind of his promise to favor me with a copy of his celebrated letter to the Earl of Chesterfield, and he was at last pleased to comply with this earnest request, by dictating it to me from his memory; for he believed that he himself had no copy. There was an animated glow in his countenance while he thus recalled his high-minded indignation.

He laughed heartily at a ludicrous action in the Court of Session, in which I was counsel. The Society of *Procurators*, or Attorneys, entitled to practise in the inferior courts at Edinburgh, had obtained a royal charter, in which they had taken care to have their ancient designation of *Procurators* changed into that of *Solicitors* from a notion, as they supposed, that it was more genteel. And this new title they displayed by a public advertisement for a *General Meeting* at their HALL.

It has been said that the Scottish nation is not distinguished for humor; and, indeed, what happened on this occasion may in some degree justify the remark; for although this society had contrived to make themselves a very prominent object for the ridicule of such as might stoop to it, the only joke to which it gave rise, was the following paragraph, sent to the newspaper called *The Caledonian Mercury*:

A correspondent informs us, that the Worshipful Society of *Chaldeans, Cadies, or Running-Stationers* of this city are resolved, in imitation, and encouraged by the singular success of their brethren, of an *equally respectable* Society, to apply for a Charter of their Privileges, particularly of the sole privilege of *PROCURING*, in the most extensive sense of the word, exclusive of chairmen, porters, penny-post men, and other *inferior* ranks; their brethren the R—Y—L S—LL—RS, *alias* P—C—RS, *before the* INFERIOR Courts of this City, always excepted.

Should the Worshipful Society be successful, they are farther resolved not to be *puffed up* thereby, but to demean themselves with more equanimity and decency than their *Royal, learned, and very modest* brethren above mentioned have done, upon their late dignification and exaltation.

A majority of the members of the Society prosecuted Mr. Robertson, the publisher of the paper, for damages; and the first judgment of the whole Court very wisely dismissed the action: *Solventur risu tabulæ, tu missus abibis*.¹ But a new trial or review was granted upon a petition, according to the forms in Scotland. This petition I was engaged to answer, and Dr. Johnson, with great alacrity, furnished me this evening with what follows:

All injury is either of the person, the fortune, or the fame. Now it is a certain thing, it is proverbially known, that *a jest breaks no bones*. They never have gained half-a-crown less in the whole profession since this mischievous paragraph has appeared; and, as to their reputation, what is their reputation but an instrument of getting money? If, therefore, they have lost no money, the question upon reputation may be answered by a very old position, — *De minimis non curat Prætor*.

Whether there was, or was not, an *animus injuriandi*, is not worth inquiring, if no *injuria* can be proved. But the truth is, there was no *animus injuriandi*. It was only an *animus irritandi*,² which happened to be exercised upon a *genus irritabile* produced unexpected violence of resentment. Their irritability arose only from an opinion of their own importance, and their delight in their new exaltation. What might have been borne by a *Procurator* could not be borne by a *Solicitor*. Your Lordships well know that *honores mutant mores*. Titles and dignities play strongly on the fancy. As a madman is apt to think himself grown suddenly great, so he that grows suddenly great is apt to borrow a little from the madman. To co-operate with their resentment would be to promote their frenzy; nor is it possible to guess to what they might proceed, if to the new title of *Solicitor* should be added the elation of victory and triumph.

We consider your Lordships as the protectors of our rights, and the guardians of our virtues; but believe it not included in your high office, that you should flatter our vices, or solace our vanity; and, as vanity only dictates this prosecution, it is humbly hoped your Lordships will dismiss it.

If every attempt, however light or ludicrous, to lessen another's reputation, is to be punished by a judicial sentence, what punishment can be sufficiently

¹ Horace: "Satires," ii. i. 86.

² Mr. Robertson altered this word to *focandi*, he having found in Blackstone that to *irritate* is actionable. — B.

severe for him who attempts to diminish the reputation of the Supreme Court of Justice by reclaiming upon a cause already determined, without any change in the state of the question? Does it not imply hopes that the judges will change their opinion? Is not uncertainty and inconstancy in the highest degree disreputable to a Court? Does it not suppose, that the former judgment was temerarious or negligent? Does it not lessen the confidence of the public? Will it not be said, that *jus est aut incognitum, aut vagum?* and will not the consequence be drawn, *misera est servitus?* Will not the rules of action be obscure? Will not he who knows himself wrong to-day, hope that the Courts of Justice will think him right to-morrow? Surely, my Lords, these are attempts of dangerous tendency, which the solicitors, as men versed in the law, should have foreseen and avoided. It was natural for an ignorant printer to appeal from the Lord Ordinary; but from lawyers, the descendants of lawyers, who have practised for three hundred years, and have now raised themselves to a higher denomination, it might be expected, that they should know the reverence due to a judicial determination: and, having been once dismissed, should sit down in silence.

I am ashamed to mention, that the Court, by a plurality of voices, without having a single additional circumstance before them, reversed their own judgment, made a serious matter of this dull and foolish joke, and adjudged Mr. Robertson to pay to the Society five pounds, (sterling money) and costs of suit. The decision will seem strange to English lawyers.

On Tuesday, June 5, Johnson was to return to London. He was very pleasant at breakfast; I mentioned a friend of mine having resolved never to marry a pretty woman. JOHNSON: "Sir, it is a very foolish resolution to resolve not to marry a pretty woman. Beauty is of itself very estimable. No, Sir, I would prefer a pretty woman, unless there are objections to her. A pretty woman may be foolish; a pretty woman may be wicked; a pretty woman may not like me. But there is no such danger in marrying a pretty woman as is apprehended; she will not be persecuted if she does not invite persecution. A pretty woman, if she has the mind to be wicked, can find a readier way than another; and that is all."

I accompanied him in Mr. Dilly's chaise to Shefford, where, talking of Lord Bute's never going to Scotland, he said: "As an Englishman, I should wish all the Scotch gentlemen should be educated in England; Scotland would become a province; they would spend all their rents in England." This is a subject of much consequence, and much delicacy. The advantage of an English education is unquestionably very great to Scotch gentlemen of talents and ambition; and regular visits to Scotland, and perhaps other means, might be effectually used to prevent them

from being totally estranged from their native country, any more than a Cumberland or Northumberland gentleman, who has been educated in the south of England. I own, indeed, that it is no small misfortune for Scotch gentlemen, who have neither talents nor ambition, to be educated in England, where they may be perhaps distinguished only by a nickname, lavish their fortune in giving expensive entertainments to those who laugh at them, and saunter about as mere idle insignificant hangers-on even upon the foolish great; when if they had been judiciously brought up at home, they might have been comfortable and creditable members of society.

At Shefford I had another affectionate parting from my revered friend, who was taken up by the Bedford coach and carried to the metropolis. I went with Messieurs Dilly to see some friends at Bedford; dined with the officers of the militia of the county, and next day proceeded on my journey.

TO BENNET LANGTON, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: How welcome your account of yourself and your invitation to your new house was to me, I need not tell you, who consider our friendship not only as formed by choice, but as matured by time. We have been now long enough acquainted to have many images in common, and therefore to have a source of conversation which neither the learning nor the wit of a new companion can supply.

My "Lives" are now published; and if you will tell me whither I shall send them, that they may come to you, I will take care that you shall not be without them.

You will, perhaps, be glad to hear, that Mrs. Thrale is disencumbered of her brewhouse; and that it seemed to the purchaser so far from an evil, that he was content to give for it a hundred and thirty-five thousand pounds. Is the nation ruined?

Please to make my respectful compliments to Lady Rothes, and keep me in the memory of all the little dear family, particularly pretty Mrs. Jane.¹ I am, Sir, your affectionate humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

BOLT-COURT, June 16, 1781.

Johnson's charity to the poor was uniform and extensive, both from inclination and principle. He not only bestowed liberally out of his own purse, but what is more difficult as well as rare, would beg from others, when he had proper objects in view. This he did judiciously as well as humanely. Mr. Philip Metcalfe tells me, that when he has asked him for some money for persons in distress, and Mr. Metcalfe has offered what Johnson

¹ His goddaughter.

thought too much, he insisted on taking less, saying, "No, no, Sir; we must not *pamper* them."

I am indebted to Mr. Malone, one of Sir Joshua Reynolds's executors, for the following note, which was found among his papers after his death, and which, we may presume, his unaffected modesty prevented him from communicating to me with the other letters from Dr. Johnson with which he was pleased to furnish me. However slight in itself, as it does honor to that illustrious painter, and most amiable man, I am happy to introduce it.

TO SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

DEAR SIR: It was not before yesterday that I received your splendid benefaction. To a hand so liberal in distributing, I hope nobody will envy the power of acquiring. I am, dear Sir, your obliged and most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JUNE 23, 1781.

TO THOMAS ASTLE, ESQ.

SIR: I am ashamed that you have been forced to call so often for your books, but it has been by no fault on either side. They have never been out of my hands, nor have I ever been at home without seeing you; for to see a man so skilful in the antiquities of my country, is an opportunity of improvement not willingly to be missed.

Your notes on Alfred¹ appear to me very judicious and accurate, but they are too few. Many things familiar to you are unknown to me, and to most others; and you must not think too favourably of your readers; by supposing them knowing, you will leave them ignorant. Measure of land, and value of money, it is of great importance to state with care. Had the Saxons any gold coin?

I have much curiosity after the manners and transactions of the middle ages, but have wanted either diligence or opportunity, or both. You, Sir, have great opportunities, and I wish you both diligence and success. I am, Sir, &c.,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JULY 17, 1781.

The following curious anecdote I insert in Dr. Burney's own words:

Dr. Burney related to Dr. Johnson the partiality which his writings had excited in a friend of Dr. Burney's, the late Mr. Bewley, well known in Norfolk by the name of the *Philosopher of Massingham*: who, from the *Ramblers* and *Plan* of his Dictionary, and long before the author's fame was established by the Dictionary itself, or any other work, had conceived such a reverence for him, that he earnestly begged Dr. Burney to give him the cover of his first

¹ The Will of King Alfred, alluded to in this letter, from the original Saxon in the library of Mr. Astle, has been printed at the expense of the University of Oxford.—B. For Astle see Vol. I., p. 84, note 1.

letter he had received from him, as a relic of so estimable a writer. This was in 1755. In 1760,¹ when Dr. Burney visited Dr. Johnson at the Temple in London, where he had then chambers, he happened to arrive there before he was up; and being shown into the room where he was to breakfast, finding himself alone, he examined the contents of the apartment, to try whether he could undiscovered steal anything to send to his friend Bewley, as another relic of the admirable Dr. Johnson. But finding nothing better to his purpose, he cut some bristles off his hearth-broom, and enclosed them in a letter to his country enthusiast, who received them with due reverence. The Doctor was so sensible of the honor done him by a man of genius and science, to whom he was an utter stranger, that he said to Dr. Burney: "Sir, there is no man possessed of the smallest portion of modesty, but must be flattered with the admiration of such a man. I'll give him a set of my 'Lives,' if he will do me the honor to accept of them." In this he kept his word; and Dr. Burney had not only the pleasure of gratifying his friend with a present more worthy of his acceptance than the segment from the hearth-broom, but soon after introducing him to Dr. Johnson himself in Bolt Court, with whom he had the satisfaction of conversing a considerable time, not a fortnight before his death; which happened in St. Martin's Street, during his visit to Dr. Burney, in the house where the great Sir Isaac Newton had lived and died before.

In one of his little memorandum-books is the following minute :

August 9, 3 p.m. ætat. 72, in the summer-house at Streatham.

After innumerable resolutions formed and neglected, I have retired hither, to plan a life of greater diligence, in hope that I may yet be useful, and be daily better prepared to appear before my Creator and my Judge, from whose infinite mercy I humbly call for assistance and support.

My purpose is,

To pass eight hours every day in some serious employment.

Having prayed, I purpose to employ the next six weeks upon the Italian language for my settled study.

How venerably pious does he appear in these moments of solitude, and how spirited are his resolutions for the improvement of his mind, even in elegant literature, at a very advanced period of life, and when afflicted with many complaints.

In autumn he went to Oxford, Birmingham, Lichfield, and Ashbourne, for which very good reasons might be given in the conjectural yet positive manner of writers, who are proud to account for every event which they relate.* He himself, however, says,

The motives of my journey I hardly know; I omitted it last year, and am not willing to miss it again. ("Prayers and Meditations," 201.)

¹ Dr. Burney visited Dr. Johnson first in 1758.

* This remark is believed by Dr. Hill to be aimed at Hawkins who in his "Life of Dr. Johnson" (p. 553) pretends to account for this trip.

But some good considerations arise, amongst which is the kindly recollection of Mr. Hector, surgeon of Birmingham.

Hector is likewise an old friend, the only companion of my childhood that passed through the school with me. We have always loved one another; perhaps we may be made better by some serious conversation, of which however I have no distinct hope.

He says too,

At Lichfield, my native place, I hope to show a good example by frequent attendance on public worship.

My correspondence with him during the rest of this year was, I know not why, very scanty, and all on my side. I wrote him one letter to introduce Mr. Sinclair (now Sir John), the Member for Caithness, to his acquaintance; and informed him in another, that my wife had again been affected with alarming symptoms of illness.

In 1782, his complaints increased, and the history of his life this year is little more than a mournful recital of the variations of his illness, in the midst of which, however, it will appear from his letters, that the powers of his mind were in no degree impaired.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I sit down to answer your letter on the same day in which I received it, and am pleased that my first letter of the year is to you. No man ought to be at ease while he knows himself in the wrong; and I have not satisfied myself with my long silence. The letter relating to Mr. Sinclair, however, was, I believe, never brought.

My health has been tottering this last year: and I can give no very laudable account of my time. I am always hoping to do better than I have ever hitherto done.

My journey to Ashbourne and Staffordshire was not pleasant; for what enjoyment has a sick man visiting the sick? Shall we ever have another frolic like our journey to the Hebrides?

I hope that dear Mrs. Boswell will surmount her complaints; in losing her you will lose your anchor, and be tost, without stability, by the waves of life.¹ I wish both her and you very many years, and very happy.

For some months past, I have been so withdrawn from the world, that I can send you nothing particular. All your friends, however, are well, and will be glad of your return to London. I am, dear Sir, yours most affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JANUARY 5, 1782.

¹ The proof of this has been proved by sad experience. — B. Mrs. Boswell died June 4, 1789. — *Malone*.

At a time when he was less able than he had once been to sustain a shock, he was suddenly deprived of Mr. Levett, which event he thus communicated to Dr. Lawrence.

SIR: Our old friend, Mr. Levett, who was last night eminently cheerful, died this morning. The man who lay in the same room, hearing an uncommon noise, got up and tried to make him speak, but without effect. He then called Mr. Holder, the apothecary, who, though when he came, he thought him dead, opened a vein, but could draw no blood. So has ended the long life of a very useful and very blameless man. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JAN. 17, 1782.

In one of his memorandum-books in my possession, is the following entry :

JANUARY 20, Sunday. Robert Levett was buried in the churchyard of Bridewell, between one and two in the afternoon. He died on Thursday 17, about seven in the morning, by an instantaneous death. He was an old and faithful friend; I have known him from about 46. *Commendavi*. May GOD have mercy on him. May he have mercy on me.

Such was Johnson's affectionate regard for Levett,¹ that he honored his memory with the following pathetic verses :

"Condemn'd to Hope's delusive mine,
As on we toil from day to day,
By sudden blast or slow decline
Our social comforts drop away.

"Well try'd through many a varying year,
See LEVETT to the grave descend;
Officious, innocent, sincere,
Of every friendless name the friend.

"Yet still he fills affection's eye,
Obscurely wise, and coarsely kind,
Nor, letter'd Arrogance,² deny
Thy praise to merit unrefin'd.

"When fainting Nature call'd for aid,
And hov'ring Death prepar'd the blow,
His vigorous remedy display'd
The power of art without the show.

"In Misery's darkest caverns known,
His ready help was ever nigh,

¹ See an account of him in *The Gentleman's Magazine*, Feb. 1785. — B.

² In both editions of Sir John Hawkins's "Life of Dr. Johnson," "letter'd *ignorance*" is printed. — B.

Where hopeless Anguish pour'd his groan,
And lonely want retir'd to die.¹

"No summons mock'd by chill delay,
No petty gains disdain'd by pride;
The modest wants of every day
The toil of every day supply'd.

"His virtues walk'd their narrow round,
Nor made a pause, nor left a void;
And sure the eternal Master found
His single talent well employ'd.

"The busy day, the peaceful night,
Unfelt, uncounted, glided by;
His frame was firm, his powers were bright,
Though now his eightieth year was nigh.

"Then, with no throbs of fiery pain,
No cold gradations of decay,
Death broke at once the vital chain,
And freed his soul the nearest way."

In one of Johnson's registers of this year, there occurs the following curious passage :

Jan. 20.² The Ministry is dissolved. I prayed with Francis, and gave thanks. ("Prayers and Meditations," 209 [207].)

It has been the subject of discussion, whether there are two distinct particulars mentioned here? Or that we are to understand the giving of thanks to be in consequence of the dissolution of the Ministry? In support of the last of these conjectures may be urged his mean opinion of that Ministry, which has frequently appeared in the course of this work ; and it is strongly confirmed by what he said on the subject to Mr. Seward : "I am glad the Ministry is removed. Such a bunch of imbecility never disgraced a country. If they sent a messenger into the City to take up a printer, the messenger was taken up instead of the printer, and committed by the sitting alderman. If they sent one army

¹ Johnson repeated this line to me thus :

"And Labor steals an hour to die."

But he afterwards altered it to the present reading.—B. This poem is printed in the *Ann. Reg.* for 1753, p. 189, with the following variations: l. 18, for "ready help" *useful care* ; l. 28, "His single talent" *the single talent* ; l. 33, "no throbs of fiery pain" *no throbbing fiery pain* ; l. 36, "and freed" *and forced*. On the next page is printed "John Gilpin."—*Dr. Hill*.

² Boswell has misquoted the date, which should be March 20. Lord North's Administration was superseded by Lord Rockingham's on March 19.—*Croker*.

to the relief of another, the first army was defeated and taken before the second arrived.¹ I will not say that what they did was always wrong; but it was always done at a wrong time."

TO MRS. STRAHAN.

DEAR MADAM: Mrs. Williams showed me your kind letter. This little habitation is now but a melancholy place, clouded with the gloom of disease and death. Of the four inmates, one has been suddenly snatched away; two are oppressed by very afflictive and dangerous illness; and I tried yesterday to gain some relief by a third bleeding, from a disorder which has for some time distressed me, and I think myself to-day much better.

I am glad, dear Madam, to hear that you are so far recovered as to go to Bath. Let me once more entreat you to stay till your health is not only obtained, but confirmed. Your fortune is such as that no moderate expense deserves your care; and you have a husband, who, I believe, does not regard it. Stay, therefore, till you are quite well. I am, for my part, very much deserted; but complaint is useless. I hope GOD will bless you, and I desire you to form the same wish for me. I am, dear Madam, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

FEB. 4, 1782.

TO EDMOND MALONE, ESQ.

SIR: I have for many weeks been so much out of order, that I have gone out only in a coach to Mrs. Thrale's, where I can use all the freedom that sickness requires. Do not, therefore, take it amiss, that I am not with you and Dr. Farmer. I hope hereafter to see you often. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

FEB. 27, 1782.

TO THE SAME.

DEAR SIR: I hope I grow better, and shall soon be able to enjoy the kindness of my friends. I think this wild adherence to Chatterton² more unaccountable than the obstinate defence of Ossian. In Ossian there is a national

¹ Lord Cornwallis's army surrendered at York Town five days before Sir Henry Clinton's fleet and army arrived up the Chesapeake. — *Dr. Hull*.

² This note was in answer to one which accompanied one of the earliest pamphlets on the subject of Chatterton's forgery, entitled "Cursory Observations on the Poems attributed to Thomas Rowley," &c. Mr. Thomas Warton's very able "Inquiry" appeared about three months afterwards: and Mr. Tyrwhitt's admirable "Vindication of his Appendix," in the summer of the same year, left the believers in his daring imposture nothing but "the resolution to say again what had been said before." Daring, however, as this fiction was, and wild as was the adherence to Chatterton, both were greatly exceeded in 1795 and the following year, by a still more audacious imposture, and the pertinacity of one of its adherents, who has immortalized his name by publishing a bulky volume, of which the direct and manifest object was, to prove the authenticity of certain papers attributed to Shakespeare, after the fabricator of the spurious trash had publicly acknowledged the imposture! — *Malone*. An illusion to the forgeries of W. H. Ireland. — *Croker*.

pride, which may be forgiven, though it cannot be applauded. In Chatterton there is nothing but the resolution to say again what has once been said. I am, Sir, your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MARCH 7, 1782.

These short letters show the regard which Dr. Johnson entertained for Mr. Malone, who the more he is known is the more highly valued. It is much to be regretted that Johnson was prevented from sharing the elegant hospitality of that gentleman's table, at which he would in every respect have been fully gratified. Mr. Malone, who has so ably succeeded him as an editor of Shakespeare, has, in his preface, done great and just honor to Johnson's memory.

TO MRS. LUCY PORTER, IN LICHFIELD.

DEAR MADAM: I went away from Lichfield ill, and have had a troublesome time with my breath; for some weeks I have been disordered by a cold, of which I could not get the violence abated, till I had been let blood three times. I have not, however, been so bad but that I could have written, and am sorry that I neglected it.

My dwelling is but melancholy; both Williams, and Desmoulins, and myself, are very sickly: Frank is not well; and poor Levett died in his bed the other day, by a sudden stroke; I suppose not one minute passed between health and death; so uncertain are human things.

Such is the appearance of the world about me; I hope your scenes are more cheerful. But whatever befalls us, though it is wise to be serious, it is useless and foolish, and perhaps sinful, to be gloomy. Let us, therefore, keep ourselves as easy as we can; though the loss of friends will be felt, and poor Levett had been a faithful adherent for thirty years.

Forgive me, my dear love, the omission of writing; I hope to mend that and my other faults. Let me have your prayers.

Make my compliments to Mrs. Cobb, and Miss Adey, and Mr. Pearson, and the whole company of my friends. I am, my dear, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, March 2, 1782.

TO THE SAME.

DEAR MADAM: My last was but a dull letter, and I know not that this will be much more cheerful; I am, however, willing to write, because you are desirous to hear from me.

My disorder has now begun its ninth week, for it is not yet over. I was last Thursday blooded for the fourth time, and have since found myself much relieved, but I am very tender and easily hurt; so that since we parted I have had but little comfort, but I hope that the spring will recover me; and that in the summer I shall see Lichfield again, for I will not delay my visit another year to the end of autumn.

I have, by advertising, found poor Mr. Levett's brothers in Yorkshire, who

will take the little he has left: it is but little, yet it will be welcome, for I believe they are of very low condition.

To be sick, and to see nothing but sickness and death, is but a gloomy state; but I hope better times, even in this world, will come, and whatever this world may with-hold or give, we shall be happy in a better state. Pray for me, my dear Lucy.

Make my compliments to Mrs. Cobb, and Miss Adey, and my old friend, Hetty Bailly, and to all the Lichfield ladies. I am, dear Madam, yours affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

BOLT-COURT, FLEET-STREET, March 19, 1782.

On the day on which this letter was written, he thus feelingly mentions his respected friend, and physician, Dr. Lawrence :

Poor Lawrence has almost lost the sense of healing; and I have lost the conversation of a learned, intelligent, and communicative companion, and a friend whom long familiarity has much endeared. Lawrence is one of the best men whom I have known. "*Nostrum omnium miserere Deus.*" ("Prayers and Meditations," p. 207.)

It was Dr. Johnson's custom when he wrote to Dr. Lawrence concerning his own health, to use the Latin language. I have been favored by Miss Lawrence with one of these letters as a specimen :

T. LAWRENCIO, *Medico*, S.

Novum frigus, nova tussis, nova spirandi difficultas, novam sanguinis missionem suadent, quam tamen te inconsulto nolim fieri. Ad te venire vix possum, nec est cur ad me venias. Licere vel non licere uno verbo dicendum est; cætera mihi et Holdero¹ reliqueris. Si per te licet, imperatur nuncio Holderum ad me deducere.

Maiis Calendis, 1782.

Postquam tu discesseris, quo me vertam ?²

¹ Mr. Holder, in the Strand, Dr. Johnson's apothecary. — B.

² "Fresh cold, renewed cough, and an increased difficulty of breathing; all suggest a further letting of blood, which however I do not choose to have done without your advice. I cannot well come to you, nor is there any occasion for your coming to me. You may say in one word, yes or no, and leave the rest to Holder and me. If you consent the messenger will bring Holder to me. When you shall be gone, whither shall I turn myself?" — *Croker*. See Macaulay's review of *Croker's* first edition. This translation, as it now stands, is one of many proofs how greatly *Croker* and his work profited by Macaulay's criticisms.

Soon after the above letter, Dr. Lawrence left London, but not before the palsy had made so great a progress as to render him unable to write for himself. The following are extracts from letters addressed by Dr. Johnson to one of his daughters: "You will easily believe with what gladness I read that you had heard once again that voice to which we have all so often delighted to attend. May you often hear it. If we had his mind, and his tongue, we could spare the rest." "I am not vigorous, but much better than when dear Dr. Lawrence held my pulse the last time. Be so kind as to let me know, from one little interval to another, the state of his body. I am pleased that he remembers me, and hope that it never can be possible for me to forget him. July 22, 1782." "I am much delighted even with the small advances which dear Dr. Lawrence makes towards recovery. If we

TO CAPTAIN LANGTON,¹ IN ROCHESTER.

DEAR SIR: It is now long since we saw one another; and, whatever has been the reason, neither you have written to me, nor I to you. To let friendship die away by negligence and silence, is certainly not wise. It is voluntarily to throw away one of the greatest comforts of this weary pilgrimage, of which when it is, as it must be, taken finally away, he that travels on alone, will wonder how his esteem could be so little. Do not forget me; you see that I do not forget you. It is pleasing in the silence of solitude to think, that there is one at least, however distant, of whose benevolence there is little doubt, and whom there is yet hope of seeing again.

Of my life, from the time we parted, the history is mournful. The spring of last year deprived me of Thrale, a man whose eye for fifteen years had scarcely been turned upon me but with respect or tenderness; for such another friend the general course of human things will not suffer man to hope. I passed the summer at Streatham, but there was no Thrale; and having idled away the summer with a weakly body and neglected mind, I made a journey to Staffordshire on the edge of winter. The season was dreary, I was sickly, and found the friends sickly whom I went to see. After a sorrowful sojourn, I returned to a habitation possessed for the present by two sick women, where my dear old friend, Mr. Levett, to whom, as he used to tell me, I owe your acquaintance, died a few weeks ago, suddenly in his bed; there passed not, I believe, a minute between health and death. At night, as at Mrs. Thrale's, I was musing in my chamber, I thought with uncommon earnestness, that however I might alter my mode of life, or whithersoever I might remove, I would endeavour to retain Levett about me; in the morning my servant brought me word that Levett was called to another state, a state for which, I think, he was not unprepared, for he was very useful to the poor. How much soever I valued him, I now wish that I had valued him more.

I have myself been ill more than eight weeks of a disorder, from which, at the expense of about fifty ounces of blood, I hope I am now recovering.

You, dear Sir, have, I hope, a more cheerful scene; you see George fond of his book, and the pretty misses airy and lively, with my own little Jenny equal to the best: and in whatever can contribute to your quiet or pleasure, you have Lady Rothes ready to concur. May whatever you enjoy of good be increased, and whatever you suffer of evil be diminished. I am, dear Sir, your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

BOLT-COURT, FLEET-STREET,
March 20, 1782.

could have again but his mind, and his tongue in his mind, and his right hand, we should not much lament the rest. I should not despair of helping the swelled hand by electricity, if it were frequently and diligently supplied. Let me know from time to time whatever happens; and I hope I need not tell you, how much I am interested in every change. Aug. 26, 1782." "Though the account with which you favoured me in your last letter could not give me the pleasure that I wished, yet I was glad to receive it; for my affection to my dear friend makes me desirous of knowing his state, whatever it be. I beg, therefore, that you continue to let me know, from time to time, all that you observe. Many fits of severe illness have, for about three months past, forced my kind physician often upon my mind. I am now better; and hope gratitude, as well as distress, can be a motive to remembrance. Bolt-court, Fleet-street, Feb. 4, 1783."—B.

¹ Mr. Langton being at this time on duty at Rochester, he is addressed by his military title.—B.

TO MR. HECTOR, IN BIRMINGHAM.¹

DEAR SIR: I hope I do not very grossly flatter myself to imagine that you and dear Mrs. Careless² will be glad to hear some account of me. I performed the journey to London with very little inconvenience, and came safe to my habitation, where I found nothing but ill health, and, of consequence, very little cheerfulness. I then went to visit a little way into the country, where I got a complaint by a cold which has hung eight weeks upon me, and from which I am, at the expense of fifty ounces of blood, not yet free. I am afraid I must once more owe my recovery to warm weather, which seems to make no advances towards us.

Such is my health, which will, I hope, soon grow better. In other respects I have no reason to complain. I know not that I have written any thing more generally commended than the "Lives of the Poets"; and have found the world willing enough to caress me, if my health had invited me to be in much company; but this season I have been almost wholly employed in nursing myself.

When summer comes I hope to see you again, and will not put off my visit to the end of the year. I have lived so long in London, that I did not remember the difference of seasons.

Your health, when I saw you, was much improved. You will be prudent enough not to put it in danger. I hope, when we meet again, we shall congratulate each other upon fair prospects of longer life; though what are the pleasures of the longest life when placed in comparison with a happy death? I am, dear Sir, yours most affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, March 21, 1782.

TO THE SAME.

[*Without a date, but supposed to be about this time.*]³

DEAR SIR: That you and dear Mrs. Careless should have care or curiosity about my health, gives me that pleasure which every man feels from finding himself not forgotten. In age we feel again that love of our native place and our early friends, which in the bustle or amusements of middle life were overborne and suspended. You and I should now naturally cling to one another: we have outlived most of those who could pretend to rival us in each other's kindness. In our walk through life we have dropped our companions, and are now to pick up such as chance may offer us, or to travel on alone. You, indeed, have a sister, with whom you can divide the day: I have no natural friend left; but Providence has been pleased to preserve me from neglect; I have not wanted such alleviations of life as friendship could supply. My health has been, from my twentieth year, such as has seldom afforded me a single day of ease; but it is at least not worse; and I sometimes make myself believe that it is better. My disorders are, however, still sufficiently oppressive.

¹ A part of this letter having been torn off, I have, from the evident meaning, supplied a few words and half words at the ends and beginning of lines. — B.

² See Vol. I., p. 577. — B. She was Hector's widowed sister and Johnson's first love. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Dr. Hill believes it impossible to place this letter this year: he conjectures it to belong in 1777 or 1778.

I think of seeing Staffordshire again this autumn, and intend to find my way through Birmingham, where I hope to see you and dear Mrs. Careless well. I am, Sir, your affectionate friend,

SAM. JOHNSON.

I wrote to him at different dates; regretted that I could not come to London this spring, but hoped we should meet somewhere in the summer; mentioned the state of my affairs, and suggested hopes of some preferment; informed him, that as "*The Beauties of Johnson*" had been published in London, some obscure scribbler had published at Edinburgh, what he called "*The Deformities of Johnson*."

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: The pleasure which we used to receive from each other on Good Friday and Easter Day,¹ we must be this year content to miss. Let us, however, pray for each other, and hope to see one another yet from time to time with mutual delight. My disorder has been a cold, which impeded the organs of respiration, and kept me many weeks in a state of great uneasiness; but by repeated phlebotomy it is now relieved; and next to the recovery of Mrs. Boswell, I flatter myself that you will rejoice at mine.

What we shall do in the summer it is yet too early to consider. You want to know what you shall do now; I do not think this time of bustle and confusion like to produce any advantage to you.² Every man has those to reward and gratify who have contributed to his advancement. To come hither with such expectations at the expense of borrowed money, which, I find, you know not where to borrow, can hardly be considered prudent. I am sorry to find, what your solicitations seem to imply, that you have already gone the whole length of your credit. This is to set the quiet of your whole life at hazard. If you anticipate your inheritance, you can at last inherit nothing; all that you receive must pay for the past. You must get a place, or pine in penury, with the empty name of a great estate. Poverty, my dear friend, is so great an evil, and pregnant with so much temptation and so much misery, that I cannot but earnestly enjoin you to avoid it. Live on what you have; live if you can on less; do not borrow either for vanity or pleasure; the vanity will end in shame, and the pleasure in regret: stay therefore at home till you have saved money for your journey hither.

"*The Beauties of Johnson*"³ are said to have got money to the collector; if "*The Deformities*," have the same success, I shall be still a more extensive benefactor.

Make my compliments to Mrs. Boswell, who is, I hope, reconciled to me; and to the young people, whom I have never offended.

You never told me the success of your plea against the Solicitors. I am, dear Sir, your most affectionate,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, March 28, 1782.

¹ They met on those days in the years 1772, 3, 5, 6, 8, 9, 81, and 83.—*Dr. Hill.*

² The ministry had resigned on the 20th.

³ This book, published in 1781, is said by Lowndes to have reached its seventh edition by 1787.

Notwithstanding his afflicted state of body and mind this year, the following correspondence affords a proof not only of his benevolence and conscientious readiness to relieve a good man from error, but by his clothing one of the sentiments in his *Rambler* in different language, not inferior to that of the original, shows his extraordinary command of clear and forcible expression.

A clergyman at Bath wrote to him, that in *The Morning Chronicle*, a passage in the "The Beauties of Johnson," article DEATH, had been pointed out as supposed by some readers to recommend suicide, the words being, "To die is the fate of man ; but to die with lingering anguish is generally his folly ;" and respectfully suggesting to him, that such an erroneous notion of any sentence in the writings of an acknowledged friend of religion and virtue, should not pass uncontradicted.

Johnson thus answered the clergyman's letter :

TO THE REVEREND MR. ———, AT BATH.

SIR: Being now¹ in the country in a state of recovery, as I hope, from a very oppressive disorder, I cannot neglect the acknowledgment of your Christian letter. The book called "The Beauties of Johnson," is the production of I know not whom; I never saw it but by casual inspection, and considered myself as utterly disengaged from its consequences. Of the passage you mention, I remember some notice in some paper; but knowing that it must be misrepresented, I thought of it no more, nor do I know where to find it in my own books. I am accustomed to think little of newspapers; but an opinion so weighty and serious as yours has determined me to do, what I should without your seasonable admonition have omitted: and I will direct my thought to be shewn in its true state.² If I could find the passage I would direct you to it. I suppose the tenor is this: "Acute diseases are the immediate and inevitable strokes of Heaven; but of them the pain is short, and the conclusion speedy; chronical disorders, by which we are suspended in tedious torture between life and death, are commonly the effect of our own misconduct and intemperance. To die, &c." This, Sir, you see is all true and all blameless. I hope some time in the next week to have all rectified. My health has been lately much shaken; if you favour me with any answer, it will be a comfort to me to know that I have your prayers. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

MAY 15, 1782.

¹ The clergyman's letter was dated May 4. — *Dr. Hill*.

² What follows, appeared in *The Morning Chronicle* of May 29, 1782. "A correspondent having mentioned, in *The Morning Chronicle* of December 12, the last clause of the following paragraph, as seeming to favor suicide; we are requested to print the whole passage, that its true meaning may appear, which is not to recommend suicide but exercise. Exercise cannot secure us from that dissolution to which we are decreed; but while the soul and body continue united, it can make the association pleasing, and give probable hopes that they shall be disjoined by an easy separation. It was a principle among the ancients, that acute diseases are from Heaven, and chronical from ourselves; the dart of death, indeed, falls from Heaven, but we poison it by our own misconduct: to die is the fate of man; but to die with lingering anguish is generally his folly." *The Rambler*, No. 85. — B.

This letter, as might be expected, had its full effect, and the clergyman acknowledged it in grateful and pious terms.¹

The following letters require no extracts from mine to introduce them.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: The earnestness and tenderness of your letter is such, that I cannot think myself shewing it more respect than it claims by sitting down to answer it on the day on which I received it.

This year has afflicted me with a very irksome and severe disorder. My respiration has been much impeded, and much blood has been taken away. I am now harassed by a catarrhus cough, from which my purpose is to seek relief by change of air; and I am, therefore, preparing to go to Oxford.

Whether I did right in dissuading you from coming to London this spring, I will not determine. You have not lost much time by missing my company; I have scarcely been well for a single week. I might have received comfort from your kindness; but you would have seen me afflicted, and, perhaps, found me peevish. Whatever might have been your pleasure or mine, I know not how I could have honestly advised you to come hither with borrowed money. Do not accustom yourself to consider debt only as an inconvenience; you will find it a calamity. Poverty takes away so many means of doing good, and produces so much inability to resist evil, both natural and moral, that it is by all virtuous means to be avoided. Consider a man whose fortune is very narrow; whatever be his rank by birth, or whatever his reputation by intellectual excellence, what can he do? or what evil can he prevent? That he cannot help the needy is evident; he has nothing to spare. But, perhaps, his advice or admonition may be useful. His poverty will destroy his influence: many more can find that he is poor, than that he is wise: and few will reverence the understanding that is of so little advantage to its owner. I say nothing of the personal wretchedness of a debtor, which, however, has passed into a proverb.² Of riches it is not necessary to write the praise. Let it, however, be remembered, that he who has money to spare, has it always in his power to benefit others; and of such power a good man must always be desirous.

I am pleased with your account of Easter.³ We shall meet, I hope, in autumn, both well and both cheerful; and part each the better for the other's company.

Make my compliments to Mrs. Boswell, and to the young charmers. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, June 3, 1782.

TO MR. PERKINS.

DEAR SIR: I am much pleased that you are going a very long journey, which may by proper conduct restore your health and prolong your life.

¹ The correspondence may be seen at length in *The Gentleman's Magazine*, Feb., 1786. — B.

² Let him who sleeps too much borrow the pillow of a debtor.

³ Which I celebrated in the Church-of-England chapel at Edinburgh, founded by Lord Chief Baron Smith of respectable and pious memory. — B.

Observe these rules:

1. Turn all care out of your head as soon as you mount the chaise.
2. Do not think about frugality; your health is worth more than it can cost.
3. Do not continue any day's journey to fatigue.
4. Take now and then a day's rest.
5. Get a smart sea-sickness, if you can.
6. Cast away all anxiety, and keep your mind easy.

This last direction is the principal; with an unquiet mind, neither exercise, nor diet, nor physick can be of much use.

I wish you, dear Sir, a prosperous journey, and a happy recovery. I am, dear Sir, your most affectionate humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JULY 28, 1782.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Being uncertain whether I should have any call this autumn into the country, I did not immediately answer your kind letter. I have no call; but if you desire to meet me at Ashbourne, I believe I can come thither; if you had rather come to London, I can stay at Streatham: take your choice.

This year has been very heavy. From the middle of January to the middle of June I was battered by one disorder after another! I am now very much recovered, and hope still to be better. What happiness it is that Mrs. Boswell has escaped.

My "Lives," are reprinting, and I have forgotten the authour of Gray's character;¹ I write immediately, and it may be perhaps yet inserted.

Of London or Ashbourne you have your free choice; at any place I shall be glad to see you. I am, dear Sir, yours, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

AUGUST 24, 1782.

On the 30th of August, I informed him that my honored father had died that morning; a complaint under which he had long labored having suddenly come to a crisis while I was upon a visit at the seat of Sir Charles Preston, from whence I had hastened the day before, upon receiving a letter by express.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I have struggled through this year with so much infirmity of body, and such strong impressions of the fragility of life, that death, whenever it appears, fills me with melancholy; and I cannot hear without emotion, of the removal of any one, whom I have known, into another state.

Your father's death had every circumstance that could enable you to bear it; it was at a mature age, and it was expected; and as his general life had been pious, his thoughts had doubtless for many years past been turned upon eternity. That you did not find him sensible must doubtless grieve you: his disposition towards you was undoubtedly that of a kind, though not of a fond father. Kindness, at least actual, is in our power, but fondness is not; and if by negligence or imprudence you had extinguished his fondness, he could

¹ The Reverend Mr. Temple, Vicar of St. Gluvias, Cornwall. — B.

not at will rekindle it. Nothing then remained between you but mutual forgiveness of each other's faults, and mutual desire of each other's happiness.

I shall long to know his final disposition of his fortune.¹

You, dear Sir, have now a new station, and have therefore new cares, and new employments. Life, as Cowley seems to say, ought to resemble a well-ordered poem;² of which one rule generally received is, that the exordium should be simple, and should promise little. Begin your new course of life with the least show, and the least expense possible: you may at pleasure increase both, but you cannot easily diminish them. Do not think your estate your own, while any man can call upon you for money which you cannot pay; therefore, begin with timorous parsimony. Let it be your first care not to be in any man's debt.

When the thoughts are extended to a future state, the present life seems hardly worthy of all those principles of conduct, and maxims of prudence, which one generation of men has transmitted to another; but upon a closer view, when it is perceived how much evil is produced, and how much good is impeded by embarrassment and distress, and how little room the expedients of poverty leave for the exercise of virtue, it grows manifest that the boundless importance of the next life enforces some attention to the interest of this.

Be kind to the old servants, and secure the kindness of the agents and factors; do not disgust them by asperity, or unwelcome gaiety, or apparent suspicion. From them you must learn the real state of your affairs, the characters of your tenants, and the value of your lands.

Make my compliments to Mrs. Boswell; I think her expectations from air and exercise are the best that she can form. I hope she will live long and happily.

I forgot whether I told you that Rasay³ has been here; we dined cheerfully together. I entertained lately a young gentleman from Corrichatachin.⁴

I received your letters only this morning. I am, dear Sir, yours, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Sept. 7, 1782.

In answer to my next letter, I received one from him, dissuading me from hastening to him as I had proposed; what is proper for publication is the following paragraph, equally just and tender:

One expence, however, I would not have you to spare; let nothing be omitted that can preserve Mrs. Boswell, though it should be necessary to transplant her for a time into a softer climate. She is the prop and stay of your life. How much must your children suffer by losing her.

My wife was now so much convinced of his sincere friendship for me, and regard for her, that, without any suggestion on my part, she wrote him a very polite, and grateful letter.

¹ Dr. Rogers asserts in "*Boswelliana*" that he settled on James the ancestral estate with an unencumbered rental of £1,600 a year. But Boswell in 1791 complained that he could reckon on only £900 a year of clear money. — *Dr. Hill*.

² Cowley: "*Ode to Liberty*," stanza vi.

³ MacLeod, the Laird of Rasay.

⁴ A farm in the Island of Skye where Johnson wrote his Latin Ode to Mrs. Thrale. — *Dr. Hill*.

DR. JOHNSON TO MRS. BOSWELL.

DEAR LADY: I have not often received so much pleasure as from your invitation to Auchinleck. The journey thither and back is, indeed, too great for the latter part of the year; but if my health were fully recovered, I would suffer no little heat and cold, nor a wet or a rough road to keep me from you. I am, indeed, not without hope of seeing Auchinleck again; but to make it a pleasant place I must see its lady well, and brisk, and airy. For my sake therefore, among many greater reasons, take care, dear Madam, of your health, spare no expence, and want no attendance that can procure ease, or preserve it. Be very careful to keep your mind quiet; and do not think it too much to give an account of your recovery to, Madam, yours, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Sept. 7, 1782.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Having passed almost this whole year in a succession of disorders, I went in October to Brighthelmston, whither I came in a state of so much weakness, that I rested four times in walking between the inn and the lodging. By physick and abstinence I grew better, and am now reasonably easy, though at a great distance from health. I am afraid, however, that health begins, after seventy, and long before, to have a meaning different from that which it had at thirty. But it is culpable to murmur at the established order of the creation, as it is in vain to oppose it; he that lives, must grow old; and he that would rather grow old than die, has GOD to thank for the infirmities of old age.

At your long silence I am rather angry. You do not, since now you are the head of your house, think it worth your while to try whether you or your friend can live longer without writing, nor suspect that after so many years of friendship, that, when I do not write to you, I forget you. Put all such useless jealousies out of your head, and disdain to regulate your own practice by the practice of another, or by any other principle than the desire of doing right.

Your œconomy, I suppose, begins now to be settled; your expences are adjusted to your revenue, and all your people in their proper places. Resolve not to be poor: whatever you have, spend less. Poverty is a great enemy to human happiness; it certainly destroys liberty, and it makes some virtues impracticable, and others extremely difficult.

Let me know the history of your life, since your accession to your estate. How many houses, how many cows, how much land in your own hand, and what bargains you make with your tenants.

Of my "Lives of the Poets," they have printed a new edition in octavo, I hear, of three thousand. Did I give a set to Lord Hailes? If I did not, I will do it out of these. What did you make of all your copy?¹

Mrs. Thrale and the three Misses are now for the winter in Argyll-street. Sir Joshua Reynolds has been out of order, but is well again; and I am, dear Sir, your affectionate humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Dec. 7, 1782.

¹ Dr. Johnson gave Boswell the greatest part of the copy or manuscript of "The Lives of the Poets."

TO DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON.

EDINBURGH, Dec. 20, 1782.

DEAR SIR: I was made happy by your kind letter, which gave us the agreeable hopes of seeing you in Scotland again.

I am much flattered by the concern you are pleased to take in my recovery. I am better, and hope to have it in my power to convince you by my attention, of how much consequence I esteem your health to the world and to myself. I remain, Sir, with grateful respect, your obliged and obedient servant,

MARGARET BOSWELL.

The death of Mr. Thrale had made a very material alteration with respect to Johnson's reception in that family. The manly authority of the husband no longer curbed the lively exuberance of the lady; and as her vanity had been fully gratified, by having the Colossus of Literature attached to her for many years, she gradually became less assiduous to please him. Whether her attachment to him was already divided by another object, I am unable to ascertain: but it is plain that Johnson's penetration was alive to her neglect or forced attention; for on the 6th of October this year, we find him making a "parting use of the library" at Streatham, and pronouncing a prayer which he composed on leaving Mr. Thrale's family.

Almighty GOD, Father of all mercy, help me by thy grace, that I may, with humble and sincere thankfulness, remember the comforts and conveniences which I have enjoyed at this place; and that I may resign them with holy submission, equally trusting in thy protection when Thou givest, and when Thou takest away. Have mercy upon me, O LORD, have mercy upon me.

To thy fatherly protection, O LORD, I commend this family. Bless, guide, and defend them, that they may so pass through this world, as finally to enjoy in thy presence everlasting happiness, for JESUS CHRIST'S sake. Amen. ("Prayers and Meditations," p. 214.)

One cannot read this prayer, without some emotions not very favorable to the lady whose conduct occasioned it.

In one of his memorandum-books I find "Sunday, went to church at Streatham. *Templo valedixi cum osculo.*"

He met Mr. Philip Metcalfe often at Sir Joshua Reynolds's, and other places, and was a good deal with him at Brighthelmston this autumn, being pleased at once with his excellent table and animated conversation. Mr. Metcalfe showed him great respect, and sent him a note that he might have the use of his carriage whenever he pleased. Johnson (3d October, 1782) returned this polite answer: "Mr. Johnson is very much obliged by the kind offer of the

carriage, but he has no desire of using Mr. Metcalfe's carriage, except when he can have the pleasure of Mr. Metcalfe's company." Mr. Metcalfe could not but be highly pleased that his company was thus valued by Johnson, and he frequently attended him in airings. They also went together to Chichester, and they visited Petworth, and Cowdray, the venerable seat of the Lords Montacute.¹ "Sir," said Johnson, "I should like to stay here four-and-twenty hours. We see here how our ancestors lived."

That his curiosity was still unabated, appears from two letters to Mr. John Nichols, of the 10th and 20th of October this year. In one he says, "I have looked into your 'Anecdotes,' and you will hardly thank a lover of literary history for telling you that he has been much informed and gratified. I wish you would add your own discoveries and intelligence to those of Dr. Rawlinson, and undertake the supplement to Wood. Think of it." In the other, "I wish, Sir, you could obtain some fuller information of Jortin, Markland, and Thirlby.² They were three contemporaries of great eminence."

TO SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

DEAR SIR: I heard yesterday of your late disorder,³ and should think ill of myself if I had heard of it without alarm. I heard likewise of your recovery, which I sincerely wish to be complete and permanent. Your country has been in danger of losing one of its brightest ornaments, and I of losing one of my oldest and kindest friends; but I hope you will still live long, for the honour of the nation: and that more enjoyment of your elegance, your intelligence, and your benevolence, is still reserved for, dear Sir, your most affectionate, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

BRIGHTHELMSTON, Nov. 14, 1782.

The Reverend Mr. Wilson having dedicated to him his "Archæological Dictionary," that mark of respect was thus acknowledged:

TO THE REVEREND MR. WILSON, CLITHEROE, LANCASHIRE.

REVEREND SIR: That I have long omitted to return you thanks for the honour conferred upon me by your dedication I entreat you with great earnestness not to consider as more faulty than it is. A very importunate and

¹ An interesting account of Cowdray, which was burned in the same month in which its owner, the last of his line, was drowned in Switzerland, will be found in that pleasant book of English travel, "Field Paths and Green Lanes," (ch. ix.), by Mr. L. J. Jennings, M.P.

² Nichols published in 1784 a brief account of Thirlby (1692-1753) of which nearly half was written by Johnson. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ A slight paralytic affection.

oppressive disorder has for some time debarred me from the pleasures, and obstructed me in the duties of life. The esteem and kindness of wise and good men is one of the last pleasures which I can be content to lose: and gratitude to those from whom this pleasure is received, is a duty of which I hope never to be reproached with the final neglect. I therefore now return you thanks for the notice which I have received from you, and which I consider as giving to my name not only more bulk, but more weight; not only as extending its superficies, but as increasing its value. Your book was evidently wanted, and will, I hope, find its way into the school, to which, however, I do not mean to confine it; for no man has so much skill in ancient rites and practices as not to want it. As I suppose myself to owe part of your kindness to my excellent friend, Dr. Patten, he has likewise a just claim to my acknowledgment, which I hope you, Sir, will transmit. There will soon appear a new edition of my *Poetical Biography*; if you will accept of a copy to keep me in your mind, be pleased to let me know how it may be conveniently conveyed to you. This present is small, but it is given with good will by, Reverend Sir, your most, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

DECEMBER 31, 1782.

In 1783, he was more severely afflicted than ever, as will appear in the course of his correspondence; but still the same ardor for literature, the same constant piety, the same kindness for his friends, and the same vivacity, both in conversation and writing, distinguished him.

Having given Dr. Johnson a full account of what I was doing at Auchinleck, and particularly mentioned what I knew would please him, — my having brought an old man of eighty-eight from a lonely cottage to a comfortable habitation within my enclosures, where he had good neighbors near to him, — I received an answer in February, of which I extract what follows:

I am delighted with your account of your activity at Auchinleck, and wish the old gentleman, whom you have so kindly removed, may live long to promote your prosperity by his prayers. You have now a new character and new duties; think on them and practice them.

Make an impartial estimate of your revenue, and whatever it is, live upon less. Resolve never to be poor. Frugality is not only the basis of quiet, but of beneficence. No man can help others that wants help himself: we must have enough before we have to spare.

I am glad to find that Mrs. Boswell grows well; and hope that to keep her well, no care nor caution will be omitted. May you long live happily together.

When you come hither, pray bring with you Baxter's "Anacreon." I cannot get that edition in London.

On Friday, March 21, having arrived in London the night before, I was glad to find him at Mrs. Thrale's house, in Argyll Street, appearances of friendship between them being still kept

up. I was shown into his room, and after the first salutation, he said, "I am glad you are come: I am very ill." He looked pale, and was distressed with a difficulty of breathing: but after the common inquiries he assumed his usual strong animated style of conversation. Seeing me now for the first time as a *Laird*, or proprietor of land, he began thus: "Sir, the superiority of a country-gentleman over the people upon his estate is very agreeable: and he who says he does not feel it to be agreeable lies; for it must be agreeable to have a casual superiority over those who are by nature equal with us." BOSWELL: "Yet, Sir, we see great proprietors of land who prefer living in London." JOHN-SON: "Why, Sir, the pleasure of living in London, the intellectual superiority that is enjoyed there, may counterbalance the other. Besides, Sir, a man may prefer the state of the country-gentleman upon the whole, and yet there may never be a moment when he is willing to make the change to quit London for it." He said, "It is better to have five *per cent.* out of land, than out of money, because it is more secure; but the readiness of transfer, and promptness of interest, make many people rather choose the funds. Nay, there is another disadvantage belonging to land, compared with money. A man is not so much afraid of being a hard creditor, as of being a hard landlord." BOSWELL: "Because there is a sort of kindly connection between a landlord and his tenants." JOHNSON: "No, Sir: many landlords with us never see their tenants. It is because if a landlord drives away his tenants, he may not get others; whereas the demand for money is so great, it may always be lent."

He talked with regret and indignation of the factious opposition to Government at this time, and imputed it in a great measure to the Revolution. "Sir," said he, in a low voice, having come nearer to me, while his old prejudices seemed to be fomenting in his mind, "this Hanov'rian family is *isolée* here. They have no friends. Now the Stuarts had friends who stuck by them so late as 1745. When the right of the king is not revered, there will not be reverence for those appointed by the king."

His observation that the present royal family has no friends, has been too much justified by the very ungrateful behavior of many who were under great obligations to his Majesty; at the same time there are honorable exceptions: and the very next year after this conversation, and ever since, the King has had as extensive and generous support as ever was given to any monarch,

and has had the satisfaction of knowing that he was more and more endeared to his people.

He repeated to me his verses on Mr. Levett, with an emotion which gave them full effect; and then he was pleased to say: "You must be as much with me as you can. You have done me good. You cannot think how much better I am, since you came in."

He sent a message to acquaint Mrs. Thrale that I was arrived. I had not seen her since her husband's death. She soon appeared, and favored me with an invitation to stay to dinner, which I accepted. There was no other company but herself and three of her daughters, Dr. Johnson, and I. She too said, she was very glad I was come, for she was going to Bath, and should have been sorry to leave Dr. Johnson before I came. This seemed to be attentive and kind; and I who had not been informed of any change, imagined all to be as well as formerly. He was little inclined to talk at dinner, and went to sleep after it; but when he joined us in the drawing-room, he seemed revived, and was again himself.

Talking of conversation, he said: "There must, in the first place, be knowledge, there must be materials; in the second place, there must be a command of words; in the third place, there must be imagination, to place things in such views as they are not commonly seen in; and in the fourth place, there must be presence of mind, and a resolution that it is not to be overcome by failures; this last is an essential requisite; for want of it many people do not excel in conversation. Now *I* want it; I throw up the game upon losing a trick." I wondered to hear him talk thus of himself, and said, "I do not know, Sir, how this may be; but I am sure you beat other people's cards out of their hands." I doubt whether he heard this remark. While he went on talking triumphantly, I was fixed in admiration, and said to Mrs. Thrale, "O, for short-hand to take this down!"—"You'll carry it all in your head," said she; "a long head is as good as short-hand."

It has been observed and wondered at, that Mr. Charles Fox never talked with any freedom in the presence of Dr. Johnson; though it is well known, and I myself can witness, that his conversation is various, fluent, and exceedingly agreeable. Johnson's own experience, however, of that gentleman's reserve, was a sufficient reason for his going on thus: "Fox never talks in private company; not from any determination not to talk, but

because he has not the first motion. A man who is used to the applause of the House of Commons, has no wish for that of a private company. A man accustomed to throw for a thousand pounds, if set down to throw for sixpence, would not be at the pains to count his dice. Burke's talk is the ebullition of his mind; he does not talk from a desire of distinction, but because his mind is full."

He thus curiously characterized one of our old acquaintance: "[Sheridan] is a good man, Sir; but he is a vain man and a liar. He, however, only tells lies of vanity; of victories, for instance, in conversation, which never happened." This alluded to a story which I had repeated from that gentleman, to entertain Johnson with its wild bravado: "This Johnson, Sir," said he, "whom you are all afraid of, will shrink, if you come close to him in argument and roar as loud as he. He once maintained the paradox, that there is no beauty but in utility. 'Sir,' said I, 'what say you to the peacock's tail, which is one of the most beautiful objects in nature, but would have as much utility if its feathers were all of one color?' He *felt* what I thus produced, and had recourse to his usual expedient, ridicule; exclaiming, 'A peacock has a tail, and a fox has a tail;' and then he burst out into a laugh. 'Well, Sir,' said I, with a strong voice, looking him full in the face, 'you have unkennelled your fox; pursue him if you dare.' He had not a word to say, Sir." Johnson told me, that this was fiction from beginning to end.¹

After musing for some time, he said, "I wonder how I should have any enemies; for I do harm to nobody."² BOSWELL: "In the first place, Sir, you will be pleased to recollect, that you set out with attacking the Scotch; so you got a whole nation for your enemies." JOHNSON: "Why, I own, that by my definition of

¹ Were I to insert all the stories which have been told of the contests boldly maintained with him, imaginary victories obtained over him, of reducing him to silence, and of making him own that his antagonist had the better of him in argument, my volumes would swell to an immoderate size. One instance, I find, has circulated both in conversation and in print; that when he would not allow the Scotch writers to have merit, the late Dr. Rose, of Chiswick, asserted that he could name one Scotch writer, whom Dr. Johnson himself would allow to have written better than any man of the age; and upon Johnson's asking who it was, answered, "Lord Bute, when he signed the warrant for your pension." Upon which, Johnson, struck with the repartee, acknowledged that this *was* true. When I mentioned it to Johnson, "Sir," said he, "if Rose said this, I never heard it." —B.

² This reflection was very natural in a man of a good heart, who was not conscious of any ill will to mankind, though the sharp sayings which were sometimes produced by his discrimination and vivacity, which he perhaps did not recollect, were, I am afraid, too often remembered with resentment." —B.

*oats*¹ I meant to vex them." BOSWELL: "Pray, Sir, can you trace the cause of your antipathy to the Scotch?" JOHNSON: "I can not, Sir." BOSWELL: "Old Mr. Sheridan says, it was because they sold Charles the First." JOHNSON: "Then, Sir, old Mr. Sheridan has found out a very good reason."

Surely the most obstinate and sulky nationality, the most determined aversion to this great and good man, must be cured when he is seen thus playing with one of his prejudices, of which he candidly admitted that he could not tell the reason. It was, however, probably owing to his having had in his view the worst part of the Scottish nation, the needy adventurers, many of whom he thought were advanced above their merits by means which he did not approve. Had he in his early life been in Scotland, and seen the worthy, sensible, independent gentlemen, who live rationally and hospitably at home, he never could have entertained such unfavorable and unjust notions of his fellow-subjects. And accordingly we find, that when he did visit Scotland in the latter period of his life, he was fully sensible of all that it deserved, as I have already pointed out, when speaking of his "Journey to the Western Islands."

Next day, Saturday, March 22, I found him still at Mrs. Thrale's, but he told me that he was to go to his own house in the afternoon. He was better, but I perceived he was an unruly patient, for Sir Lucas Pepys, who visited him while I was with him said, "If you were *tractable*, Sir, I should prescribe for you."

I related to him a remark which a respectable friend had made to me, upon the then state of Government, when those who had been long in Opposition had attained to power, as it was supposed, against the inclination of the Sovereign.² "You need not be uneasy," said this gentleman, "about the King. He laughs at them all; he plays them one against another." JOHNSON: "Don't think so, Sir. The King is as much oppressed as a man can be. If he plays them one against another, he *wins* nothing."

I had paid a visit to General Oglethorpe in the morning, and was told by him that Dr. Johnson saw company on Saturday evenings, and he would meet me at Johnson's that night. When I

¹ A grain which in England is generally given to horses, but in Scotland supports the people.—Johnson's Dictionary.

² Lord North's Ministry lasted from 1770 to March, 1782. It was followed by the Rockingham Ministry, (March to July), and the Shelburne Ministry, (July, 1782–April, 1783), which in its turn was at this very time giving way to the Coalition or Portland Ministry, (April 5–Dec. 18, 1783), to be followed by the Pitt Administration.

mentioned this to Johnson, not doubting that it would please him, as he had a great value for Oglethorpe, the fretfulness of his disease unexpectedly showed itself; his anger suddenly kindled, and he said, with vehemence, "Did not you tell him not to come? Am I to be *hunted* in this manner?" I satisfied him that I could not divine that the visit would not be convenient, and that I certainly could not take it upon me of my own accord to forbid the General.

I found Dr. Johnson in the evening in Mrs. Williams's room, at tea and coffee with her and Mrs. Desmoulins, who were also both ill; it was a sad scene, and he was not in a very good humor. He said of a performance that had lately come out: "Sir, if you should search all the madhouses in England, you would not find ten men who would write so, and think it sense."

I was glad when General Oglethorpe's arrival was announced, and we left the ladies. Dr. Johnson attended him in the parlor, and was as courteous as ever. The General said, he was busy reading the writers of the Middle Age. Johnson said they were very curious. OGLETHORPE: "The House of Commons has usurped the power of the nation's money, and used it tyrannically. Government is now carried on by corrupt influence, instead of the inherent right in the king." JOHNSON: "Sir, the want of inherent right in the king occasions all this disturbance. What we did at the Revolution was necessary: but it broke our constitution."¹ OGLETHORPE: "My father did not think it necessary."

On Sunday, March 23, I breakfasted with Dr. Johnson, who seemed much relieved, having taken opium the night before. He, however, protested against it, as a remedy that should be given with the utmost reluctance, and only in extreme necessity. I mentioned how commonly it was used in Turkey, and that therefore it could not be so pernicious as he apprehended. He grew warm, and said: "Turks take opium, and Christians take opium; but Russel, in his account of Aleppo, tells us, that it is as disgraceful in Turkey to take too much opium, as it is with us to get drunk. Sir, it is amazing how things are exaggerated. A gentleman was lately telling in a company where I was present, that in France as soon as a man of fashion marries, he takes an opera-

¹ I have in my "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides," [p. 200, Sept. 13] fully expressed my sentiments upon this subject. The Revolution was *necessary*, but not a subject for *glory*; because it for a long time blasted the generous feelings of *loyalty*. And now, when by the benignant effect of time the present Royal Family are established in our *affections*, how unwise is it to revive by celebrations the memory of a shock, which it would surely have been better that our constitution had not required. — B.



GENERAL OGLETHORPE.

girl into keeping; and this he mentioned as a general custom. 'Pray, Sir,' said I, 'how many opera-girls may there be?' He answered, 'About fourscore.' — 'Well then, Sir,' said I, 'you see there can be no more than fourscore men of fashion who can do this.'"

Mrs. Desmoulins made tea; and she and I talked before him upon a topic which he had once borne patiently from me when we were by ourselves, — his not complaining of the world, because he was not called to some great office, nor had attained to great wealth. He flew into a violent passion, I confess with some justice, and commanded us to have done: "Nobody," said he, "has a right to talk in this manner, to bring before a man his own character, and the events of his life, when he does not choose it should be done. I never have sought the world; the world was not to seek me. It is rather wonderful that so much has been done for me. All the complaints which are made of the world are unjust. I never knew a man of merit neglected; it was generally by his own fault that he failed of success. A man may hide his head in a hole: he may go into the country, and publish a book now and then, which nobody reads, and then complain he is neglected. There is no reason why any person should exert himself for a man who has written a good book: he has not written it for any individual. I may as well make a present to a postman who brings me a letter. When patronage was limited, an author expected to find a Mæcenas, and complained if he did not find one. Why should he complain? This Mæcenas has others as good as he, or others who have got the start of him." BOSWELL: "But surely, Sir, you will allow that there are men of merit at the bar, who never get practice." JOHNSON: "Sir, you are sure that practice is got from an opinion that the person employed deserves it best; so that if a man of merit at the bar does not get practice, it is from error, not from injustice. He is not neglected. A horse that is brought to market may not be bought, though he is a very good horse; but that is from ignorance, not from intention."

There was in this discourse much novelty, ingenuity, and discrimination, such as is seldom to be found. Yet I cannot help thinking that men of merit, who have no success in life, may be forgiven for *lamenting*, if they are not allowed to *complain*. They may consider it as *hard* that their merit should not have its suitable distinction. Though there is no intentional injustice towards them on the part of the world, their merit not having been per-

ceived, they may yet repine against *fortune* or *fate*, or by whatever name they choose to call the supposed mythological power of *Destiny*. It has, however, occurred to me as a consolatory thought, that men of merit should consider thus: How much harder would it be, if the same persons had both all the merit and all the prosperity. Would not this be a miserable distribution for the poor dunces? Would men of merit exchange their intellectual superiority, and the enjoyments arising from it, for external distinction and the pleasures of wealth? If they would not, let them not envy others, who are poor where they are rich, a compensation which is made to them. Let them look inwards and be satisfied; recollecting with conscious pride what Virgil finely says of *Corycius Senex*, and which I have, in another place,¹ with truth and sincerity applied to Mr. Burke.

“Regum æquabat opes animis.”²

On the subject of the right employment of wealth, Johnson observed: “A man cannot make a bad use of his money, so far as regards society, if he do not hoard it; for if he either spends it or lends it out, society has the benefit. It is in general better to spend money than to give it away; for industry is more promoted by spending money than by giving it away. A man who spends his money is sure he is doing good with it: he is not sure when he gives it away. A man who spends ten thousand a year will do more good than a man who spends two thousand and gives away eight.”

In the evening I came to him again. He was somewhat fretful from his illness. A gentleman³ asked him whether he had been abroad to-day. “Don’t talk so childishly,” said he. “You may as well ask if I hanged myself to-day.” I mentioned politics. JOHNSON: “Sir, I’d as soon have a man to break my bones as talk to me of public affairs, internal or external. I have lived to see things all as bad as they can be.”

Having mentioned his friend, the second Lord Southwell, he said: “Lord Southwell was the highest bred man without insolence, that I ever was in company with; the most *qualified* I ever saw. Lord Orrery was not dignified; Lord Chesterfield was, but

¹ “Letter to the People of Scotland against the attempt to diminish the number of the Lords of Session, 1785.” — B.

² “Georgics,” iv. 132.

³ Probably Boswell himself.

he was insolent. Lord ——¹ is a man of coarse manners, but a man of abilities and information. I do n't say he is a man I would set at the head of a nation, though perhaps he may be as good as the next Prime Minister that comes; but he is a man to be at the head of a club; I do n't say *our* CLUB; for there's no such club." BOSWELL: "But, Sir, was he not once a factious man?" JOHNSON: "O yes, Sir; as factious a fellow as could be found; one who was for sinking us all into the mob." BOSWELL: "How then, Sir, did he get into favor with the King?" JOHNSON: "Because, Sir, I suppose he promised the King to do whatever the King pleased."

He said: "Goldsmith's blundering speech to Lord Shelburne, which has been so often mentioned, and which he really did make to him, was only a blunder in emphasis: 'I wonder they should call your Lordship *Malagrida*, for *Malagrida* was a very good man;' meant, I wonder they should use *Malagrida* as a term of reproach."²

Soon after this time I had an opportunity of seeing, by means of one of his friends,³ a proof that his talents, as well as his obliging service to authors, were ready as ever. He had revised "The Village," an admirable poem by the Reverend Mr. Crabbe. Its sentiments as to the false notions of rustic happiness and rustic virtue, were quite congenial with his own; and he had taken the trouble not only to suggest slight corrections and variations, but to furnish some lines, when he thought he could give the writer's meaning better than in the words of the manuscript.⁴

¹ Lord Shelburne, who with Pitt for his Chancellor of the Exchequer, was now head of the short-lived Ministry of 1782, which was ousted by the Coalition shortly after this conversation.

² *Malagrida* was a Jesuit who was put to death at Lisbon in 1761 on suspicion of having sanctioned, in his capacity of confessor, an attempt to assassinate King Joseph of Portugal. "His name," writes Wraxall in his "Memoirs," "is become proverbial among us to express duplicity." It was first applied to Lord Shelburne in a squib attributed to Wilkes. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Most likely Reynolds who introduced Crabbe to Johnson. — *Dr. Hill*.

⁴ I shall give an instance, marking the original by Roman, and Johnson's substitution in italic characters:

"In fairer scenes, where peaceful pleasures spring,
Tityrus, the pride of Mantuan swains, might sing;
But charmed by him, or smitten with his views,
Shall modern poets court the Mantuan muse?
From Truth and Nature shall we widely stray,
Where Fancy leads, or Virgil led the way?"

"On Mincio's banks, in Cæsar's bounteous reign,
If Tityrus found the golden age again,
Must sleepy bards the flattering dream prolong,

On Sunday, March 30, I found him at home in the evening, and had the pleasure to meet with Dr. Brocklesby, whose reading, and knowledge of life, and good spirits, supply him with a never-failing source of conversation. He mentioned a respectable gentleman, who became extremely penurious near the close of his life. Johnson said there must have been a degree of madness about him. "Not at all, Sir," said Dr. Brocklesby, "his judgment was entire." Unluckily, however, he mentioned that although he had a fortune of twenty-seven thousand pounds, he denied himself many comforts, from an apprehension that he could not afford them. "Nay, Sir," cried Johnson, "when the judgment is so disturbed that a man cannot count, that is pretty well."

I shall here insert a few of Johnson's sayings, without the formality of dates, as they have no reference to any particular time or place.

"The more a man extends and varies his acquaintance the better." This, however, was meant with a just restriction; for he on another occasion said to me, "Sir, a man may be so much of everything, that he is nothing of anything."

"Raising the wages of day-laborers is wrong; for it does not make them live better, but only makes them idler, and idleness is a very bad thing for human nature."

"It is a very good custom to keep a journal for a man's own use; he may write upon a card a day all that is necessary to be written, after he has had experience of life. At first there is a great deal to be written, because there is a great deal of novelty; but when once a man has settled his opinions, there is seldom much to be set down."

"There is nothing wonderful in the Journal which we see Swift kept in London, for it contains slight topics, and it might soon be written."

I praised the accuracy of an account-book of a lady whom I mentioned. JOHNSON: "Keeping accounts, Sir, is of no use when a man is spending his own money, and has nobody to whom he is to account. You won't eat less beef to-day, because you have written down what it cost yesterday." I mentioned another lady

Mechanic echoes of the Mantuan song?

From Truth and Nature shall we widely stray,

Where Virgil, not where Fancy, leads the way?"

Here we find Johnson's poetical and critical powers undiminished. I must, however, observe, that the aids he gave to this poem, as to "The Traveller," and "Deserted Village," of Goldsmith, were so small as by no means to impair the distinguished merit of the author. — B.

who thought as he did, so that her husband could not get her to keep an account of the expense of the family, as she thought it enough that she never exceeded the sum allowed her. JOHNSON: "Sir, it is fit she should keep an account, because her husband wishes it; but I do not see its use." I maintained that keeping an account had this advantage, that it satisfies a man that his money has not been lost or stolen, which he might sometimes be apt to imagine, were there no written state of his expense; and besides, a calculation of economy, so as not to exceed one's income, can not be made without a view of the different articles in figures, that one may see how to retrench in some particulars less necessary than others. This he did not attempt to answer.

Talking of an acquaintance of ours,¹ whose narratives, which abounded in curious and interesting topics, were unhappily found to be very fabulous; I mentioned Lord Mansfield's having said to me, "Suppose we believe one *half* of what he tells." JOHNSON: "Ay; but we do not know *which* half to believe. By his lying we lose not only our reverence for him, but all comfort in his conversation." BOSWELL: "May we not take it as amusing fiction?" JOHNSON: "Sir, the misfortune is, that you will insensibly believe as much of it as you incline to believe." It is remarkable, that notwithstanding their congeniality in politics, he never was acquainted with a late eminent noble judge, whom I have heard speak of him as a writer, with great respect.² Johnson, I know not upon what degree of investigation, entertained no exalted opinion of his Lordship's intellectual character. Talking of him to me one day, he said, "It is wonderful, Sir, with how little real superiority of mind men can make an eminent figure in public life." He expressed himself to the same purpose concerning another law-lord, who, it seems, once took a fancy to associate with the wits of London; but with so little success, that Foote said, "What can he mean by coming among us? He is not only dull himself, but the cause of dullness in others." Trying him by the test of his colloquial powers, Johnson had found him very defective. He once said to Sir Joshua Reynolds, "This man now has been ten years about town, and has made nothing of it;" meaning as a companion.³ He said to me, "I never heard any-

¹ George Steevens.

² Lord Mansfield; Boswell using *late* in the sense of *in retirement*, for Mansfield was alive when the *Life* was published, having retired from the Bench three years before (1788). — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Knowing as well as I do what precision and elegance of oratory his Lordship can display, I cannot but suspect that his unfavorable appearance in a social circle,

thing from him in company that was at all striking, and depend upon it, Sir, it is when you come close to a man in conversation that you discover what his real abilities are: to make a speech in a public assembly is a knack. Now I honor Thurlow, Sir; Thurlow is a fine fellow; he fairly puts his mind to yours."

After repeating to him some of his pointed, lively sayings, I said, "It is a pity, Sir, you do n't always remember your own good things, that you may have a laugh when you will." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, it is better that I forget them than that I may be reminded of them, and have a laugh on their being brought to my recollection."

When I recalled to him his having said as we sailed up Loch Lomond, 'that if he wore anything fine, it should be *very* fine;' I observed that all his thoughts were upon a great scale. JOHNSON: "Depend upon it, Sir, every man will have as fine a thing as he can get; as large a diamond for his ring." BOSWELL: "Pardon me, Sir: a man of a narrow mind will not think of it, a slight trinket will satisfy him:

" 'Nec sufferre queat majoris pondera gemmæ.' " ¹

I told him I should send him some "Essays" which I had written,² which I hoped he would be so good as to read, and pick out the good ones. JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, send me only the good ones; do n't make *me* pick them."

I heard him once say, "Though the proverb '*Nullum numen abest, si sit prudentia*,'³ does not always prove true, we may be certain of the converse of it, *Nullum numen adest, si sit imprudentia*."

Once, when Mr. Seward was going to Bath, and asked his commands, he said, "Tell Dr. Harrington that I wish he would publish another volume of the '*Nugæ antiquæ*';⁴ it is a very pretty book." Mr. Seward seconded this wish, and recommended to Dr. Harrington to dedicate it to Johnson, and take for his motto what Catullus says to Cornelius Nepos:

which drew such animadversions upon him, must be owing to a cold affectation of consequence, from being reserved and stiff. If it be so and he might be an agreeable man if he would, we cannot be sorry that he misses his aim.—B. No doubt Lord Loughborough (Wedderburne).—*Croker*.

¹ Juvenal: "Satires," l. 1. 29.

² Under the title of "The Hypochondriac." Seventy essays in the *London Magazine*, 1777–1783. See Vol. I., p. 28, note 1.

³ Juvenal: "Satires," x. l. 365.

⁴ It has since appeared.—B. A new and greatly improved edition of this very curious collection was published by Mr. Park in 1804, in two volumes octavo.—*Malone*.

" . . . namque tu solebas,
Meas esse aliquid putare NUGAS."

[*"Od."* i. 3.]

As a small proof of his kindliness and delicacy of feeling, the following circumstance may be mentioned: one evening when we were in the street together, and I told him I was going to sup at Mr. Beauclerk's, he said, "I'll go with you." After having walked part of the way, seeming to recollect something, he suddenly stopped and said, "I can not go, — but *I do not love Beauclerk the less.*"

On the frame of his portrait Mr. Beauclerk had inscribed,

" . . . Ingenium ingens
Inculto latet hoc sub corpore."

After Mr. Beauclerk's death, when it became Mr. Langton's property, he made the inscription be defaced. Johnson said complacently, "It was kind in you to take it off;" and then after a short pause added, "and not unkind in him to put it on."

He said, "How few of his friends' houses would a man choose to be at when he is sick!" He mentioned one or two. I recollect only Thrale's.

He observed: "There is a wicked inclination in most people to suppose an old man decayed in his intellects. If a young or middle-aged man, when leaving a company, does not recollect where he laid his hat, it is nothing; but if the same inattention is discovered in an old man, people will shrug up their shoulders, and say, 'His memory is going.'"

When I once talked to him of some of the sayings which everybody repeats, but nobody knows where to find, such as, *Quos DEUS vult perdere, prius dementat*;² he told me that he was once offered ten guineas to point out from whence *Semel insaniimus omnes* was taken. He could not do it; but many years afterwards met with it by chance in "Johannes Baptista Mantuanus."³

I am very sorry that I did not take a note of an eloquent argument in which he maintained that the situation of Prince of

¹ Horace: "Satires," i. 3, 33.

² The words are probably a rough translation from a fragment of Euripides. — *Dr. Hill.*

³ Baptista Mantuanus Carmelita: "Adolescentia seu Bucolica." Ecloga I., published 1498. Dr. Johnson declared that his works, though written in unclassic Latin, were read in English schools till the beginning of the 18th century.

Wales was the happiest of any person's in the kingdom, even beyond that of the Sovereign. I recollect only — the enjoyment of hope, — the high superiority of rank, without the anxious cares of government, — and a great degree of power, both from natural influence wisely used, and from the sanguine expectations of those who look forward to the chance of future favor.

Sir Joshua Reynolds communicated to me the following particulars :

Johnson thought the poems published as translations from Ossian had so little merit, that he said, "Sir, a man might write such stuff forever, if he would *abandon* his mind to it."

He said, "A man should pass a part of his time with the *laughers*, by which means anything ridiculous or particular about him might be presented to his view, and corrected." I observed, he must have been a bold laughter who would have ventured to tell Dr. Johnson of any of his particularities.¹

Having observed the vain ostentatious importance of many people in quoting the authority of dukes and lords, as having been in their company, he said, he went to the other extreme, and did not mention his authority when he should have done it, had it not been that of a duke or a lord.

Dr. Goldsmith said once to Dr. Johnson, that he wished for some additional members to the LITERARY CLUB, to give it an agreeable variety ; "for," said he, "there can now be nothing new among us ; we have travelled over one another's minds." Johnson seemed a little angry and said, "Sir, you have not travelled over *my* mind, I promise you." Sir Joshua, however, thought Goldsmith right, observing that : "When people have lived a great deal together, they know what each of them will say on every subject. A new understanding, therefore, is desirable ; because though it may only furnish the same sense upon a question which would have been furnished by those with whom we are accustomed to live, yet this sense will have a different coloring ; and coloring is of much effect in everything else as well as in painting."

Johnson used to say that he made it a constant rule to talk as well as he could both as to sentiment and expression, by which

¹ I am happy, however, to mention a pleasing instance of his enduring with great gentleness to hear one of his most striking particularities pointed out : Miss Hunter, a niece of his friend Christopher Smart, when a very young girl, struck by his extraordinary motions, said to him, "Pray, Dr. Johnson, why do you make such strange gestures?" — "From bad habit," he replied. "Do you, my dear, take care to guard against bad habits." This I was told by the young lady's brother at Margate.— B.

means, what had been originally effort became familiar and easy. The consequence of this, Sir Joshua observed, was, that his common conversation in all companies was such as to secure him universal attention, as something above the usual colloquial style was expected.

Yet, though Johnson had this habit in company, when another mode was necessary, in order to investigate truth, he could descend to a language intelligible to the meanest capacity. An instance of this was witnessed by Sir Joshua Reynolds, when they were present at an examination of a little blackguard boy by Mr. Saunders Welch, the late Westminster Justice. Welch, who imagined that he was exalting himself in Dr. Johnson's eyes by using big words, spoke in a manner that was utterly unintelligible to the boy; Dr. Johnson perceiving it, addressed himself to the boy, and changed the pompous phraseology into colloquial language. Sir Joshua Reynolds, who was much amused by this procedure, which seemed a kind of reversing of what might have been expected from the two men, took notice of it to Dr. Johnson, as they walked away by themselves. Johnson said that it was continually the case; and that he was always obliged to *translate* the justice's swelling diction (smiling) so that his meaning might be understood by the vulgar, from whom information was to be obtained.

Sir Joshua once observed to him that he had talked above the capacity of some people with whom they had been in company together. "No matter, Sir," said Johnson; "they consider it as a compliment to be talked to, as if they were wiser than they are. So true is this, Sir, that Baxter made it a rule in every sermon that he preached, to say something that was above the capacity of his audience."¹

Johnson's dexterity in retort, when he seemed to be driven to an extremity by his adversary, was very remarkable. Of his power in this respect, our common friend, Mr. Windham of Norfolk, has been pleased to furnish me with an eminent instance. However unfavorable to Scotland, he uniformly gave liberal praise to George Buchanan, as a writer. In a conversation concerning the literary merits of the two countries, in which Buchanan was introduced, a Scotchman, imagining that on this ground he should have an undoubted triumph over him, exclaimed, "Ah, Dr. Johnson, what

The justness of this remark is confirmed by the following story, for which I am indebted to Lord Elliot: A country parson, who was remarkable for quoting scraps of Latin in his sermons, having died, one of his parishoners was asked how he liked his successor; "He is a very good preacher," was his answer, "but no *latimer*." — B.

would you have said of Buchanan, had he been an Englishman?" — "Why, Sir," said Johnson, after a little pause, "I should *not* have said of Buchanan, had he been an *Englishman*, what I will now say of him as a *Scotchman*, — that he was the only man of genius his country ever produced."

And this brings to my recollection another instance of the same nature. I once reminded him that when Dr. Adam Smith was expatiating on the beauty of Glasgow, he had cut him short by saying, "Pray, Sir, have you ever seen Brentford?" and I took the liberty to add, "My dear Sir, surely that was *shocking*." — "Why, then, Sir," he replied, "you have never seen Brentford."

Though his usual phrase for conversation was *talk*, yet he made a distinction; for when he once told me that he dined the day before at a friend's house, with "a very pretty company;" and I asked him if there was good conversation, he answered, "No, Sir; we had *talk* enough, but no *conversation*; there was nothing *discussed*."

Talking of the success of the Scotch in London, he imputed it in a considerable degree to their spirit of nationality. "You know, Sir," said he, "that no Scotchman publishes a book, or has a play brought upon the stage, but there are five hundred people ready to applaud him."

He gave much praise to his friend, Dr. Burney's elegant and entertaining travels,¹ and told Mr. Seward that he had them in his eye, when writing his "Journey to the Western Islands of Scotland."

Such was his sensibility, and so much was he affected by pathetic poetry, that when he was reading Dr. Beattie's "Hermit," in my presence, it brought tears into his eyes.²

He disapproved much of mingling real facts with fiction. On this account he censured a book entitled "Love and Madness."³

Mr. Hoole told him, he was born in Moorfields, and had received part of his early instruction in Grub Street. "Sir," said Johnson, smiling, "you have been *regularly* educated." Having asked who was his instructor, and Mr. Hoole having answered,

¹ "The Present State of Music in France and Italy," 1771, and "The Present State of Music in Germany," 1773.

² The particular passage which excited the strong emotion, was, as I have heard from my father, the third stanza, "'T is Night," &c. — *J. Boswell, jun.*

³ "Love and Madness" was written by the Rev. Sir Herbert Croft, author of the "Life of Young" in the "Lives of the Poets." It purports to be a correspondence between Hackman and the Miss Ray whom he murdered (see *ante*, p. 257). Its only interest lies in the fact that the strange story of Chatterton's life and death was first published in it.

"My uncle, Sir, who was a tailor;" Johnson, recollecting himself, said, "Sir, I knew him; we called him the *metaphysical tailor*. He was of a club in Old Street, with me and George Psalmanazer, and some others: but pray, Sir, was he a good tailor?" Mr. Hoole having answered that he believed he was too mathematical, and used to draw squares and triangles on his shop-board, so that he did not excel in the cut of a coat; "I am sorry for it," said Johnson, "for I would have every man to be master of his own business."

In pleasant reference to himself and Mr. Hoole as brother authors, he often said, "Let you and I, Sir, go together, and eat a beef-steak in Grub Street."

Sir William Chambers, that great architect,¹ whose works show a sublimity of genius, and who is esteemed by all who know him, for his social, hospitable, and generous qualities, submitted the manuscript of his "Chinese Architecture," to Dr. Johnson's perusal. Johnson was much pleased with it, and said, "It wants no addition nor correction, but a few lines of introduction;" which he furnished, and Sir William adopted.²

He said to Sir William Scott: "The age is running mad after innovation; and all the business of the world is to be done in a new way; men are to be hanged in a new way; Tyburn itself is not safe from the fury of innovation."³ It having been argued that this was an improvement—"No, Sir," said he, eagerly, "it is *not* an improvement; they object, that the old method drew together a number of spectators. Sir, executions are intended to draw spectators. If they do not draw spectators they do not answer their purpose. The old method was most satisfactory to all parties; the public was gratified by a procession; the criminal

¹ The Honorable Horace Walpole, late Earl of Oxford, thus bears testimony to this gentleman's merit as a writer: "Mr. Chambers's '*Treatise on Civil Architecture*,' is the most sensible book, and the most exempt from prejudices, that ever was written on that science." "Preface to *Anecdotes of Painting in England*." — B.

² The introductory lines are these: "It is difficult to avoid praising, too little or too much. The boundless panegyrics which have been lavished upon the Chinese learning, policy, and arts, show with what power novelty attracts regard, and how naturally esteem swells into admiration. I am far from desiring to be numbered among the exaggerators of Chinese excellence. I consider them as great, or wise, only in comparison with the nations that surround them; and have no intention to place them in competition either with the ancients or with the moderns of this part of the world; yet they must be allowed to claim our notice as a distinct and very singular race of men: as the inhabitants of a region divided by its situation from all civilized countries, who have formed their own manners, and invented their own arts, without the assistance of example." — B.

³ The last execution at Tyburn was on Nov. 7, 1783; the first at Newgate was a month later (Dec. 9) when ten men were hanged. — *Gent. Mag.* 1783.

was supported by it. Why is all this to be swept away?" I perfectly agree with Dr. Johnson upon this head, and am persuaded that executions now, the solemn procession being discontinued, have not nearly the effect which they formerly had. Magistrates, both in London and elsewhere, have, I am afraid, in this had too much regard to their own ease.

Of Dr. Hurd, Bishop of Worcester, Johnson said to a friend, "Hurd, Sir, is one of a set of men who account for everything systematically; for instance, it has been a fashion to wear scarlet breeches; these men would tell you that, according to causes and effects, no other wear could at that time have been chosen." He, however, said of him at another time to the same gentleman, "Hurd, Sir, is a man whose acquaintance is a valuable acquisition."

That learned and ingenious prelate it is well known published at one period of his life "Moral and Political Dialogues," with a wofully Whiggish cast. Afterwards his Lordship, having thought better, came to see his error, and republished the work with a more constitutional spirit. Johnson, however, was unwilling to allow him full credit for his political conversion. I remember when his Lordship declined the honor of being Archbishop of Canterbury, Johnson said, "I am glad he did not go to Lambeth; for, after all, I fear he is a Whig in his heart."

Johnson's attention to precision and clearness in expression was very remarkable. He disapproved of a parenthesis; and I believe in all his voluminous writings, not half a dozen of them will be found. He never used the phrases *the former* and *the latter*, having observed that they often occasioned obscurity; he therefore contrived to construct his sentences so as not to have occasion for them, and would even rather repeat the same words, in order to avoid them. Nothing is more common than to mistake surnames, when we hear them carelessly uttered for the first time. To prevent this, he used not only to pronounce them slowly and distinctly, but to take the trouble of spelling them; a practice which I have often followed, and which I wish were general.

Such was the heat and irritability of his blood, that not only did he pare his nails to the quick; but scraped the joints of his fingers with a penknife, till they seemed quite red and raw.

The heterogeneous composition of human nature was remarkably exemplified in Johnson. His liberality in giving his money to persons in distress was extraordinary. Yet there lurked about him a propensity to paltry saving. One day I owned to him

that "I was occasionally troubled with a fit of *narrowness*." — "Why, Sir," said he, "so am I. *But I do not tell it.*" He has now and then borrowed a shilling of me; and when I asked him for it again, seemed to be rather out of humor. A droll little circumstance once occurred: as if he meant to reprimand my minute exactness as a creditor, he thus addressed me; "Boswell, *lend me sixpence not to be repaid.*"

This great man's attention to small things was very remarkable. As an instance of it, he one day said to me: "Sir, when you get silver in change for a guinea, look carefully at it: you may find some curious piece of coin."

Though a stern, *true-born Englishman*, and fully prejudiced against all other nations, he had discernment enough to see, and candor enough to censure, the cold reserve too common among Englishmen towards strangers: "Sir," said he, "two men of any other nation who are shown into a room together, at a house where they are both visitors, will immediately find some conversation. But two Englishmen will probably go each to a different window, and remain in obstinate silence. Sir, we as yet do not enough understand the common rights of humanity."

Johnson was at a certain period of his life a good deal with the Earl of Shelburne,¹ now Marquis of Lansdowne, as he doubtless could not but have a due value for that nobleman's activity of mind and uncommon acquisitions of important knowledge, however much he might disapprove of other parts of his Lordship's character, which were widely different from his own.

Morice Morgann, Esq., author of the very ingenious "Essay on the Character of Falstaff,"² being a particular friend of his Lordship, had once an opportunity of entertaining Johnson for a day or two at Wycombe, when this Lord was absent, and by him I have been favored with two anecdotes.

One is not a little to the credit of Johnson's candor. Mr. Morgann and he had a dispute pretty late at night, in which Johnson would not give up, though he had the wrong side, and in short, both kept the field. Next morning, when they met in the breakfast room, Dr. Johnson accosted Mr. Morgann thus: "Sir, I have been thinking on our dispute last night. *You were in the right.*"

¹ Johnson knew Lord Shelburne as early as 1778; he was also intimate with his brother. — *Dr. Hill.*

² Johnson being asked his opinion of this Essay, answered: "Why, Sir, we shall have the man come forth again; and as he has proved Falstaff to be no coward, he may prove Iago to be a very good character." — *B.*

The other was as follows: Johnson, for sport perhaps, or from the spirit of contradiction, eagerly maintained that Derrick had merit as a writer. Mr. Morgann argued with him directly in vain. At length he had recourse to this device. "Pray, Sir," said he, "whether do you reckon Derrick or Smart the best poet?" Johnson at once felt himself roused; and answered, "Sir, there is no settling the point of precedency between a louse and a flea."¹

Once, when checking my boasting too frequently of myself in company, he said to me: "Boswell, you often vaunt so much as to provoke ridicule. You put me in mind of a man who was standing in the kitchen of an inn with his back to the fire, and thus accosted the person next to him, 'Do you know, Sir, who I am?' — 'No, Sir,' said the other, 'I have not that advantage.' — 'Sir,' said he, 'I am the *great* TWALMLEY, who invented the New Floodgate Iron."² The Bishop of Killaloe, on my repeating the story to him, defended TWALMLEY by observing that he was entitled to the epithet of *great*; for Virgil in his group of worthies in the Elysian fields —

Hic manus, ob patriam pugnando vulnere passi, &c.

mentions

Inventas aut qui vitam excoluere per artes.³

He was pleased to say to me one morning when we were left alone in his study, "Boswell, I think I am easier with you than with almost any body."

He would not allow Mr. David Hume any credit for his political principles, though similar to his own; saying of him, "Sir, he was a Tory by chance."

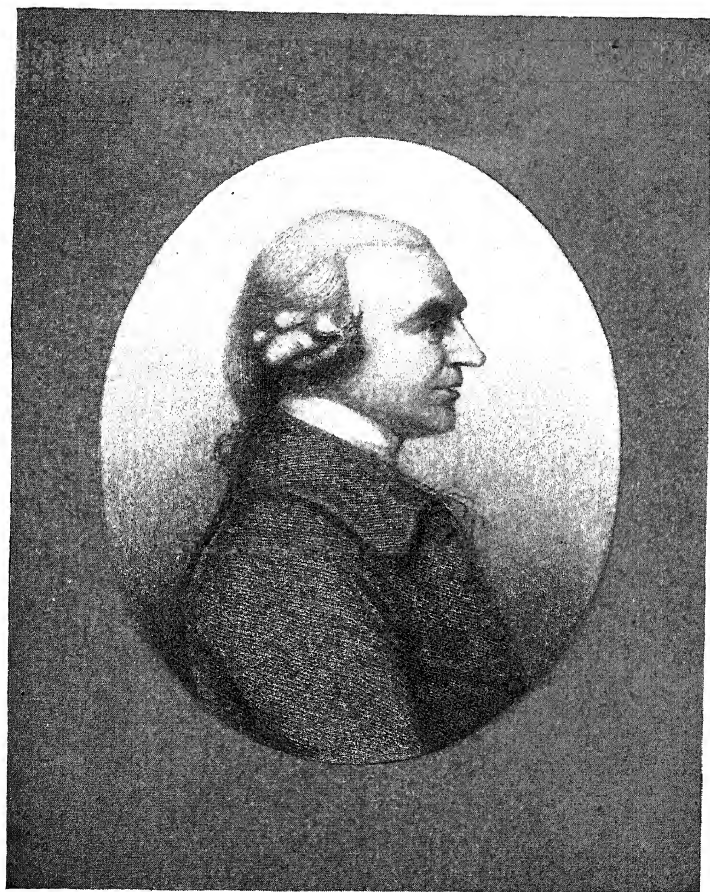
His acute observation of human life made him remark, "Sir, there is nothing by which a man exasperates most people more, than by displaying a superior ability of brilliancy in conversation. They seem pleased at the time; but their envy makes them curse him at their hearts."

My readers will probably be surprised to hear that the great Dr. Johnson could amuse himself with so slight and playful a species of composition as a *charade*. I have recovered one which he

¹ In *The European Magazine* (Sept., 1796) the comparison is said to have been made between Derrick and Boyse, which, as Croker observes, is more probable.

² What the *great* TWALMLEY was so proud of having invented, was neither more nor less than a kind of box-iron for smoothing linen. — B.

³ *Æneid*, vi. l. 660.



Rev. Owen Cambridge

made on Dr. *Barnard*, now Lord Bishop of Killaloe; who has been pleased for many years to treat me with so much intimacy and social ease, that I may presume to call him not only my Right Reverend, but my very dear friend. I therefore with peculiar pleasure give to the world a just and elegant compliment thus paid to his Lordship by Johnson.

CHARADE.

"My *first* shuts out thieves from your house or your room,
My *second* expresses a Syrian perfume.
My *whole* is a man in whose converse is shar'd,
The strength of a Bar and the sweetness of Nard."

Johnson asked Richard Owen Cambridge, Esq., if he had read the Spanish translation of Sallust, said to be written by a Prince of Spain,¹ with the assistance of his tutor who is professedly the author of a treatise annexed on the Phœnician language.

Mr. Cambridge commended the work, particularly as he thought the translator understood his author better than is commonly the case with translators; but said he was disappointed in the purpose for which he borrowed the book; to see whether a Spaniard could be better furnished with inscriptions from monuments, coins, or other antiquities, which he might more probably find on a coast so immediately opposite to Carthage, than the antiquaries of any other countries. JOHNSON: "I am very sorry you were² not gratified in your expectations." CAMBRIDGE: "The language would have been of little use, as there is no history existing in that tongue to balance the partial accounts which the Roman writers have left us." JOHNSON: "No, Sir. They have not been *partial*, they have told their own story, without shame or regard to equitable treatment of their injured enemy; they had no compunction, no feeling for a Carthaginian. Why, Sir, they would never have borne Virgil's description of Æneas's treatment of Dido, if she had not been a Carthaginian."

I gratefully acknowledge this and other communications from Mr. Cambridge, whom, if a beautiful villa on the banks of the Thames a few miles distant from London, a numerous and excellent library which he accurately knows and reads, a choice collection of pictures which he understands and relishes, an easy fortune, an amiable family, an extensive circle of friends and

¹ Don Gabriel, third son of the King of Spain.

² Boswell reports Dr. Johnson as saying, You *was*, but Dr. Hill doubts if Dr. Johnson ever so expressed himself.

acquaintance, distinguished by rank, fashion and genius, a literary fame various, elegant, and still increasing, colloquial talents rarely to be found, and with all these means of happiness enjoying, when well advanced in years, health and vigor of body, serenity and animation of mind, do not entitle to be addressed *fortunate senex* !¹ I know not to whom, in any age, that expression could with propriety have been used. Long may he live to hear and to feel it.²

Johnson's love of little children, which he discovered upon all occasions, calling them "pretty dears," and giving them sweetmeats, was an undoubted proof of the real humanity and gentleness of his disposition.

His uncommon kindness to his servants, and serious concern, not only for their comfort in this world, but their happiness in the next, was another unquestionable evidence of what all, who were intimately acquainted with him, knew to be true.

Nor would it be just, under this head, to omit the fondness which he showed for animals which he had taken under his protection. I never shall forget the indulgence with which he treated Hodge, his cat; for whom he himself used to go out and buy oysters, lest the servants having that trouble should take a dislike to the poor creature. I am, unluckily, one of those who have an antipathy to a cat, so that I am uneasy when in the room with one; and I own, I frequently suffered a good deal from the presence of the same Hodge. I recollect him one day scrambling up Dr. Johnson's breast apparently with much satisfaction, while my friend, smiling and half-whistling, rubbed down his back, and pulled him by the tail; and when I observed he was a fine cat, saying, "Why, yes, Sir, but I have had cats whom I liked better than this;" and then, as if perceiving Hodge to be out of countenance, adding, "but he is a very fine cat, a very fine cat indeed."

This reminds me of the ludicrous account which he gave Mr. Langton, of the despicable state of a young gentleman of good family. "Sir, when I heard of him last he was running about town shooting cats." And then in a sort of kindly revery, he bethought himself of his own favorite cat, and said, "But Hodge shan't be shot: no, no, Hodge shall not be shot."

He thought Mr. Beauclerk made a shrewd and judicious remark to Mr. Langton, who, after having been for the first time in

¹ Virgil: "Eclogues," i. 47.

² Mr. Cambridge enjoyed all the blessings here enumerated for many years after this passage was written. He died at his seat near Twickenham, Sept. 17, 1802, in his eighty-sixth year.—*Malone*.

company with a well-known wit about town, was warmly admiring and praising him, — "See him again," said Beauclerk.

His respect for the hierarchy, and particularly the dignitaries of the Church, has been more than once exhibited in the course of this work. Mr. Seward saw him presented to the Archbishop of York, and described his *bow to an* ARCHBISHOP, as such a studied elaboration of homage, such an extension of limb, such a flexion of body, as have seldom or ever been equalled.

I cannot help mentioning with much regret, that by my own negligence I lost an opportunity of having the history of my family from its founder Thomas Boswell, in 1504, recorded and illustrated by Johnson's pen. Such was his goodness to me, that when I presumed to solicit him for so great a favor, he was pleased to say, "Let me have all the materials you can collect, and I will do it both in Latin and English; then let it be printed, and copies of it to be deposited in various places for security and preservation." I can now only do the best I can to make up for this loss, keeping my great master steadily in view. Family histories, like the *imagines majorum* of the ancients, excite to virtue; and I wish that they who really have blood, would be more careful to trace and ascertain its course. Some have affected to laugh at the history of the House of Yvery;¹ it would be well if many others would transmit their pedigrees to posterity, with the same accuracy and generous zeal, with which the noble lord who compiled that work has honored and perpetuated his ancestry.

On Thursday, April 10, I introduced to him, at his house in Bolt Court, the Honorable and Reverend William Stuart, son of the Earl of Bute; a gentleman truly worthy of being known to Johnson; being, with all the advantages of high birth, learning, travel, and elegant manners, an exemplary parish priest in every respect.

After some compliments on both sides, the tour which Johnson and I had made to the Hebrides was mentioned. JOHNSON: "I got an acquisition of more ideas by it than by anything that I remember. I saw quite a different system of life." BOSWELL: "You would not like to make the same journey again?" JOHN-SON: "Why no, Sir, not the same: it is a tale told. Gravina, an Italian critic, observes, that every man desires to see that of which he has read; but no man desires to read an account of

¹ A genealogy of the Perceval family written by Lord Perceval, afterwards John Earl of Egmont: "Strange, and I think in a great measure fabulous," says Croker. "It cost him 3000*l.* and was so ridiculous," says Horace Walpole, (quoted by Dr. Hill) "that he has since tried to suppress all the copies."

what he has seen : so much does description fall short of reality. Description only excites curiosity : seeing satisfies it. Other people may go and see the Hebrides." BOSWELL : "I should wish to go and see some country totally different from what I have been used to ; such as Turkey, where religion and everything else are different." JOHNSON : "Yes, Sir ; there are two subjects of curiosity, — the Christian world, and the Mahometan world. All the rest may be considered as barbarous." BOSWELL : "Pray, Sir, is the 'Turkish Spy' a genuine book?" JOHNSON : "No, Sir. Mrs. Manley, in her 'Life,' says, that her father wrote the first two volumes : and in another book, 'Dunton's Life and Errors,' we find that the rest was written by one *Sault*, at two guineas a sheet, under the direction of Dr. Midgeley."¹

BOSWELL : "This has been a very factious reign, owing to the too great indulgence of Government." JOHNSON : "*I* think so, Sir. What at first was lenity, grew timidity. Yet this is reasoning *à posteriori*, and may not be just. Supposing a few had at first been punished, I believe faction would have been crushed ; but it might have been said, that it was a sanguinary reign. A man cannot tell *à priori* what will be best for Government to do. This reign has been very unfortunate. We have had an unsuccessful war ; but that does not prove that we have been ill governed. One side or other must prevail in war, as one or other must win at play. When we beat Louis we were not better governed ; nor were the French better governed when Louis beat us."

On Saturday, April 12, I visited him, in company with Mr. Windham of Norfolk, whom, though a Whig, he highly valued. One of the best things he ever said was to this gentleman ; who before he set out for Ireland as Secretary to Lord Northampton, when Lord Lieutenant, expressed to the sage some modest and virtuous doubts, whether he could bring himself to practise those arts which it is supposed a person in that situation has occasion to employ. "Do n't be afraid, Sir," said Johnson, with a pleasant smile, "you will soon make a very pretty rascal."

He talked to-day a good deal of the wonderful extent and variety of London, and observed, that men of curious inquiry might see in it such modes of life as very few could even imagine.

¹ "The Turkish Spy" was pretended to have been written originally in Arabic ; from Arabic translated into Italian, and thence into English. The real author of the work, which was in fact originally written in Italian, was I. P. Marana, a Genoese, who died at Paris in 1693. John Dunton in his life says, that "Mr. William Bradshaw received from Dr. Midgeley forty shillings a sheet for writing part of the 'Turkish Spy ;'" but I do not find that he any where mentions *Sault* as engaged in that work. — *Malone*.

He in particular recommended to us to *explore Wapping*, which we resolved to do.¹

Mr. Lowe, the painter, who was with him, was very much distressed that a large picture which he had painted was refused to be received into the Exhibition of the Royal Academy. Mrs. Thrale knew Johnson's character so superficially, as to represent him as unwilling to do small acts of benevolence; and mentions, in particular, that he would hardly take the trouble to write a letter in favor of his friends. The truth, however, is, that he was remarkable, in an extraordinary degree, for what she denies to him; and, above all, for this very sort of kindness, writing letters for those to whom his solicitations might be of service. He now gave Mr. Lowe the following, of which I was diligent enough, with his permission, to take copies at the next coffee-house while Mr. Windham was so good as to stay by me.

TO SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

SIR: Mr. Lowe considers himself as cut off from all credit and all hope, by the rejection of his picture from the Exhibition. Upon this work he has exhausted all his powers, and suspended all his expectations: and, certainly, to be refused an opportunity of taking the opinion of the publick is in itself a very great hardship. It is to be condemned without a trial.

If you could procure the revocation of this incapacitating edict, you would deliver an unhappy man from great affliction. The Council has sometimes reversed its own determination; and I hope, that by your interposition this luckless picture may be got admitted. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

APRIL 12, 1783.

TO MR. BARRY.

SIR: Mr. Lowe's exclusion from the exhibition gives him more trouble than you and the other gentlemen of the Council could imagine or intend. He considers disgrace and ruin as the inevitable consequence of your determination.

He says that some pictures have been received after rejection; and if there be any such precedent, I earnestly entreat that you will use your interest in his favour. Of his work I can say nothing; I pretend not to judge of painting; and this picture I never saw: but I conceive it extremely hard to shut out any man from the possibility of success; and therefore I repeat my request that you will propose the re-consideration of Mr. Lowe's case; and if there be any among the Council with whom my name can have any weight, be pleased to communicate to them the desire of, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

APRIL 12, 1783.

¹ We accordingly carried our scheme into execution, in October, 1792; but whether from that uniformity which has in modern times, in a great degree, spread through every part of the metropolis, or from our want of sufficient exertion, we were disappointed.—B. Windham notes in his Diary, how annoyed he was at being "foolishly drawn by Boswell" into this exploration, and thereby missing a prize-fight "which turned out a very good one."—*Napier*.

Such intercession was too powerful to be resisted; and Mr. Lowe's performance was admitted at Somerset Place. The subject, as I recollect, was the Deluge, at that point of time when the water was verging to the top of the last uncovered mountain. Near to the spot was seen the last of the antediluvian race, exclusive of those who were saved in the ark of Noah. This was one of those giants, then the inhabitants of the earth, who had still strength to swim, and with one of his hands held aloft his infant child. Upon the small remaining dry spot appeared a famished lion, ready to spring at the child and devour it. Mr. Lowe told me that Johnson said to him, "Sir, your picture is noble and probable." — "A compliment, indeed," said Mr. Lowe, "from a man who can not lie, and can not be mistaken."¹

About this time he wrote to Mrs. Lucy Porter, mentioning his bad health, and that he intended a visit to Lichfield. "It is," says he, "with no great expectation of amendment that I make every year a journey into the country; but it is pleasant to visit those whose kindness has been often experienced."

On April 18 (being Good Friday), I found him at breakfast, in his usual manner upon that day, drinking tea without milk, and eating a cross-bun to prevent faintness; we went to St. Clement's Church, as formerly. When we came home from church, he placed himself on one of the stone seats at his garden door, and I took the other, and thus in the open air, and in a placid frame of mind, he talked away very easily. JOHNSON: "Were I a country gentleman, I should not be very hospitable, I should not have crowds in my house." BOSWELL: "Sir Alexander Dick tells me, that he remembers having a thousand people in a year to dine at his house; that is, reckoning each person as one each time that he dined there." JOHNSON: "That, Sir, is about three a day." BOSWELL: "How your statement lessens the idea." JOHNSON: "That, Sir, is the good of counting. It brings everything to a certainty, which before floated in the mind indefinitely." BOSWELL: "But *omne ignotum pro magnifico est*: one is sorry to have this diminished." JOHNSON: "Sir, you should not allow yourself to be delighted with error." BOSWELL:

¹ The picture, says Northcote ("Life of Reynolds"), was execrable beyond belief. It was hung by itself in the Antique Academy room (Taylor's "Life of Reynolds"). Miss Burney (afterwards Madam D'Arblay) called him "a poor wretch of a villainous painter." On Nov. 1, 1855, *The Times* printed a letter signed by Carlyle, Dickens, and Forster, asking subscriptions for Lowe's two daughters, then very old and destitute, one of whom was Johnson's goddaughter. See "Napier," iv. appendix 9. An annuity was raised for them. Lord Palmerston gave a large subscription. — *Dr. Hill*.

"Three a day seem but few." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, he who entertains three a day, does very liberally. And if there is a large family, the poor entertain those three, for they eat what the poor would get: there must be superfluous meat; it must be given to the poor, or thrown out." BOSWELL: "I observe in London, that the poor go about and gather bones, which I understand are manufactured." JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; they boil them, and extract a grease from them for greasing wheels and other purposes. Of the best pieces they make a mock ivory, which is used for hafts to knives and various other things; the coarser pieces they burn and pound, and sell the ashes." BOSWELL: "For what purpose, Sir?" JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, for making a furnace for the chemists for melting iron. A paste made of burnt bones will stand a stronger heat than anything else. Consider, Sir; if you are to melt iron, you cannot line your pot with brass, because it is softer than iron, and would melt sooner; nor with iron, for though malleable iron is harder than cast iron, yet it would not do; but a paste of burnt bones will not melt." BOSWELL: "Do you know, Sir, I have discovered a manufacture to a great extent, of what you only piddle at, — scraping and drying the peel of oranges.¹ At a place in Newgate Street, there is a prodigious quantity prepared, which they sell to the distillers." JOHNSON: "Sir, I believe they make a higher thing out of them than a spirit; they make what is called orange-butter, the oil of the orange inspissated, which they mix perhaps with common pomatum, and make it fragrant. The oil does not fly off in the drying."

BOSWELL: "I wish to have a good walled garden." JOHNSON: "I do n't think it would be worth the expense to you. We compute in England, a park-wall at a thousand pounds a mile; now a garden-wall must cost at least as much. You intend your trees should grow higher than a deer will leap. Now let us see; for a hundred pounds you could only have forty-four square yards, which is very little; for two hundred pounds, you may have eighty-four square yards, which is very well.² But when will you

¹ It is suggested to me by an anonymous annotator on my work, that the reason why Dr. Johnson collected the peels of squeezed oranges, may be found, in the 358th letter in Mrs. Piozzi's Collection, where it appears that he recommended "dried orange-peel, finely powdered," as a medicine. — B.

² The Bishop of Ferns observes that Boswell here mistakes forty-four *square yards* for forty-four *yards square*, and thus makes Johnson talk nonsense. — *Croker*. Dr. Hill has also pointed out the mistake of *eighty-four* for *eighty-eight*. If a wall cost £1000 a mile, £100 would build 176 yards of wall which would form a square of forty-four yards and enclose an area of 1936 square yards; and £200 would build 352 yards of wall which would form a square of eighty-eight yards, and enclose an area of 7744 square yards.

get the value of two hundred pounds of walls, in fruit, in your climate? No, Sir, such contention with Nature is not worth while. I would plant an orchard, and have plenty of such fruit as ripen well in your country. My friend, Dr. Madden, of Ireland, said that 'in an orchard there should be enough to eat, enough to lay up, enough to be stolen, and enough to rot upon the ground.' Cherries are an early fruit, you may have them; and you may have the early apples and pears." BOSWELL: "We cannot have nonpareils." JOHNSON: "Sir, you can no more have nonpareils than you can have grapes." BOSWELL: "We have them, Sir; but they are very bad." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, never try to have a thing merely to show that you *can not* have it. From ground that would let for forty shillings you may have a large orchard; and you see it costs you only forty shillings. Nay, you may graze the ground when the trees are grown up; you can not, while they are young." BOSWELL: "Is not a good garden a very common thing in England, Sir?" JOHNSON: "Not so common, Sir, as you imagine. In Lincolnshire there is hardly an orchard; in Staffordshire very little fruit." BOSWELL: "Has Langton no orchard?" JOHNSON: "No, Sir." BOSWELL: "How so, Sir?" JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, from the general negligence of the county. He has it not, because nobody else has it." BOSWELL: "A hot-house is a certain thing; I may have that." JOHNSON: "A hot-house is pretty certain; but you must first build it, then you must keep fires in it, and you must have a gardener to take care of it." BOSWELL: "But, if I have a gardener, at any rate?" JOHNSON: "Why, yes." BOSWELL: "I'd have it near my house; there is no need to have it in the orchard." JOHNSON: "Yes, I'd have it near my house. I would plant a great many currants; the fruit is good, and they make a pretty sweetmeat."

I record this minute detail, which some may think trifling, in order to show clearly how this great man, whose mind could grasp such large and extensive subjects, as he has shown in his literary labors, was yet well-informed in the common affairs of life, and loved to illustrate them.

Mr. Walker, the celebrated master of elocution, came in, and then we went up stairs into the study. I asked him if he had taught many clergymen. JOHNSON: "I hope not." WALKER: "I have taught only one, and he is the best reader I ever heard, not by my teaching, but by his own natural talents." JOHNSON: "Were he the best reader in the world, I would not have it told that he was taught." Here was one of his peculiar prejudices.

Could it be any disadvantage to the clergyman to have it known that he was taught an easy and graceful delivery? BOSWELL: "Will you not allow, Sir, that a man may be taught to read well?" JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, so far as to read better than he might do without being taught, yes. Formerly it was supposed that there was no difference in reading, but that one read as well as another." BOSWELL: "It is wonderful to see old Sheridan as enthusiastic about oratory as ever." WALKER: "His enthusiasm as to what oratory will do, may be too great: but he reads well." JOHNSON: "He reads well, but he reads low; and you know it is much easier to read low than to read high, for when you read high you are much more limited, your loudest note can be but one, and so the variety is less in proportion to the loudness. Now some people have occasion to speak to an extensive audience, and must speak loud to be heard." WALKER: "The art is to read strong, though low."

Talking of the origin of language; JOHNSON: "It must have come by inspiration. A thousand, nay, a million of children could not invent a language. While the organs are pliable, there is not understanding enough to form a language; by the time that there is understanding enough, the organs are become stiff. We know that after a certain age we can not learn to pronounce a new language. No foreigner, who comes to England when advanced in life, ever pronounces English tolerably well; at least such instances are very rare. When I maintain that language must have come by inspiration, I do not mean that inspiration is required for rhetoric, and all the beauties of language; for when once man has language, we can conceive that he may gradually form modifications of it. I mean only that inspiration seems to me to be necessary to give man the faculty of speech; to inform him that he may have speech; which I think he could no more find out without inspiration, than cows or hogs would think of such a faculty." WALKER: "Do you think, Sir, that there are any perfect synonyms in any language?" JOHNSON: "Originally there were not; but by using words negligently, or in poetry, one word comes to be confounded with another."

He talked of Dr. Dodd. "A friend of mine," said he, "came to me and told me, that a lady wished to have Dr. Dodd's picture in a bracelet, and asked me for a motto. I said, I could think of no better than *Currat Lex*. I was very willing to have him pardoned, that is, to have the sentence changed to transpor-

ation; but, when he was once hanged, I did not wish he should be made a saint."

Mrs. Burney, wife of his friend Dr. Burney, came in, and he seemed to be entertained with her conversation.

Garrick's funeral was talked of as extravagantly expensive. Johnson, from his dislike to exaggeration, would not allow that it was distinguished by any extraordinary pomp. "Were there not six horses to each coach?" said Mrs. Burney. JOHNSON: "Madam, there were no more six horses than six phoenixes."¹

Mrs. Burney wondered that some very beautiful new buildings should be erected in Moorfields, in so shocking a situation as between Bedlam and St. Luke's Hospital; and said she could not live there. JOHNSON: "Nay, Madam, you see nothing there to hurt you. You no more think of madness by having windows that look to Bedlam, than you think of death by having windows that look to a churchyard." MRS. BURNEY: "We may look to a churchyard, Sir; for it is right that we should be kept in mind of death." JOHNSON: "Nay, Madam, if you go to that, it is right that we should be kept in mind of madness, which is occasioned by too much indulgence of imagination. I think a very moral use may be made of these new buildings: I would have those who have heated imaginations live there, and take warning." MRS. BURNEY: "But, Sir, many of the poor people that are mad, have become so from disease, or from distressing events. It is, therefore, not their fault, but their misfortune; and, therefore, to think of them is a melancholy consideration."

Time passed on in conversation till it was too late for the service of the church at three o'clock. I took a walk, and left him alone for some time; then returned, and we had coffee and conversation again by ourselves.

I stated the character of a noble friend of mine, as a curious case for his opinion: "He is the most inexplicable man to me that I ever knew. Can you explain him, Sir? He is, I really believe, noble-minded, generous, and princely. But his most intimate friends may be separated from him for years, without his ever asking a question concerning them. He will meet them with a formality, a coldness, a stately indifference; but when they come close to him, and fairly engage him in conversation, they

¹ There certainly were coaches and six, and Johnson himself went in one of them. — *Croker*. The ridiculous ostentation of Garrick's funeral was common talk at the time. Three years later Johnson wrote to Mrs. Thrale that the undertaker had not yet been paid and was ruined. And yet Garrick left his widow a large fortune. — *Dr. Hull*.

find him as easy, pleasant, and kind, as they could wish. One then supposes that what is so agreeable will soon be renewed; but stay away from him half a year, and he will neither call on you, nor send to inquire about you." JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, I can not ascertain his character exactly, as I do not know him; but I should not like to have such a man for my friend. He may love study, and wish not to be interrupted by his friends; *Amici fures temporis*. He may be a frivolous man, and be so much occupied with petty pursuits, that he may not want friends. Or he may have a notion that there is a dignity in appearing indifferent, while he in fact may not be more indifferent at his heart than another."

We went to evening prayers at St. Clement's, at seven, and then parted.

On Sunday, April 20, being Easter Day, after attending solemn service at St. Paul's, I came to Dr. Johnson, and found Mr. Lowe, the painter, sitting with him. Mr. Lowe mentioned the great number of new buildings of late in London, yet that Dr. Johnson had observed that the number of inhabitants was not increased. JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, the bills of mortality prove that no more people die now than formerly; so it is plain no more live. The register of births proves nothing, for not one-tenth of the people of London are born there." BOSWELL: "I believe, Sir, a great many of the children born in London die early." JOHNSON: "Why, yes, Sir." BOSWELL: "But those who do live, are as stout and strong people as any: Dr. Price says, they must be naturally strong to get through." JOHNSON: "That is system, Sir. A great traveller observes that it is said there are no weak or deformed people among the Indians; but he with much sagacity assigns the reason of this, which is, that the hardship of their life, as hunters and fishers, does not allow weak or diseased children to grow up. Now had I been an Indian, I must have died early; my eyes would not have served me to get food. I indeed now could fish, give me English tackle; but had I been an Indian I must have starved, or they would have knocked me on the head, when they saw I could do nothing." BOSWELL: "Perhaps they would have taken care of you: we are told they are fond of oratory; you would have talked to them." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, I should not have lived long enough to be fit to talk; I should have been dead before I was ten years old. Depend upon it, Sir, a savage, when he is hungry, will not carry about with him a looby of nine years old who can not help himself. They have no affection, Sir."

BOSWELL: "I believe natural affection, of which we hear so much, is very small." JOHNSON: "Sir, natural affection is nothing: but affection from principle and established duty is sometimes wonderfully strong." LOWE: "A hen, Sir, will feed her chickens in preference to herself." JOHNSON: "But we do n't know that the hen is hungry; let the hen be fairly hungry, and I'll warrant she'll peck the corn herself. A cock, I believe, will feed hens instead of himself; but we do n't know that the cock is hungry." BOSWELL: "And that, Sir, is not from affection but gallantry. But some of the Indians have affection." JOHNSON: "Sir, that they help some of their children is plain; for some of them live, which they could not do without being helped."

I dined with him; the company were, Mrs. Williams, Mrs. Desmoulins, and Mr. Lowe. He seemed not to be well, talked little, grew drowsy soon after dinner, and retired, upon which I went away.

Having next day gone to Mr. Burke's seat in the country, from whence I was recalled by an express, that a near relation of mine had killed his antagonist in a duel, and was himself dangerously wounded,¹ I saw little of Dr. Johnson till Monday, April 28, when I spent a considerable part of the day with him, and introduced the subject which then chiefly occupied my mind. JOHNSON: "I do not see, Sir, that fighting is absolutely forbidden in Scripture; I see revenge forbidden, but not self-defence." BOSWELL: "The Quakers say it is; 'Unto him that smiteth thee on one cheek, offer him also the other.'"² JOHNSON: "But stay, Sir; the text is meant only to have the effect of moderating passion; it is plain that we are not to take it in a literal sense. We see this from the context, where there are other recommendations, which I warrant you the Quaker will not take literally; as, for instance, 'From him that would borrow of thee, turn thou not away.'³ Let a man whose credit is bad, come to a Quaker, and say, 'Well, Sir, lend me a hundred pounds;' he'll find him as unwilling as any other man. No, Sir, a man may shoot the man who invades his character, as he may shoot him who attempts to break into

¹ The combatants were Mr. Cunningham of the Scots Greys (wounded), and Mr. Riddell of the Life Guards (killed). *Gent. Mag.* for 1783.—*Croker*. The duel was fought on April 21. Riddell had the first fire and shot Cunningham through the breast. After a pause of two minutes Cunningham returned the fire and gave Riddell a wound of which he died the next day. Boswell's grandfather's grandmother was a Cunningham, and Dr. Hill remarks that so much kindred as that makes men near relations in Scotland.

² Luke vi. 29.

³ Matt. v. 42.

his house.¹ So in 1745, my friend, Tom Cumming the Quaker, said he would not fight, but he would drive an ammunition-cart; and we know that the Quakers have sent flannel waistcoats to our soldiers, to enable them to fight better." BOSWELL: "When a man is the aggressor, and by ill-usage forces on a duel in which he is killed, have we not little ground to hope that he is gone to a state of happiness?" JOHNSON: "Sir, we are not to judge determinately of the state in which a man leaves this life. He may in a moment have repented effectually, and it is possible may have been accepted of GOD. There is in 'Camden's Remains,' an epitaph upon a very wicked man, who was killed by a fall from his horse, in which he is supposed to say,

" ' Between the stirrup and the ground,
I mercy asked, I mercy found.' " ²

BOSWELL: "Is not the expression in the burial-service, 'in the *sure* and *certain* hope of a blessed resurrection, too strong to be used indiscriminately, and, indeed, sometimes when those over whose bodies it is said have been notoriously profane?" JOHNSON: "It is *sure* and *certain hope*, Sir: not *belief*." I did not insist further; but cannot help thinking that less positive words would be more proper.³

¹ I think it necessary to caution my readers against concluding that in this, or any other conversation of Dr. Johnson, they have his serious and deliberate opinion on the subject of duelling. In my "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides," 3 edit. p. 386, it appears that he made this frank confession: "Nobody at times talks more laxly than I do;" and, *ibid.* p. 231. "He fairly owned he could not explain the rationality of duelling." We may, therefore, infer, that he could not think that justifiable, which seems so inconsistent with the spirit of the Gospel. At the same time it must be confessed that, from the prevalent notions of honor, a gentleman who receives a challenge is reduced to a dreadful alternative. A remarkable instance of this is furnished by a clause in the will of the late Colonel Thomas, of the Guards, written the night before he fell in a duel, September 3, 1785: "In the first place, I commit my soul to Almighty GOD, in hopes of his mercy and pardon for the irreligious step I now (in compliance with the unwarrantable customs of this wicked world) put myself under the necessity of taking." — B.

² "A gentleman falling off his horse brake his neck, which sudden hap gave occasion of much speech of his former life and some in this judging world judged the worst. In which respect a good friend made this good epitaph remembering that of Saint Augustine, *Misericordia Domini inter pontem et fontem* :

"My friend, judge not me,
Thou seest I judge not thee;
Between the stirrup and the ground,
Mercy I askt, mercy I found."

Camden's Remains quoted by Dr. Hill.

³ Upon this objection the Reverend Mr. Ralph Churton, Fellow of Brasenose College, Oxford, has favored me with the following satisfactory observation: "The passage in the burial-service does not mean the resurrection of the person interred, but the general resurrection; it is in *sure* and *certain* hope of *the* resurrection; not

Talking of a man who was grown very fat, so as to be incommoded with corpulency; he said, "He eats too much, Sir." BOSWELL: "I do n't know, Sir; you will see one man fat who eats moderately, and another lean who eats a great deal." JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, whatever may be the quantity that a man eats, it is plain that if he is too fat, he has eaten more than he should have done. One man may have a digestion that consumes food better than common; but it is certain that solidity is increased by putting something to it." BOSWELL: "But may not solids swell and be distended?" JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir, they may swell and be distended; but that is not fat."

We talked of the accusation against a gentleman for supposed delinquencies in India [Warren Hastings]. JOHNSON: "What foundation there is for accusation I know not, but they will not get at him. Where bad actions are committed at so great a distance, a delinquent can obscure the evidence till the scent becomes cold; there is a cloud between, which can not be penetrated: therefore all distant power is bad. I am clear that the best plan for the government of India is a despotic governor; for if he be a good man, it is evidently the best government; and supposing him to be a bad man, it is better to have one plunderer than many. A governor, whose power is checked, lets others plunder, that he himself may be allowed to plunder; but if despotic he sees that the more he lets others plunder the less there will be for himself, so he restrains them; and though he himself plunders, the country is a gainer, compared with being plundered by numbers."

I mentioned the very liberal payment which had been received for reviewing; and, as evidence of this, that it had been proved in a trial, that Dr. Shebbeare had received six guineas a sheet¹ for that kind of literary labor. JOHNSON: "Sir, he might get six guineas for a particular sheet, but not *communibus sheetibus*." BOSWELL: "Pray, Sir, by a sheet of review is it meant that it

his resurrection. Where the deceased is really spoken of, the expression is very different, 'as our hope is this our brother doth' [rest in Christ], a mode of speech consistent with every thing but absolute certainty that the person departed doth *not* rest in Christ, which no one can be assured of, without immediate revelation from Heaven. In the first of these places also, 'eternal life' does not necessarily mean eternity of bliss, but merely the eternity of the state, whether in happiness or in misery, to ensue upon the resurrection; which is probably the sense of 'the life everlasting,' in the Apostles' Creed." See Wheatly and Bennet on the Common Prayer. — B.

¹ A sheet was sixteen pages, and during the time that Jeffrey edited the *Edinburgh Review* the minimum price was sixteen guineas, though often twenty or twenty-five guineas a sheet was paid. — *Dr. Hill*.

shall be all of the writer's own composition? or are extracts, made from the book reviewed, deducted?" JOHNSON: "No, Sir, it is a sheet, no matter of what." BOSWELL: "I think that is not reasonable." JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir, it is. A man will more easily write a sheet all his own than read an octavo volume to get extracts." To one of Johnson's wonderful fertility of mind, I believe writing was really easier than reading and extracting; but with ordinary men the case is very different. A great deal, indeed, will depend upon the care and judgment with which extracts are made. I can suppose the operation to be tedious and difficult; but in many instances we must observe crude morsels cut out of books as if at random; and when a large extract is made from one place, it surely may be done with very little trouble. One, however, I must acknowledge, might be led, from the practice of reviewers, to suppose that they take a pleasure in original writing; for we often find, that instead of giving an accurate account of what has been done by the author whose work they are reviewing, which is surely the proper business of a literary journal, they produce some plausible and ingenious conceits of their own upon the topics which have been discussed.

Upon being told that old Mr. Sheridan, indignant at the neglect of his oratorical plans, had threatened to go to America; JOHNSON: "I hope he will go to America." BOSWELL: "The Americans do n't want oratory." JOHNSON: "But we can want Sheridan."

On Monday,¹ April 29, I found him at home in the forenoon, and Mr. Seward with him. Horace having been mentioned; BOSWELL: "There is a great deal of thinking in his works. One finds there almost everything but religion." SEWARD: "He speaks of his returning to it, in his ode *Parcus Deorum cultor et infrequens*."² JOHNSON: "Sir, he was not in earnest; this was merely poetical." BOSWELL: "There are, I am afraid, many people who have no religion at all." SEWARD: "And sensible people too." JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, not sensible in that respect. There must be either a natural or a moral stupidity, if one lives in a total neglect of so very important a concern." SEWARD: "I wonder that there should be people without religion." JOHNSON: "Sir, you need not wonder at this, when you consider how large a proportion of almost every man's life is passed without thinking of it. I myself was for some years totally regardless of religion. It had

¹ April 29 was Tuesday: for Monday, April 28, see *ante*, p. 432.

² Horace: "Odes," i. 34. 1.

dropped out of my mind. It was at an early part of my life. Sickness brought it back, and I hope I have never lost it since."

BOSWELL: "My dear Sir, what a man must you have been without religion! Why you must have gone on drinking, and swearing, and—" JOHNSON (with a smile): "I drank enough and swore enough to be sure."

SEWARD: "One should think that sickness, and the view of death would make more men religious." JOHNSON: "Sir, they do not know how to go about it: they have not the first notion. A man who has never had religion before, no more grows religious when he is sick than a man who has never learnt figures can count when he has need of calculation."

I mentioned a worthy friend of ours [Langton] whom we valued much, but observed that he was too ready to introduce religious discourse upon all occasions. JOHNSON: "Why, yes, Sir, he will introduce religious discourse without seeing whether it will end in instruction and improvement, or produce some profane jest. He would introduce it in the company of Wilkes, and twenty more such."

I mentioned Dr. Johnson's excellent distinction between liberty of conscience and liberty of teaching. JOHNSON: "Consider, Sir; if you have children whom you wish to educate in the principles of the Church of England, and there comes a Quaker who tries to pervert them to his principles, you would drive away the Quaker. You would not trust to the predominance of right which you believe is in your opinions: you will keep wrong out of their heads. Now the vulgar are the children of the State. If any one attempts to teach them doctrines contrary to what the State approves, the magistrate may and ought to restrain him." SEWARD: "Would you restrain private conversation, Sir?" JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, it is difficult to say where private conversation begins, and where it ends. If we three should discuss even the great question concerning the existence of a Supreme Being by ourselves, we should not be restrained; for that would be to put an end to all improvement. But if we should discuss it in the presence of ten boarding-school girls and as many boys, I think the magistrate would do well to put us in the stocks, to finish the debate there."

Lord Hailes had sent him a present of a curious little printed poem, on repairing the University of Aberdeen, by David Malloch, which he thought would please Johnson, as affording clear evidence that Mallet had appeared even as a literary character by the name of *Malloch*; his changing which to one of softer sound,

had given Johnson occasion to introduce him into his Dictionary, under the article *Alias*.¹ This piece was, I suppose, one of Mallet's first essays. It is preserved in his works, with several variations. Johnson having read aloud from the beginning of it, where there were some common-place assertions as to the superiority of ancient times; "How false," said he, "is all this, to say that in ancient times learning was not a disgrace to a peer as it is now. In ancient times a peer was as ignorant as any one else. He would have been angry to have it thought he could write his name. Men in ancient times dared to stand forth with a degree of ignorance with which nobody would dare now to stand forth. I am always angry, when I hear ancient times praised at the expense of modern times. There is now a great deal more learning in the world than there was formerly; for it is universally diffused. You have, perhaps, no man who knows as much Greek and Latin as Bentley; no man who knows as much mathematics as Newton: but you have many more men who know Greek and Latin, and who know mathematics."

On Thursday, May 1, I visited him in the evening along with young Mr. Burke. He said: "It is strange that there should be so little reading in the world, and so much writing. People in general do not willingly read, if they can have anything else to amuse them. There must be an external impulse; emulation, or vanity, or avarice. The progress which the understanding makes through a book has more pain than pleasure in it. Language is scanty, and inadequate to express the nice gradations and mixtures of our feelings. No man reads a book of science from pure inclination. The books that we do read with pleasure are light compositions, which contain a quick succession of events. However, I have this year read all Virgil through. I read a book of the 'Æneid' every night; so it was done in twelve nights, and I had a great delight in it. The 'Georgics' did not give me so much pleasure, except the fourth book. The 'Eclogues' I have almost all by heart. I do not think the story of the 'Æneid' interesting. I like the story of the 'Odyssey' much better;² and this not on account of the wonderful things which it contains; for there are wonderful things enough in the 'Æneid';

¹ A notion has been entertained, that no such exemplification of *Alias* is to be found in Johnson's Dictionary, and that the whole story was waggishly fabricated by Wilkes in the NORTH BRITON. The real fact is, that it is not to be found in the folio or quarto editions, but was added by Johnson in his own *octavo* abridgment in 1756. — *J. Boswell, Jun.*

² He told Mr. Windham that he had never read the "Odyssey" through in the original. — *Dr. Hill.*

the ships of the Trojans turned to sea-nymphs, the tree at Polydorus's tomb dropping blood. The story of the 'Odyssey' is interesting, as a great part of it is domestic. It has been said there is pleasure in writing, particularly in writing verses. I allow, you may have pleasure from writing, after it is over, if you have written well; but you don't go willingly to it again. I know when I have been writing verses, I have run my finger down the margin, to see how many I had made and how few I had to make."

He seemed to be in a very placid humor, and although I have no note of the particulars of young Mr. Burke's conversation, it is but justice to mention in general, that it was such that Dr. Johnson said to me afterwards, "He did very well indeed; I have a mind to tell his father."¹

TO SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

DEAR SIR: The gentleman who waits on you with this, is Mr. Cruikshanks, who wishes to succeed his friend Dr. Hunter, as Professor of Anatomy in the Royal Academy. His qualifications are very generally known and it adds dignity to the institution that such men² are candidates. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MAY 2, 1783.

I have no minute of any interview with Johnson till Thursday, May 15th, when I find what follows: BOSWELL: "I wish much to be in Parliament,³ Sir." JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, unless you come resolved to support any administration, you would be the worse for being in Parliament, because you would be obliged to live more expensively." BOSWELL: "Perhaps, Sir, I should be the less happy for being in Parliament. I never would sell my vote, and I should be vexed if things went wrong." JOHNSON: "That's cant, Sir. It would not vex you more in the House, than in the gallery: public affairs vex no man." BOSWELL: "Have not they vexed yourself a little, Sir? Have not you been vexed by all the turbulence of this reign, and by that absurd vote of the

¹ Richard Burke died Aug. 2, 1794, in his thirty-fifth year. The fond partiality of his father for his talents is now well known. He is said to have remarked how extraordinary it was that Lord Chatham, Lord Holland, and he should each have had a son so superior to their fathers. — *Croker*.

² Let it be remembered by those who accuse Dr. Johnson of illiberality, that both were *Scotchmen*. — B.

³ In the winter of 1788-9 Boswell began a canvas of his own county. He also courted Lord Lonsdale, in the hope of getting one of the seats in his gift. But Lonsdale first fooled him and then treated him with great brutality. — *Dr. Hill*

House of Commons, 'That the influence of the Crown has increased, is increasing, and ought to be diminished'?" JOHNSON: "Sir, I have never slept an hour less, nor ate an ounce less meat. I would have knocked the factious dogs on the head, to be sure; but I was not *vexed*." BOSWELL: "I declare, Sir, upon my honor, I did imagine I was vexed and took a pride in it; but it *was*, perhaps, cant;¹ for I own I neither ate less, nor slept less." JOHNSON: "My dear friend, clear your *mind* of cant. You may *talk* as other people do: you may say to a man, 'Sir, I am your most humble servant.' You are *not* his most humble servant. You may say, 'These are bad times; it is a melancholy thing to be reserved to such times.' You do n't mind the times. You tell a man, 'I am sorry you had such bad weather the last day of your journey, and were so much wet.' You do n't care sixpence whether he is wet or dry. You may *talk* in this manner; it is a mode of talking in society: but do n't *think* foolishly."

I talked of living in the country. JOHNSON: "Do n't set up for what is called hospitality: it is a waste of time, and a waste of money; you are eaten up and not the more respected for your liberality. If your house be like an inn, nobody cares for you. A man who stays a week with another, makes him a slave for a week." BOSWELL: "But there are people, Sir, who make their houses a home to their guests, and are themselves quite easy." JOHNSON: "Then, Sir, home must be the same to the guests, and they need not come." Here he discovered a notion common enough in persons not much accustomed to entertain company, that there must be a degree of elaborate attention, otherwise company will think themselves neglected; and such attention is no doubt very fatiguing. He proceeded: "I would not, however, be a stranger in my own country; I would visit my neighbors, and receive their visits; but I would not be in haste to return visits. If a gentleman comes to see me, I tell him he does me a great deal of honor. I do not go to see him perhaps for ten weeks; then we are very complaisant to each other. No, Sir, you will have much more influence by giving or lending money where it is wanted, than by hospitality."

On Saturday, May 17, I saw him for a short time. Having mentioned that I had that morning been with old Mr. Sheridan, he remembered their former intimacy with a cordial warmth, and

¹ *Cant*. 1. A corrupt dialect used by beggars and vagabonds. 2. A particular form of speaking peculiar to some certain class or body of men. 3. A whining pretension to goodness in formal and affected terms. 4. Barbarous jargon. 5. Auction. — Johnson's Dictionary.

said to me, "Tell Mr. Sheridan, I shall be glad to see him, and shake hands with him." BOSWELL: "It is to me very wonderful that resentment should be kept up so long." JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, it is not altogether resentment that he does not visit me; it is partly falling out of the habit, — partly disgust, as one has at a drug that has made him sick. Besides, he knows that I laugh at his oratory."

Another day I spoke of one of our friends,¹ of whom he, as well as I, had a very high opinion. He expatiated in his praise; but added, "Sir, he is a cursed Whig, a *bottomless* Whig, as they all are now."

I mentioned my expectations from the interest of an eminent person then in power, adding, "but I have no claim but the claim of friendship; however, some people will go a great way for that motive." JOHNSON: "Sir, they will go all the way from that motive." A gentleman talked of retiring. "Never think of that," said Johnson. The gentleman urged, "I should then do no ill." JOHNSON: "Nor no good either. Sir, it would be a civil suicide."

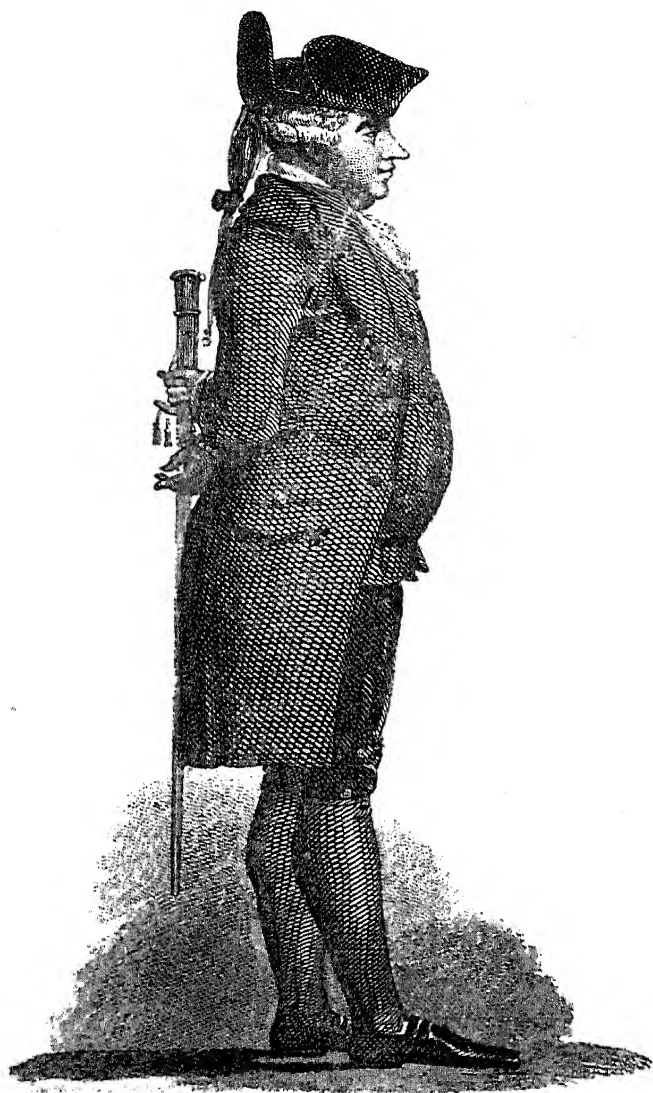
On Monday, May 26, I found him at tea, and the celebrated Miss Burney, the author of "*Evelina*" and "*Cecilia*," with him. I asked, if there would be any speakers in Parliament, if there were no places to be obtained. JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir. Why do you speak here? Either to instruct and entertain, which is a benevolent motive; or for distinction, which is a selfish motive." I mentioned "*Cecilia*." JOHNSON (with an air of animated satisfaction): "Sir, if you talk of '*Cecilia*,' talk on."

We talked of Mr. Barry's exhibition of his pictures. JOHNSON: "Whatever the hand may have done, the mind has done its part. There is a grasp of mind there, which you find nowhere else."²

I asked, whether a man naturally virtuous, or one who has overcome wicked inclinations, is the best. JOHNSON: "Sir, to *you*, the man who has overcome wicked inclinations, is not the best. He has more merit to *himself*: I would rather trust my money to a man who has no hands, and so a physical impossibility to steal, than to a man of the most honest principles. There is a witty satirical story of Foote. He had a small bust of Garrick placed

¹ Probably Burke, Paymaster of the Forces, as also "the eminent person" in the next paragraph.

² In Mr. Barry's printed analysis, or description of these pictures, he speaks of Johnson's character in the highest terms. — B. Barry in one of his pictures, placed Johnson between the two beautiful Duchesses of Rutland and Devonshire, pointing to their Graces Mrs. Montagu as an example — *Dr. Hill*.



JAMES BOSWELL.

upon his bureau. 'You may be surprised,' said he, 'that I allow him to be so near my gold; but you will observe, he has no hands.'"

On Friday, May 29, being to set out for Scotland next morning, I passed a part of the day with him in more than usual earnestness; as his health was in a more precarious state than at any time when I had parted from him. He, however, was quick and lively, and critical as usual. I mentioned one who was a very learned man. JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir, he has a great deal of learning; but it never lies straight. There is never one idea by the side of another; 't is all entangled: and then he drives it so awkwardly upon conversation!"

I stated to him an anxious thought, by which a sincere Christian might be disturbed, even when conscious of having lived a good life so far as is consistent with human infirmity; he might fear that he should afterwards fall away, and be guilty of such crimes as would render all his former religion vain. Could there be, upon this awful subject, such a thing as balancing of accounts? Suppose a man, who has led a good life for seven years, commits an act of wickedness, and instantly dies; will his former good life have any effect in his favor? JOHNSON: "Sir, if a man has led a good life for seven years, and then is hurried by passion to do what is wrong, and is suddenly carried off, depend upon it he will have the reward of his seven years' good life: God will not take a catch of him. Upon this principle Richard Baxter believes that a suicide may be saved. 'If,' says he, 'it should be objected that what I maintain may encourage suicide, I answer, I am not to tell a lie to prevent it.'" BOSWELL: "But does not the text say 'As the tree falls, so it must lie'?"¹ JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; as the tree falls: but, — (after a little pause) — that is meant as to the general state of the tree, not what is the effect of a sudden blast." In short, he interpreted the expression as referring to condition, not to position. The common notion, therefore, seems to be erroneous; and Shenstone's witty remark on divines trying to give the tree a jerk upon a death-bed, to make it lie favorably, is not well founded.

I asked him what works of Richard Baxter's I should read. He said, "Read any of them; they are all good."

He said, "Get as much force of mind as you can. Live within your income. Always have something saved at the end of the

¹ Ecclesiastes xi. 3.

year. Let your imports be more than your exports, and you'll never go far wrong."

I assured him that, in the extensive and various range of his acquaintance, there never had been any one who had a more sincere respect and affection for him than I had. He said: "I believe it, Sir. Were I in distress, there is no man to whom I should sooner come than to you. I should like to come and have a cottage in your park, toddle about, live mostly on milk, and be taken care of by Mrs. Boswell. She and I are good friends now; are we not?"

Talking of devotion, he said: "Though it be true that 'God dwelleth not in temples made with hands,'¹ yet in this state of being, our minds are more piously affected in places appropriated to divine worship, than in others. Some people have a particular room in their houses, where they say their prayers; of which I do not disapprove, as it may animate their devotion."

He embraced me and gave me his blessing as usual when I was leaving him for any length of time. I walked from his door to-day, with a fearful apprehension of what might happen before I returned.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE WILLIAM WINDHAM.

SIR: The bringer of this letter is the father of Miss Philips,² a singer, who comes to try her voice on the stage at Dublin.

Mr. Philips is one of my old friends; and as I am of opinion that neither he nor his daughter will do anything that can disgrace their benefactors, I take the liberty of entreating you to countenance and protect them so far as may be suitable to your station³ and character; and shall consider myself as obliged⁴ by any favourable notice which they shall have the honour of receiving from you.

I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, May 31, 1783.

The following is another instance of his active benevolence:

TO SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

DEAR SIR: I have sent you some of my god-son's⁴ performances, of which I do not pretend to form any opinion. When I took the liberty of mentioning him to you, I did not know what I have since been told, that Mr. Moser had admitted him among the students of the Academy. What more can be

¹ Acts xvii. 24.

² Now the celebrated Mrs. Crouch. — B.

³ Mr. Windham was at this time in Dublin, secretary to the Earl of Northington, then Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. — B. See *ante*, p. 425, under April 12.

⁴ Son of Mr. Samuel Patterson. — B.

done for him, I earnestly entreat you to consider; for I am very desirous that he should derive some advantage from my connexion with him. If you are inclined to see him, I will bring him to wait on you, at any time that you shall be pleased to appoint.

I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JUNE 2, 1783.

My anxious apprehensions at parting with him this year, proved to be but too well founded; for not long afterwards he had a dreadful stroke of the palsy, of which there are very full and accurate accounts in letters written by himself, to show with what composure of mind, and resignation to the Divine Will, his steady piety enabled him to behave.

TO MR. EDMUND ALLEN.¹

DEAR SIR: It has pleased GOD, this morning, to deprive me of the powers of speech: and as I do not know but that it may be his further good pleasure to deprive me soon of my senses, I request you will on the receipt of this note, come to me, and act for me, as the exigencies of my case may require.

I am, sincerely yours,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JUNE 17, 1783.

TO THE REVEREND DR. JOHN TAYLOR.

DEAR SIR: It has pleased GOD, by a Paralytick stroke in the night, to deprive me of speech.

I am very desirous of Dr. Heberden's² assistance, as I think my case is not past remedy. Let me see you as soon as it is possible. Bring Dr. Heberden with you, if you can; but come yourself at all events. I am glad you are so well, when I am so dreadfully attacked.

I think that by a speedy application of stimulants much may be done. I question if a vomit, vigorous and rough, would not rouse the organs of speech to action. As it is too early to send, I will try to recollect what I can, that can be suspected to have brought on this dreadful distress.

I have been accustomed to bleed frequently for an asthmatic complaint; but have forborne for some time by Dr. Pepys's persuasion, who perceived my legs beginning to swell. I sometimes alleviate a painful, or more properly an oppressive, constriction of my chest, by opiates; and have lately taken opium frequently, but the last, or two last times, in smaller quantities. My largest dose is three grains, and last night I took but two. You will suggest these things (and they are all that I can call to mind) to Dr. Heberden.

I am, &c.,

SAM. JOHNSON.³

JUNE 17, 1783.

¹ Mr. Allen was his landlord and next neighbor in Bolt Court. — *Dr. Hill*.

² "Virtuous and faithful Heberden." See Cowper: "Retirement."

³ Boswell omitted the Postscript: "Dr. Brocklesby will be with me to meet Dr. Heberden, and I shall have previously make (*sic*) master of the case as well as I can." An exact reprint of the letter appears in *Notes and Queries*, 6th s. v. 481. — *Dr. Hill*.

Two days after he wrote thus to Mrs. Thrale :¹

On Monday, the 16th, I sat for my picture,² and walked a considerable way with little inconvenience. In the afternoon and evening I felt myself light and easy, and began to plan schemes of life. Thus, I went to bed, and in a short time waked and sat up, as has been long my custom, when I felt a confusion and indistinctness in my head, which lasted, I suppose, about half a minute. I was alarmed, and prayed GOD, that however he might afflict my body, he would spare my understanding. This prayer, that I might try the integrity of my faculties, I made in Latin verse. The lines were not very good, but I knew them not to be very good: I made them easily, and concluded myself to be unimpaired in my faculties.³

Soon after I perceived that I had suffered a paralytick stroke, and that my speech was taken from me. I had no pain, and so little dejection in this dreadful state, that I wondered at my own apathy, and considered that perhaps death itself, when it should come, would excite less horror than seems now to attend it.

In order to rouse the vocal organs, I took two drams. Wine has been celebrated for the production of eloquence. I put myself into violent motion, and I think repeated it; but all was vain. I then went to bed, and strange as it may seem, I think slept. When I saw light, it was time to contrive what I should do. Though GOD stopped my speech, he left me my hand; I enjoyed a mercy which was not granted to my dear friend Lawrence, who now perhaps overlooks me as I am writing, and rejoices that I have what he wanted. My first note was necessarily to my servant, who came in talking, and could not immediately comprehend why he should read what I put into his hands.

I then wrote a card to Mr. Allen, that I might have a discreet friend at hand, to act as occasion should require. In penning this note, I had some difficulty; my hand, I knew not how nor why, made wrong letters. I then wrote to Dr. Taylor to come to me, and bring Dr. Heberden: and I sent to Dr. Brocklesby, who is my neighbour. My physicians are very friendly, and give me great hopes; but you may imagine my situation. I have so far recovered my vocal powers, as to repeat the Lord's Prayer with no very imperfect articulation. My memory, I hope, yet remains as it was; but such an attack produces solicitude for the safety of every faculty.

TO MR. THOMAS DAVIES.

DEAR SIR: I have had, indeed, a very heavy blow; but GOD, who yet spares my life, I humbly hope will spare my understanding, and restore my speech. As I am not at all helpless, I want no particular assistance, but am strongly affected by Mrs. Davies's tenderness; and when I think she can do me good, shall be very glad to call upon her. I had ordered friends to be shut out; but one or two have found the way in; and if you come you shall be admitted: for I know not whom I can see, that will bring more amusement on his tongue, or more kindness in his heart.

I am, &c.,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JUNE 18, 1783.

¹ Vol. ii. p. 268, of Mrs. Thrale's Collection. — B.

² To Miss Reynolds, of whose work Northcote records that Sir Joshua said it made other people laugh and him cry. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Compare a somewhat similar experiment made by Sir Walter Scott during one of his severe illnesses in 1819. Lockhart's "Life of Scott," vi. 69-70.

It gives me great pleasure to preserve such a memorial of Johnson's regard for Mr. Davies, to whom I was indebted for my introduction to him.¹ He indeed loved Davies cordially, of which I shall give the following little evidence. One day when he had treated him with too much asperity, Tom, who was not without pride and spirit, went off in a passion; but he had hardly reached home, when Frank, who had been sent after him, delivered this note: "Come, come, dear Davies, I am always sorry when we quarrel; send me word that we are friends."

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Your anxiety about my health is very friendly, and very agreeable with your general kindness. I have, indeed, had a very frightful blow. On the 17th of last month, about three in the morning, as near as I can guess, I perceived myself almost totally deprived of speech. I had no pain. My organs were so obstructed that I could say *no*, but could scarcely say *yes*. I wrote the necessary directions, for it pleased GOD to spare my hand, and sent for Dr. Heberden and Dr. Brocklesby. Between the time in which I discovered my own disorder, and that in which I sent for the doctors, I had, I believe, in spite of my surprize and solicitude, a little sleep, and Nature began to renew its operations. They came and gave the directions which the disease required, and from that time I have been continually improving in articulation. I can now speak, but the nerves are weak, and I cannot continue discourse long; but strength, I hope, will return. The physicians consider me as cured. I was last Sunday at Church. On Tuesday I took an airing to Hampstead, and dined with THE CLUB, where Lord Palmerston was proposed, and, against my opinion, was rejected.² I designed to go next week with Mr. Langton to Rochester, where I purpose to stay about ten days, and then try some other air. I have many kind invitations. Your brother has very frequently enquired after me. Most of my friends have, indeed, been very attentive. Thank dear Lord Hailes for his present.

I hope you found at your return everything gay and prosperous, and your lady in particular, quite recovered and confirmed. Pay her my respects. I am, dear Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, July 3, 1783.

TO MRS. LUCY PORTER, IN LICHFIELD.

DEAR MADAM: The account which you give of your health is but melancholy. May it please GOD to restore you. My disease affected my speech, and still continues, in some degree, to obstruct my utterance; my voice is distinct enough for a while: but the organs being still weak are quickly weary: but in other respects I am, I think, rather better than I have lately been; and can let you know my state without the help of any other hand.

In the opinion of my friends, and in my own, I am gradually mending.

¹ Poor Derrick, however, though he did not himself introduce me to Dr. Johnson as he promised, had the merit of introducing me to Davies, the immediate introducer. — B.

² His Lordship was soon after chosen, and is now a member of THE CLUB. — B.

The physicians consider me as cured, and I had leave four days ago to wash the cantharides from my head. Last Tuesday I dined at THE CLUB.

I am going next week into Kent, and purpose to change the air frequently this summer; whether I shall wander so far as Staffordshire I cannot tell. I should be glad to come. Return my thanks to Mrs. Cobb, and Mr. Pearson, and all that have shown attention to me.

Let us, my dear, pray for one another, and consider our sufferings as notices mercifully given us to prepare ourselves for another state.

I live now but in a melancholy way. My old friend Mr. Levett is dead, who lived with me in the house, and was useful and companionable; Mrs. Desmoulins is gone away; and Mrs. Williams is so much decayed that she can add little to another's gratifications. The world passes away, and we are passing with it; but there is, doubtless, another world, which will endure forever. Let us all fit ourselves for it. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, July 5, 1783.

Such was the general vigor of his constitution, that he recovered from this alarming and severe attack with wonderful quickness; so that in July he was able to make a visit to Mr. Langton at Rochester, where he passed about a fortnight, and made little excursions as easily as at any time of his life. In August he went as far as the neighborhood of Salisbury, to Heale, the seat of William Bowles, Esq., a gentleman whom I have heard him praise for exemplary religious order in his family. In his diary I find a short but honorable mention of this visit: "August 28, I came to Heale without fatigue. 30. I am entertained quite to my mind."

TO DR. BROCKLESBY.

HEALE, NEAR SALISBURY, Aug. 29, 1783.

DEAR SIR: Without appearing to want a just sense of your kind attention, I can not omit to give an account of the day which seemed to appear in some sort perilous. I rose at five, and went out at six; and having reached Salisbury about nine, went forward a few miles in my friend's chariot. I was no more wearied with the journey, though it was a high-hung, rough coach, than I should have been forty years ago. We shall now see what air will do. The country is all a plain; and the house in which I am, so far as I can judge from my window, for I write before I have left my chamber, is sufficiently pleasant.

Be so kind as to continue your attention to Mrs. Williams; it is a great consolation to the well, and still greater to the sick, that they find themselves not neglected; and I know that you will be desirous of giving comfort, even where you have no great hope of giving help.

Since I wrote the former part of the letter, I find that by the course of the post I cannot send it before the thirty-first. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

While he was here, he had a letter from Dr. Brocklesby, ac-

quainting him of the death of Mrs. Williams,¹ which affected him a good deal. Though for several years her temper had not been complacent, she had valuable qualities, and her departure left a blank in his house. Upon this occasion he, according to his habitual course of piety, composed a prayer. ("Prayers and Meditations," p. 226.)

I shall here insert a few particulars concerning him, with which I have been favored by one of his friends.²

He had once conceived the design of writing the Life of Oliver Cromwell, saying, that he thought it must be highly curious to trace his extraordinary rise to the supreme power from so obscure a beginning. He at length laid aside his scheme, on discovering that all that can be told of him is already in print; and that it is impracticable to procure any authentic information in addition to what the world is already possessed of.

He had likewise projected, but at what part of his life is not known, a work to show how small a quantity of REAL FICTION there is in the world; and that the same images, with very little variation, have served all the authors who have ever written.

His thoughts in the latter part of his life were frequently employed on his deceased friends. He often muttered, these, or such like sentences: "Poor man! and then he died."³

Speaking of a certain literary friend, "He is a very pompous puzzling fellow," said he; "he lent me a letter once that somebody had written to him, no matter what it was about; but he wanted to have the letter back, and expressed a mighty value for it; he hoped it was to be met with again, he would not lose it for a thousand pounds. I laid my hands upon it soon afterwards, and gave it him. I believe I said I was very glad to have met with it. O, then he did not know that it signified anything. So you see, when the letter was lost it was worth a thousand pounds, and when it was found it was not worth a farthing."

The style and character of his conversation is pretty generally known; it

¹ In his letter to Miss Susanna Thrale, Sept. 9, 1783, he thus writes: "Pray show Mamma this passage of a letter from Dr. Brocklesby. 'Mrs. Williams, from mere inanition, has at length paid the great debt to nature about three o'clock this morning. (Sept. 6.) She died without a struggle, retaining her faculties to the very last, and, as she expressed it, having set her house in order, was prepared to leave it at the last summons of nature.'" In his letter to Mrs. Thrale, Sept. 22, he adds, "Poor Williams has, I hope, seen the end of her afflictions. She acted with prudence, and she bore with fortitude. She has left me.

"Thou thy weary (worldly) task hast done,
Home art gone, and ta'en thy wages."

[*"Cymbeline,"* Act iv. sc. 2.]

Had she had good humor and prompt elocution, her universal curiosity and comprehensive knowledge would have made her the delight of all that knew her. She has left her little to your charity school." — *Malone*.

² Probably Mr. Bowles at whose house he had just been visiting. Mr. Bowles had married a Dinah, fourth daughter of Sir Thomas Frankland, and a descendant of Cromwell. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ So Lamb in the last days of his life was frequently heard to say to himself, "Coleridge is dead." Canon Ainger's "Charles Lamb," p. 200.

was certainly conducted in conformity with a precept of Lord Bacon, but it is not clear, I apprehend, that this conformity was either perceived or intended by Johnson. The precept alluded to is as follows: "In all kinds of speech, either pleasant, grave, severe, or ordinary, it is convenient to speak leisurely, and rather drawingly than hastily; because hasty speech confounds the memory, and oftentimes, besides the unseemliness, drives a man either to stammering, a nonplus, or harping on that which should follow; whereas a slow speech confirmeth the memory, addeth a conceit of wisdom to the hearers, besides a seemliness of speech and countenance."¹ Dr. Johnson's method of conversation was certainly calculated to excite attention, and to amuse and instruct (as it happened), without wearying or confusing his company. He was always most perfectly clear and perspicuous; and his language was so accurate, and his sentences so neatly constructed, that his conversation might have been all printed without any correction. At the same time, it was easy and natural; the accuracy of it had no appearance of labor, constraint, or stiffness; he seemed more correct than others, by the force of habit, and the customary exercises of his powerful mind.

He spoke often in praise of French literature. "The French are excellent in this," he would say, "they have a book on every subject." From what he had seen of them he denied them the praise of superior politeness, and mentioned, with very visible disgust, the custom they have of spitting on the floors of their apartments. "This," said the Doctor, "is as gross a thing as can well be done; and one wonders how any man, or set of men, can persist in so offensive a practice for a whole day together; one should expect that the first effort towards civilization would remove it even among savages."

Baxter's "Reasons of the Christian Religion," he thought contained the best collection of the evidences of the divinity of the Christian system.

Chemistry was always an interesting pursuit with Dr. Johnson. Whilst he was in Wiltshire, he attended some experiments that were made by a physician at Salisbury, on the new kinds of air. In the course of the experiments, frequent mention being made of Dr. Priestley, Dr. Johnson knit his brows, and in a stern manner inquired, "Why do we hear so much of Dr. Priestley?"²

¹ "Short Notes for Civil Conversation." Bacon's Works, edited by Spedding, vii. 109. — *Dr. Hill*.

² I do not wonder at Johnson's displeasure when the name of Dr. Priestley was mentioned; for I know no writer who has been suffered to publish more pernicious doctrines. I shall instance only three. First, *materialism*; by which *mind* is denied to human nature; which, if believed, must deprive us of every elevated principle. Secondly, *necessity*; or the doctrine that every action, whether good or bad, is included in an unchangeable and unavoidable system; a notion utterly subversive of moral government. Thirdly, that we have no reason to think that the *future* world (which, as he is pleased to *inform* us, will be adapted to our *merely improved* nature), will be materially different from *this*; which, if believed, would sink wretched mortals into despair, as they could no longer hope for the "rest that remaineth for the people of GOD," or for that happiness which is revealed to us as something beyond our present conceptions; but would feel themselves doomed to a continuation of the uneasy state under which they now groan. I say nothing of the petulant intemperance with which he dares to insult the venerable establishments of his country. As a specimen of his writings, I shall quote the following passage, which appears to me equally absurd and impious, and which might have been retorted upon him by the men who were prosecuted for burning his house. "I cannot," says he, "as a *necessarian* [meaning *necessitarian*], hate any man; because I consider him as *being*, in all respects, just what GOD has made him to be; and also as *doing with respect to me*, nothing but what he was expressly designed and appointed to do: GOD being the *only cause*, and men nothing more than the *instruments* in

He was very properly answered, "Sir, because we are indebted to him for these important discoveries." On this Dr. Johnson appeared well content; and replied, "Well, well, I believe we are; and let every man have the honor he has merited."

A friend was one day, about two years before his death, struck with some instance of Dr. Johnson's great candor. "Well, Sir," said he, "I will always say that you are a very candid man."—"Will you?" replied the Doctor; "I doubt then you will be very singular. But, indeed, Sir," continued he, "I look upon myself to be a man very much misunderstood. I am not an uncandid nor am I a severe man. I sometimes say more than I mean, in jest; and people are apt to believe me serious: however, I am more candid than I was when I was younger. As I know more of mankind, I expect less of them, and am ready now to call a man a *good man*, upon easier terms than I was formerly."

On his return from Heale he wrote to Dr. Burney.

I came home on the 18th¹ [of September], at noon, to a very disconsolate house. You and I have lost our friends;² but you have more friends at home. My domestick companion is taken from me. She is much missed, for her acquisitions were many, and her curiosity universal; so that she partook of every conversation. I am not well enough to go much out; and to sit, and eat, or fast alone, is very wearisome. I always mean to send my compliments to all the ladies.

His fortitude and patience met with severe trials during this year. The stroke of the palsy has been related circumstantially; but he was also afflicted with the gout, and was besides troubled with a complaint which not only was attended with immediate inconvenience, but threatened him with a chirurgical operation, from which most men would shrink. The complaint was a *sarcocoele*, which Johnson bore with uncommon firmness, and was not at all frightened while he looked forward to amputation. He

his hands to *execute all his pleasure*."—"Illustrations of Philosophical Necessity," p. III. The Reverend Dr. Parr, in a late tract, appears to suppose that *Dr. Johnson not only endured, but almost solicited, an interview with Dr. Priestley*. In justice to Dr. Johnson, I declare my firm belief that he never did. My illustrious friend was particularly resolute in not giving countenance to men whose writings he considered as pernicious to society. I was present at Oxford when Dr. Price, even before he had rendered himself so generally obnoxious by his zeal for the French Revolution, came into a company where Johnson was, who instantly left the room. Much more would he have reprobated Dr. Priestley. Whoever wishes to see a perfect delineation of this literary Jack of all Trades, may find it in an ingenious tract, entitled, "A small Whole-Length of Dr. Priestley," printed for Rivington's in St. Paul's Churchyard.—B.

¹ The eighteenth was his birthday, and he ordered his servant Frank to prepare a little dinner to which he desired Mrs. Desmoulins, Mrs. Davis "that was about Mrs. Williams," and Mr. Allen and Mr. Gardiner invited.

² Dr. Burney had lost Mr. Bewley the Broom gentleman and Mr. Crisp.—*Dr. Hill*.

was attended by Mr. Pott and Mr. Cruikshank. I have before me a letter of the 30th of July this year, to Mr. Cruikshank, in which he says, "I am going to put myself into your hands:" and another accompanying a set of his "Lives of the Poets," in which he says,

I beg your acceptance of these volumes, as an acknowledgment of the great favours which you have bestowed on, Sir, your most obliged and most humble servant.

I have in my possession several more letters from him to Mr. Cruikshank, and also to Dr. Mudge at Plymouth, which it would be improper to insert, as they are filled with unpleasing technical details. I shall, however, extract from his letters to Dr. Mudge such passages as show either a felicity of expression or the undaunted state of his mind.

"My conviction of your skill, and my belief of your friendship, determine me to entreat your opinion and advice."—"In this state I with great earnestness desire you to tell me what is to be done. Excision is doubtless necessary to the cure, and I know not any means of palliation. The operation is doubtless painful; but is it dangerous? The pain I hope to endure with decency; but I am loath to put life into much hazard."—"By representing the gout as an antagonist to the palsy, you have said enough to make it welcome. This is not strictly the first fit, but I hope it is as good as the first; for it is the second that ever confined me; and the first was ten years ago, much less fierce and fiery than this."—"Write, dear Sir, what you can to inform or encourage me. The operation is not delayed by any fears or objections of mine."

TO BENNET LANGTON, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: You may very reasonably charge me with insensibility of your kindness, and that of Lady Rothes, since I have suffered so much time to pass without paying any acknowledgment. I now, at last, return my thanks; and why I did it not sooner I ought to tell you. I went into Wiltshire as soon as I well could, and was there much employed in palliating my own malady. Disease produces much selfishness. A man in pain is looking after ease; and lets most other things go as chance shall dispose of them. In the mean time I have lost a companion, [Mrs. Anna Williams] to whom I have had recourse for domestick amusement for thirty years, and whose variety of knowledge never was exhausted; and now return to a habitation vacant and desolate. I carry about a very troublesome and dangerous complaint, which admits no cure but by the chirurgical knife. Let me have your prayers. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Sept. 29, 1783.

Happily the complaint abated without his being put to the torture of amputation. But we must surely admire the manly resolution which he discovered, while it hung over him.

In a letter to the same gentleman he writes :

The gout has within these four days come upon me with a violence which I never experienced before. It made me helpless as an infant.

And in another, having mentioned Mrs. Williams, he says :

Whose death following that of Levett, has now made my house a solitude. She left her little substance to a charity-school. She is, I hope, where there is neither darkness, nor want, nor sorrow.

I wrote to him, begging to know the state of his health, and mentioned that Baxter's "*Anacreon*," which is in the library at Auchinleck, was, I find, collated by my father in 1727 with the MS. belonging to the University of Leyden, and he has made a number of notes upon it. Would you advise me to publish a new edition of it?"

His answer was dated September 30th.

You should not make your letters such rarities, when you know, or might know, the uniform state of my health. It is very long since I heard from you; and that I have not answered is a very insufficient reason for the silence of a friend. Your "*Anacreon*" is a very uncommon book; neither London nor Cambridge can supply a copy of that edition. Whether it should be reprinted, you cannot do better than consult Lord Hailes. — Besides my constant and radical disease, I have been for these ten days much harassed with the gout; but that has now remitted. I hope God will yet grant me a little longer life, and make me less unfit to appear before him.

He this autumn received a visit from the celebrated Mrs. Siddons. He gives this account of it in one of his letters to Mrs. Thrale [October 27] :

Mrs. Siddons, in her visit to me, behaved with great modesty and propriety, and left nothing behind her to be censured or despised. Neither praise nor money, the two powerful corrupters of mankind, seem to have depraved her. I shall be glad to see her again. Her brother Kemble calls on me, and pleases me very well. Mrs. Siddons and I talked of plays; and she told me her intention of exhibiting this winter the characters of Constance, Catharine, and Isabella, in Shakspeare.

Mr. Kemble has favored me with the following minute of what passed at this visit.

When Mrs. Siddons came into the room, there happened to be no chair ready for her, which he observing, said with a smile, "Madam, you who so often occasion a want of seats to other people, will the more easily excuse the want of one yourself."

Having placed himself by her, he with great good humor entered upon a consideration of the English drama; and, among other inquiries, particularly asked her which of Shakespeare's characters she was most pleased with. Upon her answering that she thought the character of Queen Catharine in "Henry the Eighth," the most natural: "I think so too, Madam," said he; "and whenever you perform it, I will once more hobble out to the theatre myself." Mrs. Siddons promised she would do herself the honor of acting his favorite part for him; but many circumstances happened to prevent the representation of "King Henry the Eighth" during the Doctor's life.

In the course of the evening he thus gave his opinion upon the merits of some of the principal performers whom he remembered to have seen upon the stage. "Mrs. Porter in the vehemence of rage, and Mrs. Clive in the sprightliness of humor, I have never seen equalled. What Clive did best, she did better than Garrick; but could not do half so many things well; she was a better romp than any I ever saw in nature. Pritchard, in common life, was a vulgar idiot; she would talk of her *gown*; but, when she appeared upon the stage, seemed to be inspired by gentility and understanding. I once talked with Colley Cibber, and thought him ignorant of the principles of his art. Garrick, Madam, was no declaimer; there was not one of his own scene-shifters who could not have spoken *To be, or not to be*, better than he did; yet he was the only actor I ever saw whom I could call a master both in tragedy and comedy; though I liked him best in comedy. A true conception of character, and natural expression of it, were his distinguished excellences." Having expatiated, with his usual force and eloquence, on Mr. Garrick's extraordinary eminence as an actor, he concluded with this compliment to his social talent; "And after all, Madam, I thought him less to be envied on the stage than at the head of a table."

Johnson, indeed, had thought more upon the subject of acting than might be generally supposed. Talking of it one day to Mr. Kemble, he said, "Are you, Sir, one of those enthusiasts who believe yourself transformed into the very character you represent?" Upon Mr. Kemble's answering that he had never felt so strong a persuasion himself, "To be sure not, Sir," said Johnson: "the thing is impossible. And if Garrick really believed himself to be that monster, Richard the Third, he deserved to be hanged every time he performed it."¹

¹ My worthy friend, Mr. John Nichols, was present when Mr. Henderson, the actor, paid a visit to Dr. Johnson: and was received in a very courteous manner. See *Gentleman's Magazine*, June, 1791. I found among Dr. Johnson's papers the following letter to him from the celebrated Mrs. Bellamy:

TO DR. JOHNSON.

SIR: The flattering remembrance of the partiality you honoured me with, some years ago, as well as the humanity you are known to possess, has encouraged me to solicit your patronage at my Benefit.

By a long Chancery suit, and a complicated train of unfortunate events, I am reduced to the greatest distress; which obliges me, once more, to request the indulgence of the publick.

Give me leave to solicit the honour of your company, and to assure you, if you grant my request, the gratification I shall feel, from being patronized by Dr. John-

A pleasing instance of the generous attention of one of his friends has been discovered by the publication of Mrs. Thrale's collection of Letters. In a letter to one of the Miss Thrales, [Vol. ii., p. 328] he writes,

A friend, whose name I will tell when your mamma has tried to guess it, sent to my physician to inquire whether this long train of illness had brought me into difficulties for want of money, with an invitation to send to him for what occasion required. I shall write this night to thank him, having no need to borrow.

And afterwards, in a letter to Mrs. Thrale,

Since you cannot guess, I will tell you, that the generous man was Gerard Hamilton. I returned him a very thankful and respectful letter. [Vol. ii., p. 342.]

I applied to Mr. Hamilton, by a common friend, and he has been so obliging as to let me have Johnson's letter to him upon this occasion, to adorn my collection.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE WILLIAM GERARD HAMILTON.

DEAR SIR: Your kind inquiries after my affairs, and your generous offers, have been communicated to me by Dr. Brocklesby. I return thanks with great sincerity, having lived long enough to know what gratitude is due to such friendship; and entreat that my refusal may not be imputed to sullenness or pride. I am, indeed, in no want. Sickness is, by the generosity of my physicians, of little expence to me. But if any unexpected exigence should press me, you shall see, dear Sir, how cheerfully I can be obliged to so much liberality. I am, Sir, your most obedient and most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

NOVEMBER 19, 1783.

I find in this, as in former years, notices of his kind attention to Mrs. Gardiner, who though in the humble station of a tallow-chandler upon Snow Hill, was a woman of excellent good sense, pious, and charitable. She told me, she had been introduced to him by Mrs. Masters, the poetess, whose volumes he revised, and, it is said, illuminated here and there with a ray of his own genius.

son, will be infinitely superiour to any advantage that may arise from the Benefit; as I am, with the profoundest respect, Sir, your most obedient, humble servant,

G. A. BELLAMY.

NO. 10 DUKE-STREET, ST. JAMES'S,
May 11, 1783.

I am happy in recording these particulars, which prove that my illustrious friend lived to think much more favorably of players than he appears to have done in the early part of his life. — B.

Mrs. Gardiner was very zealous for the support of the Ladies' Charity-School in the parish of St. Sepulchre. It is confined to females; and, I am told, it afforded a hint for the story of "Betty Broom" in *The Idler* [nos. 26, 29]. Johnson this year, I find, obtained for it a sermon from the late Bishop of St. Asaph, Dr. Shipley, whom he, in one of his letters to Mrs. Thrale, characterizes as "knowing and conversible"; and whom all who knew his Lordship, even those who differed from him in politics, remember with much respect.

The Earl of Carlisle having written a tragedy, entitled "The Father's Revenge," some of his Lordship's friends applied to Mrs. Chapone,¹ to prevail on Dr. Johnson to read and give his opinion of it, which he accordingly did, in a letter to that lady. Sir Joshua Reynolds having informed me that this letter was in Lord Carlisle's possession, though I was not fortunate enough to have the honor of being known to his Lordship, trusting to the general courtesy of literature, I wrote to him requesting the favor of a copy of it, and to be permitted to insert it in my Life of Dr. Johnson. His Lordship was so good as to comply with my request, and has thus enabled me to enrich my work with a very fine piece of writing, which displays both the critical skill and politeness of my illustrious friend; and perhaps the curiosity which it will excite, may induce the noble and elegant author to gratify the world by the publication² of a performance, of which Dr. Johnson has spoken in such terms.

TO MRS. CHAPONE.

MADAM: By sending the tragedy to me a second time,³ I think that a very honourable distinction has been shown me, and I did not delay the perusal, of which I am now to tell the effect.

The construction of the play is not completely regular; the stage is too often vacant, and the scenes are not sufficiently connected. This, however, would be called by Dryden only a mechanical defect; which takes away little from the power of the poem, and which is seen rather than felt.

A rigid examiner of the diction might, perhaps, wish some words changed, and some lines more vigorously terminated. But from such petty imperfections what writer was ever free?

The general form and force of the dialogue is of more importance. It

¹ Mrs. Chapone though very repulsive in appearance, was in reality a woman of "superior attainment and extensive knowledge" whereby she was known as "the admirable Mrs. Chapone." She was one of the literary ladies who sat at Richardson's feet. — *Dr. Hill*.

² A few copies only of this tragedy have been printed, and given to the author's friends. — B.

³ Dr. Johnson having been very ill when the tragedy was first sent to him, had declined the consideration of it. — B.

seems to want that quickness of reciprocation which characterises the English drama, and is not always sufficiently fervid or animated.

Of the sentiments, I remember not one that I wished omitted. In the imagery I cannot forbear to distinguish the comparison of joy succeeding grief to light rushing on the eye accustomed to darkness. It seems to have all that can be desired to make it please. It is new, just, and delightful.¹

With the characters, either as conceived or preserved, I have no fault to find: but was much inclined to congratulate a writer, who, in defiance of prejudice and fashion, made the archbishop a good man, and scorned all thoughtless applause which a vicious churchman would have brought him.

The catastrophe is affecting. The father and daughter both culpable, both wretched, and both penitent, divide between them our pity and our sorrow.

Thus, Madam, I have performed what I did not willingly undertake, and could not decently refuse. The noble writer will be pleased to remember that sincere criticism ought to raise no resentment, because judgment is not under the controul of will; but involuntary criticism, as it has still less of choice, ought to be more remote from possibility of offence.

I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

Nov. 28, 1783.

I consulted him on two questions of a very different nature: one, whether the unconstitutional influence exercised by the peers of Scotland in the election of the representatives of the Commons, by means of fictitious qualifications, ought not to be resisted; the other, what in propriety and humanity, should be done with old horses unable to labor? I gave him some account of my life at Auchinleck; and expressed my satisfaction that the gentlemen of the county had, at two public meetings, elected me their *præses*, or chairman.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Like all other men who have great friends, you begin to feel the pangs of neglected merit; and all the comfort that I can give you is, by telling you that you have probably more pangs to feel, and more neglect to suffer. You have, indeed, begun to complain too soon; and I hope I am the only confidant of your discontent. Your friends have not yet had leisure to gratify personal kindness; they have hitherto been busy in strengthening their ministerial interest. If a vacancy happens in Scotland, give them early intelligence; and as you can serve Government as powerfully as any of your probable competitors, you may make in some sort a warrantable claim.

Of the exaltations and depressions of your mind you delight to talk, and I hate to hear. Drive all such fancies from you.

On the day when I received your letter, I think, the foregoing page was

"I could have borne my woes; that stranger Joy
Wounds while it smiles: The long imprison'd wretch,
Emerging from the night of his damp cell,
Shrinks from the sun's bright beams; and that which flings
Gladness o'er all, to him is agony." — B.

written; to which one disease or another has hindered me from making any additions. I am now a little better. But sickness and solitude press me very heavily. I could bear sickness better, if I were relieved from solitude.

The present dreadful confusion of the publick¹ ought to make you wrap yourself up in your hereditary possessions, which, though less than you may wish, are more than you can want; and in an hour of religious retirement return thanks to GOD, who has exempted you from any strong temptation to faction, treachery, plunder, and disloyalty.

As your neighbours distinguish you by such honours as they can bestow, content yourself with your station, without neglecting your profession. Your estate and the Courts will find you full employment, and your mind, well occupied, will be quiet.

The usurpation of the nobility, for they apparently usurp all the influence they gain by fraud and misrepresentation, I think it certainly lawful, perhaps your duty, to resist. What is not their own they have only by robbery.

Your question about the horses gives me more perplexity. I know not well what advice to give you. I can only recommend a rule which you do not want; give as little pain as you can. I suppose that we have a right to their service while their strength lasts; what we can do with them afterwards, I can not so easily determine. But let us consider. Nobody denies that man has a right first to milk the cow, and to shear the sheep, and then to kill them for his table. May he not, by parity of reason, first work a horse, and then kill him the easiest way, that he may have the means of another horse, or food for cows and sheep? Man is influenced in both cases by different motives of self-interest. He that rejects the one must reject the other.

I am, &c,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Dec. 24, 1783.

A happy and pious Christmas; and many happy years to you, your lady, and children.

The late ingenious Mr. Mickle,² some time before his death, wrote me a letter concerning Dr. Johnson, in which he mentions: "I was upwards of twelve years acquainted with him, was frequently in his company, always talked with ease to him, and can truly say, that I never received from him one rough word."

In this letter he relates his having, while engaged in translating the "*Lusiad*," had a dispute of considerable length with Johnson, who, as usual, declaimed upon the misery and corruption of a sea life, and used this expression: "It had been happy for the world, Sir, if your hero Gama, Prince Henry of Portugal, and Columbus, had never been born, or that their schemes had never gone farther than their own imaginations."

¹ The rejection by the Lords of Fox's India Bill had resulted in the sudden dismissal of the Coalition Ministry on the 19th of December. Three days later Earl Temple resigned his position as Secretary of State.

² Mr. Mickle died Oct. 28, 1788. — *Dr. Hull*.

"This sentiment," says Mr. Mickle, "which is to be found in his 'Introduction to the World Displayed,' I, in my Dissertation prefixed to the 'Lusiad,' have controverted; and though authors are said to be bad judges of their own works, I am not ashamed to own to a friend, that that dissertation is my favorite above all that I ever attempted in prose. Next year, when the 'Lusiad' was published, I waited on Dr. Johnson, who addressed me with one of his good-humored smiles: 'Well, you have remembered our dispute about Prince Henry, and have cited me too. You have done your part very well indeed: you have made the best of your argument; but I am not convinced yet.'

"Before publishing the 'Lusiad,' I sent Mr. Hoole a proof of that part of the introduction in which I make mention of Dr. Johnson, yourself, and other well-wishers to the work, begging it might be shown to Dr. Johnson. This was accordingly done; and in place of the simple mention of him which I had made, he dictated to Mr. Hoole the sentence as it now stands.

"Dr. Johnson told me in 1772 that, about twenty years before that time, he himself had a design to translate the 'Lusiad,' of the merit of which he spoke highly, but had been prevented by a number of other engagements."

Mr. Mickle reminds me in this letter of a conversation at dinner one day at Mr. Hoole's with Dr. Johnson, when Mr. Nicol, the king's bookseller, and I attempted to controvert the maxim, "better that ten guilty should escape, than one innocent person suffer;" and were answered by Dr. Johnson with great power of reasoning and eloquence. I am very sorry that I have no record of that day: but I well recollect my illustrious friend's having ably shown that, unless civil institutions ensure protection to the innocent, all the confidence which mankind should have in them would be lost.

I shall here mention what, in strict chronological arrangement, should have appeared in my account of last year; but may more properly be introduced here, the controversy having not been closed till this. The Reverend Mr. Shaw, a native of one of the Hebrides, having entertained doubts of the authenticity of the poems ascribed to Ossian, divested himself of national bigotry; and having travelled in the Highlands and Islands of Scotland, and also in Ireland, in order to furnish himself with materials for a Gaelic Dictionary, which he afterwards compiled, was so fully satisfied that Dr. Johnson was in the right upon the question, that he candidly published a pamphlet, stating his conviction, and the proofs and reasons on which it was founded. A person at Edinburgh, of the name of Clark, answered this pamphlet with much zeal, and much abuse of its author. Johnson took Mr. Shaw under his protection, and gave him his assistance in writing a reply, which has been admired by the best judges, and by many been considered as conclusive. A

few paragraphs, which sufficiently mark their great author, shall be selected.

My assertions are, for the most part, purely negative: I deny the existence of Fingal, because in a long and curious peregrination through the Gaelic regions I have never been able to find it. What I could not see myself I suspect to be equally invisible to others; and I suspect with the more reason, as among all those who have seen it no man can show it.

Mr. Clark compares the obstinacy of those who disbelieve the genuineness of Ossian to a blind man, who should dispute the reality of colors, and deny that the British troops are clothed in red. The blind man's doubt would be rational, if he did not know by experience that others have a power which he himself wants: but what perspicacity has Mr. Clark which Nature has withheld from me or the rest of mankind?

The true state of the parallel must be this. Suppose a man, with eyes like his neighbors, was told by a boasting corporal that the troops, indeed, wore red clothes for their ordinary dress, but that every soldier had likewise a suit of black velvet, which he put on when the king reviews them. This he thinks strange, and desires to see the fine clothes, but finds nobody in forty thousand men that can produce either coat or waistcoat. One, indeed, has left them in his chest at Port Mahon; another has always heard that he ought to have velvet clothes somewhere; and a third has heard somebody say that soldiers ought to wear velvet. Can the inquirer be blamed if he goes away believing that a soldier's red coat is all that he has?

But the most obdurate incredulity may be shamed or silenced by facts. To overpower contradictions, let the soldier show his velvet coat, and the Fingalist the original of Ossian.

The difference between us and the blind man is this: the blind man is unconvinced, because he cannot see; and we, because, though we can see, we find that nothing can be shown.

Notwithstanding the complication of disorders under which Johnson now labored, he did not resign himself to despondency and discontent, but with wisdom and spirit endeavored to console and amuse his mind with as many innocent enjoyments as he could procure. Sir John Hawkins has mentioned the cordiality with which he insisted that such of the members of the old club in Ivy Lane as survived, should meet again and dine together, which they did, twice at a tavern, and once at his house: and in order to ensure himself society in the evening for three days in the week, he instituted a club at the Essex Head, in Essex Street, then kept by Samuel Greaves, an old servant of Mr. Thrale's.

TO SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

DEAR SIR: It is inconvenient to me to come out; I should else have waited on you with an account of a little evening club which we are establishing in Essex Street, in the Strand, and of which you are desired to be one. It will be held at the Essex Head, now kept by an old servant of Thrale's.

The company is numerous, and as you will see by the list, miscellaneous. The terms are lax, and the expenses light. Mr. Barry was adopted by Dr. Brocklesby, who joined with me in forming the plan. We meet thrice a week, and he who misses forfeits two-pence.¹

If you are willing to become a member, draw a line under your name. Return the list. We meet for the first time on Monday at eight. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

DEC. 4, 1783.

It did not suit Sir Joshua to be one of this club. But when I mention only Mr. Daines Barrington, Dr. Brocklesby, Mr. Murphy, Mr. John Nichols, Mr. Cooke, Mr. Joddrel, Mr. Paradise, Dr. Horsley, Mr. Windham,² I shall sufficiently obviate the misrepresentation of it by Sir John Hawkins, as if it had been a low alehouse association, by which Johnson was degraded. Johnson himself, like his namesake Old Ben, composed the rules of his club.³

In the end of this year he was seized with a spasmodic asthma of such violence, that he was confined to the house in great pain, being sometimes obliged to sit all night in his chair, a recumbent posture being so hurtful to his respiration, that he could not endure lying in bed; and there came upon him at the same time that oppressive and fatal disease, a dropsy. It was a very severe winter, which probably aggravated his complaints; and the

¹ See *Spectator*: No. ix. The Two-Penny Club.

² I was in Scotland when this club was founded, and during all the winter. Johnson, however, declared I should be a member, and invented a word upon the occasion: "Boswell," said he, "is a very *clubable* man." When I came to town, I was proposed by Mr. Barrington, and chosen. I believe there are few societies where there is better conversation or more decorum. Several of us resolved to continue it after our great founder was removed by death. Other members were added; and now, above eight years since that loss, we go on happily. — B.

³ RULES.

"To-day deep thoughts with me resolve [with me] to drench
In mirth, which [that] after no repenting draws."

MILTON. [Sonnets, xxi.]

(1) "The Club shall consist of four-and-twenty. (2) The meetings shall be on the Monday, Thursday, and Saturday of every week; but in the week before Easter there shall be no meeting. (3) Every member is at liberty to introduce a friend once a week, but not oftener. (4) Two members shall oblige themselves to attend in their turn every night from eight to ten, or to procure two to attend in their room. (5) Every member present at the Club shall spend at least sixpence: and every member who stays away shall forfeit threepence. (6) The master of the house shall keep an account of the absent members: and deliver to the president of the night a list of the forfeits incurred. (7) When any member returns after absence, he shall immediately lay down his forfeits; which if he omits to do, the president shall require. (8) There shall be no general reckoning, but every man shall adjust his own expenses. (9) The night of indispensable attendance will come to every member once a month. Whoever shall for three months together omit to attend himself, or by substitution, nor shall make any apology in the fourth

solitude in which Mr. Levett and Mrs. Williams had left him, rendered his life very gloomy. Mrs. Desmoulins, who still lived, was herself so very ill, that she could contribute very little to his relief. He, however, had none of that unsocial shyness which we commonly see in people afflicted with sickness. He did not hide his head from the world, in solitary abstraction; he did not deny himself to the visits of his friends and acquaintances; but at all times, when he was not overcome by sleep, was ready for conversation as in his best days.

TO MRS. LUCY PORTER IN LICHFIELD.

DEAR MADAM: You may perhaps think me negligent that I have not written to you again upon the loss of your brother; but condolences and consolations are such common and such useless things, that the omission of them is no great crime: and my own diseases occupy my mind, and engage my care. My nights are miserably restless, and my days, therefore, are heavy. I try, however, to hold up my head as high as I can.

I am sorry that your health is impaired; perhaps the spring and the summer may, in some degree, restore it; but if not, we must submit to the inconveniences of time, as to the other dispensations of Eternal Goodness. Pray for me, and write to me, or let Mr. Pearson write for you.

I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Nov. 29, 1783.

And now I am arrived at the last year of the life of SAMUEL JOHNSON; a year in which, although passed in severe indisposition, he nevertheless gave many evidences of the continuance of those wondrous powers of mind, which raised him so high in the intellectual world. His conversation and his letters of this year were in no respect inferior to those of former years.

The following is a remarkable proof of his being alive to the most minute curiosities of literature.

TO MR. DILLY, BOOKSELLER, IN THE POULTRY.

SIR: There is in the world a set of books which used to be sold by the booksellers on the bridge, and which I must entreat you to procure me. They

month, shall be considered as having abdicated the Club. (10) When a vacancy is to be filled, the name of the candidate, and of the member recommending him, shall stand in the Club-room three nights. On the fourth he may be chosen by ballot; six members at least being present, and two-thirds of the ballot being in his favor; or the majority, should the numbers not be divisible by three. (11) The master of the house shall give notice, six days before, to each of those members whose turn of necessary attendance is come. (12) The notice may be in these words: "Sir, On ——— the ——— of ———, will be your turn of presiding at the Essex Head. Your company is therefore earnestly requested." (13) One penny shall be left by each member for the waiter." Johnson's definition of a Club in this sense, in his Dictionary, is, "An assembly of good fellows, meeting under certain conditions." — B.

are called, "Burton's Books;"¹ the title of one is "Admirable Curiosities, Rarities, and Wonders in England." I believe there are about five or six of them; they seem very proper to allure backward readers: be so kind as to get them for me, and send me them with the best printed edition of Baxter's "Call to the Unconverted."

I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

JAN. 6, 1785.

TO MR. PERKINS.

DEAR SIR: I was very sorry not to see you when you were so kind as to call on me: but to disappoint friends, and if they are very good-natured, to disoblige them, is one of the evils of sickness. If you will please to let me know which of the afternoons in this week I shall be favoured with another visit by you and Mrs. Perkins, and the young people, I will take all the measures that I can to be pretty well at that time. I am, dear Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JAN. 21, 1784.

His attention to the Essex Head Club appears from the following letter to Mr. Alderman Clark, a gentleman for whom he deservedly entertained a great regard.

TO RICHARD CLARK, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: You will receive a requisition, according to the rules of the Club, to be at the house as President of the night. This turn comes once a month, and the member is obliged to attend, or send another in his place. You were enrolled in the Club by my invitation, and I ought to introduce you; but as I am hindered by sickness, Mr. Hoole will very properly supply my place as introducer, or yours as President. I hope in milder weather to be a very constant attendant.

I am, Sir, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

JAN. 27, 1784.

You ought to be informed that the forfeits began with the year, and that every night of non-attendance incurs the mulct of threepence, that is, ninepence a week.

On the 8th of January I wrote to him, anxiously inquiring as to his health, and enclosing my "Letter to the People of Scotland, on the Present State of the Nation."² — "I trust," said I, "that you will be liberal enough to make allowance for my differ-

¹ See Lowndes's "Bibliographers' Manual," i. 328-30 where the list includes forty-six volumes. Some of them were reprinted by Stace in 1810-13 in six volumes quarto. "They were small chapmen's books and cheap. Forty volumes in all." — "Franklin's Memoirs."

² Boswell's purpose in this letter was to recommend the Scotch to address a letter to the King to express their satisfaction that the East India Company Bill had been rejected by the Lords. — *Dr. Hill*.

ing from you on two points [the Middlesex Election, and the American War], when my general principles of government are according to your own heart, and when, at a crisis of doubtful event, I stand forth with honest zeal as an ancient and faithful Briton. My reason for introducing those two points was, that as my opinions with regard to them had been declared at the periods when they were least favorable, I might have the credit of a man who is not a worshipper of ministerial power."

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I hear of many enquiries which your kindness has disposed you to make after me. I have long intended you a long letter, which perhaps the imagination of its length hindered me from beginning. I will, therefore, content myself with a shorter.

Having promoted the institution of a new Club in the neighbourhood, at the house of an old servant of Thrane's, I went thither to meet the company, and was seized with a spasmodick asthma, so violent, that with difficulty I got to my own house, in which I have been confined eight or nine weeks, and from which I know not when I shall be able to go even to church. The asthma, however, is not the worst. A dropsy gains ground upon me; my legs and thighs are very much swollen with water, which I should be content if I could keep there, but I am afraid that it will soon be higher. My nights are very sleepless and very tedious. And yet I am extremely afraid of dying.

My physicians try to make me hope, that much of my malady is the effect of cold, and that some degree at least of recovery is to be expected from vernal breezes and summer suns. If my life is prolonged to autumn, I should be glad to try a warmer climate; though how to travel with a diseased body, without a companion to conduct me, and with very little money, I do not well see. Ramsay has recovered his limbs in Italy; and Fielding was sent to Lisbon, where, indeed, he died; but he was, I believe, past hope when he went. Think for me what I can do.

I received your pamphlet, and when I write again may perhaps tell you some opinion about it; but you will forgive a man struggling with disease his neglect of disputes, politics, and pamphlets. Let me have your prayers. My compliments to your lady, and young ones. Ask your physicians about my case: and desire Sir Alexander Dick to write me his opinion.

I am, dear Sir, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

FEB. 11, 1784.

TO MRS. LUCY PORTER, IN LICHFIELD.

MY DEAREST LOVE: I have been extremely ill of an asthma and dropsy, but received, by the mercy of GOD, sudden and unexpected relief last Thursday, by the discharge of twenty pints of water. Whether I shall continue free, or shall fill again, cannot be told. Pray for me.

Death, my dear, is very dreadful; let us think nothing worth our care but how to prepare for it; what we know amiss in ourselves let us make haste to amend, and put our trust in the mercy of GOD, and the intercession of our Saviour. I am, dear Madam, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

FEB. 23, 1784.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I have just advanced so far towards recovery as to read a pamphlet; and you may reasonably suppose that the first pamphlet which I read was yours. I am very much of your opinion, and, like you, feel great indignation at the indecency with which the King is every day treated. Your paper contains very considerable knowledge of history and of the constitution, very properly produced and applied. It will certainly raise your character,¹ though perhaps it may not make you a Minister of State.

I desire you to see Mrs. Stewart once again, and tell her, that in the letter-case was a letter relating to me, for which I will give her, if she is willing to give it me, another guinea. The letter is of consequence only to me.

I am, dear Sir, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, Feb. 27, 1784.

In consequence of Johnson's request that I should ask our physicians about his case, and desire Sir Alexander Dick to send his opinion, I transmitted him a letter from that very amiable baronet, then in his eighty-first year, with his faculties as entire as ever; and mentioned his expressions to me in the note accompanying it, — "With my most affectionate wishes for Dr. Johnson's recovery, in which his friends, his country, and all mankind have so deep a stake;" and at the same time a full opinion upon his case by Dr. Gillespie, who, like Dr. Cullen, had the advantage of having passed through the gradations of surgery and pharmacy, and by study and practice had attained to such skill, that my father settled on him two hundred pounds a year for five years, and fifty pounds a year during his life, as an *honorarium* to secure his particular attendance. The opinion was conveyed in a letter to me, beginning, "I am sincerely sorry for the bad state of health your very learned and illustrious friend, Dr. Johnson, labors under at present."

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: Presently, after I had sent away my last letter, I received your kind medical packet. I am very much obliged both to you and to your physicians for your kind attention to my disease. Dr. Gillespie has sent me

¹ I sent it to Mr. Pitt, with a letter, in which I thus expressed myself: "My principles may appear to you too monarchical; but I know and am persuaded, they are not inconsistent with the true principles of liberty. Be this as it may, you, Sir, are now the Prime Minister, called by the Sovereign to maintain the right of the Crown, as well as those of the people, against a violent faction. As such, you are entitled to the warmest support of every good subject in every department." He answered: "I am extremely obliged to you for the sentiments you do me the honor to express, and have observed with great pleasure the *zealous and able support* given to the CAUSE OF THE PUBLIC in the work you were so good to transmit to me." — B.

an excellent *consilium medicum*, all solid practical experimental knowledge. I am at present in the opinion of my physicians (Dr. Heberden and Dr. Brocklesby), as well as my own, going on very hopefully. I have just begun to take vinegar of squills. The powder hurt my stomach so much, that it could not be continued.

Return Sir Alexander Dick my sincere thanks for his kind letter; and bring with you the rhubarb¹ which he so tenderly offers me.

I hope dear Mrs. Boswell is now quite well, and that no evil, either real or imaginary, now disturbs you.

I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, March 2, 1784.

I also applied to three of the eminent physicians who had chairs in our celebrated school of medicine at Edinburgh, Doctors Cullen, Hope, and Munro, to each of whom I sent the following letter :

DEAR SIR: Dr. Johnson has been very ill for some time; and in a letter of anxious apprehension he writes to me, "Ask your physicians about my case."

This, you see, is not authority for a regular consultation: but I have no doubt of your readiness to give your advice to a man so eminent, and who, in his "Life of Garth," has paid your profession a just and elegant compliment: "I believe every man has found in physicians great liberality and dignity of sentiment, very prompt effusions of beneficence, and willingness to exert a lucrative art, where there is no hope of lucre."

Dr. Johnson is aged seventy-four. Last summer he had a stroke of the palsy, from which he recovered almost entirely. He had, before that, been troubled with a catarrhus cough. This winter he was seized with a spasmodick asthma, by which he has been confined to his house for about three months. Dr. Brocklesby writes to me, that upon the least admission of cold, there is such a constriction upon his breast, that he cannot lie down in his bed, but is obliged to sit up all night, and gets rest and sometimes sleep, only by means of laudanum and syrup of poppies; and that there are oedematous tumours in his legs and thighs. Dr. Brocklesby trusts a good deal to the return of mild weather. Dr. Johnson says, that a dropsy gains ground upon him; and he seems to think that a warmer climate would do him good. I understand he is now rather better, and is using vinegar of squills. I am, with great esteem, dear Sir, your most obedient humble servant,

JAMES BOSWELL.

MARCH 7, 1784.

All of them paid the most polite attention to my letter, and its venerable object. Dr. Cullen's words concerning him were: "It would give me the greatest pleasure to be of any service to

¹ From his garden at Prestonfield, where he cultivated that plant with such success, that he was presented with a gold medal by the Society of London for the encouragement of Arts, Manufactures and Commerce.—B.

a man whom the public properly esteem, and whom I esteem and respect as much as I do Dr. Johnson." Dr. Hope's: "Few people have a better claim on me than your friend, as hardly a day passes that I do not ask his opinion about this or that word." Dr. Munro's: "I most sincerely join you in sympathizing with that very worthy and ingenious character, from whom his country has derived much instruction and entertainment."

Dr. Hope corresponded with his friend Dr. Brocklesby. Doctors Cullen and Munro wrote their opinions and prescriptions to me, which I afterwards carried with me to London, and, so far as they were encouraging, communicated to Johnson. The liberality on one hand, and grateful sense of it on the other, I have great satisfaction in recording.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I am too much pleased with the attention which you and your dear lady¹ shew to my welfare, not to be diligent in letting you know the progress which I make towards health. The dropsy, by GOD's blessing, has now run almost totally away by natural evacuation: and the asthma, if not irritated by cold, gives me little trouble. While I am writing this, I have not any sensation of debility or disease. But I do not yet venture out, having been confined to the house from the 13th of December, now a quarter of a year.

When it will be fit for me to travel as far as Auchinleck, I am not able to guess; but such a letter as Mrs. Boswell's might draw any man, not wholly motionless, a great way. Pray tell the dear lady how much her civility and kindness have touched and gratified me.

Our parliamentary tumults have now begun to subside, and the King's authority is in some measure re-established.² Mr. Pitt will have great power; but you must remember, that what he has to give, must, at least for some time, be given to those who gave, and those who preserve, his power. A new Minister can sacrifice little to esteem or friendship: he must, till he is settled, think only of extending his interest.

If you come hither through Edinburgh, send for Mrs. Stewart, and give for me another guinea for the letter in the old case, to which I shall not be satisfied with my claim, till she gives it me.

Please to bring with you Baxter's "Anacreon"; and if you procure heads of Hector Boece, the historian, and Arthur Johnston, the poet, I will put them in my room; or any other of the fathers of Scottish literature.

I wish you an easy and happy journey, and hope I need not tell you that you will be welcome to, dear Sir, your most affectionate humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, March 18, 1784.

¹ Who had written him a very kind letter. — B.

² On January 12, the Ministry had been in a minority of thirty-nine in a House of 425; on March 8, the minority was reduced to one in a House of 381. Parliament was dissolved on the 25th. In the first division in the new Parliament the Ministry were in a majority of ninety-seven in a House of 369. — *Dr. Hill*,

I wrote to him, March 28, from York, informing him that I had a high gratification in the triumph of monarchical principles over aristocratical influence, in that great county, in an address to the King; that I was thus far on my way to him, but that the news of the dissolution of Parliament having arrived, I was to hasten back to my own county, where I had carried an Address to his Majesty by a great majority, and had some intention of being a candidate to represent the county in Parliament.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: You could do nothing so proper as to hasten back when you found the Parliament dissolved. With the influence which your address must have gained you, it may reasonably be expected that your presence will be of importance, and your activity of effect.

Your solicitude for me gives me that pleasure which every man feels from the kindness of such a friend; and it is with delight I relieve it by telling that Dr. Brocklesby's account is true, and that I am, by the blessing of GOD, wonderfully relieved.

You are entering upon a transaction which requires much prudence. You must endeavour to oppose without exasperating; to practise temporary hostility, without producing enemies for life. This is, perhaps, hard to be done; yet it has been done by many, and seems most likely to be effected by opposing merely upon general principles, without descending to personal or particular censures or objections. One thing I must enjoin you, which is seldom observed in the conduct of elections; I must entreat you to be scrupulous in the use of strong liquors. One night's drunkenness may defeat the labours of forty days well employed. Be firm, but not clamorous; be active, but not malicious; and you may form such an interest, as may not only exalt yourself, but dignify your family.

We are, as you may suppose, all busy here. Mr. Fox resolutely stands for Westminster, and his friends say will carry the election. However that be, he will certainly have a seat.¹ Mr. Hoole has just told me, that the city leans towards the King.

Let me hear, from time to time, how you are employed, and what progress you make.

Make dear Mrs. Boswell, and all the young Boswells, the sincere compliments of, Sir, your affectionate humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, March 30, 1784.

To Mr. Langton he wrote with that cordiality which was suitable to the long friendship which had subsisted between him and that gentleman.

¹ Fox was returned for Westminster after a poll which lasted from April 1 to May 17, and a scrutiny which lasted for nearly a year. His opponent was Sir Cecil Wray, whom he defeated by 236 votes. During the scrutiny he sat for Kirkwall, for which place he had been also returned,

March 27. Since you left me, I have continued in my own opinion, and in Dr. Brocklesby's, to grow better with respect to all my formidable and dangerous distempers: though to a body battered and shaken as mine has lately been, it is to be feared that weak attacks may be sometimes mischievous. I have, indeed, by standing carelessly at an open window, got a very troublesome cough, which it has been necessary to appease by opium, in larger quantities than I like to take, and I have not found it give way so readily as I expected; its obstinacy, however, seems at last disposed to submit to the remedy, and I know not whether I should then have a right to complain of any morbid sensation. My asthma is, I am afraid, constitutional and incurable; but it is only occasional, and unless it be excited by labour or by cold, gives me no molestation, nor does it lay very close siege to life; for Sir John Floyer,¹ whom the physical race consider as authour of one of the best books upon it, panted on to ninety, as was supposed; and why were we content with supposing a fact so interesting, of a man so conspicuous? because he corrupted, at perhaps seventy or eighty, the register, that he might pass for younger than he was. He was not much less than eighty, when to a man of rank who modestly asked his age, he answered, "Go look;" though he was in general a man of civility and elegance.

The ladies, I find, are at your house all well, except Miss Langton, who will probably soon recover her health by light suppers. Let her eat at dinner as she will, but not take a full stomach to bed. Pay my sincere respects to dear Miss Langton in Lincolnshire, let her know that I mean not to break our league of friendship, and that I have a set of "Lives" for her, when I have the means of sending it.

April 8. I am still disturbed by my cough; but what thanks have I not to pay, when my cough is the most painful sensation that I feel? and from that I expect hardly to be released, while winter continues to gripe us with so much pertinacity. The year has now advanced eighteen days beyond the equinox, and still there is very little remission of the cold. When warm weather comes, which surely must come at last, I hope it will help both me and your young lady.

The man so busy about addresses is neither more nor less than our own Boswell, who had come as far as York towards London, but turned back on the dissolution, and is said now to stand for some place. Whether to wish him success, his best friends hesitate.

Let me have your prayers for the completion of my recovery: I am now better than I ever expected to have been. May GOD add to his mercies the grace that may enable me to use them according to his will. My compliments to all.

April 13. I had this evening a note from Lord Portmore,² desiring that I

¹ Floyer was the Lichfield physician on whose advice Johnson was "touched" by Queen Anne.

² To which Johnson returned this answer:

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE EARL OF PORTMORE.

DR. JOHNSON acknowledges with great respect the honour of Lord Portmore's notice. He is better than he was; and will, as his Lordship directs, write to Mr. Langton.

BOLT-COURT, FLEET-STREET, April 13, 1784. — B.

Johnson here assumes his title of Doctor which Boswell thought he had never done.

would give you an account of my health. You might have had it with less circumduction. I am, by God's blessing, I believe free from all morbid sensations, except a cough, which is only troublesome. But I am still weak, and can have no great hope of strength till the weather shall be softer. The summer, if it be kindly, will, I hope, enable me to support the winter. God, who has so wonderfully restored me, can preserve me in all seasons.

Let me enquire in my turn after the state of your family, great and little. I hope Lady Rothes and Miss Langton are both well. That is a good basis of content. Then how goes George on with his studies? How does Miss Mary? And how does my own Jenny? I think I owe Jenny a letter, which I will take care to pay. In the mean time tell her that I acknowledge the debt.

Be pleased to make my compliments to the ladies. If Mrs. Langton comes to London, she will favour me with a visit, for I am not well enough to go out.

TO OZIAS HUMPHREY,¹ ESQ.

SIR: Mr. Hoole has told me with what benevolence you listened to a request which I was almost afraid to make, of leave to a young painter² to attend you from time to time in your painting-room, to see your operations, and receive your instructions.

The young man has perhaps good parts, but has been without a regular education. He is my god-son, and therefore I interest myself in his progress and success, and shall think myself much favoured if I receive from you a permission to send him.

My health is, by God's blessing, much restored, but I am not yet allowed by my physicians to go abroad: nor, indeed, do I think myself yet able to endure the weather. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

APRIL 5, 1784.

TO THE SAME.

SIR: The bearer is my god-son, whom I take the liberty of recommending to your kindness; which I hope he will deserve by his respect to your excellence and his gratitude for your favours. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

APRIL 10, 1784.

¹ The eminent painter, representative of the ancient family of Homfrey (now Humphry) in the west of England; who, as appears from their arms which they have invariably used, have been (as I have seen authenticated by the best authority) one of those among the knights and esquires of honor who are represented by Holinshed as having issued from the Tower of London on coursers apparelled for the jousts, accompanied by ladies of honor, leading every one a knight with a chain of gold, passing through the streets of London into Smithfield, on Sunday, at three o'clock in the afternoon, being the first Sunday after Michaelmas, in the fourteenth year of King Richard the Second. This family once enjoyed large possessions, but, like others, have lost them in the progress of ages. Their blood, however, remains to them well ascertained; and they may hope, in the revolution of events, to recover that rank in society, for which, in modern times, fortune seems to be an indispensable requisite. — B.

² Son of Mr. Samuel Paterson, eminent for his knowledge of books. — B.

TO THE SAME.

SIR: I am very much obliged by your civilities to my godson, but must beg of you to add to them the favour of permitting him to see you paint, that he may know how a picture is begun, advanced, and completed.

If he may attend you in a few of your operations, I hope he will shew that the benefit has been properly conferred, both by his proficiency and his gratitude. At least I shall consider you as enlarging your kindness to, Sir, your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MAY 31, 1784.

TO THE REVEREND DR. TAYLOR, ASHBOURNE, DERBYSHIRE.

DEAR SIR: What can be the reason that I hear nothing from you? I hope nothing disables you from writing. What I have seen, and what I have felt, gives me reason to fear every thing. Do not omit giving me the comfort of knowing that after all my losses I have yet a friend left.

I want every comfort. My life is very solitary and very cheerless. Though it has pleased GOD wonderfully to deliver me from the dropsy, I am yet very weak, and have not passed the door since the 13th of December.¹ I hope for some help from warm weather, which will surely come in time.

I could not have the consent of the physicians to go to church yesterday; I therefore received the holy sacrament at home, in the room where I communicated with dear Mrs. Williams, a little before her death. O! my friend, the approach of death is very dreadful. I am afraid to think on that which I know I cannot avoid. It is vain to look round and round for that help which can not be had. Yet we hope and hope, and fancy that he who has lived to-day may live to-morrow. But let us learn to derive our hope only from God.

In the meantime, let us be kind to one another. I have no friend now living but you² and Mr. Hector, that was the friend of my youth. Do not neglect, dear Sir, yours affectionately,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, EASTER-MONDAY.

April 12, 1784.

What follows is a beautiful specimen of his gentleness and complacency to a young lady his godchild, one of the daughters of his friend Mr. Langton, then I think in her seventh year. He took the trouble to write it in a large round hand, nearly resembling printed characters, that she might have the satisfaction of reading it herself. The original lies before me, but shall be faithfully restored to her; and I dare say will be preserved by her as a jewel, as long as she lives.

¹ He was confined 129 days.

² This friend of Johnson's youth survived him somewhat more than three years, having died Feb. 19, 1788. — *Malone*.

TO MISS JANE LANGTON, IN ROCHESTER, KENT.

MY DEAREST MISS JENNY: I am sorry that your pretty letter has been so long without being answered; but, when I am not pretty well, I do not always write plain enough for young ladies. I am glad, my dear, to see that you write so well, and hope that you mind your pen, your book, and your needle, for they are all necessary. Your books will give you knowledge, and make you respected; and your needle will find you useful employment when you do not care to read. When you are a little older, I hope you will be very diligent in learning arithmetick; and, above all, that through your whole life you will carefully say your prayers, and read your Bible. I am, my dear, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

MAY 10, 1784.

On Wednesday, May 5, I arrived in London, and next morning had the pleasure to find Dr. Johnson greatly recovered. I but just saw him, for a coach was waiting to carry him to Islington, to the house of his friend the Reverend Mr. Strahan, where he went sometimes for the benefit of good air, which, notwithstanding his having formerly laughed at the general opinion upon the subject, he now acknowledged was conducive to health.

One morning afterwards, when I found him alone, he communicated to me, with solemn earnestness, a very remarkable circumstance which had happened in the course of his illness, when he was much distressed by the dropsy. He had shut himself up, and employed a day in particular exercises of religion,—fasting, humiliation, and prayer. On a sudden he obtained extraordinary relief, for which he looked up to Heaven with grateful devotion. He made no direct inference from this fact; but from his manner of telling it, I could perceive that it appeared to him as something more than an incident in the common course of events. For my own part, I have no difficulty to avow that cast of thinking, which, by many modern pretenders to wisdom, is called *superstitious*. But here I think even men of dry rationality may believe, that there was an intermediate interposition of divine Providence, and that “the fervent prayer of this righteous man” availed.¹

¹ Upon this subject there is a very fair and judicious remark in the “Life of Dr. Abernethy,” in the first edition of the “Biographia Britannica,” which I should have been glad to see in his Life which has been written for the second edition of that valuable work. “To deny the exercise of a particular providence in the Deity’s government of the world, is certainly impious, yet nothing serves the cause of the scorner more than an incautious forward zeal in determining the particular instances of it.” In confirmation of my sentiments, I am also happy to quote that sensible and elegant writer, Mr. Melmoth, in Letter VIII. of his collection, published under the name of *Fitzosborne*. “We may safely assert, that the belief

On Sunday, May 9, I found Colonel Vallancy, the celebrated antiquary and engineer of Ireland, with him. On Monday, the 10th, I dined with him at Mr. Paradise's, where was a large company; Mr. Bryant, Mr. Joddrel, Mr. Hawkins Browne, &c. On Thursday, the 13th, I dined with him at Mr. Joddrel's with another large company; the Bishop of Exeter, Lord Monboddo,¹ Mr. Murphy, &c.

On Saturday, May 15, I dined with him at Dr. Brocklesby's, where were Colonel Vallancy, Mr. Murphy, and that ever-cheerful companion Mr. Devaynes, apothecary to his Majesty. Of these days and others on which I saw him, I have no memorials, except the general recollection of his being able and animated in conversation, and appearing to relish society as much as the youngest man. I find only these three small particulars: When a person was mentioned, who said, "I have lived fifty-one years in this world, without having had ten minutes of uneasiness;" he exclaimed, "The man who says so, lies: he attempts to impose on human credulity." The Bishop of Exeter in vain observed that men were very different. His Lordship's manner was not impressive: and I learnt afterwards, that Johnson did not find out that the person who talked to him was a prelate; if he had, I doubt not that he would have treated him with more respect: for once talking of George Psalmanazar, whom he revered for his piety, he said, "I should as soon think of contradicting a BISHOP." One of the company provoked him greatly by doing what he could least of all bear, which was quoting something of his own writing against what he then maintained, "What, Sir," cried the gentleman, "do you say to

"The busy day, the peaceful night,
Unfelt, uncounted, glided by?"

Johnson finding himself thus presented as giving an instance of a

of a particular Providence is founded upon such probable reasons as may well justify our assent. It would scarce, therefore, be wise to renounce an opinion which affords so firm a support to the soul, in those seasons wherein she stands in most need of assistance, merely because it is not possible, in questions of this kind, to solve every difficulty which attends them." — B.

¹ I was sorry to observe Lord Monboddo avoid any communication with Dr. Johnson. I flattered myself that I had made them very good friends (see "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides," third edition, p. 67), but unhappily his Lordship had resumed and cherished a violent prejudice against my illustrious friend, to whom I must do the justice to say there was on his part not the least anger, but a good-humored sportiveness. Nay, though he knew of his Lordship's indisposition towards him, he was even kindly: as appeared from his inquiring of me after him, by an abbreviation of his name, "Well, how does *Monny*?" — B.

² Verses on the death of Mr. Levett. — B.

man who had lived without uneasiness, was much offended, for he looked upon such a quotation as unfair. His anger burst out in an unjustifiable retort, insinuating that the gentleman's remark was a sally of ebriety; "Sir, there is one passion I would advise you to command: when you have drunk out that glass, don't drink another."¹ Here was exemplified what Goldsmith said of him, with the aid of a very witty image from one of Cibber's comedies: "There is no arguing with Johnson: for if his pistol misses fire, he knocks you down with the butt end of it."

Another was this: when a gentleman² of eminence in the literary world was violently censured for attacking people by anonymous paragraphs in newspapers, he, from the spirit of contradiction as I thought, took up his defence, and said: "Come, come, this is not so terrible a crime; he means only to vex them a little. I do not say that I should do it; but there is a great difference between him and me; what is fit for Hephæstion is not fit for Alexander." Another, when I told him that a young and handsome countess had said to me, "I should think that to be praised by Dr. Johnson would make one a fool all one's life;" and that I answered, "Madam, I shall make him a fool to-day, by repeating this to him;" he said: "I am too old to be made a fool; but if you say I am made a fool, I shall not deny it. I am much pleased with a compliment, especially from a pretty woman."

On the evening of Saturday, May 15, he was in fine spirits, at our Essex Head Club. He told us: "I dined yesterday at Mrs. Garrick's with Mrs. Carter,³ Miss Hannah More, and Miss Fanny Burney. Three such women are not to be found: I know not where I could find a fourth, except Mrs. Lennox, who is superior to them all."⁴ BOSWELL: "What! had you them all to yourself, Sir?" JOHNSON: "I had them all as much as they were had; but it might have been better had there been more company there." BOSWELL: "Might not Mrs. Montagu have been a fourth?" JOHNSON: "Sir, Mrs. Montagu does not make a trade of her wit; but Mrs. Montagu is a very extraordinary woman; she has a constant stream of conversation, and it is always impregnated; it has always meaning." BOSWELL: "Mr. Burke has a constant stream of conversation." JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; if a

¹ This "retort" leaves little doubt that the offender was Boswell himself.

² George Steevens.

³ To whom Johnson forty-six years before had composed a Greek epigram.

⁴ These ladies all lived to a great age. Mrs. Montagu, 80; Mrs. Lennox, 83; Miss Burney (Mme. D'Arblay), 87; Miss More and Mrs. (Miss) Carter, 88; Mrs. Garrick, 97 or 98.—*Dr. Hill.*

man were to go by chance at the same time with Burke under a shed, to shun a shower, he would say — ‘This is an extraordinary man.’ If Burke should go into a stable to see his horse dressed, the ostler would say — ‘We have had an extraordinary man here.’” BOSWELL: “Foote was a man who never failed in conversation. If he had gone into a stable —” JOHNSON: “Sir, if he had gone into the stable, the ostler would have said, ‘Here has been a comical fellow;’ but he would not have respected him.” BOSWELL: “And, Sir, the ostler would have answered him, would have given him as good as he brought, as the common saying is.” JOHNSON: “Yes, Sir; and Foote would have answered the ostler. When Burke does not descend to be merry, his conversation is very superior indeed. There is no proportion between the powers which he shows in serious talk and in jocularly. When he lets himself down to that, he is in the kennel.” I have in another place¹ opposed, and I hope with success, Dr. Johnson’s very singular and erroneous notion as to Mr. Burke’s pleasantries. Mr. Windham now said low to me, that he differed from our great friend in this observation; for that Mr. Burke was often very happy in his merriment. It would not have been right for either of us to have contradicted Johnson at this time, in a society all of whom did not know and value Mr. Burke as much as we did. It might have occasioned something more rough, and at any rate would probably have checked the flow of Johnson’s good-humor. He called to us with a sudden air of exultation, as the thought started into his mind: “O gentlemen, I must tell you a very great thing. The Empress of Russia has ordered the *Rambler* to be translated into the Russian language: ² so I shall be read on the banks of the Volga. Horace boasts that his fame would extend as far as the banks of the Rhone; now the Volga is farther from me than the Rhone was from Horace.” BOSWELL: “You must certainly be pleased with this, Sir.” JOHNSON: “I am pleased, Sir, to be sure. A man is pleased to find he has succeeded in that which he has endeavored to do.”

One of the company mentioned his having seen a noble person driving in his carriage, and looking exceedingly well, notwithstanding his great age. JOHNSON: “Ah, Sir; that is nothing.

¹ “Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides,” third edition, p. 20. — B.

² I have since heard that the report was not well founded; but the elation discovered by Johnson in the belief that it was true, showed a noble ardor for literary fame. — B.

Bacon observes, that a stout healthy old man is like a tower undermined."

On Sunday, May 16, I found him alone; he talked of Mrs. Thrale with much concern, saying, "Sir, she has done everything wrong, since Thrale's bridle was off her neck;" and was proceeding to mention some circumstances which have since been the subject of public discussion, when he was interrupted by the arrival of Dr. Douglas, now Bishop of Salisbury.

Dr. Douglas, upon this occasion, refuted a mistaken notion which is very common in Scotland, that the ecclesiastical discipline of the Church of England, though duly enforced, is insufficient to preserve the morals of the clergy, inasmuch as all delinquents may be screened by appealing to the Convocation, which being never authorized by the King to sit for the despatch of business, the appeal never can be heard. Dr. Douglas observed that this was founded upon ignorance; for that the bishops have sufficient power to maintain discipline, and that the sitting of the Convocation was wholly immaterial in this respect, it being not a Court of Judicature, but like a Parliament, to make canons and regulations as times may require.

Johnson, talking of the fear of death, said: "Some people are not afraid, because they look upon salvation as the effect of an absolute decree, and think they feel in themselves the marks of sanctification. Others, and those the most rational in my opinion, look upon salvation as conditional; and as they never can be sure that they have complied with the conditions, they are afraid."

In one of his little manuscript diaries, about this time, I find a short notice, which marks his amiable disposition more certainly than a thousand studied declarations. "Afternoon spent cheerfully and elegantly, I hope without offence to God or man; though in no holy duty, yet in the general exercise and cultivation of benevolence."

On Monday, May 17, I dined with him at Mr. Dilly's, where were Colonel Vallancy, the Reverend Dr. Gibbons, and Mr. Capel Lofft, who, though a most zealous Whig, has a mind so full of learning and knowledge, and so much exercise in various departments, and withal so much liberality, that the stupendous powers of the literary Goliath, though they did not frighten this little David of popular spirit, could not but excite his admiration. There was also Mr. Braithwaite of the Post Office, that amiable and friendly man, who, with modest and unassuming manners, has associated with many of the wits of the age. John-

son was very quiescent to-day. Perhaps too I was indolent. I find nothing more of him in my notes, but that when I mentioned that I had seen in the King's library sixty-three editions of my favorite "Thomas à Kempis," — amongst which it was in eight languages, Latin, German, French, Italian, Spanish, English, Arabic, and Armenian, — he said, he thought it unnecessary to collect many editions of a book, which were all the same, except as to the paper and print; he would have the original, and all the translations, and all the editions which had any variations in the text. He approved of the famous collection of editions of Horace by Douglas, mentioned by Pope, who is said to have had a closet filled with them; and he added, "Every man should try to collect one book in that manner, and present it to a public library."

On Tuesday, May 18, I saw him for a short time in the morning. I told him that the mob had called out, as the King passed, "No Fox — No Fox," which I did not like. He said, "They were right, Sir." I said, I thought not; for it seemed to be making Mr. Fox the King's competitor. There being no audience, so that there could be no triumph in a victory, he fairly agreed with me. I said it might do very well, if explained thus: "Let us have no Fox;" understanding it as a prayer to his Majesty not to appoint that gentleman minister.

On Wednesday, May 19, I sat a part of the evening with him, by ourselves. I observed, that the death of our friends might be a consolation against the fear of our own dissolution, because we might have more friends in the other world than in this. He perhaps felt this as a reflection upon his apprehension as to death, and said, with heat: "How can a man know *where* his departed friends are, or whether they will be his friends in the other world? How many friendships have you known formed upon principles of virtue? Most friendships are formed by caprice or by chance, mere confederacies in vice or leagues in folly."

We talked of our worthy friend Mr. Langton. He said, "I know not who will go to Heaven if Langton does not. Sir, I could almost say, *Sit anima mea cum Langtono*." I mentioned a very eminent friend¹ as a virtuous man. JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; but ——— has not the evangelical virtue of Langton. ———, I am afraid, would not scruple to pick up a wench."

¹ Either W. G. Hamilton who was "an eminent friend" of Johnson but was not Boswell's friend, or Burke.

He however charged Mr. Langton with what he thought want of judgment upon an interesting occasion. "When I was ill," said he, "I desired he would tell me sincerely in what he thought my life was faulty. Sir, he brought me a sheet of paper, on which he had written down several texts of Scripture, recommending Christian charity. And when I questioned him what occasion I had given for such an animadversion, all that he could say amounted to this,—that I sometimes contradicted people in conversation. Now what harm does it do to any man to be contradicted?" BOSWELL: "I suppose he meant the *manner* of doing it; roughly, and harshly." JOHNSON: "And who is the worse for that?" BOSWELL: "It hurts people of weaker nerves." JOHNSON: "I know no such weak-nerved people." Mr. Burke, to whom I related this conference, said, "It is well, if when a man comes to die, he has nothing heavier upon his conscience than having been a little rough in conversation."

Johnson, at the time when the paper was presented to him, though at first pleased with the attention of his friend, whom he thanked in an earnest manner, soon exclaimed in a loud and angry tone, "What is your drift, Sir?" Sir Joshua Reynolds pleasantly observed, that it was a scene for a comedy, to see a penitent get into a violent passion and belabor his confessor.¹

I have preserved no more of his conversation at the times when I saw him during the rest of this month, till Sunday, the 30th of May, when I met him in the evening at Mr. Hoole's, where there was a large company both of ladies and gentlemen. Sir James Johnston happened to say, that he paid no regard to the arguments of counsel at the bar of the House of Commons, because they were paid for speaking. JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir, argument is argument. You cannot help paying regard to their arguments, if they are good. If it were testimony, you might disregard it, if you knew that it were purchased. There is a

¹ After all, I cannot but be of opinion, that as Mr. Langton was seriously requested by Dr. Johnson to mention what appeared to him erroneous in the character of his friend he was bound as an honest man to intimate what he really thought, which he certainly did in the most delicate manner; so that Johnson himself, when in a quiet frame of mind, was pleased with it. The texts suggested are now before me, and I shall quote a few of them. "Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth." Mat. v. 5. "I, therefore, the prisoner of the LORD, beseech you, that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, with all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love." Ephes. v. 1, 2. "And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness." Col. iii. 14. "Charity suffereth long, and is kind: charity envieth not, charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up: doth not behave itself unseemly, is not easily provoked." I. Cor. xiii. 4, 5.—B.

beautiful image in Bacon¹ upon this subject : testimony is like an arrow shot from a long bow ; the force of it depends on the strength of the hand that draws it. Argument is like an arrow from a crossbow, which has equal force though shot by a child."

He had dined that day at Mr. Hoole's, and Miss Helen Maria Williams being expected in the evening, Mr. Hoole put into his hands her beautiful "Ode on the Peace :"² Johnson read it over, and when this elegant, and accomplished young lady³ was presented to him, he took her by the hand in the most courteous manner, and repeated the finest stanza of her poem ; this was the most delicate and pleasing compliment he could pay. Her respectable friend, Dr. Kippis, from whom I had this anecdote, was standing by, and was not a little gratified.

Miss Williams told me, that the only other time she was fortunate enough to be in Dr. Johnson's company, he asked her to sit down by him, which she did, and upon her inquiring how he was, he answered, "I am very ill indeed, Madam. I am very ill even when you are near me ; what should I be were you at a distance ?"

He had now a great desire to go to Oxford, as his first jaunt after his illness ; we talked of it for some days, and I had promised to accompany him. He was impatient and fretful to-night, because I did not at once agree to go with him on Thursday. When I considered how ill he had been, and what allowance should be made for the influence of sickness upon his temper, I resolved to indulge him, though with some inconvenience to myself, as I wished to attend the musical meeting in honor of Handel, in Westminster Abbey, on the following Saturday.

In the midst of his own diseases and pains, he was ever compassionate to the distresses of others, and actively earnest in procuring them aid, as appears from a note to Sir Joshua Reynolds,

¹ Dr. Johnson's memory deceived him. The passage referred to is not Bacon's, but Boyle's : and may be found with a slight variation, in Johnson's Dictionary, under the word, *Crossbow*.—Malone.

² The peace made by that very able statesman, the Earl of Shelburne, now Marquis of Lansdowne, which may fairly be considered as the foundation of all the prosperity of Great Britain since that time.—B.

³ In the first edition of my Work, the epithet *amiable* was given. I was sorry to be obliged to strike it out ; but I could not in justice suffer it to remain, after this young lady had not only written in favor of the savage anarchy with which France has been visited, but had (as I have been informed by good authority), walked without horror over the ground at the Tuilleries when it was strewed with the naked bodies of the faithful Swiss guards, who were barbarously massacred for having bravely defended, against a crew of ruffians, the monarch whom they had taken an oath to defend. From Dr. Johnson she could now expect not endearment but repulsion.—B.

of June, in these words: "I am ashamed to ask for some relief for a poor man, to whom, I hope, I have given what I can be expected to spare. The man importunes me, and the blow goes round. I am going to try another air on Thursday."

On Thursday, June 3, the Oxford post-coach took us up in the morning at Bolt Court. The other two passengers were Mrs. Beresford and her daughter, two very agreeable ladies from America; they were going to Worcestershire, where they then resided. Frank had been sent by his master the day before to take places for us; and I found from the way-bill that Dr. Johnson had made our names be put down. Mrs. Beresford, who had read it, whispered me, "Is this the great Dr. Johnson?" I told her it was; so she was then prepared to listen. As she soon happened to mention in a voice so low that Johnson did not hear it, that her husband had been a member of the American Congress, I cautioned her to beware of introducing that subject, as she must know how very violent Johnson was against the people of that country. He talked a great deal. But I am sorry I have preserved little of the conversation. Miss Beresford was so much charmed, that she said to me aside, "How he does talk! Every sentence is an essay." She amused herself in the coach with knotting; he would scarcely allow this species of employment any merit. "Next to mere idleness," said he, "I think knotting is to be reckoned in the scale of insignificance; though I once attempted to learn knotting. Dempster's sister (looking to me) endeavored to teach me it; but I made no progress."

I was surprised at his talking without reserve in the public post-coach of the state of his affairs: "I have," said he, "about the world, I think, above a thousand pounds, which I intend shall afford Frank an annuity of seventy pounds a year." Indeed his openness with people at a first interview was remarkable. He said once to Mr. Langton, "I think I am like 'Squire Richard in 'The Journey to London,'¹ *I'm never strange in a strange place.*" He was truly *social*. He strongly censured what is much too common in England among persons of condition, — maintaining an absolute silence, when unknown to each other; as for instance, when occasionally brought together in a room before the master or mistress of the house has appeared. "Sir, that is being so uncivilized as not to understand the common rights of humanity."

¹ Vanbrugh and Colley Cibber: "The Provoked Husband; or a Journey to London." Act ii. sc. 1.

At the inn where we stopped he was exceedingly dissatisfied with some roast mutton which he had for dinner. The ladies, I saw, wondered to see the great philosopher, whose wisdom and wit they had been admiring all the way, get into ill-humor from such a cause. He scolded the waiter, saying, "It is as bad as bad can be: it is ill-fed, ill-killed, ill-kept, and ill-dressed."

He bore the journey very well, and seemed to feel himself elevated as he approached Oxford, that magnificent and venerable seat of Learning, Orthodoxy, and Toryism. Frank came in the heavy coach, in readiness to attend him; and we were received with the most polite hospitality at the house of his old friend Dr. Adams, Master of Pembroke College, who had given us a kind invitation. Before we were set down, I communicated to Johnson, my having engaged to return to London directly, for the reason I have mentioned, but that I would hasten back to him again. He was pleased that I had made this journey merely to keep him company. He was easy and placid with Dr. Adams, Mrs. and Miss Adams, and Mrs. Kennicot, widow of the learned Hebræan, who was here on a visit. He soon dispatched the inquiries which were made about his illness and recovery, by a short and distinct narrative; and then assuming a gay air, repeated from Swift,

"Nor think on our approaching ills,
And talk of spectacles and pills."¹

Dr. Newton, the Bishop of Bristol, having been mentioned, Johnson recollecting the manner in which he had been censured by that prelate,² thus retaliated: "Tom knew he should be dead

¹ Swift: "Lines on Stella's Birth-day," 1726-7.

² Dr. Newton in his Account of his own Life, after animadverting upon Mr. Gibbon's History, says, "Dr. Johnson's 'Lives of the Poets' afforded more amusement: but candor was much hurt and offended at the malevolence that predominates in every part. Some passages, it must be allowed, are judicious and well-written, but make not sufficient compensation for so much spleen and ill-humor. Never was any biographer more sparing of his praise, or more abundant in his censures. He seemingly delights more in exposing blemishes, than in recommending beauties; slightly passes over excellences, enlarges upon imperfections, and, not content with his own severe reflections, revives old scandal, and produces large quotations from the forgotten works of former critics. His reputation was so high in the republic of letters, that it wanted not to be raised upon the ruins of others. But these Essays, instead of raising a higher idea than was before entertained of his understanding, have certainly given the world a worse opinion of his temper." The Bishop was therefore the more surprised and concerned for his townsman, for "*He respected him not only for his genius and learning, but valued him much for the more amiable part of his character, his humanity and charity, his morality and religion.*" The last sentence we may consider as the general and

before what he has said of me would appear. He durst not have printed it while he was alive." DR. ADAMS: "I believe his 'Dissertations on the Prophecies' is his great work." JOHNSON: "Why, Sir, it is *Tom's* great work; but how far it is great, or how much of it is *Tom's* are other questions. I fancy a considerable part of it was borrowed." DR. ADAMS: "He was a very successful man." JOHNSON: "I do n't think so, Sir. He did not get very high. He was late in getting what he did get; and he did not get it by the best means. I believe he was a gross flatterer."¹

I fulfilled my intention by going to London, and returned to Oxford on Wednesday the 9th of June, when I was happy to find myself again in the same agreeable circle at Pembroke College, with the comfortable prospect of making some stay. Johnson welcomed my return with more than ordinary glee.

He talked with great regard of the Honorable Archibald Campbell, whose character he had given at the Duke of Argyll's table, when we were at Inverary;² and at this time wrote out for me, in his own hand, a fuller account of that learned and venerable writer, which I have published in its proper place. Johnson made a remark this evening which struck me a good deal. "I never," said he, "knew a Nonjuror who could reason."³ Surely he did not mean to deny that faculty to many of their writers; to Hickes, Brett, and other eminent divines of that persuasion; and did not recollect that the seven bishops, so justly celebrated for their magnanimous resistance of arbitrary power, were yet Non-

permanent opinion of Bishop Newton; the remarks which precede it must, by all who have read Johnson's admirable work, be imputed to the disgust and peevishness of old age. I wish they had not appeared, and that Dr. Johnson had not been provoked by them to express himself not in respectful terms, of a prelate whose labors were certainly of considerable advantage both to literature and religion. — B.

¹ Newton was born Jan. 1, 1704, made Bishop 1761, died 1781.

² "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides," third edit. p. 371. — B.

³ The Rev. Mr. Agutter has favored me with a note of a dialogue between Mr. John Henderson and Dr. Johnson on this topic, as related by Mr. Henderson, and it is evidently so authentic that I shall here insert it: HENDERSON: "What do you think, Sir, of William Law?" JOHNSON: "William Law, Sir, wrote the best piece of Parenetic Divinity; but William Law was no reasoner." HENDERSON: "Jeremy Collier, Sir?" JOHNSON: "Jeremy Collier fought without a rival, and therefore could not claim the victory." Mr. Henderson mentioned Kenn and Kettlewell; but some objections were made; at last he said, "But, Sir, what do you think of Lesley?" JOHNSON: "Charles Lesley I had forgotten. Lesley was a reasoner, and a reasoner who was not to be reasoned against." — B. Many tried to answer Collier's famous attack on the English stage, Congreve and Vanbrugh, and perhaps Wycherley, among the number; but the victory remained with Collier. Dryden alone dared to confess his offences, and ask pardon for them. But Dryden alone was great enough to do this. See Macaulay's essay on the Comic Dramatists of the Restoration. For Lesley, and for the mistake in Boswell's note, see Macaulay's "History of England," iii. 455-6.

jurors to the new Government. The nonjuring clergy of Scotland, indeed, who, excepting a few, have lately, by a sudden stroke, cut off all ties of allegiance to the House of Stuart and resolved to pray for our present lawful Sovereign by name, may be thought to have confirmed this remark; as it may be said, that the divine indefeasible hereditary right which they professed to believe, if ever true, must be equally true still. Many of my readers will be surprised when I mention, that Johnson assured me he had never in his life been in a nonjuring meeting-house.

Next morning at breakfast, he pointed out a passage in Savage's "Wanderer," saying "These are fine verses."—"If," said he, "I had written with hostility of Warburton in my 'Shakspeare,' I should have quoted this couplet:

" ' Here Learning, blinded first, and then beguill'd,
Looks dark as Ignorance, as Frenzy wild."

You see they'd have fitted him to a Z'" (smiling). DR. ADAMS: "But you did not write against Warburton." JOHNSON: "No, Sir, I treated him with great respect both in my preface and in my notes."

Mrs. Kennicot spoke of her brother, the Reverend Mr. Chamberlayne, who had given up great prospects in the Church of England on his conversion to the Roman Catholic faith. Johnson, who warmly admired every man who acted from a conscientious regard to principle, erroneous or not, exclaimed fervently, "God bless him."

Mrs. Kennicot, in confirmation of Dr. Johnson's opinion that the present was not worse than former ages, mentioned that her brother assured her, there was now less infidelity on the Continent than there had been; Voltaire and Rousseau were less read. I asserted, from good authority, that Hume's infidelity was certainly less read. JOHNSON: "All infidel writers drop into oblivion, when personal connections and the floridness of novelty are gone; though now and then a foolish fellow, who thinks he can be witty upon them, may bring them again into notice. There will sometimes start up a college joker, who does not consider that what is a joke in a college will not do in the world. To such defenders of religion I would apply a stanza of a poem which I remember to have seen in some old collection:

" ' Henceforth be quiet and agree,
Each kiss his empty brother;
Religion scorns a foe like thee,
But dreads a friend like t' other."

The point is well, though the expression is not correct; *one* and not *thee*, should be opposed to *other*.”¹

On the Roman Catholic religion he said: “If you join the Papists externally, they will not interrogate you strictly as to your belief in their tenets. No reasoning Papist believes every article of their faith. There is one side on which a good man might be persuaded to embrace it. A good man of a timorous disposition in great doubt of his acceptance with God, and pretty credulous, may be glad to be of a church where there are so many helps to get to Heaven. I would be a Papist if I could. I have fear enough; but an obstinate rationality prevents me. I shall never be a Papist, unless on the near approach of death, of which I have a very great terror. I wonder that women are not all Papists.” BOSWELL: “They are not more afraid of death than men are.” JOHNSON: “Because they are less wicked.” DR. ADAMS: “They are more pious.” JOHNSON: “No, hang ’em, they are not more pious. A wicked fellow is the most pious when he takes to it. He’ll beat you all at piety.”

He argued in defence of some of the peculiar tenets of the Church of Rome. As to the giving the bread only to the laity, he said: “They may think, that in what is merely ritual, deviations from the primitive mode may be admitted on the ground of convenience, and I think they are as well warranted to make this alteration, as we are to substitute sprinkling in the room of the ancient baptism.” As to the invocation of saints, he said: “Though I do not think it authorized, it appears to me, that the ‘communion of saints’ in the Creed means the communion with the saints in Heaven, as connected with ‘The holy Catholic

¹ I have inserted the stanza as Johnson repeated it from memory; but I have since found the poem itself, in “The Foundling Hospital for Wit,” printed at London, 1749. It is as follows:

“EPIGRAM, occasioned by a religious dispute at Bath.

“On Reason, Faith, and Mystery, high,
Two wits harangue the table;
B——y believes he knows not why,
N—— swears ’t is all a fable.

“Peace, coxcombs, peace, and both agree;
N——, kiss thy empty brother;
Religion laughs at foes like thee,
And dreads a friend like t’ other.” — B.

The disputants are supposed to have been Beau Nash and Bentley, son of the Doctor. — *Croker*.

Church.'"¹ He admitted the influence of evil spirits upon our minds, and said, "Nobody who believes the New Testament can deny it."

I brought a volume of Dr. Hurd, the Bishop of Worcester's Sermons, and read to the company some passages from one of them, upon this text, "*Resist the Devil and he will flee from you.*" James iv. 7. I was happy to produce so judicious and elegant a supporter² of a doctrine, which, I know not why, should in this world of imperfect knowledge, and therefore of wonder and mystery in a thousand instances, be contested by some with an unthinking assurance and flippancy.

After dinner, when one of us talked of there being a great enmity between Whig and Tory; JOHNSON: "Why, not so much, I think, unless when they come into competition with each other. There is none when they are only common acquaintance, none when they are of different sexes. A Tory will marry into a

¹ Waller, in his "Divine Poesie," Canto first, has the same thought finely expressed:

"The Church triumphant, and the Church below,
In songs of praise their present union show;
Their joys are full, our expectation long,
In life we differ, but we join in song;
Angels and we assisted by this art,
May sing together, though we dwell apart."—B.

² The sermon thus opens: "That there are angels and spirits, good and bad; that at the head of these last there is ONE more considerable and malignant than the rest, who, in the form or under the name of a *serpent*, was deeply concerned in the fall of man, and whose *head*, as the prophetic language is, the son of man was one day to *bruise*; that this evil spirit, though that prophecy be in part completed, has not yet received his death's wound, but is still permitted, for ends unsearchable to us, and in ways which we cannot particularly explain, to have a certain degree of power in this world hostile to its virtue and happiness, and sometimes exerted with too much success: all this is so clear from Scripture, that no believer, unless he be first of all *spoiled by philosophy and vain deceit*, can possibly entertain a doubt of it." Having treated of *possessions*, his Lordship says, "As I have no authority to affirm that there *are* now any such, so neither may I presume to say with confidence, that there *are not* any." "But then with regard to the influence of evil spirits at this day upon the SOULS of men, I shall take leave to be a great deal more peremptory." [Then, having stated the various proofs, he adds], "All this, I say, is so manifest to every one who reads the Scriptures, that, if we respect their authority, the question concerning the reality of the demoniac influence upon the minds of men is clearly determined." Let it be remembered, that these are not the words of an antiquated or obscure enthusiast, but of a learned and polite prelate now alive; and were spoken, not to a vulgar congregation, but to the Honorable Society of Lincoln's Inn. His Lordship in this sermon explains the words, "deliver us from evil," in the Lord's Prayer, as signifying a request to be protected from "the evil one," that is, the Devil. This is well illustrated in a short but excellent commentary by my late worthy friend, the Rev. Dr. Lort, of whom it may truly be said, *Multis ille bonis flebilis occidit*. It is remarkable that Waller in his *Reflections on the several Petitions, in that sacred form of devotion*, has understood this in the same sense: "Guard us from all temptations of the FOE."—B.

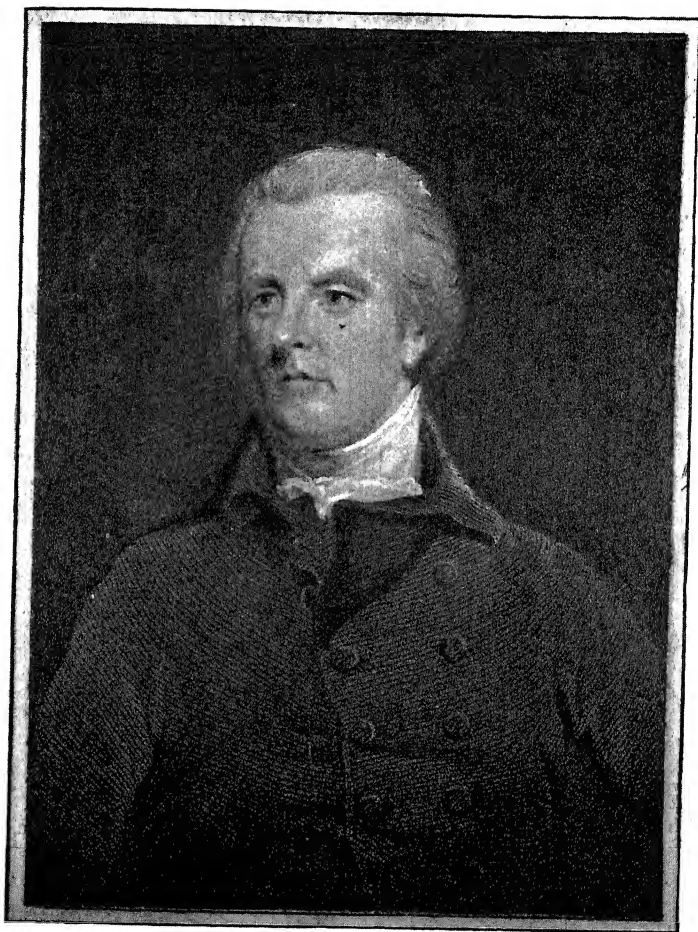
Whig family, and a Whig into a Tory family, without any reluctance. But indeed, in a matter of much more concern than political tenets, and that is religion, men and women do not concern themselves much about difference of opinion; and ladies set no value on the moral character of men who pay their addresses to them; the greatest profligate will be as well received as the man of the greatest virtue, and this by a very good woman, by a woman who says her prayers three times a day." Our ladies endeavored to defend their sex from this charge; but he roared them down! "No, no, a lady will take Jonathan Wild as readily as St. Austin, if he has threepence more; and, what is worse, her parents will give her to him. Women have a perpetual envy of our vices; they are less vicious than we, not from choice, but because we restrict them; they are the slaves of order and fashion; their virtue is of more consequence to us than our own, so far as concerns this world."

Miss Adams mentioned a gentleman of licentious character, and said, "Suppose I had a mind to marry that gentleman, would my parents consent?" JOHNSON: "Yes, they'd consent, and you'd go. You'd go, though they did not consent." MISS ADAMS: "Perhaps their opposing might make me go." JOHN-SON: "O, very well; you'd take one whom you think a bad man, to have the pleasure of vexing your parents. You put me in mind of Dr. Barrowby, the physician, who was very fond of swine's flesh. One day, when he was eating it, he said, 'I wish I was a Jew.'—'Why so,' said somebody; 'the Jews are not allowed to eat your favorite meat.'—'Because,' said he, 'I should then have the gust of eating it, with the pleasure of sinning.'" Johnson then proceeded in his declamation.

Miss Adams soon afterwards made an observation that I do not recollect, which pleased him much; he said with a good-humored smile, "That there should be so much excellence united with so much *depravity* is strange."

Indeed, this lady's good qualities, merit, and accomplishments, and her constant attention to Dr. Johnson, were not lost upon him. She happened to tell him that a little coffee-pot, in which she had made him coffee, was the only thing she could call her own. He turned to her with a complacent gallantry, "Do n't say so, my dear; I hope you do n't reckon my heart as nothing."

I asked him if it was true as reported, that he had said lately, "I am for the King against Fox; but I am for Fox against Pitt."



WILLIAM PITT.

JOHNSON: "Yes, Sir; the King is my master; but I do not know Pitt; and Fox is my friend."¹

"Fox," added he, "is a most extraordinary man: he is a man (describing him in strong terms of objection in some respects according as he apprehended, but which exalted his abilities the more), who has divided the kingdom with Cæsar; so that it was a doubt whether the nation should be ruled by the sceptre of George the Third, or the tongue of Fox."

Dr. Wall, physician at Oxford, drank tea with us. Johnson had in general a peculiar pleasure in the company of physicians, which was certainly not abated by the conversation of this learned, ingenious, and pleasing gentleman. Johnson said: "It is wonderful how little good Radcliffe's travelling fellowships² have done. I know nothing that has been imported by them; yet many additions to our medical knowledge might be got in foreign countries. Inoculation, for instance, has saved more lives than war destroys; and the cures performed by the Peruvian bark are innumerable. But it is in vain to send our travelling physicians to France, and Italy, and Germany, for all that is known there is known here: I'd send them out of Christendom; I'd send them among barbarous nations."

On Friday, June 11, we talked at breakfast of forms of prayer. JOHNSON: "I know of no good prayers but those in the 'Book of Common Prayer.'" DR. ADAMS (in a very earnest manner): "I wish, Sir, you would compose some family prayers." JOHN-SON: "I will not compose prayers for you, Sir, because you can do it for yourself. But I have thought of getting together all the books of prayers which I could, selecting those which should appear to me the best, putting out some, inserting others, adding some prayers of my own, and prefixing a discourse on prayer." We all now gathered about him, and two or three of us at a time joined in pressing him to execute this plan. He seemed to be a little displeased at the manner of our importunity, and in great agitation called out: "Do not talk thus of what is so awful. I know not what time God will allow me in this world. There are many things which I wish to do." Some of us persisted, and Dr.

¹ He may have taken the more to Fox as he had taken to Beauclerk on account of his descent from Charles II. Fox was the great-great-grandson of that king.—*Dr. Hill.*

² Dr. John Radcliffe who died in 1714 left by his will, among other great benefactions to the University of Oxford "£600 yearly to two persons, when they are Masters of Arts and entered on the physic-line, for their maintenance for the space of ten years; the half of which time at least they are to travel in parts beyond sea for their better improvement,"—*Dr. Hill.*

Adams said, "I never was more serious about anything in my life." JOHNSON: "Let me alone, let me alone; I am overpowered." And then he put his hands before his face, and reclined for some time upon the table.

I mentioned Jeremy Taylor's using, in his forms of prayer, "I am the chief of sinners," and other such self-condemning expressions. "Now," said I, "this cannot be said with truth by every man, and therefore is improper for a general printed form. I myself cannot say that I am the worst of men; I *will* not say so." JOHNSON: "A man may know that physically, that is in the real state of things, he is not the worst man; but that morally he may be so. Law observes, that 'Every man knows something worse of himself than he is sure of in others.' You may not have committed such crimes as some men have done; but you do not know against what degree of light they have sinned. Besides, Sir, 'the chief of sinners' is a mode of expression for 'I am a great sinner.' So St. Paul, speaking of our SAVIOUR's having died to save sinners, says, 'of whom I am the chief;' yet he certainly did not think himself so bad as Judas Iscariot." BOSWELL: "But, Sir, Taylor means it literally, for he founds a conceit upon it. When praying for the conversion of sinners, and of himself in particular, he says, 'LORD, thou wilt not leave thy *chief* work undone.'"
JOHNSON: "I do not approve of figurative expressions in addressing the Supreme Being; and I never use them. Taylor gives a very good advice: 'Never lie in your prayers; never confess more than you really believe; never promise more than you mean to perform.'" I recollected this precept in his "Golden Grove;" but his *example* for prayer contradicts his *precept*.

Dr. Johnson and I went in Dr. Adams's coach to dine with Mr. Nowell, Principal of St. Mary Hall, at his beautiful villa at Iffley, on the banks of the Isis, about two miles from Oxford. While we were upon the road, I had the resolution to ask Johnson whether he thought that the roughness of his manner had been an advantage or not, and if he would not have done more good if he had been more gentle. I proceeded to answer myself thus: "Perhaps it has been of advantage, as it has given weight to what you said: you could not, perhaps, have talked with such authority without it." JOHNSON: "No, Sir; I have done more good as I am. Obscenity and impiety have always been repressed in my company." BOSWELL: "True, Sir; and that is more than can be said of every bishop. Greater liberties

have been taken in the presence of a bishop, though a very good man, from his being milder, and therefore not commanding such awe. Yet, Sir, many people who might have been benefited by your conversation, have been frightened away. A worthy friend of ours¹ has told me, that he has often been afraid to talk to you." JOHNSON: "Sir, he need not have been afraid if he had anything rational to say. If he had not, it was better he did not talk."

Dr. Nowell is celebrated for having preached a sermon before the House of Commons, on the 30th of January, 1772, full of high Tory sentiments, for which he was thanked as usual, and printed it at their request; but, in the midst of that turbulence and faction which disgraced a part of the present reign, the thanks were afterwards ordered to be expunged.² This strange conduct sufficiently exposes itself; and Dr. Nowell will ever have the honor which is due to a lofty friend of our monarchical constitution. Dr. Johnson said to me, "Sir, the Court will be very much to blame, if he is not promoted." I told this to Dr. Nowell; and asserting my humbler, though not less zealous exertions in the same cause, I suggested, that whatever return we might receive, we should still have the consolation of being like Butler's steady and generous Royalist,

"True as the dial to the sun,
Although it be not shone [shined] upon."

We were well entertained and very happy at Dr. Nowell's, where was a very agreeable company; and we drank "Church and King" after dinner, with true Tory cordiality.

We talked of a certain clergyman of extraordinary character, who by exerting his talents in writing on temporary topics, and displaying uncommon intrepidity, has raised himself to affluence.³ I maintained that we ought not to be indignant at his success;

¹ Mr. Langton.

² Townshend (afterwards Lord Sydney) moved that the sermon be burned by the common hangman. The House was very near carrying the motion, till they recollected their former vote of thanks and contented themselves, after an acrimonious debate, with ordering the vote to be expunged from their journals. Mahon's "Hist. of Engl.," v. 303.

³ The Rev. Henry Bate, commonly known as the "fighting parson," who assumed the name of Dudley and was created a baronet. He founded *The Morning Post*, and afterwards, on a quarrel with his colleagues, *The Morning Herald*. He fought more than one duel, and was sentenced to a year's imprisonment for "an atrocious libel" on the Duke of Richmond (Walpole's "Journal of the Reign of George the Third," quoted by Dr. Hill). The latter portion of his life was more decorous.—*Croker*.

for merit of every sort was entitled to reward. JOHNSON: "Sir, I will not allow this man to have merit. No, Sir; what he has is rather the contrary; I will, indeed, allow him courage, and on this account we so far give him credit. We have more respect for a man who robs boldly on the highway, than for a fellow who jumps out of a ditch, and knocks you down behind your back. Courage is a quality so necessary for maintaining virtue, that it is always respected, even when it is associated with vice."

I censured the coarse invectives which were become fashionable in the House of Commons, and said that if members of Parliament must attack each other personally in the heat of debate, it should be done more genteelly. JOHNSON: "No, Sir; that would be much worse. Abuse is not so dangerous when there is no vehicle of wit or delicacy, no subtle conveyance. The difference between coarse and refined abuse is as the difference between being bruised by a club, and wounded by a poisoned arrow." I have since observed his position elegantly expressed by Dr. Young:

"As the soft plume gives swiftness to the dart,
Good breeding sends the satire to the heart."¹

On Saturday, June 12, there drank tea with us at Dr. Adams's, Mr. John Henderson, student of Pembroke College, celebrated for his wonderful acquirements in alchemy, judicial astrology, and other abstruse and curious learning;² and the Reverend Herbert Croft, who, I am afraid, was somewhat mortified by Dr. Johnson's not being highly pleased with some "Family Discourses," which he had printed; they were in too familiar a style to be approved of by so manly a mind. I have no note of this evening's conversation, except a single fragment. When I mentioned Thomas Lord Lyttelton's vision, the prediction of the time of his death and its exact fulfilment; JOHNSON: "It is the most extraordinary thing that has happened in my day. I heard it with my own ears, from his uncle, Lord Westcote."³ I am so glad to have every evidence of the spiritual world, that I am willing to believe it." DR. ADAMS: "You have evidence enough; good evidence which needs not such support." JOHNSON: "I like to have more."

Mr. Henderson, with whom I had sauntered in the venerable walks of Merton College, and found him a very learned and pious

¹ "Epistle to Mr. Pope," ii. 165.

² See an account of him, in a sermon by the Rev. Mr. Agutter. — B. The sermon was published in 1788, in which year he died.

³ For this vision see *Gent. Mag.* for 1816, ii. 422; and for 1818, i. 597. — *Croker*.

man, supped with us. Dr. Johnson surprised him not a little, by acknowledging with a look of horror that he was much oppressed by the fear of death. The amiable Dr. Adams suggested that God was infinitely good. JOHNSON: "That He is infinitely good, as far as the perfection of His nature will allow, I certainly believe: but it is necessary, for good upon the whole, that individuals should be punished. As to an *individual*, therefore, He is not infinitely good; and as I cannot be *sure* that I have fulfilled the conditions on which salvation is granted, I am afraid I may be one of those who shall be damned." (Looking dismally.) DR. ADAMS: "What do you mean by damned?" JOHNSON (passionately and loudly): "Sent to Hell, Sir, and punished everlastingly." DR. ADAMS: "I do n't believe that doctrine." JOHNSON: "Hold, Sir, do you believe that some will be punished at all?" DR. ADAMS: "Being excluded from Heaven will be a punishment; yet there may be no great positive suffering." JOHNSON: "Well, Sir; but, if you admit any degree of punishment, there is an end of your argument for infinite goodness simply considered; for, infinite goodness would inflict no punishment whatever. There is not infinite goodness physically considered; morally there is." BOSWELL: "But may not a man attain to such a degree of hope as not to be uneasy from the fear of death?" JOHNSON: "A man may have such a degree of hope as to keep him quiet. You see I am not quiet, from the vehemence with which I talk; but I do not despair." MRS. ADAMS: "You seem, Sir, to forget the merits of our Redeemer." JOHNSON: "Madam, I do not forget the merits of my Redeemer; but my Redeemer has said that He will set some on His right hand and some on His left." He was in gloomy agitation, and said, "I'll have no more on 't." If what has now been stated should be urged by the enemies of Christianity, as if its influence on the mind were not benignant, let it be remembered that Johnson's temperament was melancholy, of which such direful apprehensions of futurity are often a common effect. We shall presently see that when he approached nearer to his awful change, his mind became tranquil, and he exhibited as much fortitude as becomes a thinking man in that situation.

From the subject of death we passed to discourse of life, whether it was upon the whole more happy or miserable. Johnson was decidedly for the balance of misery:¹ in confirmation of

¹ The Reverend Mr. Ralph Churton, Fellow of Brasenose College, Oxford, has favored me with the following remarks on my work, which he is pleased to say, "I have hitherto extolled, and cordially approve." "The chief part of what I have to observe is contained in the following transcript from a letter to a friend, which,

which I maintained that no man would choose to lead over again the life which he had experienced. Johnson acceded to that opinion in the strongest terms. This is an inquiry often made ; and its being a subject of disquisition is a proof that much misery presses upon human feelings ; for those who are conscious of a felicity of existence, would never hesitate to accept of a repetition of it. I have met with very few who would. I have heard Mr. Burke make use of a very ingenious and plausible argument on this

with his concurrence, I copied for this purpose ; and, whatever may be the merit or justness of the remarks you may be sure that being written to a most intimate friend, without any intention that they ever should go farther, they are the genuine and undisguised sentiments of the writer. ' Jan. 6, 1792. Last week, I was reading the second volume of Boswell's Johnson, with increasing esteem for the worthy author, and increasing veneration of the wonderful and excellent man who is the subject of it. The writer throws in, now and then, very properly some serious religious reflections ; but there is one remark, in my mind an obvious and just one, which I think he has not made, that Johnson's " morbid melancholy," and constitutional infirmities, were intended by Providence, like St. Paul's thorn in the flesh, to check intellectual conceit and arrogance ; which the consciousness of his extraordinary talents, awake as he was to the voice of praise, might otherwise have generated in a very culpable degree. Another observation strikes me, that in consequence of the same natural indisposition, and habitual sickness (for he says he scarcely passed one day without pain after his twentieth year), he considered and represented human life as a scene of much greater misery than is generally experienced. There may be persons bowed down with affliction all their days ; and there are those, no doubt, whose iniquities rob them of rest ; but neither calamities nor crimes, I hope and believe, do so much and so generally abound, as to justify the dark picture of life which Johnson's imagination designed, and his strong pencil delineated. This I am sure, the coloring is far too gloomy for what I have experienced, though as far as I can remember, I have had more sickness (I do not say more severe, but only more in quantity), than falls to the lot of most people. But then daily debility and occasional sickness were far overbalanced by inter-venient days and, perhaps, weeks void of pain, and overflowing with comfort. So that in short, to return to the subject, human life, as far as I can perceive from experience or observation, is not that state of constant wretchedness which Johnson always insisted it was ; which misrepresentation (for such it surely is), his biographer has not corrected, I suppose, because, unhappily, he has himself a large portion of melancholy in his constitution, and fancied the portrait a faithful copy of life." The learned writer then proceeds thus in his letter to me : " I have conversed with some sensible man on this subject, who all seem to entertain the same sentiments, respecting life with those which are expressed or implied in the foregoing paragraph. It might be added that as the representation here spoken of, appears not consistent with fact and experience, so neither does it seem to be countenanced by Scripture. There is, perhaps, no part of the sacred volume which at first sight promises so much to lend its sanction to these dark and desponding notions as the book of Ecclesiastes, which so often, and so emphatically, proclaims the vanity of things sublunary. But ' the design of this whole book (as it has been justly observed) is not to put us out of conceit with life, but to cure our vain expectations of a complete and perfect happiness in this world ; to convince us, that there is no such thing to be found in mere external enjoyments ; and to teach us — to seek for happiness in the practice of virtue, in the knowledge and love of God, and in the hopes of a better life. For this is the application of all : *Let us hear, &c.*, xii. 13. Not only his duty, but his happiness too : *For GOD, &c.*, ver. 14.'— See Sherlock 'On Providence,' p. 299. The New Testament tells us, indeed, and most truly, that ' sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof ;' and, therefore, wisely forbids us to increase our burden by forebodings of sorrow ; but

subject; "Every man," said he, "would lead his life over again; for, every man is willing to go on and take an addition to his life, which, as he grows older, he has no reason to think will be better, or even so good, as what has preceded." I imagine, however, the truth is, that there is a deceitful hope that the next part of life will be free from the pains, and anxieties, and sorrows, which we have already felt. We are for wise purposes "Condemn'd to Hope's delusive mine," as Johnson finely says; and I may also

I think it nowhere says that even our ordinary afflictions are not consistent with a very considerable degree of positive comfort and satisfaction. And, accordingly, one whose sufferings as well as merits were conspicuous, assures us, that in proportion 'as the sufferings of Christ abounded in them, so their consolation also abounded by Christ,' 11. Cor. i. 5. It is needless to cite, as indeed it would be endless even to refer to, the multitude of passages in both Testaments holding out, in the strongest language, promises of blessings, even in this world, to the faithful servants of GOD. I will only refer to St. Luke xviii. 29, 30, and 1. Tim. iv. 8. Upon the whole, setting aside instances of great and lasting bodily pain, of minds peculiarly oppressed by melancholy, and of severe temporal calamities, from which extraordinary cases we surely should not form our estimate of the general tenor and complexion of life: excluding these from the account, I am convinced that as well the gracious constitution of things which Providence has ordained, as the declarations of Scripture and the actual experience of individuals, authorize the sincere Christian to hope that his humble and constant endeavors to perform his duty, checkered as the best life is with many failings, will be crowned with a greater degree of present peace, serenity, and comfort, than he could reasonably permit himself to expect, if he measured his views and judged of life from the opinion of Dr. Johnson, often and energetically expressed in the Memoirs of him, without any animadversion or censure by his ingenious biographer. If he himself, upon reviewing the subject, shall see the matter in this light, he will, in an octavo edition, which is eagerly expected, make such additional remarks or corrections as he shall judge fit: lest the impressions which these discouraging passages may leave on the reader's mind, should in any degree hinder what otherwise the whole spirit and energy of the work tends, and, I hope, successfully, to promote,—pure morality and true religion." Though I have, in some degree, obviated any reflections against my illustrious friend's dark views of life, when considering, in the course of this work, his *Rambler* and his "Rasselas," I am obliged to Mr. Churton for complying with my request of his permission to insert his remarks, being conscious of the weight of what he judiciously suggests as to the melancholy in my own constitution. His more pleasing views of life, I hope, are just, *Valeant, quantum valere possunt*. Mr. Churton concludes his letter to me in these words: "Once, and only once, I had the satisfaction of seeing your illustrious friend; and as I feel a particular regard for all whom he distinguished with his esteem and friendship, so I derive much pleasure from reflecting that I once beheld, though but transiently near our college gate, one whose works will for ever delight and improve the world, who was a sincere and zealous son of the Church of England, an honor to his country, and an ornament to human nature." His letter was accompanied with a present from himself of his "Sermons at the Bampton Lecture," and from his friend, Dr. Townson, the venerable Rector of Malpas in Cheshire, of his "Discourses on the Gospels," together with the following extract of a letter from that excellent person, who is now gone to receive the reward of his labors: "Mr. Boswell is not only very entertaining in his works, but they are so replete with moral and religious sentiments, without an instance, as far as I know, of a contrary tendency, that I cannot help having a great esteem for him: and if you think such a trifle as a copy of the '*Discourses, ex dono authoris*,' would be acceptable to him, I should be happy to give him this small testimony of my regards." Such spontaneous testimonies of approbation from such men, without any personal acquaintance with me, are truly valuable and encouraging.—B.

quote the celebrated lines of Dryden, equally philosophical and poetical :

“ When I consider life, 't is all a cheat,
 Yet fool'd with hope, men favor the deceit;
 Trust on, and think to-morrow will repay;
 To-morrow's falser than the former day;
 Lies worse; and while it says we shall be blest
 With some new joys, cuts off what we possess.
 Strange cozenage! none would live past years again;
 Yet all hope pleasure in what yet remain;
 And from the dregs of life think to receive,
 What the first sprightly running could not give.”
 (“Aurungzebe,” Act iv. sc. 1.)

It was observed to Dr. Johnson, that it seemed strange that he, who had so often delighted his company by his lively and brilliant conversation, should say he was miserable. JOHNSON: “ Alas ! it is all outside ; I may be cracking my joke, and cursing the sun. *Sun, how I hate thy beams !* ”¹ I knew not well what to think of this declaration ; whether to hold it as a genuine picture of his mind,² or as the effect of his persuading himself contrary to fact, that the position which he had assumed as to human unhappiness, was true. We may apply to him a sentence in Mr. Greville's “ Maxims, Characters, and Reflections ; ” (p. 139) a book which is entitled to much more praise than it has received : “ ARISTARCHUS is charming : how full of knowledge, of sense, of sentiment. You get him with difficulty to your supper ; and after having delighted every body and himself for a few hours, he is obliged to return home ; he is finishing his treatise, to prove that unhappiness is the portion of man.”

On Sunday, June 13, our philosopher was calm at breakfast. There was something exceedingly pleasing in his leading a college life, without restraint, and with superior elegance, in consequence of our living in the Master's house and having the company of ladies. Mrs. Kennicot related, in his presence, a lively saying of Dr. Johnson to Miss Hannah More, who had expressed a wonder that the poet who had written “ Paradise Lost,” should write such poor sonnets—“ Milton, Madam, was a genius that could cut a Colossus from a rock, but could not carve heads upon cherry-stones.”

¹ Milton : “ Paradise Lost,” iv. 35.

² Yet there is no doubt that a man may appear very gay in company, who is sad at heart. His merriment is like the sound of drums and trumpets in a battle, to drown the groans of the wounded and dying.—B.

We talked of the casuistical question, Whether it was allowable at any time to depart from *truth*? JOHNSON: "The general rule is, that truth should never be violated, because it is of the utmost importance to the comfort of life, that we should have a full security by mutual faith; and occasional inconveniences should be willingly suffered, that we may preserve it. There must, however, be some exceptions. If, for instance, a murderer should ask you which way a man is gone, you may tell him what is not true, because you are under a previous obligation not to betray a man to a murderer." BOSWELL: "Supposing the person who wrote 'Junius' were asked whether he was the author, might he deny it?" JOHNSON: "I don't know what to say to this. If you were *sure* that he wrote 'Junius' would you, if he denied it, think as well of him afterwards? Yet it may be urged, that what a man has no right to ask, you may refuse to communicate; and there is no other effectual mode of preserving a secret, and an important secret, the discovery of which may be very hurtful to you, but a flat denial; for if you are silent, or hesitate, or evade, it will be held equivalent to a confession. But stay, Sir, here is another case. Supposing the author had told me confidentially that he had written 'Junius' and I were asked if he had, I should hold myself at liberty to deny it, as being under a previous promise, express or implied, to conceal it. Now what I ought to do for the author, may I not do for myself? But I deny the lawfulness of telling a lie to a sick man, for fear of alarming him. You have no business with consequences; you are to tell the truth. Besides, you are not sure what effect your telling him that he is in danger may have. It may bring his distemper to a crisis, and that may cure him. Of all lying I have the greatest abhorrence of this, because I believe it has been frequently practised on myself."

I cannot help thinking that there is much weight in the opinion of those who have held, that truth, as an eternal and immutable principle, ought, upon no account whatever, to be violated, from supposed previous or superior obligations, of which every man being to judge for himself, there is great danger that we too often from partial motives, persuade ourselves that they exist; and probably whatever extraordinary instances may sometimes occur, where some evil may be prevented by violating this noble principle, it would be found that human happiness would, upon the whole, be more perfect were truth universally preserved.

In the notes to the "Dunciad," we find the following verses, addressed to Pope : ¹

"While malice, Pope, denies thy page
Its own celestial fire;
While critics, and while bards in rage,
Admiring, won't admire:

"While wayward pens thy worth assail,
And envious tongues decry;
These times, though many a friend bewail,
These times bewail not I.

"But when the world's loud praise is thine,
And spleen no more shall blame:
When with thy Homer thou shalt shine
In one establish'd fame!

"When none shall rail, and every lay
Devote a wreath to thee;
That day (for come it will) that day
Shall I lament to see."

It is surely not a little remarkable, that they should appear without a name. Miss Seward, knowing Dr. Johnson's almost universal and minute literary information, signified a desire that I should ask him who was the author. He was prompt with his answer: "Why, Sir, they were written by one Lewis, who was either under-master or an usher of Westminster School, and published a Miscellany, in which 'Grongar Hill' first came out." ² Johnson praised them highly, and repeated them with a noble animation. In the twelfth line, instead of "one establish'd fame," he repeated "one unclouded flame," which he thought was the reading in former editions: but I believe was a flash of his own genius. It is much more poetical than the other.

On Monday, June 14, and Tuesday, 15, Dr. Johnson and I dined, on one of them, I forget which, with Mr. Mickel, translator of the "Lusiad," at Wheatley, a very pretty country place

¹ The annotator calls them "amiable verses."—B. The annotator was Pope himself.—*Croker*.

² Lewis's verses addressed to Pope (as Mr. Bindley suggests to me), were first published in a collection of "Pieces in Verse and Prose on Occasion of the Dunciad," 8vo, 1732. They are there called an epigram. "Grongar Hill," the same gentleman observes, was first printed in Savage's "Miscellanies," as an *ode* (it is singular that Johnson should not have recollected this), and was *reprinted* in the same year (1726), in Lewis's "Miscellany," in the form it now bears. The Dean of Westminster, who has been pleased at my request to make some inquiry on this subject, has not found any vestige of Lewis having ever been employed at the School.—*Malone*.

a few miles from Oxford; and on the other with Dr. Wetherell, Master of University College. From Dr. Wetherell's he went to visit Mr. Sackville Parker, the bookseller; and when he returned to us, gave the following account of his visit, saying: "I have been to see my old friend, Sack. Parker; I find he has married his maid; he has done right. She had lived with him many years in great confidence, and they had mingled minds; I do not think he could have found any wife that would have made him so happy. The woman was very attentive and civil to me; she pressed me to fix a day for dining with them, and to say what I liked, and she would be sure to get it for me. Poor Sack! He is very ill, indeed. We parted as never to meet again. It has quite broken me down." This pathetic narrative was strangely diversified with the grave and earnest defence of a man's having married his maid. I could not but feel it as in some degree ludicrous.

In the morning of Tuesday, June 15, while we sat at Dr. Adams's, we talked of a printed letter from the Reverend Herbert Croft to a young gentleman who had been his pupil, in which he advised him to read to the end of whatever books he should begin to read. JOHNSON: "This is surely a strange advice; you may as well resolve that whatever men you happen to get acquainted with, you are to keep to them for life. A book may be good for nothing; or there may be only one thing in it worth knowing: are we to read it all through? These voyages (pointing to the three large volumes of 'Voyages to the South Sea,'¹ which were just come out), *who* will read them through? A man had better work his way before the mast, than read them through; they will be eaten by rats and mice before they are read through. There can be little entertainment in such books; one set of savages is like another." BOSWELL: "I do not think the people of Otaheité can be reckoned savages." JOHNSON: "Don't cant in defence of savages." BOSWELL: "They have the art of navigation." JOHNSON: "A dog or a cat can swim." BOSWELL: "They carve very ingeniously." JOHNSON: "A cat can scratch, and a child with a nail can scratch." I perceived this was none of the *molliæ tempora fandî*,² so desisted.

Upon his mentioning that when he came to College he wrote his first exercises twice over, but never did so afterwards; Miss

¹ Cook's third voyage. "A Voyage to the Pacific Ocean in the years 1776-80"; London, 1784, 3 vols. 4to. The first two vols. by Capt. Cook, the third by Capt. King. See Mr. Besant's "Captain Cook" (Macmillan's "Men of Action").

² Virgil: "Æneid," iv. 293.

ADAMS: "I suppose, Sir, you could not make them better?"

JOHNSON: "Yes, Madam, to be sure, I could make them better. Thought is better than no thought." MISS ADAMS: "Do you

think, Sir, you could make your *Ramblers* better?" JOHNSON:

"Certainly I could." BOSWELL: "I'll lay a bet, Sir, you cannot." JOHNSON: "But I will, Sir, if I choose. I shall make the

best of them you shall pick out, better." BOSWELL: "But you

may add to them. I will not allow of that." JOHNSON: "Nay,

Sir, there are three ways of making them better; putting out, —

adding, — or correcting."

During our visit at Oxford, the following conversation passed between him and me on the subject of my trying my fortune at the English Bar.¹ Having asked, whether a very extensive

acquaintance in London, which was very valuable and of great advantage to a man at large, might not be prejudicial to a lawyer,

by preventing him from giving sufficient attention to his business?

JOHNSON: "Sir, you will attend to business, as business lays

hold on you. When not actually employed, you may see your

friends as much as you do now. You may dine at a club every

day, and sup with one of the members every night; and you

may be as much at public places as one who has seen them all

would wish to be. But you must take care to attend constantly

in Westminster Hall; both to mind your business, as it is almost

all learnt there (for nobody reads now), and to show that you

want to have business. And you must not be too often seen at

public places, that competitors may not have it to say, 'He is

always at the playhouse or at Ranelagh, and never to be found

at his chambers.' And, Sir, there must be a kind of solemnity

in the manner of a professional man. I have nothing in particular

to say to you on the subject. All this I should say to any

one; I should have said it to Lord Thurlow twenty years ago."

THE PROFESSION may probably think this representation of

what is required in a barrister who would hope for success, to be

much too indulgent; but certain it is, that as

"The wits of Charles found easier ways to fame,"²

some of the lawyers of this age who have risen high, have by no means thought it absolutely necessary to submit to that long and painful course of study which a Plowden, a Coke, and a Hale,

¹ Boswell began to eat dinners in the Inner Temple so early as 1775. He was not called till Hilary Term, 1786. — *Dr. Hill*.

² Johnson: "Prologue at the opening of Drury Lane Theatre."

considered as requisite. My respected friend, Mr. Langton, has shown me in the handwriting of his grandfather, a curious account of a conversation which he had with Lord Chief Justice Hale, in which that great man tells him, 'that for two years after he came to the inn of court, he studied sixteen hours a day; however (his Lordship added), that by this intense application he almost brought himself to his grave, though he were of a very strong constitution, and after reduced himself to eight hours; but that he would not advise anybody to so much; that he thought six hours a day, with attention and constancy, was sufficient; that man must use his body as he would his horse, and his stomach; not tire him at once but rise with an appetite.'

On Wednesday, June 19 [16], Dr. Johnson and I returned to London; he was not well to-day, and said very little, employing himself chiefly in reading "Euripides." He expressed some displeasure at me, for not observing sufficiently the various objects upon the road. "If I had your eyes, Sir," said he, "I should count the passengers." It was wonderful how accurate his observation of visual objects was, notwithstanding his imperfect eyesight, owing to a habit of attention. That he was much satisfied with the respect paid to him at Dr. Adams's is thus attested by himself: "I returned last night from Oxford, after a fortnight's abode with Dr. Adams, who treated me as well as I could expect or wish; and he that contents a sick man, a man whom it is impossible to please, has surely done his part well." ["Letters to Mrs. Thrale," ii. 372.]

After his return to London from this excursion, I saw him frequently, but have few memorandums; I shall therefore here insert some particulars which I collected at various times.

The Reverend Mr. Astle, of Ashbourne, in Derbyshire, brother to the learned and ingenious Thomas Astle, Esq., was from his early years known to Dr. Johnson, who obligingly advised him as to his studies, and recommended to him the following books, of which a list, which he has been pleased to communicate, lies before me, in Johnson's own handwriting:

Universal History (ancient). — Rollin's Ancient History. — Puffendorf's Introduction to History. — Vertot's History of Knights of Malta. — Vertot's Revolution of Portugal. — Vertot's Revolution of Sweden. — Carte's History of England. — Present State of England. — Geographical Grammar. — Prideaux's Connexion. — Nelson's Feasts and Fasts. — Duty of Man. — Gentleman's Religion. — Clarendon's History. — Watts's Improvement of the Mind. — Watts's Logic. — Nature Displayed. — Lowth's English Gram-

mar. — Blackwell on the Classics. — Sherlock's 'Sermons. — Burnet's *Life of Hale*. — Dupin's *History of the Church*. — Shuckford's *Connexions*. — Law's *Serious Call*. — Walton's *Complete Angler*. — Sandys's *Travels*. — Spratt's *History of the Royal Society*. — England's *Gazetteer*. — Goldsmith's *Roman History*. — Some Commentaries on the Bible.

It having been mentioned to Dr. Johnson that a gentleman who had a son whom he imagined to have an extreme degree of timidity, resolved to send him to a public school that he might acquire confidence; "Sir," said Johnson, "this is a preposterous expedient for removing his infirmity; such a disposition should be cultivated in the shade. Placing him at a public school is forcing an owl upon day."

Speaking of a gentleman¹ whose house was much frequented by low company; "Rags, Sir," said he, "will always make their appearance, where they have a right to do it."

Of the same gentleman's mode of living, he said: "Sir, the servants, instead of doing what they are bid, stand round the table in idle clusters, gaping upon the guests; and seem as unfit to attend a company, as to steer a man-of-war."

A dull country magistrate² gave Johnson a long tedious account of his exercising his criminal jurisdiction, the result of which was having sentenced four convicts to transportation. Johnson, in an agony of impatience to get rid of such a companion, exclaimed, "I heartily wish, Sir, that I were a fifth."

Johnson was present when a tragedy was read, in which there occurred this line:

"Who rules o'er freemen should himself be free."³

The company having admired it much, "I cannot agree with you," said Johnson. "It might as well be said,

"Who drives fat oxen should himself be fat.""

He was pleased with the kindness of Mr. Cator, who was joined with him in Mr. Thrale's important trust, and thus describes him. "There is much good in his character, and much usefulness in his knowledge." ["Letters to Mrs. Thrale," ii. 284.] He found a cordial solace at that gentleman's seat at

¹ Conjectured to be Sir Joshua Reynolds.

² The Mayor of Windsor. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Brooke: "Earl of Essex," Act i.

Beckenham in Kent, which is indeed one of the finest places at which I ever was a guest; and where I find more and more a hospitable welcome.

Johnson seldom encouraged general censure of any profession; but he was willing to allow a due share of merit to the various departments necessary in civilized life. In a splenetic, sarcastical, or jocular frame of mind, however, he would sometimes utter a pointed saying of that nature. One instance has been mentioned (Vol. I., p. 364), where he gave a sudden satirical stroke to the character of an *attorney*. The too indiscriminate admission to that employment, which acquires both abilities and integrity, has given rise to injurious reflections, which are totally inapplicable to many very respectable men who exercise it with reputation and honor.

Johnson having argued for some time with a pertinacious gentleman: his opponent, who had talked in a very puzzling manner, happened to say, "I do n't understand you, Sir;" upon which Johnson observed, "Sir, I have found you an argument; but I am not obliged to find you an understanding."

Talking to me of Horry Walpole (as Horace late Earl of Orford¹ was often called), Johnson allowed that he got together a great many curious little things and told them in an elegant manner. Mr. Walpole thought Johnson a more amiable character after reading his "Letters to Mrs. Thrale": but never was one of the true admirers of that great man.² We may suppose a prejudice conceived, if he ever heard Johnson's account to Sir George Staunton, that when he made the speeches in Parliament for the *Gentleman's Magazine*, "He always took care to put Sir Robert Walpole in the wrong, and to say everything he could against the electorate of Hanover." The celebrated "Heroic Epistle," in which Johnson is satirically introduced, has been ascribed both to Mr. Walpole and Mr. Mason. One day at Mr. Courtenay's, when a gentleman expressed his opinion that there was more energy in that poem than could be expected from Mr. Walpole; Mr. Warton, the late Laureate, observed,

¹ He succeeded to the title in Dec., 1791. He died March 2, 1797.

² In his Posthumous Works, he has spoken of Johnson in the most contemptuous manner!—*Malone*. He spoke of him as "one of the venal champions of the Court," "a renegade," "a brute," "an old decrepit hireling." In his "Memoirs of the Reign of George the Third," iv. 297, he says: "With a lumber of learning and some strong parts Johnson was an odious and mean character. His manners were sordid, supercilious, and brutal; his style ridiculously bombastic and vicious, and, in one word, with all the pedantry, he had all the gigantic littleness of a country school master."—*Dr. Hill*. He called Boswell "that quintessence of busy bodies."

"It may have been written by Walpole, and *buckram'd* by Mason.¹

He disapproved of Lord Hailes, for having modernized the language of the ever-memorable John Hales of Eton, in an edition which his Lordship published of that writer's works. "An author's language, Sir," said he, "is a characteristical part of his composition, and is also characteristical of the age in which he writes. Besides, Sir, when the language is changed we are not sure that the sense is the same. No, Sir: I am sorry Lord Hailes has done this."

Here it may be observed, that his frequent use of the expression, *No, Sir*, was not always to intimate contradiction; for he would say so when he was about to enforce an affirmative proposition which had not been denied, as in the instance last mentioned. I used to consider it as a kind of flag of defiance: as if he had said, "Any argument you may offer against this, is not just. No, Sir, it is not." It was like Falstaff's "I deny your major."²

Sir Joshua Reynolds having said that he took the altitude of a man's taste by his stories and his wit, and of his understanding by the remarks which he repeated; being always sure that he must be a weak man, who quotes common things with an emphasis as if they were oracles; Johnson agreed with him; and Sir Joshua having also observed that the real character of a man was found out by his amusements, — Johnson added, "Yes, Sir; no man is a hypocrite in his pleasures."

I have mentioned Johnson's general aversion to a pun. He once, however, endured one of mine. When we were talking of a numerous company in which he had distinguished himself highly, I said, "Sir, you were a COD surrounded by smelts. Is not this enough for you? at a time too when you were not *fishing* for a compliment?" He laughed at this with a complacent approbation. Old Mr. Sheridan observed, upon my mentioning it to him, "He liked your compliment so well, he was willing to take it with *pun sauce*." For my own part, I think no innocent species of wit or pleasantry should be suppressed: and that a good pun may be admitted among the smaller excellences of lively conversation.

Had Johnson treated at large *De Claris Oratoribus*, he might

¹ It is now (1804) known that the "Heroic Epistle" was written by Mason. — *Malone*.

² "Henry IV.," Act ii. sc. 4.

have given us an admirable work. When the Duke of Bedford attacked the Ministry as vehemently as he could, for having taken upon them to extend the time for the importation of corn,¹ Lord Chatman, in his first speech in the House of Lords, boldly avowed himself to be an adviser of that measure. "My colleagues," said he, "as I was confined by indisposition, did me the signal honor of coming to the bed-side of a sick man, to ask his opinion. But, had they not thus condescended, I should have *taken up my bed and walked*, in order to have delivered that opinion at the Council-Board." Mr. Langton, who was present, mentioned this to Johnson, who observed: "Now, Sir, we see that he took these words as he found them; without considering, that though the expression in Scripture, *take up thy bed and walk*, strictly suited the instance of the sick man restored to health and strength, who would of course be supposed to carry his bed with him, it could not be proper in the case of a man who was lying in a state of feebleness, and who certainly would not add to the difficulty of moving at all, that of carrying his bed."

When I pointed out to him in the newspaper one of Mr. Grattan's animated and glowing speeches in favor of the freedom of Ireland, in which this expression occurred (I know not if accurately taken): "We will persevere, till there is not one link of the English chain left to clank upon the rags of the meanest beggar in Ireland;" — "Nay, Sir," said Johnson, "don't you perceive that *one* link cannot clank?"

Mrs. Thrale has published ("Anecdotes," p. 43), as Johnson's, a kind of parody or counterpart of a fine poetical passage in one of Mr. Burke's speeches on American Taxation. It is vigorously but somewhat coarsely executed; and I am inclined to suppose, is not quite correctly exhibited. I hope he did not use the words "*vile agents*" for the Americans in the House of Parliament; and if he did so in an extempore effusion, I wish the lady had not committed it to writing.

Mr. Burke uniformly showed Johnson the greatest respect; and when Mr. Townshend, now Lord Sydney, at a period when he was conspicuous in opposition, threw out some reflection in Parliament upon the grant of a pension to a man of such political principles as Johnson; Mr. Burke, though then of the same party

¹ A mistake. The Ministry was attacked for prohibiting, without an order of Parliament, the export of corn before the price had been reached at which exportation ceased to be lawful. It was on this occasion that Chatham made his first speech in the House of Lords, defending his bold stretch of the prerogative against Mansfield. — Mahon's "Hist. of Engl.," v. 166 and 196.

with Mr. Townshend, stood warmly forth in defence of his friend, to whom, he justly observed, the pension was granted solely on account of his eminent literary merit.¹ I am well assured, that Mr. Townshend's attack upon Johnson was the occasion of his "hitching in a rhyme;"² for, that in the original copy of Goldsmith's character of Mr. Burke, in his "Retaliation," another person's name stood in the couplet where Mr. Townshend is now introduced:

"Though fraught with all learning kept [yet] straining his throat,
To persuade *Tommy Townshend* to lend him a vote."

It may be worth remarking, among the *minutiæ* of my collection, that Johnson was once drawn to serve in the militia, the Trained Bands of the City of London, and that Mr. Rackstrow, of the Museum in Fleet Street, was his Colonel. It may be believed he did not serve in person; but the idea, with all its circumstances, is certainly laughable. He upon that occasion provided himself with a musket, and with a sword and belt, which I have seen hanging in his closet.

He was very constant to those whom he once employed, if they gave him no reason to be displeased. When somebody talked of being imposed on in the purchase of tea and sugar, and such articles: "That will not be the case," said he, "if you go to a *stately shop*, as I always do. In such a shop it is not worth their while to take a petty advantage."

An author of most anxious and restless vanity being mentioned, "Sir," said he, "there is not a young sapling upon Parnassus more severely blown about by every wind of criticism than that poor fellow."

The difference, he observed, between a well-bred and an ill-bred man is this: "One immediately attracts your liking, the other your aversion. You love the one till you find reason to hate him; you hate the other till you find reason to love him."

The wife of one of his acquaintance had fraudulently made a purse for herself out of her husband's fortune. Feeling a proper compunction in her last moments she confessed how much she

¹ It appears from the "Cavendish Debates," i. 514, and from "Parl. Hist.," xvii. 1054, that to neither of Townshend's attacks on Johnson, in 1770 or in 1774, did Burke make any answer. Fitzherbert was the defender on the first occasion, Fox on the second. — *Dr. Hill*.

² "Whoe'er offends, at some unlucky time,
Slides into verse and hitches in a rhyme."

Pope: "Imitations of Horace," i. 78.

had secreted ; but before she could tell where it was placed, she was seized with a convulsive fit and expired. Her husband said he was more hurt by her want of confidence in him, than by the loss of his money. "I told him," said Johnson, "that he should console himself: for *perhaps* the money might be *found*, and he was *sure* that his wife was *gone*."

A foppish physician once reminded Johnson of his having been in company with him on a former occasion: "I do not remember it, Sir." The physician still insisted; adding that he that day wore so fine a coat that it must have attracted his notice. "Sir," said Johnson, "had you been dipped in Pactolus, I should not have noticed you."

He seemed to take a pleasure in speaking in his own style: for when he had carelessly missed it, he would repeat the thought translated into it. Talking of the Comedy of "The Rehearsal," he said, "It has not wit enough to keep it sweet." This was easy; he therefore caught himself, and pronounced a more round sentence: "It has not vitality enough to preserve it from putrefaction."

He censured a writer¹ of entertaining travels for assuming a feigned character, saying (in his sense of the word) "He carries out one lie; we know not how many he brings back." At another time, talking of the same person, he observed: "Sir, your assent to a man whom you have never known to falsify, is a debt: but after you have known a man to falsify, your assent to him then is a favor."

Though he had no taste for painting, he admired much the manner in which Sir Joshua Reynolds treated of his art, in his "Discourses to the Royal Academy." He observed one day of a passage in them, "I think I might as well have said this myself:" and once when Mr. Langton was sitting by him, he read one of them very eagerly, and expressed himself thus: "Very well, Master Reynolds; very well, indeed. But it will not be understood."

When I observed to him that painting was so far inferior to poetry, that the story or even emblem which it communicates must be previously known, and mentioned as a natural and laughable instance of this, that a little Miss on seeing a picture of Justice with the scales, had exclaimed to me, "See, there's a

¹ The Rev. Martin Sherlock, author of "Letters of an English Traveller," translated from the French, 1781. — *Croker*. Dr. Thomas Campbell, author of "Philosophical Survey of the South of Ireland." — *Dr. Hill*.

woman selling sweetmeats ;" he said, "Painting, Sir, can illustrate, but cannot inform."

No man was more ready to make an apology when he had censured unjustly, than Johnson. When a proof-sheet of one of his works was brought to him, he found fault with the mode in which a part of it was arranged, refused to read it, and in a passion desired that the compositor¹ might be sent to him. The compositor was Mr. Manning, a decent, sensible man, who had composed about one-half of his Dictionary, when in Mr. Strahan's printing-house ; and a great part of his "Lives of the Poets," when in that of Mr. Nichols ; and who (in his seventy-seventh year) when in Mr. Baldwin's printing-house, composed a part of the first edition of this work concerning him. By producing the manuscript, he at once satisfied Dr. Johnson that he was not to blame. Upon which Johnson candidly and earnestly said to him, "Mr. Compositor, I ask your pardon ; Mr. Compositor, I ask your pardon, again and again."

His generous humanity to the miserable was almost beyond example. The following instance is well attested : Coming home late one night, he found a poor woman lying in the street, so much exhausted that she could not walk ; he took her upon his back, and carried her to his house, where he discovered that she was one of those wretched females who had fallen into the lowest state of vice, poverty, and disease. Instead of harshly upbraiding her, he had her taken care of with all tenderness for a long time, at a considerable expense, till she was restored to health, and endeavored to put her into a virtuous way of living.²

He thought Mr. Caleb Whitefoord singularly happy in hitting on the signature of *Papyrius Cursor*, to his ingenious and diverting cross-readings of the newspapers ; it being a real name of an ancient Roman, and clearly expressive of the thing done in this lively conceit.³

He once in his life was known to have uttered what is called a *bull* : Sir Joshua Reynolds, when they were riding together in Devonshire, complained that he had a very bad horse, for that

¹Compositor in the Printing-house means, the person who adjusts the types in the order in which they are to stand for printing ; and arranges what is called the *form*, from which an impression is taken.—B.

²The circumstance therefore alluded to in Mr. Courtenay's "Poetical Character" of him is strictly true. My informer was Mrs. Desmoulins, who lived many years in Dr. Johnson's house.—B.

³He followed his "Cross-Readings" by a still more witty paper on the "Errors of the Press." These two laughable essays are preserved in "The Foundling Hospital for Wit."—*Croker*.

even when going downhill he moved slowly step by step. "Ay," said Johnson, "and when he *goes* uphill, he *stands still*."

He had a great aversion to gesticulating in company. He called once to a gentleman¹ who offended him in that point, "Do n't *attitudinise*." And when another gentleman² thought he was giving additional force to what he uttered, by expressive movements of his hands, Johnson fairly seized them, and held them down.

An author³ of considerable eminence having engrossed a good share of the conversation in the company of Johnson, and having said nothing but what was trifling and insignificant; Johnson when he was gone, observed to us: "It is wonderful what a difference there sometimes is between a man's powers of writing and of talking. ——— writes with great spirit, but is a poor talker; had he held his tongue, we might have supposed him to have been restrained by modesty; but he has spoken a great deal to-day; and you have heard what stuff it was."

A gentleman having said that a *congé d'élire*⁴ has not, perhaps, the force of a command, but may be considered only as a strong recommendation; "Sir," replied Johnson, who overheard him, "it is such a recommendation, as if I should throw you out of a two pair of stairs window, and recommend to you to fall soft."⁵

Mr. Steevens, who passed many a social hour with him during their long acquaintance, which commenced when they both lived in the Temple, has preserved a good number of particulars concerning him, most of which are to be found in the department of Apophthegms, &c., in the Collection of Johnson's Works.⁶ But he has been pleased to favor me with the following, which are original:

One evening, previous to the trial of Barette, a consultation of his friends was held at the house of Mr. Cox, the solicitor, in Southampton Buildings, Chancery Lane. Among others present were Mr. Burke and Dr. Johnson, who differed in sentiments concerning the tendency of some part of the defence the prisoner was to make. When the meeting was over, Mr. Steevens observed, that the question between him and his friend had been agitated with

¹ Mr. Musgrove.

² Perhaps Dr. Warton. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Probably Dr. Beattie. — *Dr. Hill*.

⁴ *Congé d'élire*: the King's permission royal to a dean and chapter in time of vacancy, to choose a bishop. — Johnson's Dictionary.

⁵ This has been printed in other publications, "*fall to the ground*." But Johnson himself gave me the true expression which he had used as above; meaning that the recommendation left as little choice in the one case as the other. — B.

⁶ This refers to Hawkins's edition in 15 vols. 8vo, Lond., 1787-9. The Apophthegms are reprinted in Napier's "Johnsoniana."

rather too much warmth. "It may be so, Sir," replied the Doctor, "for Burke and I should have been of one opinion, if we had had no audience."

Dr. Johnson once assumed a character in which perhaps even Mr. Boswell never saw him. His curiosity having been excited by the praises bestowed on the celebrated Torr 's fireworks at Marylebone Gardens, he desired Mr. Steevens to accompany him thither. The evening had proved showery; and soon after the few people present were assembled, public notice was given, that the conductors to the wheels, suns, stars, &c., were so thoroughly water-soaked, that it was impossible any part of the exhibition should be made. "This is a mere excuse," says the Doctor, "to save their crackers for a more profitable company. Let us both hold up our sticks, and threaten to break those colored lamps that surround the orchestra, and we shall soon have our wishes gratified. The core of the fireworks cannot be injured; let the different pieces be touched in their respective centres, and they will do their offices as well as ever." Some young men who overheard him, immediately began the violence he had recommended, and an attempt was speedily made to fire some of the wheels which appeared to have received the smallest damage; but to little purpose were they lighted, for most of them completely failed. The author of *The Rambler*, however, may be considered on this occasion, as the ringleader of a successful riot, though not as a skilful pyrotechnist.

It has been supposed that Dr. Johnson, so far as fashion was concerned, was careless of his appearance in public. But this is not altogether true, as the following slight instance may show: Goldsmith's last comedy was to be represented during some court-mourning;¹ and Mr. Steevens appointed to call on Dr. Johnson, and carry him to the tavern where he was to dine with others of the poet's friends. The Doctor was ready dressed, but in colored clothes: yet being told that he would find every one else in black, received the intelligence with a profusion of thanks, hastened to change his attire, all the while repeating his gratitude for the information that had saved him from an appearance so improper in the front row of a front box. "I would not," added he, "for ten pounds have seemed so retrograde to any general observance."

He would sometimes found his dislikes on very slender circumstances. Happening one day to mention Mr. Flexman, a Dissenting Minister, with some compliment to his exact memory in chronological matters; the Doctor replied, "Let me hear no more of him, Sir. That is the fellow who made the index to my *Ramblers*, and set down the name of Milton thus: Milton, Mr. John."

Mr. Steevens adds this testimony :

It is unfortunate, however, for Johnson, that his particularities and frailties can be more distinctly traced than his good and amiable exertions. Could the many bounties he studiously concealed, the many acts of humanity he performed in private, be displayed with equal circumstantiality, his defects would be so far lost in the blaze of his virtues, that the latter only would be regarded.

Though from my very high admiration of Johnson, I have wondered that he was not courted by all the great and all the eminent

¹ "She stoops to conquer" was first acted on March 15, 1773. The King of Sardinia had died Feb. 20. — *Dr. Hill*.

persons of his time, it ought fairly to be considered that no man of humble birth, who lived entirely by literature, in short no author by profession, ever rose in this country into that personal notice which he did. In the course of this work a numerous variety of names has been mentioned, to which many might be added. I cannot omit Lord and Lady Lucan, at whose house he often enjoyed all that an elegant table and the best company can contribute to happiness; he found hospitality united with extraordinary accomplishments, and embellished with charms of which no man could be insensible.

On Tuesday, June 22, I dined with him at THE LITERARY CLUB, the last time of his being in that respectable society. The other members present were the Bishop of St. Asaph, Lord Eliot, Lord Palmerston, Dr. Fordyce, and Mr. Malone. He looked ill; but had such a manly fortitude, that he did not trouble the company with melancholy complaints. They all showed evident marks of kind concern about him, with which he was much pleased, and he exerted himself to be as entertaining as his indisposition allowed him.

The anxiety of his friends to preserve so estimable a life, as long as human means might be supposed to have influence, made them plan for him a retreat from the severity of a British winter to the mild climate of Italy. This scheme was at last brought to a serious resolution at General Paoli's, where I had often talked of it. One essential matter, however, I understood was necessary to be previously settled, which was obtaining such an addition to his income as would be sufficient to enable him to defray the expense in a manner becoming the first literary character of a great nation, and, independent of all his other merits, the author of "The Dictionary of the English Language." The person to whom I above all others thought I should apply to negotiate this business, was the Lord Chancellor, because I knew that he highly valued Johnson, and that Johnson highly valued his Lordship; so that it was no degradation of my illustrious friend to solicit for him the favor of such a man. I have mentioned what Johnson said of him to me when he was at the bar; and after his Lordship was advanced to the seals, he said of him, "I would prepare myself for no man in England but Lord Thurlow. When I am to meet with him, I should wish to know a day before." How he would have prepared himself, I cannot conjecture. Would he have selected certain topics, and considered them in every view, so as to be in readiness to argue them

at all points? and what may we suppose those topics to have been? I once started the curious inquiry to the great man who was the subject of this compliment: he smiled, but did not pursue it.

I first consulted with Sir Joshua Reynolds, who perfectly coincided in opinion with me; and I therefore, though personally very little known to his Lordship, wrote to him,¹ stating the case, and requesting his good offices for Dr. Johnson. I mentioned that I was obliged to set out for Scotland early in the following week, so that if his Lordship should have any commands for me as to this pious negotiation, he would be pleased to send them before that time; otherwise Sir Joshua Reynolds would give all attention to it.

This application was made not only without any suggestion on the part of Johnson himself, but was utterly unknown to him, nor had he the smallest suspicion of it. Any insinuations, therefore, which since his death have been thrown out, as if he had stooped to ask what was superfluous, are without any foundation. But, had he asked it, it would not have been superfluous; for though the money he had saved proved to be more than his friends imagined, or than I believe he himself, in his carelessness concerning worldly matters knew it to be, had he travelled upon the Continent, an augmentation of his income would by no means have been unnecessary.

On Wednesday, June 23, I visited him in the morning, after having been present at the shocking sight of fifteen men executed before Newgate. I said to him, I was sure that human life was not machinery, that is to say, a chain of fatality planned and directed by the Supreme Being, as it had in it so much wickedness and misery, so many instances of both, as that by which my mind was now clouded.

Were it machinery, it would be better than it is in these respects, though less noble, as not being a system of moral government. He agreed with me now, as he always did, upon the great question of the liberty of the human will, which has been in all ages perplexed with so much sophistry: "But, Sir, as to the doctrine of Necessity, no man believes it. If a man should give me arguments that I do not see, though I could not answer them, should I believe that I do not see?" It will be observed,

¹ It is strange that Sir John Hawkins should have related that the application was made by Sir Joshua Reynolds, when he could so easily have been informed of the truth by inquiring of Sir Joshua. Sir John's carelessness to ascertain facts is very remarkable. — B.

that Johnson at all times made the just distinction between doctrines *contrary* to reason, and doctrines *above* reason.

Talking of the religious discipline proper for unhappy convicts, he said : "Sir, one of our regular clergy will probably not impress their minds sufficiently : they should be attended by a Methodist preacher ;¹ or a Popish priest." Let me however observe, in justice to the Reverend Mr. Vilette, who has been Ordinary of Newgate for no less than eighteen years, in the course of which he has attended many hundreds of wretched criminals, that his earnest and humane exhortations have been very effectual. His extraordinary diligence is highly praiseworthy, and merits a distinguished reward.²

On Thursday, June 24, I dined with him at Mr. Dilly's, where were the Rev. Mr. (now Dr.) Knox, master of Tunbridge School, Mr. Smith, Vicar of Southill, Dr. Beattie, Mr. Pinkerton, author of various literary performances, and the Rev. Dr. Mayo. At my desire old Mr. Sheridan was invited, as I was earnest to have Johnson and him brought together again by chance, that a reconciliation might be effected. Mr. Sheridan happened to come early, and having learned that Dr. Johnson was to be there, went away ; so I found, with sincere regret, that my friendly intentions were hopeless. I recollect nothing that passed this day, except Johnson's quickness, who, when Dr. Beattie observed, as something remarkable which had happened to him, that he had chanced to see both No. 1, and No. 1,000, of the hackney-coaches, the first and the last ; "Why, Sir," said Johnson, "there is an equal chance for one's seeing those two numbers as any other two." He was clearly right ; yet the seeing of the two extremes, each of which is in some degree more conspicuous than the rest, could not but strike one in a stronger manner than the sight of any other two numbers. Though I have neglected to preserve his conversation, it was perhaps at this interview that Dr. Knox formed the notion of it which he has exhibited in his "Winter Evenings."

On Friday, June 25, I dined with him at General Paoli's, where he says in one of his letters to Mrs. Thrale, "I love to

¹ A friend of mine happened to be passing by a *field congregation* in the environs of London, when a Methodist preacher quoted this passage with triumph. — B.

² I trust that THE CITY OF LONDON, now happily in unison with THE COURT, will have the justice and generosity to obtain preferment for this reverend gentleman, now a worthy old servant of that magnificent Corporation. — B. This wish was not gratified. Mr. Vilette died in 1799, having been for nearly thirty years chaplain of Newgate, — *Croker*.

dine." There was a variety of dishes much to his taste, of all which he seemed to me to eat so much, that I was afraid he might be hurt by it; and I whispered to the General my fear, and begged he might not press him. "Alas!" said the General, "see how very ill he looks; he can live but a very short time. Would you refuse any slight gratifications to a man under sentence of death? There is a humane custom in Italy, by which persons in that melancholy situation are indulged with having whatever they like best to eat and drink, even with expensive delicacies."¹

I showed him some verses on Lichfield by Miss Seward, which I had that day received from her, and had the pleasure to hear him approve of them. He confirmed to me the truth of a high compliment which I had been told he had paid to that lady, when she mentioned to him "The Colombiade," an epic poem, by Madame du Boccage:² "Madam, there is not anything equal to your description of the sea round the North Pole, in your ode on the death of Captain Cook."

On Sunday, June 27, I found him rather better. I mentioned to him a young man who was going to Jamaica with his wife and children, in expectation of being provided for by two of her brothers settled in that Island, one a clergyman, and the other a physician. JOHNSON: "It is a wild scheme, Sir, unless he has a positive and deliberate invitation. There was a poor girl, who used to come about me, who had a cousin in Barbadoes, that, in a letter to her, expressed a wish she should come out to that island, and expatiated on the comforts and happiness of her situation. The poor girl went out: her cousin was much surprised, and asked her how she could think of coming. 'Because,' said she, 'you invited me.' — 'Not I,' answered the cousin. The letter was then produced. 'I see it is true,' said she, 'that I did invite you: but I did not think you would come.' They lodged her in an out-house, where she passed her time miserably; and as soon as she had an opportunity she returned to England. Always tell this, when you hear of people going abroad to relations, upon a notion of being well received. In the case which you mention, it is probable the clergyman spends all he gets, and the physician does not know how much he is to get."

We this day dined at Sir Joshua Reynolds's, with General

¹ See Lockhart's "Life of Scott," x. 178, for a very similar scene at a dinner given to Sir Walter at Rome by the Duchess Torlonia.

² Madame du Boccage made a French translation of Milton which Lord Chesterfield preferred to the original.

Paoli, Lord Eliot (formerly Mr. Eliot of Port Eliot), Dr. Beattie, and some other company. Talking of Lord Chesterfield: JOHNSON: "His manner was exquisitely elegant, and he had more knowledge than I expected." BOSWELL: "Did you find, Sir, his conversation to be of a superior style?" JOHNSON: "Sir, in the conversation which I had with him I had the best right to superiority, for it was upon philology and literature." Lord Eliot, who had travelled at the same time with Mr. Stanhope, Lord Chesterfield's natural son, justly observed, that it was strange that a man who showed he had so much affection for his son as Lord Chesterfield did, by writing so many long and anxious letters to him, almost all of them when he was Secretary of State,¹ which certainly was a proof of great goodness of disposition, should endeavor to make his son a rascal. His Lordship told us that Foote had intended to bring on the stage a father who had thus tutored his son, and to show the son an honest man to every one else, but practising his father's maxims upon him, and cheating him. JOHNSON: "I am much pleased with this design; but I think there was no occasion to make the son honest at all. No; he should be a consummate rogue: the contrast between honesty and knavery would be the stronger. It should be contrived so that the father should be the only sufferer by the son's villany, and thus there would be poetical justice."

He put Lord Eliot in mind of Dr. Walter Harte. "I know," said he, "Harte was your Lordship's tutor, and he was also tutor to the Peterborough family. Pray, my Lord, do you recollect any particulars that he told you of Lord Peterborough? He is a favorite of mine, and is not enough known; his character has been only ventilated in party pamphlets." Lord Eliot said, if Dr. Johnson would be so good as to ask him any questions, he would tell what he could recollect. Accordingly some things were mentioned. "But," said his Lordship, "the best account of Lord Peterborough that I have happened to meet with, is in 'Captain Carleton's Memoirs.' Carleton was descended of an ancestor who had distinguished himself at the siege of Derry.² He was an officer; and, what was rare at that time, had some knowledge of engineering." Johnson said, he had never heard

¹ Chesterfield was Secretary of State from Nov. 1746 to Feb. 1748. His letters to his son extend from 1739 to 1768.—*Dr. Hill*.

² An anachronism. Carleton himself served in the navy for many years before the siege of Derry.—*Croker*. Sir Walter Scott published an edition of the "Memoirs" in 1808. For their probable authorship see Mr. Stebbing's "Peterborough," 53-6 (Macmillan's "Men of Action").

of the book. Lord Eliot had it at Port Eliot; but, after a good deal of inquiry, procured a copy in London, and sent it to Johnson, who told Sir Joshua Reynolds that he was going to bed when it came, but was so much pleased with it, that he sat up till he had read it through, and found in it such an air of truth that he could not doubt of its authenticity; adding, with a smile (in allusion to Lord Eliot's having recently been raised to the peerage), "I did not think a *young Lord* could have mentioned to me a book in the English history that was not known to me."

An addition to our company came after we went up to the drawing-room: Dr. Johnson seemed to rise in spirits as his audience increased. He said, 'he wished Lord Orford's pictures, and Sir Ashton Lever's Museum, might be purchased by the public, because both the money, and the pictures, and the curiosities would remain in the country; whereas if they were sold into another kingdom, the nation would indeed get some money, but would lose the pictures and curiosities, which it would be desirable we should have, for improvement in taste and natural history. The only question was, as the nation was much in want of money, whether it would not be better to take a large price from a foreign State?'¹

He entered upon a curious discussion of the difference between intuition and sagacity; one being immediate in its effect, the other requiring a circuitous process; one he observed was the *eye* of the mind, the other the *nose* of the mind.

A young gentleman [Richard Burke] present took up the argument against him, and maintained that no man ever thinks of the *nose of the mind*, not adverting that, though that figurative sense seems strange to us as very unusual, it is truly not more forced than Hamlet's "In my *mind's eye*, Horatio."² He persisted much too long, and appeared to Johnson as putting himself forward as his antagonist with too much presumption: upon which he called to him in a loud tone, "What is it you are contending for, if you *be* contending?" And afterwards imagining that the gentleman retorted upon him with a kind of smart drollery, he said, "Mr. [Burke], it does not become you to talk

¹ The Houghton Collection was sold in 1779 by the third Earl of Orford to the Empress of Russia for £40,555.—*P. Cunningham*, in a note to Walpole's "Letters," vii. 227. The Museum (valued at £53,000) was sold in 1784 by private lottery to a Mr. Parkinson, who removed it to Albion Place, Blackfriars Bridge, where it was for many years open as an exhibition. The contents were eventually sold separately by auction.—*Croker*.

² "Hamlet," Act i. sc. 2.

so to me. Besides, ridicule is not your talent; you have *there* neither intuition nor sagacity." The gentleman protested that he had intended no improper freedom, but had the greatest respect for Dr. Johnson. After a short pause, during which we were somewhat uneasy. JOHNSON: "Give me your hand, Sir. You were too tedious, and I was too short." MR. [BURKE]: "Sir, I am honored by your attention in any way." JOHNSON: "Come, Sir, let's have no more of it. We offended one another by our contention; let us not offend the company by our compliments."

He now said, "He wished much to go to Italy, and that he dreaded passing the winter in England." I said nothing: but enjoyed a secret satisfaction in thinking that I had taken the most effectual measures to make such a scheme practicable.

On Monday, June 28, I had the honor to receive from the Lord Chancellor the following letter:

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

SIR: I should have answered your letter immediately; if (being much engaged when I received it) I had not put it in my pocket, and forgot to open it till this morning.

I am much obliged to you for the suggestion; and I will adopt and press it as far as I can. The best argument, I am sure, and I hope it is not likely to fail, is Dr. Johnson's merit. But it will be necessary, if I should be so unfortunate as to miss seeing you, to converse with Sir Joshua on the sum it will be proper to ask—in short, upon the means of setting him out. It would be a reflection on us all, if such a man should perish for want of the means to take care of his health.

Yours, &c.

THURLOW.

This letter gave me a very high satisfaction; I next day went and showed it to Sir Joshua Reynolds, who was exceedingly pleased with it. He thought that I should now communicate the negotiation to Dr. Johnson, who might afterwards complain if the attention with which he had been honored should be too long concealed from him. I intended to set out for Scotland next morning; but Sir Joshua cordially insisted that I should stay another day, that Johnson and I might dine with him, that we three might talk of his Italian tour, and, as Sir Joshua expressed himself, "have it all out." I hastened to Johnson, and was told by him that he was rather better to-day. BOSWELL: "I am very anxious about you, Sir, and particularly that you should go to Italy for the winter, which I believe is your own wish."

JOHNSON: "It is, Sir." BOSWELL: "You have no objection, I presume, but the money it would require." JOHNSON: "Why no, Sir." Upon which I gave him a particular account of what had been done, and read to him the Lord Chancellor's letter. He listened with much attention: then warmly said, "This is taking prodigious pains about a man."—"O, Sir," said I with most sincere affection, "your friends would do everything for you." He paused,—grew more and more agitated,—till the tears started into his eyes, and he exclaimed with fervent emotion, "God bless you all." I was so affected that I also shed tears. After a short silence, he renewed and extended his grateful benediction, "God bless you all, for JESUS CHRIST's sake." We both remained for some time unable to speak. He rose suddenly and quitted the room, quite melted in tenderness. He stayed but a short time, till he had recovered his firmness; soon after he returned I left him, having first engaged him to dine at Sir Joshua Reynolds's next day. I never was again under that roof which I had so long revered.

On Wednesday, June 30, the friendly confidential dinner with Sir Joshua Reynolds took place, no other company being present. Had I known that this was the last time that I should enjoy in this world the conversation of a friend whom I so much respected, and from whom I derived so much instruction and entertainment, I should have been deeply affected. When I now look back to it, I am vexed that a single word should have been forgotten.

Both Sir Joshua and I were so sanguine in our expectations, that we expatiated with confidence on the liberal provision which we were sure would be made for him, conjecturing whether munificence would be displayed in one large donation, or in an ample increase of his pension. He himself caught so much of our enthusiasm, as to allow himself to suppose it not impossible that our hopes might in one way or other be realized. He said that he would rather have his pension doubled than a grant of a thousand pounds; "For," said he, "though probably I may not live to receive as much as a thousand pounds, a man would have the consciousness that he should pass the remainder of his life in splendor how long soever it might be." Considering what a moderate proportion an income of six hundred pounds a year bears to innumerable fortunes in this country, it is worthy of remark, that a man so truly great should think it splendor.

As an instance of extraordinary liberality of friendship he told

us, that Dr. Brocklesby had upon this occasion offered him a hundred a year for his life.¹ A grateful tear started into his eye, as he spoke this in a faltering tone.

Sir Joshua and I endeavored to flatter his imagination with agreeable prospects of happiness in Italy. "Nay," said he, "I must not expect much of that; when a man goes to Italy merely to feel how he breathes the air, he can enjoy very little."

Our conversation turned upon living in the country, which Johnson, whose melancholy mind required the dissipation of quick successive variety, had habituated himself to consider as a kind of mental imprisonment. "Yet, Sir," said I, "there are many people who are content to live in the country." JOHNSON: "Sir, it is in the intellectual world as in the physical world: we are told by natural philosophers that a body is at rest in the place that is fit for it; they who are content to live in the country, are *fit* for the country."

Talking of various enjoyments, I argued that a refinement of taste was a disadvantage, as they who have attained to it must be seldomer pleased than those who have no nice discrimination, and are therefore satisfied with everything that comes in their way. JOHNSON: "Nay, Sir; that is a paltry notion. Endeavor to be as perfect as you can in every respect."

I accompanied him in Sir Joshua Reynolds's coach, to the entry of Bolt Court. He asked me whether I would not go with him to his house; I declined it, from an apprehension that my spirits would sink. We bade adieu to each other affectionately in the carriage. When he had got down upon the foot-pavement he called out, "Fare you well;" and without looking back, sprung away with a kind of pathetic briskness, if I may use that expression, which seemed to indicate a struggle to conceal uneasiness, and impressed me with a foreboding of our long, long separation.

I remembered one day more in town, to have the chance of talking over my negotiation with the Lord Chancellor; but the multiplicity of his Lordship's important engagements did not allow of it; so I left the management of the business in the hands of Sir Joshua Reynolds.

Soon after this time Dr. Johnson had the mortification of being informed by Mrs. Thrale, that, "what she supposed he never believed," was true; namely, that she was actually going to

¹ He also pressed Johnson in his last illness to remove to his house for the more immediate convenience of medical advice. — *Croker*.

marry Signor Piozzi, an Italian music-master. ["Letters to Mrs. Thrale," ii. 375.] He endeavored to prevent it; but in vain. If she would publish the whole of the correspondence that passed between Dr. Johnson and her on the subject, we should have a full view of his real sentiments. As it is, our judgment must be biassed by that characteristic specimen which Sir John Hawkins has given us: "Poor Thrale, I thought that either her virtue or her vice would have restrained her from such a marriage. She is now become a subject for her enemies to exult over; and for her friends, if she has any left, to forget or pity."¹

It must be admitted that Johnson derived a considerable portion of happiness from the comforts and elegances which he enjoyed in Mr. Thrale's family; but Mrs. Thrale assures us he was indebted for these to her husband alone, who certainly respected him sincerely. Her words are:

Veneration for his virtue, reverence for his talents, delight in his conversation, and habitual endurance of a yoke my husband first put upon me, and of which he contentedly bore his share for sixteen or seventeen years, made me go on so long with Mr. Johnson; but the perpetual confinement I will own to have been terrifying in the first years of our friendship, and irksome in the last; nor could I pretend to support it without help, when my coadjutor was no more." ("Anecdotes," p. 293.)

Alas! how different is this from the declarations which I have heard Mrs. Thrale make in his lifetime, without a single murmur against any peculiarities, or against any one circumstance which attended their intimacy.

As a sincere friend of the great man whose life I am writing, I think it necessary to guard my readers against the mistaken notion of Dr. Johnson's character, which this lady's "Anecdotes" of him suggest; for from the very nature and form of her book, "it lends deception lighter wings to fly."²

¹ Dr. Johnson's letter to Sir John Hawkins, "Life," p. 570. — B. The correspondence may be read in Hayward's "Autobiography of Mrs. Piozzi," i. 110-14. After all the abuse showered on the unfortunate woman it is pleasant to know that the marriage proved a happy one in every respect. Piozzi, who was really a well-mannered, amiable man, — Rogers described him as "a very handsome, gentlemanly, and amiable person," — took every care of his wife's fortune, and on their return to England her family and friends were soon reconciled to him. He died in 1809 at his villa in Wales; his wife died at Clifton in 1821, in her eighty-second year.

² "Blest paper credit! last and best supply
That lends corruption lighter wings to fly."

Pope: "Moral Essays," iii 39.

"Let it be remembered," says an eminent critic,¹ "that she has comprised in a small volume all that she could recollect of Dr. Johnson in *twenty years*, during which period, doubtless, some severe things were said by him; and they who read the book in *two hours*, naturally enough suppose that his whole conversation was of this complexion. But the fact is, I have been often in his company, and never *once* heard him say a severe thing to any one; and many others can attest the same. When he did say a severe thing, it was generally extorted by ignorance pretending to knowledge, or by extreme vanity or by affectation.

"Two instances of inaccuracy," adds he, "are peculiarly worthy of notice :

"It is said, '*That natural roughness of his manner so often mentioned, would, notwithstanding the regularity of his notions, burst through them all from time to time; and he once bade a very celebrated lady, who praised him with too much zeal perhaps, or perhaps too strong an emphasis (which always offended him), consider what her flattery was worth, before she choked him with it.*'" (*Anecdotes*, p. 183.)

"Now let the genuine anecdote be contrasted with this. The person thus represented as being harshly treated, though a very celebrated lady, was *then* just come to London from an obscure situation in the country.² At Sir Joshua Reynolds's one evening, she met Dr. Johnson. She very soon began to pay her court to him in the most fulsome strain. 'Spare me, I beseech you, dear Madam,' was his reply. She still *laid it on*. 'Pray, Madam, let us have no more of this;' he rejoined. Not paying any attention to these warnings, she continued still her eulogy. At length, provoked by this indelicate and *vain* obtrusion of compliment, he exclaimed, 'Dearest lady, consider with yourself what your flattery is worth, before you bestow it so freely.'

"How different does this story appear, when accompanied with all these circumstances which really belong to it, but which Mrs. Thrale either did not know, or has suppressed.

"She says in another place, '*One gentleman, however, who dined at a nobleman's house in his company, and that of Mr. Thrale, to whom I was obliged for the anecdote, was willing to enter the lists in defence of King William's character; and having opposed and contradicted Johnson two or three times, petulantly enough, the master of the house began to feel uneasy, and expected disagreeable consequences; to avoid which he said, loud enough for the Doctor to hear,—'Our friend here has no meaning now in all this except just to relate at club to-morrow how he teased Johnson at dinner to-day; this is all to do himself honor.'* — '*No, upon my word (replied the other), I see no honor in it, whatever you may do.*' — '*Well, Sir (returned Dr. Johnson, sternly) if you do not see the honor I am sure I feel the disgrace.*'" (*Ibid.*, p. 242.)

"This is all sophisticated. Mr. Thrale was *not* in the company, though he might have related the story to Mrs. Thrale. A friend, from whom I had the story, was present; and it was *not* at the house of a nobleman. On the observation being made by the master of the house on a gentleman's contradicting Johnson, that he had talked for the honor, &c., the gentleman muttered in a low voice, 'I see no honor in it;' and Dr. Johnson said nothing: so all the rest (though *bien trouvée*) is mere garnish."

¹ Who has been pleased to furnish me with his remarks. — B. The critic was no doubt Malone, whose MS. notes on the "*Anecdotes*" contain the germ of these criticisms. — *Croker*.

² Hannah More, who with her sister had been keeping a boarding-school at Bristol. She first saw Johnson in June, 1774.

I have had occasion several times, in the course of this work, to point out the incorrectness of Mrs. Thrale, as to particulars which consisted with my own knowledge. But indeed she has, in flippant terms enough, expressed her disapprobation of that anxious desire of authenticity which prompts a person who is to record conversations, to write them down *at the moment*. (*Ibid.*, p. 44.) Unquestionably, if they are to be recorded at all, the sooner it is done the better. This lady herself says: "*To recollect, however, and to repeat the sayings of Dr. Johnson, is almost all that can be done by the writers of his Life; as his life, at least since my acquaintance with him, consisted in little else than talking, when he was not [absolutely] employed in some serious piece of work.*" (*Ibid.*, p. 23.) She boasts of her having kept a commonplace book;¹ and we find she noted, at one time or other, in a very lively manner, specimens of the conversation of Dr. Johnson, and of those who talked with him; but had she done it recently, they probably would have been less erroneous; and we should have been relieved from those disagreeable doubts of their authenticity, with which we must now peruse them.

She says of him:

He was the most charitable of mortals, without being what we call an active friend. Admirable at giving counsel; no man saw his way so clearly; but he would not stir a finger for the assistance of those to whom he was willing enough to give advice. And again on the same page, If you wanted a slight favor, you must apply to people of other dispositions; for not a step would Johnson move to obtain a man a vote in a society, to repay a compliment which might be useful or pleasing, to write a letter of request, &c., or to obtain a hundred pounds a year more for a friend who perhaps had already two or three. No force could urge him to diligence, no importunity could conquer his resolution to stand still. (*Ibid.*, p. 51 [192].)

It is amazing that one who had such opportunities of knowing Dr. Johnson, should appear so little acquainted with his real character. I am sorry this lady does not advert that she herself contradicts the assertion of his being obstinately defective in the *petites morales*, in the little endearing charities of social life, in conferring smaller favors; for she says:

Dr. Johnson was liberal enough in granting literary assistance to others, I think; and innumerable are the prefaces, sermons, lectures, and dedications which he used to make for people who begged of him. (*Ibid.*, p. 193 [51].)

¹p. 45. She kept a copious diary and note-book called "*Thraliana*" from 1776 to 1809. It is now [1861] in the possession of Mr. Salusbury.—*Hayward* quoted by Dr. Hill.

I am certain that *a more active friend* has rarely been found in any age. This work, which I fondly hope will rescue his memory from obloquy, contains a thousand instances of his benevolent exertions in almost every way that can be conceived; and particularly in employing his pen with a generous readiness for those to whom its aid could be useful. Indeed his obliging activity in doing little offices of kindness, both by letters and personal application, was one of the most remarkable features in his character; and for the truth of this I can appeal to a number of his respectable friends: Sir Joshua Reynolds, Mr. Langton, Mr. Hamilton, Mr. Burke, Mr. Windham, Mr. Malone, the Bishop of Dromore, Sir William Scott, Sir Robert Chambers. And can Mrs. Thrale forget the advertisements which he wrote for her husband at the time of his election contest; the epitaphs on him and her mother; the playful and even trifling verses, for the amusement of her and her daughters; his corresponding with her children, and entering into their minute concerns, which shows him in the most amiable light?

She relates, that Mr. Cholmondeley unexpectedly rode up to Mr. Thrale's carriage, in which Mr. Thrale and she, and Dr. Johnson were travelling; that he paid them all his proper compliments, but observing that Dr. Johnson, who was reading, did not see him, "*tapt him gently on the shoulder. 'T is Mr. Cholmondeley;'*" says my husband. "*Well, Sir—and what if it is Mr. Cholmondeley?*" says the other, sternly, just lifting his eyes a moment from his book, and returning to it again with renewed avidity." (*Ibid.*, p. 258.) This surely conveys a notion of Johnson, as if he had been grossly rude to Mr. Cholmondeley,¹ a gentleman whom he always loved and esteemed. If, therefore, there was an absolute necessity for mentioning the story at all, it might have been thought that her tenderness for Dr. Johnson's character would have disposed her to state anything that could soften it. Why then is there a total silence as to what Mr. Cholmondeley told her?—that Johnson, who had known him from his earliest years, having been made sensible of what had doubtless a strange appearance, took occasion, when he afterwards met him, to make a very courteous and kind apology. There is

¹ George James Cholmondeley, Esq., grandson of George third Earl of Cholmondeley, and one of the Commissioners of Excise; a gentleman respected for his abilities, and elegance of manners.—B. When I spoke to him a few years before his death (in 1831, aged 79) upon this point, I found him very sore at being made the subject of such a debate, and very unwilling to remember anything about either the offence or the apology.—*Croker*.

another little circumstance which I cannot but remark. Her book was published in 1785, she had then in her possession a letter from Dr. Johnson, dated in 1777, which begins thus: "Cholmondeley's story shocks me, if it be true, which I can hardly think, for I am utterly unconscious of it: I am very sorry, and very much ashamed." ("Letters to Mrs. Thrale," ii. 12.) Why then publish the anecdote? Or if she did, why not add the circumstances, with which she was well acquainted?

In his social intercourse she thus describes him:

Ever musing till he was called out to converse, and conversing till the fatigue of his friends, or the promptitude of his own temper to take offence, consigned him back again to silent meditation. ("Anecdotes," p. 23.)

Yet in the same book she tells us:

He was, however, seldom inclined to be silent, when any moral or literary question was started; and it was on such occasions that, like the Sage in "Rasselas," he spoke, and attention watched his lips, he reasoned, and conviction closed his periods. (*Ibid.*, p. 302.)

His conversation, indeed, was so far from ever fatiguing his friends, that they regretted when it was interrupted or ceased, and could exclaim in Milton's language,

"With thee conversing, I forgot all time."

I certainly, then, do not claim too much in behalf of my illustrious friend in saying, that however smart and entertaining Mrs. Thrale's "Anecdotes" are, they must not be held as good evidence against him; for wherever an instance of harshness and severity is told, I beg leave to doubt its perfect authenticity; for though there may have been *some* foundation for it, yet, like that of his reproof to the "very celebrated lady," it may be so exhibited in the narration as to be very unlike the real fact.

The evident tendency of the following anecdote is to represent Dr. Johnson as extremely deficient in affection, tenderness, or even common civility. "*When I one day lamented the loss of a first cousin killed in America, — 'Prithee, my dear,' said he, 'have done with canting; how would the world be the worse for it, I may ask, if all your relations were at once spitted like larks, and roasted for Presto's supper?' — (Presto was the dog that lay under the table while we talked).*" (*Ibid.*, p. 63.) I suspect

this too of exaggeration and distortion. I allow that he made her an angry speech; but let the circumstances fairly appear, as told by Mr. Baretti, who was present:

Mrs. Thrale, while supping very heartily upon larks, laid down her knife and fork, and abruptly exclaimed, "O, my dear John, do you know what has happened? The last letters from abroad have brought us an account that our poor cousin's head was taken off by a cannon-ball." Johnson, who was shocked both at the fact, and her light unfeeling manner of mentioning it, replied, "Madam, it would give *you* very little concern if all your relations were spitted like those larks and dressed for Presto's supper."¹

It is with concern that I find myself obliged to animadvert on the inaccuracies of Mrs. Piozzi's "Anecdotes," and perhaps I may be thought to have dwelt too long upon her little collection. But as from Johnson's long residence under Mr. Thrale's roof, and his intimacy with her, the account which she has given of him may have made an unfavorable and unjust impression, my duty, as a faithful biographer, has obliged me reluctantly to perform this unpleasant task.

Having left the *pious negotiation*, as I called it, in the best hands, I shall here insert what relates to it. Johnson wrote to Sir Joshua Reynolds on July 6, as follows:

I am going, I hope, in a few days, to try the air of Derbyshire, but hope to see you before I go. Let me, however, mention to you what I have much at heart. If the Chancellor should continue his attention to Mr. Boswell's request, and confer with you on the means of relieving my languid state, I am very desirous to avoid the appearance of asking money upon false pretences. I desire you to represent to his Lordship, what, as soon as it is suggested, he will perceive to be reasonable, — That, if I grow much worse, I shall be afraid to leave my physicians, to suffer the inconveniences of travel, and pine in the solitude of a foreign country; — That, if I grow much better, of which indeed there is now little appearance, I shall not wish to leave my friends and my domestick comforts; for I do not travel for pleasure or curiosity; yet if I should recover, curiosity would revive. In my present state, I am desirous to make a struggle for a little longer life, and hope to obtain some help from a softer climate. Do for me what you can.

¹ Upon mentioning this to my friend Mr. Wilkes, he, with his usual readiness, pleasantly matched it with the following *sentimental anecdote*. He was invited by a young man of fashion at Paris, to sup with him and a lady, who had been for some time his mistress, but with whom he was going to part. He said to Mr. Wilkes that he really felt very much for her, she was in such distress: and that he meant to make her a present of two hundred *louis d'ors*. Mr. Wilkes observed the behavior of Mademoiselle, who sighed indeed very piteously, and assumed every pathetic air of grief: but ate no less than three French pigeons, which are as large as English partridges, besides other things. Mr. Wilkes whispered the gentleman, "We often say in England, *Excessive sorrow is exceeding dry*, but I never heard *Excessive sorrow is exceeding hungry*. Perhaps one hundred will do." The gentleman took the hint. — B.

He wrote to me July 26 :

I wish your affairs could have permitted a longer and continued exertion of your zeal and kindness. They that have your kindness, may want your ardour. In the meantime I am very feeble, and very dejected.

By a letter from Sir Joshua Reynolds I was informed, that the Lord Chancellor had called on him, and acquainted him that the application had not been successful, but that his Lordship, after speaking highly in praise of Johnson, as a man who was an honor to his country, desired Sir Joshua to let him know, that on granting a mortgage of his pension, he should draw on his Lordship to the amount of five or six hundred pounds ; and that his Lordship explained the meaning of the mortgage to be, that he wished the business to be conducted in such a manner that Dr. Johnson should appear to be under the least possible obligation. Sir Joshua mentioned that he had by the same post communicated all this to Dr. Johnson.

How Johnson was affected upon the occasion will appear from what he wrote to Sir Joshua Reynolds :

ASHBOURNE, Sept. 9. Many words I hope are not necessary between you and me, to convince you what gratitude is excited in my heart by the Chancellor's liberality, and your kind offices. . . .

I have enclosed a letter to the Chancellor, which when you have read it, you will be pleased to seal with a head, or any other general seal, and convey it to him: had I sent it directly to him, I should have seemed to overlook the favour of your intervention.

TO THE LORD HIGH CHANCELLOR.¹

MY LORD: After a long and not inattentive observation of mankind, the generosity of your Lordship's offer raises in me not less wonder than gratitude. Bounty, so liberally bestowed, I should gladly receive, if my condition made it necessary; for to such a mind, who would not be proud to own his obligations? But it has pleased GOD to restore me to so great a measure of health, that if I should now appropriate so much of a fortune destined to do good, I could not escape from myself the charge of advancing a false claim. My journey to the continent, though I once thought it necessary, was never much encouraged by my physicians; and I was very desirous that your Lordship should be told of it by Sir Joshua Reynolds, as an event very uncertain; for if I grew much better, I should not be willing, if much worse, not able, to

¹ Sir Joshua Reynolds, on account of the excellence both of the sentiment and expression of this letter, took a copy of it, which he showed to some of his friends; one of whom, who admired it, being allowed to peruse it leisurely at home, a copy was made, and found its way into the newspapers and magazines. It was transcribed with some inaccuracies. I print it from the original draft in Johnson's own handwriting.—B.

migrate. Your Lordship was first solicited without my knowledge; but, when I was told that you were pleased to honour me with your patronage, I did not expect to hear of a refusal; yet, as I have had no long time to brood hope, and have not rioted in imaginary opulence, this cold reception has been scarce a disappointment; and, from your Lordship's kindness, I have received a benefit, which only men like you are able to bestow. I shall now live *mihi carior*, with a higher opinion of my own merit. I am, my Lord, your Lordship's most obliged, most grateful and most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

SEPTEMBER, 1784.

Upon this unexpected failure I abstain from presuming to make any remarks, or to offer any conjectures.¹

Having, after repeated reasonings, brought Dr. Johnson to agree to my removing to London, and even to furnish me with arguments in favor of what he had opposed; I wrote to him requesting he would write them for me; he was so good as to comply, and I shall extract that part of his letter to me of June 11, as a proof how well he could exhibit a cautious yet encouraging view of it:

I remember, and entreat you to remember, that *virtus est vitium fugere*;² the first approach to riches is security from poverty. The condition upon which you have my consent to settle in London is, that your expence never exceeds your annual income. Fixing this basis of security, you cannot be hurt, and you may be very much advanced. The loss of your Scottish business, which is all that you can lose, is not to be reckoned as any equivalent to the hopes and possibilities that open here upon you. If you succeed, the question of prudence is at an end; every body will think that done right which ends happily; and though your expectations, of which I would not advise you to talk too much, should not be totally answered, you can hardly fail to get friends who will do for you all that your present situation allows you to hope; and if, after a few years, you should return to Scotland, you will return with a mind supplied by various conversation, and many opportunities of enquiry, with much knowledge, and materials for reflection and instruction.

Let us now contemplate Johnson thirty years after the death of his wife, still retaining for her all the tenderness of affection.

TO THE REVEREND MR. BAGSHAW, AT BROMLEY.

SIR: Perhaps you may remember, that in the year 1753,³ you committed to the ground my dear wife. I now entreat your permission to lay a stone

¹ It was reported that the King's refusal was the cause of the failure; but a letter from Thurlow to Reynolds, printed by Croker, seems to prove that the King was never informed of the proposal, and makes it doubtful whether it was ever laid before Pitt. Why this letter was never communicated to Boswell is not clear. See Johnson's subsequent letter to Reynolds under dates Sept. 9 and Oct. 12.

² Horace: I. "Epistles," i. 41.

³ Mrs. Johnson died March 17, 1752. See Vol. I., p. 134, note 1.

upon her; and have sent the inscription, that, if you find it proper, you may signify your allowance.

You will do me a great favour by shewing the place where she lies, that the stone may protect her remains.

Mr. Ryland will wait on you for the inscription, and procure it to be engraved. You will easily believe that I shrink from this mournful office. When it is done, if I have strength remaining, I will visit Bromley once again, and pay you part of the respect to which you have a right from, Reverend Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

JULY 12, 1784.

On the same day he wrote to Mr. Langton :

I cannot but think that in my languid and anxious state, I have some reason to complain that I receive from you neither enquiry nor consolation. You know how much I value your friendship, and with what confidence I expect your kindness, if I wanted any act of tenderness that you could perform; at least if you do not know it, I think your ignorance is your own fault. Yet how long is it that I have lived almost in your neighbourhood without the least notice. I do not, however, consider this neglect as particularly shewn to me; I hear two of your most valuable friends make the same complaint. But why are all thus overlooked? You are not oppressed by sickness, you are not distracted by business; if you are sick, you are sick of leisure: And allow yourself to be told, that no disease is more to be dreaded or avoided. Rather to do nothing than to do good, is the lowest state of a degraded mind. Boileau says to his pupil,

*"Que les vers ne soient pas votre éternel emploi,
Cultivez vos amis."* ———¹

That voluntary debility, which modern language is content to term indolence, will, if it is not counteracted by resolution, render in time the strongest faculties lifeless, and turn the flame to the smoke of virtue. I do not expect nor desire to see you, because I am much pleased to find that your mother stays so long with you, and I should think you neither elegant nor grateful, if you did not study her gratification. You will pay my respects to both the ladies, and to all the young people. I am going Northward for a while, to try what help the country can give me; but, if you will write, the letter will come after me.

Next day he set out on a jaunt to Staffordshire and Derbyshire, flattering himself that he might be in some degree relieved.

During his absence from London he kept up a correspondence with several of his friends, from which I shall select what appears to me proper for publication, without attending nicely to chronological order.

To DR. BROCKLESBY, he writes, Ashbourne, July 20 :

¹ "Art Poétique" : chant iv.

The kind attention which you have so long shewn to my health and happiness, makes it as much a debt of gratitude as a call of interest, to give you an account of what befalls me, when accident removes me from your immediate care. The journey of the first day was performed with very little sense of fatigue; the second day brought me to Lichfield, without much lassitude; but I am afraid that I could not have borne such violent agitation for many days together. Tell Dr. Heberden, that in the coach I read "*Ciceronianus*," which I concluded as I entered Lichfield. My affection and understanding went along with Erasmus, except that once or twice he somewhat unskilfully entangles Cicero's civil or moral, with his rhetorical character. I staid five days at Lichfield, but, being unable to walk, had no great pleasure, and yesterday (19th) I came hither, where I am to try what air and attention can perform. Of any improvement in my health I cannot yet please myself with the perception. . . . The asthma has no abatement. Opiates stop the fit, so as that I can sit and sometimes lie easy, but they do not now procure me the power of motion; and I am afraid that my general strength of body does not encrease. The weather indeed is not benign; but how low is he sunk whose strength depends upon the weather! I am now looking into Floyer, who lived with his asthma to almost his ninetieth year. His book by want of order is obscure; and his asthma, I think, not of the same kind with mine. Something however I may perhaps learn. My appetite still continues keen enough; and what I consider as a symptom of radical health, I have a voracious delight in raw summer fruit, of which I was less eager a few years ago. You will be pleased to communicate this account to Dr. Heberden, and if any thing is to be done, let me have your joint opinion. Now — *abite curæ*; let me enquire after the Club.¹

July 31. Not recollecting that Dr. Heberden might be at Windsor, I thought your letter long in coming. But, you know, *noctitura petuntur*,² the letter which I so much desired, tells me that I have lost one of my best and tenderest friends.³ My comfort is, that he appeared to live like a man that had always before his eyes the fragility of our present existence, and was therefore, I hope, not unprepared to meet his judge. Your attention, dear Sir, and that of Dr. Heberden, to my health, is extremely kind. I am loth to think that I grow worse; and cannot fairly prove even to my own partiality, that I grow much better.

August 5. I return your thanks, dear Sir, for your unwearied attention, both medicinal and friendly, and hope to prove the effect of your care by living to acknowledge it.

August 12.⁴ Pray be so kind as to have me in your thoughts, and mention my case to others as you have opportunity. I seem to myself neither to gain nor lose strength. I have lately tried milk, but have yet found no advantage, and I am afraid of it merely as a liquid. My appetite is still good, which I know is dear Dr. Heberden's criterion of the *vis vitæ*. As we cannot now see each other, do not omit to write, for you cannot think with what warmth of expectation I reckon the hours of a post-day.

August 14. I have hitherto sent you only melancholy letters; you will be glad to hear some better account. Yesterday the asthma remitted, perceptibly remitted, and I moved with more ease than I have enjoyed for many weeks. May God continue his mercy. This account I would not delay,

¹ At the Essex Head, Essex Street. — B.

² Juvenal: "*Satires*," x. 8.

³ Mr. Allen, the printer. — B.

⁴ On this day he wrote the prayer given *post*, p. 536.

because I am not a lover of complaints, or complainers, and yet I have since we parted, uttered nothing till now but terror and sorrow. Write to me, dear Sir.

August 16. Better I hope, and better. My respiration gets more and more ease and liberty. I went to church yesterday, after a very liberal dinner, without any inconvenience; it is indeed no long walk, but I never walked it without difficulty, since I came, before. . . . the intention was only to overpower the seeming *vis inertiae* of the pectoral and pulmonary muscles. I am favoured with a degree of ease that very much delights me, and do not despair of another race upon the stairs of the Academy. If I were, however, of a humour to see, or to shew the state of my body, on the dark side, I might say,

“*Quid te exempta juvat [levat] spinis de pluribus una?*”
(Hor. 2 “Ep.” ii., 212.)

The nights are still sleepless, and the water rises, though it does not rise very fast. Let us, however, rejoice in all the good that we have. The remission of one disease will enable nature to combat the rest. The squills I have not neglected; for I have taken more than a hundred drops a day, and one day took two hundred and fifty, which, according to the popular equivalent of a drop to a grain, is more than half an ounce. I thank you, dear Sir, for your attention in ordering the medicines; your attention to me has never failed. If the virtue of medicines could be enforced by the benevolence of the prescriber, how soon should I be well!

August 19. The relaxation of the asthma still continues, yet I do not trust it wholly to itself, but soothe it now and then with an opiate. I not only perform the perpetual act of respiration with less labour, but I can walk with fewer intervals of rest, and with greater freedom of motion. I never thought well of Dr. James's compounded medicines; his ingredients appear to me some times inefficacious and trifling, and sometimes heterogeneous and destructive of each other. This prescription exhibits a composition of about three hundred and thirty grains, in which there are four grains of emetick tartar, and six drops [of] thebaick tincture. He that writes thus surely writes for show. The basis of his medicine is the gum ammoniacum, which dear Dr. Lawrence used to give, but of which I never saw any effect. We will, if you please, let this medicine alone. The squills have every suffrage, and in the squills we will rest for the present.

August 21. The kindness which you shew by having me in your thoughts upon all occasions, will, I hope, always fill my heart with gratitude. Be pleased to return my thanks to Sir George Baker, for the consideration which he has bestowed upon me. Is this the balloon that has been so long expected, this balloon to which I subscribed, but without payment? It is pity that philosophers have been disappointed, and shame that they have been cheated; but I know not well how to prevent either. Of this experiment I have read nothing; where was it exhibited? and who was the man that ran away with so much money?¹ Continue, dear Sir, to write often and more at a time, for

¹ On Aug. 10, 1784, De Moret, a Frenchman, proposed to ascend in a balloon from a tea-garden in the Five Fields (now Belgravia), having first collected a considerable sum of money. The machine, which was of the clumsiest kind, caught fire, and the mob, thinking they had been swindled, played havoc in the gardens. De Moret however got off with his guineas. On Sept. 15, Vincent Lunardi, an attaché of the Neapolitan Embassy, made a successful ascent from the Artillery

none of your prescriptions operate to their proper uses more certainly than your letters operate as cordials.

August 26. I suffered you to escape last post without a letter, but you are not to expect such indulgence very often; for I write not so much because I have any thing to say, as because I hope for an answer; and the vacancy of my life here makes a letter of great value. I have here little company and little amusement, and thus abandoned to the contemplation of my own miseries, I am something gloomy and depressed; this too I resist as I can, and find opium, I think, useful, but I seldom take more than one grain. Is not this strange weather? Winter absorbed the spring, and now autumn is come before we have had summer. But let not our kindness for each other imitate the inconstancy of the seasons.

Sept. 2. Mr. Windham has been here to see me; he came, I think, forty miles out of his way, and stayed about a day and a half; perhaps I make the time shorter than it was. Such conversation I shall not have again till I come back to the regions of literature; and there Windham is, *inter stellas*¹ *Luna minores*. [He then mentions the effects of certain medicines, as taken; that], Nature is recovering its original powers, and the functions returning to their proper state. God continue his mercies, and grant me to use them rightly.

Sept. 9. Do you know the Duke and Duchess of Devonshire? And have you ever seen Chatsworth? I was at Chatsworth on Monday: I had seen it before, but never when its owners were at home: I was very kindly received, and honestly pressed to stay; but I told them that a sick man is not a fit inmate of a great house. But I hope to go again some time.

Sept. 11. I think nothing grows worse, but all rather better, except sleep, and that of late has been at its old pranks. Last evening, I felt what I had not known for a long time, an inclination to walk for amusement; I took a short walk, and came back again neither breathless nor fatigued. This has been a gloomy, frigid, ungenial summer, but of late it seems to mend; I hear the heat sometimes mentioned, but I do not feel it.

“Præterea minimus gelido jam in corpore sanguis
Febre calet sola.” [Juv. “Sat.” x., 217.]

I hope, however, with good help, to find means of supporting a winter at home, and to hear and tell at the Club what is doing, and what ought to be doing in the world. I have no company here, and shall naturally come home hungry for conversation. To wish you, dear Sir, more leisure, would not be kind; but what leisure you have, you must bestow upon me.

Sept. 16. I have now let you alone for a long time, having indeed little to say. You charge me somewhat unjustly with luxury. At Chatsworth, you should remember, that I have eaten but once; and the doctor, with whom I live, follows a milk diet. I grow no fatter, though my stomach, if it be not disturbed by physick, never fails me. I now grow weary of solitude, and think of removing next week to Lichfield, a place of more society, but other-

Ground at Moorfields before, it is said, the largest crowd ever assembled in London. It is to this ascent that Johnson refers under date Sept. 29. At that time all people were very much excited about the possibility of ballooning.

¹ It is remarkable that so good a Latin scholar as Johnson should have been so inattentive to the metre, as by mistake to have written *stellas* instead of *ignes*. — B. (Hor. “Od.” i., 12. 46.)

wise of less convenience. When I am settled, I shall write again. Of the hot weather that you mentioned, we have [not] had in Derbyshire very much, and for myself I seldom feel heat, and suppose that my frigidity is the effect of my distemper; a supposition which naturally leads me to hope that a hotter climate may be useful. But I hope to stand another English winter.

Lichfield, Sept. 29. On one day I had three letters about the air-balloon: yours was far the best, and has enabled me to impart to my friends in the country an idea of this species of amusement. In amusement, mere amusement, I am afraid it must end, for I do not find that its course can be directed so as that it should serve any purposes of communication: and it can give no new intelligence of the state of the air at different heights, till they have ascended above the height of mountains, which they seem never likely to do. I came hither on the 27th. How long I shall stay, I have not determined. My dropsy is gone, and my asthma much remitted, but I have felt myself a little declining these two days, or at least to-day; but such vicissitudes must be expected. One day may be worse than another; but this last month is far better than the former: if the next should be as much better than this, I shall run about the town on my own legs.

October 6. The fate of the balloon I do not much lament: to make new balloons, is to repeat the jest again. We now know a method of mounting into the air, and, I think, are not likely to know more. The vehicles can serve no use till we can guide them; and they can gratify no curiosity till we mount with them to greater heights than we can reach without; till we rise above the tops of the highest mountains, which we have yet not done. We know the state of the air in all its regions, to the top of Teneriffe, and therefore learn nothing from those who navigate a balloon below the clouds. The first experiment, however, was bold, and deserved applause and reward. But since it has been performed, and its event is known, I had rather now find a medicine that can ease an asthma.

October 25. You write to me with a zeal that animates, and a tenderness that melts me. I am not afraid either of a journey to London, or a residence in it. I came down with little fatigue, and am now not weaker. In the smoky atmosphere I was delivered from the dropsy, which I consider as the original and radical disease. The town is my element;¹ there are my friends, there are my books, to which I have not yet bid farewell, and there are my amusements. Sir Joshua told me long ago, that my vocation was to publick life, and I hope still to keep my station, till GOD shall bid me *Go in Peace*.

TO MR. HOOLE.

Ashbourne, Aug. 7. Since I was here, I have two little letters from you, and have not had the gratitude to write. But every man is most free with his best friends, because he does not suppose that they can suspect him of intentional incivility. One reason for my omission is, that being in a place to

¹ His love of London continually appears. In a letter from him to Mrs. Smart, wife of his friend the poet, which is published in a well-written life of him prefixed to an edition of his poems in 1791, there is the following sentence: "To one that has passed so many years in the pleasures and opulence of London, there are few places that can give much delight." Once, upon reading that line in the curious epitaph quoted in *The Spectator* [No. 518],

"Born in New England, died in London die,"

he laughed and said, "I do not wonder at this. It would have been strange, if born in London, he had died in New England." — B.

which you are wholly a stranger, I have no topicks of correspondence. If you had any knowledge of Ashbourne, I could tell you of two Ashbourne men, who, being last week condemned at Derby to be hanged for a robbery, went and hanged themselves in their cell. But this, however it may supply us with talk, is nothing to you. Your kindness, I know, would make you glad to hear some good of me, but I have not much good to tell; if I grow not worse, it is all that I can say. I hope Mrs. Hoole receives more help from her migration. Make her my compliments, and write again to, dear Sir, your affectionate servant.

Aug. 13. I thank you for your affectionate letter. I hope we shall both be the better for each other's friendship, and I hope we shall not very quickly be parted. Tell Mr. Nicholls that I shall be glad of his correspondence, when his business allows him a little remission; though to wish him less business, that I may have more pleasure, would be too selfish. To pay for seats at the balloon is not very necessary, because in less than a minute, they who gaze at a mile's distance will see all that can be seen. About the wings I am of your mind; they can not at all assist it, nor I think regulate its motion. I am now grown somewhat easier in my body, but my mind is sometimes depressed. About the Club I am in no great pain. The forfeitures go on, and the house, I hear, is improved for our future meetings. I hope we shall meet often and sit long.

Sept. 4. Your letter was, indeed, long in coming, but it was very welcome. Our acquaintance has now subsisted long, and our recollection of each other involves a great space, and many little occurrences, which melt the thoughts to tenderness. Write to me, therefore, as frequently as you can. I hear from Dr. Brocklesby and Mr. Ryland, that the Club is not crouded. I hope we shall enliven it when winter brings us together.

TO DR. BURNEY.

August 2. The weather, you know, has not been balmy; I am now reduced to think, and am at last content to talk of the weather. Pride must have a fall. I have lost dear Mr. Allen; and wherever I turn, the dead or the dying meet my notice, and force my attention upon misery and mortality. Mrs. Burney's escape from so much danger, and her ease after so much pain, throws, however, some radiance of hope upon the gloomy prospect. May her recovery be perfect, and her continuance long. I struggle hard for life. I take physick, and take air; my friend's chariot is always ready. We have run this morning twenty-four miles, and could run forty-eight more. *But who can run the race with death?*

Sept. 4. [Concerning a private transaction, in which his opinion was asked, and after giving it, he makes the following reflections, which are applicable on other occasions.] Nothing deserves more compassion than wrong conduct with good meaning; than loss or obloquy suffered by one, who, as he is conscious only of good intentions, wonders why he loses that kindness which he wishes to preserve; and not knowing his own fault, if, as may sometimes happen, nobody will tell him, goes on to offend by his endeavours to please. I am delighted by finding that our opinions are the same. You will do me a real kindness by continuing to write. A post-day has now been long a day of recreation.

Nov. 1. Our correspondence paused for want of topicks. I had said what I had to say on the matter proposed to my consideration; and nothing remained but to tell you that I waked or slept; that I was more or less sick.

I drew my thoughts in upon myself, and supposed yours employed upon your book.¹ That your book has been delayed I am glad, since you have gained an opportunity of being more exact. Of the caution necessary in adjusting narratives, there is no end. Some tell what they do not know, that they may not seem ignorant, and others from mere indifference about truth. All truth is not, indeed, of equal importance; but, if little violations are allowed, every violation will in time be thought little; and a writer should keep himself vigilantly on his guard against the first temptations to negligence or supineness. I had ceased to write, because respecting you I had no more to say, and respecting myself could say little good. I cannot boast of advancement, and in case of convalescence it may be said, with few exceptions, *non progredi, est regredi*. I hope I may be excepted. My great difficulty was with my sweet Fanny,² who, by her artifice of inserting her letter in yours, had given me a precept of frugality which I was not at liberty to neglect; and I know not who were in town under whose cover I could send my letter. I rejoice to hear that you are so well, and have a delight particularly sympathetick in the recovery of Mrs. Burney.

TO MR. LANGTON.

Aug. 25. The kindness of your last letter, and my omission to answer it, begins to give you, even in my opinion, a right to recriminate, and to charge me with forgetfulness for the absent. I will, therefore, delay no longer to give an account of myself, and wish I could relate what would please either myself or my friend. On July 13, I left London, partly in hope of help from new air and change of place, and partly excited by the sick man's impatience of the present. I got to Lichfield in a stage vehicle, with very little fatigue, in two days, and had the consolation³ to find, that since my last visit my three old acquaintance are all dead. July 20, I went to Ashbourne, where I have been till now; the house in which we live is repairing. I live in too much solitude, and am often deeply dejected: I wish we were nearer, and rejoice in your removal to London. A friend, at once cheerful and serious, is a great acquisition. Let us not neglect one another for the little time which Providence allows us to hope. Of my health I cannot tell you, what my wishes persuaded me to expect, that it is much improved by the season or by remedies. I am sleepless; my legs grow weary with a very few steps, and the water breaks its boundaries in some degree. The asthma, however, has remitted: my breath is still much obstructed, but is more free than it was. Nights of watchfulness produce torpid days; I read very little, though I am alone; for I am tempted to supply in the day what I lost in bed. This is my history; like all other histories a narrative of misery. Yet am I so much better than in the beginning of the year, that I ought to be ashamed of complaining. I now sit and write with very little sensibility of pain or weakness; but when I rise I shall find my legs betraying me. Of the money which you mentioned, I have no immediate need, keep it, however, for me, unless some exigence requires it. Your papers I will show you certainly, when you would see them; but I am a little angry at you for not keeping minutes of your own *acceptum et expensum*, and think a little time might be spared from Aristo-

¹ "Account of the Musical Performances in Commemoration of Handel."

² The celebrated Miss Fanny Burney. — B.

³ Malone and others have been much puzzled over this word, suggesting other readings, or supplying epithets to explain it. It is surely obvious that it was used, as Croker says, "in sad irony."

phanes for the *res familiares*. Forgive me, for I mean well. I hope, dear Sir, that you and Lady Rothes, and all the young people, too many to enumerate, are well and happy. God bless you all.

TO MR. WINDHAM.

August. The tenderness with which you have been pleased to treat me through my long illness, neither health nor sickness can, I hope, make me forget; and you are not to suppose that after we parted you were no longer in my mind. But what can a sick man say, but that he is sick? His thoughts are necessarily concentrated in himself; he neither receives nor can give delight; his inquiries are after alleviations of pain, and his efforts are to catch some momentary comfort. Though I am now in the neighbourhood of the Peak, you must expect no account of its wonders, of its hills, its waters, its caverns, or its mines; but I will tell you, dear Sir, what I hope you will not hear with less satisfaction, that, for about a week past, my asthma has been less afflictive.

Lichfield, Oct. 2. I believe you had been long enough acquainted with the *phenomena* of sickness, not to be surprised that a sick man wishes to be where he is not, and where it appears to every body but himself that he might easily be, without having the resolution to remove. I thought Ashbourne a solitary place, but did not come hither till last Monday. I have here more company, but my health has for this last week not advanced; and in the languor of disease how little can be done? Whither or when I shall make my next remove, I cannot tell; but I entreat you, dear Sir, to let me know from time to time, where you may be found, for your residence is a very powerful attractive to, Sir, your most humble servant.

TO MR. PERKINS.

DEAR SIR: I cannot but flatter myself that your kindness for me will make you glad to know where I am, and in what state.

I have been struggling very hard with my diseases. My breath has been very much obstructed, and the water has attempted to encroach upon me again. I past the first part of the summer at Oxford, afterwards I went to Lichfield, thence to Ashbourne in Derbyshire, and a week ago I returned to Lichfield.

My breath is now much easier, and the water is in a great measure run away, so that I hope to see you again before winter.

Please make my compliments to Mrs. Perkins, and to Mr. and Mrs. Barclay. I am, dear Sir, Your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LICHFIELD, Oct. 4, 1784.

TO THE RIGHT HON. WILLIAM GERARD HAMILTON.

DEAR SIR: Considering what reason you gave me in the spring to conclude that you took part in whatever good or evil might befall me, I ought not to have omitted so long the account which I am now about to give you. My diseases are an asthma and a dropsy, and, what is less curable, seventy-five. Of the dropsy, in the beginning of the summer, or in the spring, I recovered to a degree which struck with wonder both me and my physicians; the asthma now is likewise, for a time, very much relieved. I went to Oxford, where the

asthma was very tyrannical, and the dropsy began again to threaten me; but seasonable physick stopped the inundation: I then returned to London, and in July took a resolution to visit Staffordshire and Derbyshire, where I am yet struggling with my disease. The dropsy made another attack, and was not easily ejected, but at last gave way. The asthma suddenly remitted in bed, on the 13th of August, and, though now very oppressive, is, I think, still something gentler than it was before the remission. My limbs are miserably debilitated, and my nights are sleepless and tedious. When you read this, dear Sir, you are not sorry that I wrote no sooner. I will not prolong my complaints. I hope still to see you *in a happier hour*,¹ to talk over what we have often talked, and perhaps to find new topics of merriment, or new incitements to curiosity.

I am, dear Sir, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LICHFIELD, Oct. 20, 1784.

TO JOHN PARADISE, ESQ.²

DEAR SIR: Though in all my summer's excursion I have given you no account of myself, I hope you think better of me than to imagine it possible for me to forget you, whose kindness to me has been too great and too constant not to have made its impression on a harder breast than mine. Silence is not very culpable, when nothing pleasing is suppressed. It would have alleviated none of your complaints to have read my vicissitudes of evil. I have struggled hard with very formidable and obstinate maladies; and though I can not talk of health, think all praise due to my Creator and Preserver for the continuance of my life. The dropsy has made two attacks, and has given way to medicine; the asthma is very oppressive, but that has likewise once remitted. I am very weak, and very sleepless; but it is time to conclude the tale of misery. I hope, dear Sir, that you grow better, for you have likewise your share of human evil, and that your lady and the young charmers are well. I am, dear Sir, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LICHFIELD, Oct. 27, 1784.

TO MR. GEORGE NICOL.³

DEAR SIR: Since we parted, I have been much oppressed by my asthma, but it has lately been less laborious. When I sit I am almost at ease, and I can walk, though yet very little, with less difficulty for this week past, than before. I hope I shall again enjoy my friends, and that you and I shall have a little more literary conversation. Where I now am, every thing is very

¹ Johnson refers to Pope's lines on Walpole:

"Seen him I have but in his happier hour
Of social pleasure ill-exchanged for power."

"Satires," Epilogue, i. 29. — *Dr. Hill*.

² Son of the late Peter Paradise, Esq., his Britannic Majesty's Consul at Salonica, in Macedonia, by his lady a native of that country. He studied at Oxford, and has been honored by that University with the degree of LL.D. He is distinguished not only by his learning and talents, but by an amiable disposition, gentleness of manners, and a very general acquaintance with well-informed and accomplished persons of almost all nations. — B.

³ Bookseller to his Majesty. — B.

liberally provided for me but conversation. My friend is sick himself, and the reciprocation of complaints and groans afford not much of either pleasure or instruction. What we have not at home this town does not supply, and I shall be glad of a little imported intelligence, and hope that you will bestow now and then a little time on the relief, and entertainment of, Sir, yours, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

ASHBOURNE, Aug. 19, 1784.

TO MR. CRUIKSHANK.

DEAR SIR: Do not suppose that I forget you; I hope I shall never be accused of forgetting my benefactors. I had, till lately, nothing to write but complaints upon complaints, of miseries upon miseries; but within this fortnight I have received great relief. Have your lectures any vacation? [If you are released from the necessity of daily study, you may find time for a letter to me. [In this letter he states the particulars of his case.] In return for this account of my health let me have a good account of yours, and of your prosperity in all your undertakings. I am, dear Sir, yours, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

ASHBOURNE, Sept. 4, 1784.

TO MR. THOMAS DAVIES.

Aug. 14. The tenderness with which you always treat me, makes me culpable in my own eyes for having omitted to write in so long a separation; I had, indeed, nothing to say that you could wish to hear. All has been hitherto misery accumulated upon misery, disease corroborating disease, till yesterday my asthma was perceptibly and unexpectedly mitigated. I am much comforted with this short relief, and am willing to flatter myself that it may continue and improve. I have at present, such a degree of ease, as not only may admit the comforts, but the duties of life. Make my compliments to Mrs. Davies. Poor dear Allen, he was a good man.

TO SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

Ashbourne, July 21. The tenderness with which I am treated by my friends, makes it reasonable to suppose that they are desirous to know the state of my health, and a desire so benevolent ought to be gratified. I came to Lichfield in two days without any painful fatigue, and on Monday came hither, where I purpose to stay and try what air and regularity will effect. I cannot yet persuade myself that I have made much progress in recovery. My sleep is little, my breath is very much encumbered, and my legs are very weak. The water has encreased a little, but has again run off. The most distressing symptom is want of sleep.

Aug. 19. Having had since our separation little to say that could please you or myself by saying, I have not been lavish of useless letters; but I flatter myself that you will partake of the pleasure with which I can now tell you, that about a week ago I felt suddenly a sensible remission of my asthma, and consequently a greater lightness of action and motion. Of this grateful alleviation I know not the cause, nor dare depend upon its continuance, but while it lasts I endeavour to enjoy it, and am desirous of communicating, while it lasts, my pleasure to my friends. Hitherto, dear Sir, I had written before the post, which stays in this town but a little while, brought me your

letter. Mr. Davies seems to have represented my little tendency to recover in terms too splendid. I am still restless, still weak, still watery, but the asthma is less oppressive. Poor Ramsay!¹ On which side soever I turn, mortality presents its formidable frown. I left three old friends at Lichfield, when I was last there, and now found them all dead. I no sooner lost sight of dear Allan, than I am told that I shall see him no more. That we must all die, we always knew; I wish I had sooner remembered it. Do not think me intrusive or importunate, if I now call, dear Sir, upon you to remember it.

Sept. 2. I am glad that a little favour from the Court has intercepted your furious purposes.² I could not in any case have approved such public violence of resentment, and should have considered any who encouraged it, as rather seeking sport for themselves, than honour for you. Resentment gratifies him who intended an injury, and pains him unjustly who did not intend it. But all this is now superfluous. I still continue by God's mercy to mend. My breath is easier, my nights are quieter, and my legs are less in bulk, and stronger in use. I have, however, yet a great deal to overcome, before I can yet attain even an old man's health. Write, do write to me now and then; we are now old acquaintance, and perhaps few people have lived so much and so long together, with less cause of complaint on either side. The retrospection of this is very pleasant, and I hope we shall never think on each other with less kindness.

Sept. 9. I could not answer your letter before this day, because I went on the sixth to Chatsworth, and did not come back till the post was gone. Many words, I hope, are not necessary between you and me, to convince you what gratitude is excited in my heart by the Chancellor's liberality and your kind offices. I did not indeed expect that what was asked by the Chancellor would have been refused, but since it has, we will not tell that any thing has been asked. I have enclosed a letter to the Chancellor, which, when you have read it, you will be pleased to seal with a head, or other general seal, and convey it to him; had I sent it directly to him, I should have seemed to overlook the favour of your intervention. My last letter told you of my advance in health, which, I think, in the whole still continues. Of the hydropick tumour, there is now very little appearance; the asthma is much less troublesome, and seems to remit something day after day. I do not despair of supporting an English winter. At Chatsworth I met young Mr. Burke, who led me very commodiously into conversation with the Duke and Duchess. We had a very good morning. The dinner was publick.³

Sept. 18. I flattered myself that this week would have given me a letter from you, but none has come. Write to me now and then, but direct your next to Lichfield. I think, and I hope am sure, that I still grow better; I have sometimes good nights; but am still in my legs weak, but so much mended, that I go to Lichfield in hope of being able to pay my visits on foot, for there are no coaches. I have three letters this day, all about the balloon; I could have been content with one. Do not write about the balloon, whatever else you may think proper to say.

¹ Allan Ramsay, Esq., painter to his Majesty, who died August 10, 1784, in the 71st year of his age, much regretted by his friends. — B.

² An allusion to Sir Joshua's appointment as Court-Painter. He expected it on Allan Ramsay's death, and not immediately receiving it threatened to resign the Presidency of the Royal Academy (Northcote's and Taylor's "Life of Reynolds.") — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Alluding to the former custom at great English houses to give dinners at which any of the neighboring gentry and clergy might present themselves as guests without invitation. — *Dr. Hill*.

October 2. I am always proud of your approbation, and therefore was much pleased that you liked my letter. When you copied it, you invaded the Chancellor's right rather than mine. The refusal I did not expect, but I had never thought much about it, for I doubted whether the Chancellor had so much tenderness for me as to ask. He, being keeper of the King's conscience, ought not to be supposed capable of an improper petition. All is not gold that glitters, as we have often been told; and the adage is verified in your place and my favour; but if what happens does not make us richer, we must bid it welcome, if it makes us wiser. I do not at present grow better, nor much worse; my hopes, however, are somewhat abated, and a very great loss is the loss of hope, but I struggle on as I can.

TO MR. JOHN NICHOLS.

Lichfield, Oct. 20. When you were here, you were pleased, as I am told, to think my absence an inconvenience. I should certainly have been very glad to give so skilful a lover of antiquities any information about my native place, of which, however, I know not much, and have reason to believe that not much is known. Though I have not given you any amusement, I have received amusement from you. At Ashbourne, where I had very little company, I had the luck to borrow "*Mr. Bowyer's Life*";¹ a book so full of contemporary history, that a literary man must find some of his old friends. I thought that I could now and then, have told you some [names] worth your notice; and perhaps we may talk a life over. I hope we shall be much together; you must now be to me what you were before, and what dear Mr. Allen was, besides. He was taken unexpectedly away, but I think he was a very good man. I have made little progress in recovery. I am very weak, and very sleepless: but I live on and hope.

This various mass of correspondence, which I have thus brought together, is valuable, both as an addition to the store which the public already has of Johnson's writings, and as exhibiting a genuine and noble specimen of vigor and vivacity of mind, which neither age nor sickness could impair or diminish.

It may be observed, that his writings in every way, whether for the public, or privately to his friends, was by fits and starts; for we see frequently that many letters are written on the same day. When he had once overcome his aversion to begin, he was, I suppose, desirous to go on, in order to relieve his mind from the uneasy reflection of delaying what he ought to do.

While in the country, notwithstanding the accumulation of illness which he endured, his mind did not lose its powers. He

¹ "*Anecdotes of William Bowyer, Printer*," were republished by Nichols in 1812-15 with many additions in nine volumes under the title of "*Literary Anecdotes of the Eighteenth Century*." Sir George Trevelyan tells us that annotating this work, "with a minute diligence such as few men have the patience to bestow upon a book they do not intend to re-edit," was one of the last occupations of Macaulay's life. He finished the last volume a week before he died. "*Life and Letters of Lord Macaulay*," ii. 484.

translated an ode of Horace, which is printed in his works, and composed several prayers. I shall insert one of them, which is so wise and energetic, so philosophical and so pious, that I doubt not of its affording consolation to many a sincere Christian, when in a state of mind to which I believe the best are sometimes liable.¹

And here I am enabled fully to refute a very unjust reflection, by Sir John Hawkins, both against Dr. Johnson, and his faithful servant Mr. Francis Barber; as if both of them had been guilty of culpable neglect towards a person of the name of Heely, whom Sir John choose to call a *relation* of Dr. Johnson's. The fact is, that Mr. Heely was not his relation; he had indeed been married to one of his cousins, but she had died without having children and he had married another woman; so that even the slight connection which there once had been by *alliance* was dissolved. Dr. Johnson, who had shown very great liberality to this man, while his first wife was alive, as has appeared in a former part of this work (Vol. I., p. 306), was humane and charitable enough to continue his bounty to him occasionally; but surely there was no strong call of duty upon him or upon his legatee, to do more. The following letter, obligingly communicated to me by Mr. Andrew Strahan, will confirm what I have stated:

TO MR. HEELY, NO. 5, IN PYE-STREET, WESTMINSTER.

SIR: As necessity obliges you to call so soon again upon me, you should at least have told the smallest sum that will supply your present want: you can not suppose that I have much to spare. Two guineas is as much as you ought to be behind with your creditor. If you wait on Mr. Strahan, in New Street, Fetter Lane, or in his absence, on Mr. Andrew Strahan, shew this, by which they are entreated to advance you two guineas, and to keep this as a voucher. I am, Sir, your humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

ASHBOURNE, Aug. 12, 1784.

¹ *Against inquisitive and perplexing thoughts.* "O LORD, my Maker and Protector, who hast graciously sent me into this world to work out my salvation, enable me to drive from me all such unquiet and perplexing thoughts as may mislead or hinder me in the practice of those duties which Thou hast required. When I behold the works of thy hands, and consider the course of thy providence, give me grace always to remember that thy thoughts are not my thoughts, nor thy ways my ways. And while it shall please Thee to continue me in this world, where much is to be done, and little to be known, teach me by thy Holy Spirit, to withdraw my mind from unprofitable and dangerous enquiries, from difficulties vainly curious, and doubts impossible to be solved. Let me rejoice in the light which Thou hast imparted, let me serve Thee with active zeal and humble confidence, and wait with patient expectation for the time in which the soul which Thou receivest shall be satisfied with knowledge. Grant this, O LORD, for JESUS CHRIST's sake. Amen." — B. "Prayers and Meditations," p. 219.

Indeed it is very necessary to keep in mind that Sir John Hawkins has unaccountably viewed Johnson's character and conduct in almost every particular, with an unhappy prejudice.¹

We now behold Johnson for the last time in his native city, for which he ever retained a warm affection, and which, by a sudden apostrophe, under the word *Lich*,² he introduces, with reverence, into his immortal work, "The English Dictionary": "*Salve magna parens!*"³ While here, he felt a revival of all the tenderness of filial affection, an instance of which appeared in his ordering the grave-stone and inscription over Elizabeth Blaney (Vol. I., p. 9) to be substantially and carefully renewed.

To Mr. Henry White, a young clergyman, with whom he now

¹ I shall add one instance only to those which I have thought it incumbent on me to point out. Talking of Mr. Garrick's having signified his willingness to let Johnson have the loan of any of his books to assist him in his edition of Shakespeare; Sir John says (p. 444), "Mr. Garrick knew not what risk he ran by this offer. Johnson had so strange a forgetfulness of obligations of this sort, that few who lent him books ever saw them again." This surely conveys a most unfavorable insinuation, and has been so understood. Sir John mentions the single case of a curious edition of Politian, which he tells us, appeared to belong to Pembroke College, which, probably, had been considered by Johnson as his own, for upwards of fifty years. Would it not be fairer to consider this as an inadvertence, and draw no general inference? The truth is that Johnson was so attentive, that in one of his manuscripts in my possession, he has marked in two columns, books borrowed, and books lent. In Sir John Hawkins's compilation, there are, however, some passages concerning Johnson which have unquestionable merit. One of them I shall transcribe, in justice to a writer whom I have had too much occasion to censure, and to show my fairness as the biographer of my illustrious friend: "There was wanting in his conduct and behavior, that dignity which results from a regular and orderly course of action, and by an irresistible power commands esteem. He could not be said to be a staid man, nor so to have adjusted in his mind the balance of reason and passion, as to give occasion to say what may be observed of some men, that all they do is just, fit, and right." Yet a judicious friend well suggests, "It might, however, have been added, that such men are often merely just, and rigidly correct, while their hearts are cold and unfeeling; and that Johnson's virtues were of a much higher tone than those of the *staid, orderly man*, here described. — B.

² *Lich*, a dead carcass; whence Lichfield, the field of the dead, a city in Staffordshire, so named from martyred Christians. *Salve magna parens*. — Johnson's Dictionary.

³ The following circumstance, mutually to the honor of Johnson and the corporation of his native city, has been communicated to me by the Reverend Dr. Vyse, from the town clerk: "Mr. Simpson has now before him, a record of the respect and veneration which the Corporation of Lichfield, in the year 1767, had for the merits and learning of Dr. Johnson. His father built the corner house in the market-place, the two fronts of which, towards Market and Broadmarket street, stood upon waste land of the Corporation, under a forty years' lease, which was then expired. On the 15th of August, 1767, at a common-hall of the bailiffs and citizens, it was ordered (and that without any solicitation), that a lease should be granted to Samuel Johnson, Doctor of Laws, of the encroachments at his house, for the term of ninety-nine years, at the old rent, which was five shillings. Of which, as town-clerk, Mr. Simpson had the honor and pleasure of informing him, and that he was desired to accept it without paying any fine on the occasion, which lease was afterwards granted, and the Doctor died possessed of this property." — B.

formed an intimacy, so as to talk to him with great freedom, he mentioned that he could not in general accuse himself of having been an undutiful son. "Once, indeed," said he, "I was disobedient; I refused to attend my father to Uttoxeter market. Pride was the source of that refusal, and the remembrance of it was painful. A few years ago I desired to atone for this fault; I went to Uttoxeter in very bad weather, and stood for a considerable time bareheaded in the rain, on the spot where my father's stall used to stand. In contrition I stood, and I hope the penance was expiatory."

"I told him," says Miss Seward, "in one of my latest visits to him, of a wonderful learned pig, which I had seen at Nottingham; and which did all that we have observed exhibited by dogs and horses. The subject amused him. 'Then,' said he, 'the pigs are a race unjustly calumniated. *Pig* has, it seems, not been wanting to *man*, but *man* to *pig*. We do not allow *time* for his education; we kill him at a year old.' Mr. Henry White, who was present, observed that if this instance had happened in or before Pope's time, he would not have been justified in instancing the swine as the lowest degree of grovelling instinct.¹ Dr. Johnson seemed pleased with the observation, while the person who made it proceeded to remark, that great torture must have been employed, ere the indocility of the animal could have been subdued. 'Certainly,' said the Doctor; 'but,' turning to me, 'how old is your pig?' I told him, three years old. 'Then,' said he, 'the pig has no cause to complain; he would have been killed the first year if he had not been *educated*, and protracted existence is a good recompense for very considerable degrees of torture.'"

As Johnson had now very faint hopes of recovery, and as Mrs. Thrale was no longer devoted to him, it might have been supposed that he would naturally have chosen to remain in the comfortable house of his beloved wife's daughter, and end his life where he began it. But there was in him an animated and lofty spirit,² and however complicated diseases might depress ordinary mortals, all who saw him beheld and acknowledged the *invictum*

¹Pope: "Essay on Man," i. 221.

²Mr. Burke suggested to me as applicable to Johnson, what Cicero, in his "Cato Major," says of *Appius*: "*Intentum enim animum, tanquam arcum, habebat, nec languescens succumbebat senectuti*," repeating, at the same time, the following noble words in the same passage: "*Ita enim senectus honesta est, si se ipsa defendit, si jus suum retinet, si nemini emancipata est, si usque ad extremum vitæ spiritum vindicat jus suum.*" — B. The last lines read: "*Si usque ad ultimum spiritum dominatur in suos.*" "Cato Major," xi. 38. — Dr. Hill.

animum Catonis.¹ Such was his intellectual ardor even at this time, that he said to one friend, "Sir, I look upon every day to be lost, in which I do not make a new acquaintance;" and to another, when talking of his illness, "I will be conquered; I will not capitulate." And such was his love of London, so high a relish had he of its magnificent extent, and variety of intellectual entertainment, that he languished when absent from it, his mind having become quite luxurious from the long habit of enjoying the metropolis; and, therefore, although at Lichfield, surrounded with friends who loved and revered him, and for whom he had a very sincere affection, he still found that such conversation as London affords, could be found no where else. These feelings, joined, probably, to some flattering hopes of aid from the eminent physicians and surgeons in London, who kindly and generously attended him without accepting fees, made him resolve to return to the capital.

From Lichfield he came to Birmingham, where he passed a few days with his worthy old schoolfellow, Mr. Hector, who thus writes to me :

He was very solicitous with me to recollect some of our most early transactions, and transmit them to him, for I perceived nothing gave him greater pleasure than calling to mind those days of our innocence. I complied with his request, and he only received them a few days before his death. I have transcribed for your inspection exactly the minutes I wrote to him.

This paper having been found in his repositories after his death, Sir John Hawkins has inserted it entire, and I have made occasional use of it and other communications from Mr. Hector,² in the course of this work. I have both visited and corresponded with him since Dr. Johnson's death, and by my inquiries concerning a great variety of particulars have obtained additional information. I followed the same mode with the Reverend Dr. Taylor, in whose presence I wrote down a good deal of what he

¹ Horace : 2 "Odes," i. 24 — *Atrocem animum Catonis*, are Horace's words, and it may be doubted whether *atrox* is used by any other original writer in the same sense. *Stubborn* is perhaps the most correct translation of this epithet. — *Malone*.

² It is a most agreeable circumstance attending the publication of this work, that Mr. Hector has survived his illustrious school-fellow so many years; that he still retains his health and spirits; and has gratified me with the following acknowledgment: "I thank you, most sincerely thank you, for the great and long continued entertainment your life of Dr. Johnson has afforded me, and others, of my particular friends." Mr. Hector, besides setting me right as to the verse on a sprig of myrtle [Vol. I., p. 43, note 1], has favored me with two English odes, written by Dr. Johnson, at an early period of his life, which will appear in my edition of his poems, — B.

could tell; and he, at my request, signed his name, to give it authenticity. It is very rare to find any person who is able to give a distinct account of the life even of one whom he has known intimately, without questions being put to them. My friend Dr. Kippis¹ has told me, that on this account it is a practice with him to draw out a biographical catechism.

Johnson then proceeded to Oxford, where he was again kindly received by Dr. Adams, who was pleased to give me the following account in one of his letters (Feb. 17th, 1785):

His last visit was, I believe, to my house, which he left, after a stay of four or five days. We had much serious talk together, for which I ought to be the better as long as I live. You will remember some discourse which we had in the summer upon the subject of prayer, and the difficulty of this sort of composition. He reminded me of this, and of my having wished him to try his hand, and to give us a specimen of the style and manner that he approved. He added, that he was now in a right frame of mind, and as he could not possibly employ his time better, he would in earnest set about it. But I find upon inquiry, that no papers of this sort were left behind him, except a few short ejaculatory forms suitable to his present situation.

Dr. Adams had not then received accurate information on this subject; for it has since appeared that various prayers had been composed by him at different periods, which intermingled with pious resolutions, and some short notes of his life were entitled by him "Prayers and Meditations," and have, in pursuance of his earnest requisition, in the hopes of doing good, been published, with a judicious well-written preface, by the Reverend Mr. Strahan, to whom he delivered them. This admirable collection, to which I have frequently referred in the course of this work, evinces, beyond all his compositions for the public, and all the eulogies of his friends and admirers, the sincere virtue and piety of Johnson. It proves with unquestionable authenticity, that amidst all his constitutional infirmities, his earnestness to conform his practice to the precepts of Christianity was unceasing, and that he habitually endeavored to refer every transaction of his life to the will of the Supreme Being.²

¹ Editor of the "*Biographia Britannica*."

² Boswell seems to have been the only one of Johnson's friends who approved of this publication. Strahan says in his preface that Johnson placed the papers in his hands and charged him with the work. We have no right to disbelieve him, or to call his conduct, as Croker does, "disingenuous and culpable." Only portions of the MSS. are preserved in the library of Pembroke College. These show occasional traces of revision such as Johnson would hardly have given to what he did not contemplate being published. On the other hand it is difficult to believe that he would have sanctioned everything Strahan thought fit to print. Dr. Adams, whose au-

He arrived in London on the 16th of November, and next day sent to Dr. Burney the following note, which I insert as the last token of his remembrance of that ingenious and amiable man, and as another of the many proofs of the tenderness and benignity of his heart :

Mr. JOHNSON, who came home last night, sends his respects to dear Doctor Burney, and all the dear Burneys, little and great.

TO MR. HECTOR, IN BIRMINGHAM.

DEAR SIR: I did not reach Oxford until Friday morning and then I sent Francis to see the balloon fly, but could not go myself. I staid at Oxford till Tuesday, and then came in the common vehicle easily to London. I am as I was, and having seen Dr. Brocklesby, am to ply the squills; but, whatever be their efficacy, this world must soon pass away. Let us think seriously on our duty. I send my kindest respects to dear Mrs. Careless: let me have the prayers of both. We have all lived long, and must soon part. GOD have mercy on us, for the sake of our Lord JESUS CHRIST. Amen.

I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LONDON, November 17, 1784.

His correspondence with me, after his letter on the subject of my settling in London, shall now, so far as is proper, be produced in one series.

July 26, he wrote to me from Ashbourne :

On the 14th I came to Lichfield, and found every body glad enough to see me. On the 20th I came hither, and found a house half built, of very uncomfortable appearance; but my own room has not been altered. That a man worn with diseases, in his seventy-second or third year, should condemn part of his remaining life to pass among ruins and rubbish, and that no inconsiderable part, appears to me very strange. I know that your kindness makes you impatient to know the state of my health, in which I cannot boast of much improvement. I came through the journey without much inconvenience, but when I attempt self-motion I find my legs weak, and my breath very short; this day I have been much disordered. I have no company; the Doctor [Taylor] is busy in his fields, and goes to bed at nine, and his whole system is so different from mine, that we seem formed for different elements; I have, therefore, all my amusement to seek within myself.

Having written to him in bad spirits a letter filled with dejection and fretfulness, and at the same time expressing anxious

thority had been claimed in the preface, shortly after the appearance of the book denied all knowledge of its contents, and emphatically declared that, had he been consulted, he would never have consented to the publication. The probable truth is that Strahan was expected to exercise more discretion than he had, a not uncommon result of literary bequests to friends.

apprehensions concerning him, on account of a dream which had disturbed me; his answer was chiefly in terms of reproach, for a supposed charge of "affecting discontent, and indulging the vanity of complaint." It, however, proceeded:

Write to me often, and write like a man. I consider your fidelity and tenderness as a great part of the comforts which are yet left me, and sincerely wish we could be nearer to each other. . . . My dear friend, life is very short and very uncertain; let us spend it as well as we can. My worthy neighbor, Allen, is dead. Love me as well as you can. Pay my respects to dear Mrs. Boswell. Nothing ailed me at that time; let your superstition at last have an end.

Feeling very soon that the manner in which he had written might hurt me, he two days afterwards, July 28, wrote to me again, giving me an account of his sufferings; after which, he thus proceeds:

Before this letter, you will have had one which I hope you will not take amiss; for it contains only truth, and that truth kindly intended. . . . *Spartam quam nactus es orna*; ¹ make the most and best of your lot, and compare yourself not with the few that are above you, but with the multitudes which are below you. . . . Go steadily forwards with lawful business or honest diversions. "*Be* (as Temple says of the Dutchman) *well when you are not ill, and pleased when you are not angry.*" . . . This may seem but an ill return for your tenderness; but I mean it well, for I love you with great ardour and sincerity. Pay my respects to dear Mrs. Boswell, and teach the young ones to love me.

I unfortunately was so much indisposed during a considerable part of the year, that it was not, or at least I thought it was not, in my power to write to my illustrious friend as formerly, or without expressing such complaints as offended him. Having conjured him not to do me the injustice of charging me with affectation, I was with much regret long silent. His last letter to me then came, and affected me very tenderly.

TO JAMES BOSWELL, ESQ.

DEAR SIR: I have this summer sometimes amended, and sometimes relapsed, but, upon the whole, have lost ground very much. My legs are extremely weak, and my breath very short, and the water is now encreasing upon me. In this uncomfortable state your letters used to relieve; what is the reason that I have them no longer? Are you sick, or are you sullen? Whatever be the reason, if it be less than necessity, drive it away; and of the short

¹ *Spartam nactus es, hanc orna*; quoted by Erasmus from Cicero's "Letters to Atticus," iv. 6. — Dr. Hill,

life that we have, make the best use for yourself and for your friends. . . . I am sometimes afraid that your omission to write has some real cause, and shall be glad to know that you are not sick, and that nothing ill has befallen dear Mrs. Boswell, or any of your family.

I am, Sir, your, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

LICHFIELD, November 5, 1784.

Yet it was not a little painful to me to find that, in a paragraph of this letter which I have omitted, he still persevered in arraigning me as before, which was strange in him who had so much experience of what I suffered. I, however, wrote to him two as kind letters as I could; the last of which came too late to be read by him, for his illness increased more rapidly upon him than I had apprehended; but I had the consolation of being informed that he spoke of me on his death-bed with affection, and I look forward with humble hope of renewing our friendship in a better world.

I now relieve the readers of this work from any further personal notice of its author; who, if he should be thought to have obtruded himself too much upon their attention, requests them to consider the peculiar plan of his biographical undertaking.

Soon after Johnson's return to the metropolis, both the asthma and dropsy became more violent and distressful. He had for some time kept a journal in Latin of the state of his illness, and the remedies which he used, under the title of "*Ægri Ephemeris*," which he began on the 6th of July, but continued it no longer than the 8th of November; finding, I suppose, that it was a mournful and unavailing register. It is in my possession; and is written with great care and accuracy.

Still his love of literature¹ did not fail. A very few days before

¹ It is truly wonderful to consider the extent and constancy of Johnson's literary ardor, notwithstanding the melancholy which clouded and embittered his existence. Besides the numerous and various works which he executed, he had, at different times, formed schemes of a great many more, of which the following catalogue was given by him to Mr. Langton, and by that gentleman presented to his Majesty:

"DIVINITY. — A small book of precepts and directions for piety: the hint taken from the directions in Morton's exercise.

"PHILOSOPHY, HISTORY, and LITERATURE in general.

"History of Criticism, as it relates to judging of authors, from Aristotle to the present age. An account of the rise and improvements of that art; of the different opinions of authors, ancient and modern.

"Translation of the History of Herodian.

"New edition of Fairfax's Translation of Tasso, with notes, glossary, &c.

"Chaucer, a new edition of him, from manuscripts and old editions, with various readings, conjectures, remarks on his language, and the changes it had undergone from the earliest times to his age, and from his to the present; with notes explanatory

his death he transmitted to his friend Mr. John Nichols a list of the authors of the "Universal History," mentioning their several shares in that work. It has, according to his direction, been deposited in the British Museum, and is printed in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for December, 1784.

of customs, &c. and references to Boccace, and other authors from whom he has borrowed, with an account of the liberties he has taken in telling the stories; his life and an exact etymological glossary. Aristotle's Rhetoric, a translation of it into English. A collection of Letters, translated from the modern writers, with some account of the several authors. Oldham's Poems, with notes, historical and critical. Roscommon's Poems, with notes. Lives of the Philosophers, written with a polite air, in such a manner as may divert as well as instruct. History of the Heathen Mythology, with an explication of the fables, both allegorical and historical; with references to the poets. History of the State of Venice, in a compendious manner. Aristotle's Ethics, an English translation of them, with notes. Geographical Dictionary, from the French. Hierocles upon Pythagoras, translated into English, perhaps with notes. This is done by Norris. A book of Letters, upon all kinds of subjects. Claudian, a new edition of his works, *cum notis variorum*, in the manner of Burman. Tully's Tusculan Questions, a translation of them. Tully's De Naturâ Deorum, a translation of those Books. Benzo's New History of the New World, to be translated. Machiavel's History of Florence, to be translated. History of the Revival of Learning in Europe, containing an account of whatever contributed to the restoration of literature; such as controversies, printing, the destruction of the Greek empire, the encouragement of great men, with the lives of the most eminent patrons, and most eminent early professors of all kinds of learning in different countries. A Body of Chronology, in verse, with historical notes. A Table of the Spectators, Tatlers, and Guardians, distinguished by figures into six degrees of value, with notes, giving the reasons of preference or degradation. A Collection of Letters from English authors, with a preface giving some account of the writers; with reasons for selection, and criticism upon styles; remarks on each letter, if needful. A Collection of Proverbs from various languages. Jan. 6, — 53. A Dictionary to the Common Prayer, in imitation of Calmet's Dictionary of the Bible. March, — 52. A Collection of Stories and Examples, like those of Valerius Maximus. Jan. 10, — 53. From Ælian, a volume of select stories, perhaps from others. Jan. 28, — 53. Collection of Travels, Voyages, Adventures, and Descriptions of Countries. Dictionary of Ancient History and Mythology. Treatise on the Study of Polite Literature, containing the history of learning, directions for editions, commentaries, &c. Maxims, Characters, and Sentiments, after the manner of Bruyère, collected out of ancient authors, particularly the Greek with Apophthegms. Classical Miscellanies, Select Translations from ancient Greek and Latin authors. Lives of Illustrious Persons, as well of the active as the learned, in imitation of Plutarch. Judgment of the learned upon English authors. Poetical Dictionary of the English tongue. Considerations upon the present state of London. Collection of Epigrams, with notes and observations. Observations on the English language, relating to words, phrases, and modes of speech. Minutiæ Literariæ, Miscellaneous reflections, criticisms, emendations, notes. History of the Constitution. Comparison of Philosophical and Christian Morality, by sentences collected from the moralists and fathers. Plutarch's Lives, in English, with notes. POETRY and works of IMAGINATION. — Hymn to Ignorance. The Palace of Sloth, — a vision. Coluthus, to be translated. Prejudice, a poetical essay. The Palace of Nonsense, — a vision." Johnson's extraordinary facility of composition, when he shook off his constitutional indolence, and resolutely sat down to write, is admirably described by Mr. Courtenay, in his *Political Review*, which I have several times quoted:

"While through life's maze he sent a piercing view,
His mind expansive to the object grew.
With various stores of erudition fraught,
The lively image, the deep-searching thought,

During his sleepless nights he amused himself by translating into Latin verse, from the Greek, many of the epigrams in the "Anthologia." These translations, with some other poems by him in Latin, he gave to his friend Mr. Langton, who, having

Slept in repose; — but when the moment press'd,
The bright ideas stood at once confess'd;
Instant his genius sped its vigorous rays,
And o'er the letter'd world diffus'd a blaze:
As womb'd with fire the cloud electric flies,
And calmly o'er th' horizon seems to rise:
Touch'd by the pointed steel, the lightning flows,
And all th' expanse with rich effulgence glows."

We shall in vain endeavor to know with exact precision every production of Johnson's pen. He owned to me that he had written about forty sermons; but as I understood that he had given or sold them to different persons, who were to preach them as their own, he did not consider himself at liberty to acknowledge them. Would those who were thus aided by him, who are still alive, and the friends of those who are dead, fairly inform the world, it would be obligingly gratifying a reasonable curiosity, to which there should, I think, now be no objection. Two volumes of them, published since his death, are sufficiently ascertained [see p. 120]. I have before me, in his handwriting, a fragment of twenty quarto leaves of a translation into English of Sallust, *De Bello Catilinario*. When it was done I have no notion; but it seems to have no very superior merit to mark it as his. Besides the publications heretofore mentioned, I am satisfied, from internal evidence, to admit also as genuine the following, which, notwithstanding all my chronological care, escaped me in the course of this work: "Considerations on the Case of Dr. Trapp's Sermons," † published in 1739 [1787], in *The Gentleman's Magazine*. It is a very ingenious defence of the right of *abridging* an author's work, without being held as infringing his property. This is one of the nicest questions in the "Law of Literature;" and I can not help thinking that the indulgence of abridging is often exceedingly injurious to authors and booksellers, and should in very few cases be permitted. At any rate, to prevent difficult and uncertain discussion, and give an absolute security to authors in the property of their labors, no abridgment whatever should be permitted, till after the expiration of such a number of years as the Legislature may be pleased to fix. But, though it has been confidently ascribed to him, I cannot allow that he wrote a Dedication to both Houses of Parliament of a book entitled "The Evangelical History Harmonized." He was no *croaker*; no declaimer against *the times*. He would not have written, "That we are fallen upon an age in which corruption is not barely universal, is universally confessed." Nor, "Rapine preys on the public without opposition, and perjury betrays it without inquiry." Nor would he, to excite a speedy reformation, have conjured up such phantoms of terror as these: "A few years longer, and perhaps all endeavors will be in vain. We may be swallowed by an earthquake: we may be delivered to our enemies." This is not Johnsonian. There are, indeed, in this dedication several sentences constructed upon the model of those of Johnson. But the imitation of the form, without the spirit of his style, has been so general, that this of itself is not sufficient evidence. Even our newspaper writers aspire to it. In an account of the funeral of Edwin, the comedian, in *The Diary* of Nov. 9, 1790, that son of drollery is thus described: "A man who had so often cheered the sullenness of vacancy, and suspended the approaches of sorrow," and in *The Dublin Evening Post*, August 16, 1791, there is the following paragraph: "It is a singular circumstance, that in a city like this, containing 200,000 people, there are three months in the year during which no place of public amusement is open. Long vacation is here a vacation from pleasure, as well as business; nor is there any mode of passing the listless evenings of declining summer, but in the riots of a tavern, or the stupidity of a coffee-house." I have not thought it necessary to specify every copy of verses written by Johnson, it being my intention to publish an authentic edition of all his poetry, with notes. — B.

added a few notes, sold them to the booksellers for a small sum to be given to some of Johnson's relations, which was accordingly done; and they are printed in the collection of his works.

A very erroneous notion has circulated as to Johnson's deficiency in the knowledge of the Greek language, partly owing to the modesty with which, from knowing how much there was to be learnt, he used to mention his own comparative acquisitions. When Mr. Cumberland¹ talked to him of the Greek fragments which are so well illustrated in *The Observer*, and of the Greek dramatists in general, he candidly acknowledged his insufficiency in that particular branch of Greek literature. Yet it may be said, that though not a great, he was a good Greek scholar. Dr. Charles Burney, the younger, who is universally acknowledged by the best judges to be one of the few men of this age who are very eminent for their skill in that noble language, has assured me, that Johnson could give a Greek word for almost every English one; and that although not sufficiently conversant in the niceties of the language, he, upon some occasions discovered, even in these, a considerable degree of critical acumen. Mr. Dalzel, Professor of Greek at Edinburgh, whose skill in it is unquestionable, mentioned to me, in very liberal terms, the impression which was made upon him by Johnson, in a conversation which they had in London concerning that language. As Johnson, therefore, was undoubtedly one of the first Latin scholars in modern times, let us not deny to his fame some additional splendor from Greek.²

I shall now fulfil my promise of exhibiting specimens of various sorts of imitation of Johnson's style.

In the "Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy, 1787," there is an "Essay on the Style of Dr. Samuel Johnson," by the Reverend Robert Burrowes, whose respect for the great object of his criticism³ is thus evinced in the concluding paragraph:

¹ Mr. Cumberland assures me, that he was always treated with great courtesy by Dr. Johnson, who, in his "Letters to Mrs. Thrale," ii. 68, thus speaks of that learned, ingenious, and accomplished gentleman: "The want of company is an inconvenience, but Mr. Cumberland is a million." — B.

² Gifford relates in his "Life of Ford" that discussing this matter with Jacob Bryant he urged that Johnson himself admitted that he was not a good Greek scholar. "Sir," was the answer, "it is not easy for us to say what such a man as Johnson could call a good Greek scholar." — *Croker*. Dr. Hill quotes a characteristic testimonial from Dr. Parr to Charles Burney's scholarship. "There are three great Grecians in England; Porson is the first; Burney is the third; and who is the second I need not tell."

³ We must smile at a little inaccuracy of metaphor in the preface to the Transactions, which is written by Mr. Burrowes. The critic of the style of JOHNSON having, with a just zeal for literature, observed, that the whole nation are called on to exert themselves, afterwards says: "They are called on by every tie which can have a laudable influence on the heart of man." — B.

I have singled him out from the great body of the English writers, because his universally acknowledged beauties would be most apt to induce imitation; and I have treated rather on his faults than his perfections, because an essay might comprise all the observations I could make upon his faults, while volumes would not be sufficient for a treatise on his perfections.

Mr. BURROWES has analyzed the composition of Johnson, and pointed out its peculiarities with much acuteness; and I would recommend a careful perusal of his Essay to those who, being captivated by the union of perspicuity and splendor which the writings of Johnson contain, without having a sufficient portion of his vigor of mind, may be in danger of becoming bad copyists of his manner. I, however, cannot but observe, and I observe it to his credit, that this learned gentleman has himself caught no mean degree of the expansion and harmony, which, independent of all other circumstances, characterize the sentences of Johnson. Thus, in the preface to the volume in which the Essay appears, we find:

If it be said that in societies of this sort, too much attention is frequently bestowed on subjects barren and speculative, it may be answered, that no one science is so little connected with the rest, as not to afford many principles whose use may extend considerably beyond the science to which they primarily belong; and that no proposition is so purely theoretical as to be totally incapable of being applied to practical purposes. There is no apparent connection between duration and the cycloidal arch, the properties of which, duly attended to, have furnished us with our best regulated methods of measuring time: and he who has made himself master of the nature and affections of the logarithmic curve, is not aware that he has advanced considerably towards ascertaining the proportionable density of the air at its various distances from the surface of the earth.

The ludicrous imitators of Johnson's style are innumerable. Their general method is to accumulate hard words, without considering that, although he was fond of introducing them occasionally, there is not a single sentence in all his writings where they are crowded together, as in the first verse of the following imaginary ode by him to Mrs. Thrale,¹ which appeared in the newspapers:

¹ Johnson's wishing to unite himself with this rich widow, was much talked of but I believe without foundation. The report, however, gave occasion to a poem, not without characteristic merit, entitled "Ode to Mrs. Thrale, by Samuel Johnson, LL.D., on their supposed approaching Nuptials:" printed for Mr. Faulder, in Bond Street. I shall quote as a specimen, the first three stanzas.

"If e'er my fingers touch'd the lyre,
In satire fierce, in pleasure gay;
Shall not my THRALIA'S smile inspire?
Shall SAM refuse the sportive lay?

" *Cervisial coctor's viduate dame,
Opins't thou his gigantic fame,
Procumb'g at that shrine;
Shall, calenated by thy charms,
A captive in thy ambient arms,
Perennially be thine?*"

This, and a thousand other such attempts, are totally unlike the original which the writers imagined they were turning into ridicule. There is not similarity enough for burlesque, or even for caricature.

Mr. COLMAN, in his "Prose on several occasions," has "A Letter from LEXIPHANES; containing Proposals for a *Glossary* or *Vocabulary* of the *Vulgar Tongue*: intended as a supplement to a larger DICTIONARY." It is evidently meant as a sportive sally of ridicule on Johnson, whose style is thus imitated, without being grossly overcharged:

It is easy to foresee, that the idle and illiterate will complain that I have increased their labors by endeavoring to diminish them; and that I have explained what is more easy by what is more difficult — *ignotum per ignotius*. I expect, on the other hand, the liberal acknowledgments of the learned. He who is buried in scholastic retirement, secluded from the assemblies of the gay, and remote from the circles of the polite, will at once comprehend the definitions, and be grateful for such a seasonable and necessary elucidation of his mother-tongue. . . . Annexed to this letter is a short specimen¹ of the work, thrown together in a vague and desultory manner, not even adhering to alphabetical concatenation.

" My dearest Lady! view your slave,
Behold him as your very *Scrub*;
Eager to write as author grave,
Or govern well, the brewing-tub.

" To rich felicity thus raised,
My bosom glows with amorous fire,
Porter no longer shall be praised,
'Tis I MYSELF am *Thrul's Entire*." — B.

¹ " *Higledy-piggledy*, — Conglomeration and confusion.

" *Hodge-podge*, — A culinary mixture of heterogeneous ingredients: applied metaphorically to all discordant combinations.

" *Tit-for-Tat*, — Adequate retaliation.

" *Shilly Shally*, — Hesitation and irresolution.

" *Fe! fau! fum!* — Gigantic intonations.

" *Rigmarole*, — Discourse, incoherent and rhapsodical.

" *Crincum crancum*, — Lines of irregularity and involution.

" *Ding-dong*, — Tintinabulary chimes, used metaphorically to signify dispatch and vehemence." — B. On the publication of Boswell's own book the Press teemed with parodies. The best of these was "A Lesson in Biography; or, How to write the Life of one's Friend," by Alexander Chalmers. It was reprinted by Croker in an appendix to his edition, and is one of the best parodies ever written.

The serious imitators of Johnson's style, whether intentionally or by the imperceptible effect of its strength and animation, are, as I have had already occasion to observe, so many, that I might introduce quotations from a numerous body of writers in our language, since he appeared in the literary world. I shall point out the following:

WILLIAM ROBERTSON, D.D.

In other parts of the globe, man, in his rudest state, appears as lord of the creation, giving law to various tribes of animals which he has tamed and reduced to subjection. The Tartar follows his prey on the horse which he has reared, or tends his numerous herds which furnish him both with food and clothing: the Arab has rendered the camel docile, and avails himself of its persevering strength; the Laplander has formed the rein-deer to be subservient to his will; and even the people of Kamschatka have trained their dogs to labor. This command over the inferior creatures is one of the noblest prerogatives of man, and among the greatest efforts of his wisdom and power. Without this, his dominion is incomplete. He is a monarch who has no subjects; a master without servants; and must perform every operation by the strength of his own arm. ("History of America," i. 332.)

EDWARD GIBBON, ESQ.

Of all our passions and appetites, the love of power is of the most impetuous and unsociable nature, since the pride of one man requires the submission of the multitude. In the tumult of civil discord the laws of society lose their force, and their place is seldom supplied by those of humanity. The ardor of contention, the pride of victory, the despair of success, the memory of past injuries, and the tear of future dangers, all contribute to inflame the mind and to silence the voice of pity. ("Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire," i., ch. 4.)

MISS BURNEY.

My family, mistaking ambition for honor, and rank for dignity, have long planned a splendid connection for me, to which, though my invariable repugnance has stopped any advances, their wishes and their views immovably adhere. I am but too certain they will now listen to no other. I dread, therefore, to make a trial where I despair of success; I know not how to risk a prayer with those who may silence me by a command. ("Cecilia," bk. vii. ch. i. [v.])¹

REVEREND MR. NARES.²

In an enlightened and improving age, much perhaps is not to be apprehended from the inroads of mere caprice; at such a period it will generally be per-

¹ See Macaulay's essay on the "Diary and Letters of Madame D'Arblay" for her imitations of Johnson's style.

² The passage which I quote is taken from that gentleman's "Elements of Oratory; containing a distinct View of the whole Analogy of the English Language, so far as relates to Pronunciation, Accent, and Quantity," London, 1784. I beg leave to offer my particular acknowledgments to the author of a work of uncommon merit and great utility. I know no book which contains, in the same compass, more learning, polite literature, sound sense, accuracy of arrangement, and perspicuity of expression. — B.

ceived, that needless irregularity is the worst of all deformities, and that nothing is so truly elegant in language as the simplicity of unviolated analogy. Rules will, therefore, be observed, so far as they are known and acknowledged: but, at the same time, the desire of improvement having been once excited will not remain inactive; and its efforts, unless assisted by knowledge, as much as they are prompted by zeal, will not unfrequently be found pernicious; so that the very persons whose intention it is to perfect the instrument of reason, will deprave and disorder it unknowingly. At such a time, then, it becomes peculiarly necessary that the analogy of language should be fully examined and understood; that its rules should be carefully laid down; and that it should be clearly known how much it contains, which being already right should be defended from change and violation; how much it has that demands amendment: and how much that, for fear of greater inconveniences, must, perhaps, be left, unaltered, though irregular.

A distinguished author in *The Mirror*,¹ a periodical paper published at Edinburgh, has imitated Johnson very closely. Thus in No. 16:

The effects of the return of spring have been frequently remarked as well in relation to the human mind as to the animal and vegetable world. The reviving power of this season has been traced from the fields to the herds that inhabit them, and from the lower classes of beings up to man. Gladness and joy are described as prevailing through universal Nature, animating the low of the cattle, the carol of the birds, and the pipe of the shepherd.

The Reverend Dr. Knox,² master of Tunbridge School, appears to have the *imitari aucto*³ of Johnson's style perpetually in his mind; and to his assiduous, though not servile, study of it, we may partly ascribe the extensive popularity of his writings.⁴

¹ That collection was presented to Dr. Johnson, I believe by its authors; and I heard him speak very well of it. — B. *The Mirror* was published in 1779–80. By 1793 it reached its ninth edition. Henry Mackenzie, author of the "Man of Feeling," was conductor and chief contributor. — *Dr. Hill*.

² As late as 1824 the works of the Rev. Vicesimus Knox were published in seven octavo volumes. His essays were translated into most European languages. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ Lucretius, iii. 6.

⁴ It were to be wished, that he had imitated that great man in every respect, and had not followed the example of Dr. Adam Smith, in ungraciously attacking his venerable *Alma Mater*, Oxford. It must, however, be observed, that he is much less to blame than Smith: he only objects to certain particulars; Smith to the whole institution, though indebted for much of his learning to an exhibition which he enjoyed for many years at Balliol College. Neither of them, however, will do any hurt to the noblest university in the world. While I animadvert on what appears to me exceptionable in some of the works of Dr. Knox, I cannot refuse due praise to others of his productions; particularly his sermons, and to the spirit with which he maintains, against presumptuous heretics, the consolatory doctrines peculiar to the Christian Revelation. This he has done in a manner equally strenuous and conciliating. Neither ought I to omit mentioning a remarkable instance of his candor notwithstanding the wide difference of our opinions upon the important subject of University education, in a letter to me concerning this work, he thus ex-



ADAM SMITH.

In his "Essays, Moral and Literary," No. 3, we find the following passage: "The polish of external grace may indeed be deferred till the approach of manhood. When solidity is obtained by pursuing the modes prescribed by our forefathers, then may the file be used. The firm substance will bear attrition, and the lustre then acquired will be durable."

There is, however, one in No. 11, which is blown up into such tumidity as to be truly ludicrous. The writer means to tell us that Members of Parliament, who have run in debt by extravagance, will sell their votes to avoid an arrest,¹ which he thus expresses: "They who build houses and collect costly pictures and furnitures, with the money of an honest artisan or mechanic, will be very glad of emancipation from the hands of a bailiff by a sale of their senatorial suffrage."

But I think the most perfect imitation of Johnson is a professed one, entitled "A [continuation of Dr. J——n's] Criticism on [the Poems of Gray] Gray's 'Elegy in a Country Churchyard,'" said to be written by Mr. YOUNG, Professor of Greek at Glasgow, and of which let him have the credit, unless a better title can be shown. It has not only the particularities of Johnson's style, but that very species of literary discussion and illustration for which he was eminent. Having already quoted so much from others, I shall refer the curious to this performance, with an assurance of much entertainment.²

Yet whatever merit there may be in any imitations of Johnson's style, every good judge must see that they are obviously different from the original; for all of them are either deficient in its force, or overloaded with its peculiarities; and the powerful sentiment to which it is suited is not to be found.

Johnson's affection for his departed relations seemed to grow warmer as he approached nearer to the time when he might hope to see them again. It probably appeared to him that he should upbraid himself with unkind inattention, were he to leave the world without having paid a tribute of respect to their memory.

presses himself: "I thank you for the very great entertainment your 'Life of Johnson' gives me. It is a most valuable work. Yours is a new species of biography. Happy for Johnson that he had so able a recorder of his wit and wisdom." — B.

¹ Dr. Knox, in his "Moral and Literary" abstraction, may be excused for not knowing the political regulations of his country. No senator can be in the hands of a bailiff. — B.

² According to Dr. Hill Sir Walter Scott ("Croker Papers," ii. 34) would seem to be alone in sharing Boswell's opinion of this imitation. Everybody else, from Horace Walpole to Croker, could make nothing of it.

TO MR. GREEN, APOTHECARY, AT LICHFIELD.

DEAR SIR: I have enclosed the epitaph¹ for my father, mother, and brother, to be all engraved on the large size, and laid in the middle aisle in St. Michael's church, which I request the clergyman and churchwardens to permit.

The first care must be to find the exact place of interment, that the stone may protect the bodies. Then let the stone be deep, massy, and hard; and do not let the difference of ten pounds, or more, defeat our purpose.

I have enclosed ten pounds, and Mrs. Porter will pay you ten more, which I gave her for the same purpose. What more is wanted shall be sent; and I beg that all possible haste may be made, for I wish to have it done while I am yet alive. Let me know, dear Sir, that you receive this. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.²

DEC. 2, 1784.

TO MRS. LUCY PORTER, IN LICHFIELD.³

DEAR MADAM: I am very ill, and desire your prayers. I have sent Mr. Green the epitaph, and a power to call on you for ten pounds.

I laid this summer a stone over Tetty, in the chapel of Bromley, in Kent. The inscription is in Latin, of which this is the English. [Here a translation.]

That this is done, I thought it fit that you should know. What care will be taken of us, who can tell? May GOD pardon and bless us all, for JESUS CHRIST's sake. I am, &c.

SAM. JOHNSON.

DEC. 2, 1784.

¹ H. S. E.

MICHAEL JOHNSON.

Vir impavidus, constans, animosus, periculorum immemor, laborum patientissimus; fiducia christiana fortis fervidusque; paterfamilias apprime strenuus; bibliopola admodum peritus; mente et libris et negotiis exulta; animo ita firmo, ut, rebus adversis diu conflictatus, nec sibi nec suis defuerit; lingua sic temperata, ut ei nihil quod aures vel pias, vel castas læsisset, aut dolor, vel voluptas unquam expresserit.

NATUS CUBLIÆ IN AGRO DERBIENSI

ANNO MDCLVI

OBIIIT MDCCXXXI

Apposita est SARA conjux.

Antiqua FORDORUM gente oriunda; quam domi sedulam, foris paucis notam; nulli molestam, mentis acumine et judicii subtilitate præcellentem; aliis multum, sibi parum indulgentem; æternitati semper attentam; omne fere virtutis nomen commendavit.

NATA NORTONIAE REGIS, IN AGRO VARVICENSI, ANNO MDCLXIX.

OBIIIT MDCCCLX

Cum NATHANAELE, illorum filio, qui natus MDCCXII cum vires et animi et corporis multa pollicerentur, anno MDCCXXXVII, vitam brevem pia morti finivit.

² It was not done, Dr. Harwood tells us ("Hist. of Lichfield"), till after Johnson's death. When the church was re-paved in 1796, the stone was removed and could never again be found. — *Croker*. A fresh one, with the same inscriptions was placed in the church on the hundredth anniversary of Johnson's death by Mr. Robert Thorp of Buxton Road House, Macclesfield. — *Dr. Hill*.

³ This lady, whose name so frequently occurs in the course of this work, survived Dr. Johnson just thirteen months. She died at Lichfield, in her 71st year, January 13, 1786. — *Malone*.

My readers are now, at last, to behold SAMUEL JOHNSON preparing himself for that doom, from which the most exalted powers afford no exemption to man. Death had always been to him an object of terror; so that, though by no means happy, he still clung to life with an eagerness at which many have wondered. At any time when he was ill, he was very much pleased to be told that he looked better. An ingenious member of the *Eumelian Club*¹ informs me, that upon one occasion, when he said to him that he saw health returning to his cheek, Johnson seized him by the hand and exclaimed, "Sir, you are one of the kindest friends I ever had."

His own state of his views of futurity will appear truly rational; and may, perhaps, impress the unthinking with seriousness.

"You know," says he, "I never thought confidence with respect to futurity, any part of the character of a brave, a wise, or a good man. Bravery has no place where it can avail nothing; wisdom impresses strongly the consciousness of those faults, of which it is, perhaps, itself an aggravation; and goodness, always wishing to be better, and imputing every deficiency to criminal negligence, and every fault to voluntary corruption, never dares to suppose the condition of forgiveness fulfilled, nor what is wanting in the crimes supplied by penitence.

This is the state of the best; but what must be the condition of him whose heart will not suffer him to rank himself among the best, or among the good? Such must be his dread of the approaching trial, as will leave him little attention to the opinion of those whom he is leaving for ever; and the serenity that is not felt, it can be no virtue to feign. (Mrs. Thrale's Collection, Vol. ii., p. 350.)

His great fear of death, and the strange dark manner in which Sir John Hawkins imparts the uneasiness which he expressed on account of offences with which he charged himself, may give occasion to injurious suspicions, as if there had been something of more than ordinary criminality weighing upon his conscience. On that account, therefore, as well as from the regard to truth which he inculcated (*ante*, p. 329), I am to mention (with all possible respect and delicacy, however), that his conduct, after he came to London, and had associated with Savage and others, was not so strictly virtuous, in one respect, as when he was a younger man. It was well known that his amorous inclinations were uncommonly strong and impetuous. He owned to many of his friends,

¹ A club in London, founded by the learned and ingenious physician, Dr. Ash, in honor of whose name it was called *Eumelian*, from the Greek *Εὐμελίας*: though it was warmly contended, and even put to a vote, that it should have the more obvious appellation of *Fraxinean*, from the Latin.—B. *Εὐμελίας* means "armed with ash spear."

that he used to take women of the town to taverns, and hear them relate their history. In short, it must not be concealed, that, like many other good and pious men, among whom we may place the apostle Paul upon his own authority, Johnson was not free from propensities which were ever "warring against the law of his mind," — and that in his combats with them, he was sometimes overcome.

Here let the profane and licentious pause ; let them not thoughtlessly say that Johnson was an *hypocrite*, or that his *principles* were not firm, because his *practice* was not uniformly conformable to what he professed.

Let the question be considered independent of moral and religious associations ; and no man will deny that thousands, in many instances, act against conviction. Is a prodigal, for example, an *hypocrite*, when he owns he is satisfied that his extravagance will bring him to ruin and misery? We are *sure* he *believes* it ; but immediate inclination, strengthened by indulgence, prevails over that belief in influencing his conduct. Why then shall credit be refused to the *sincerity* of those who acknowledge their persuasion of moral and religious duty, yet sometimes fail of living as it requires? I heard Dr. Johnson once observe, "There is something noble in publishing truth, though it condemns one's self." ¹ And one who said in his presence, "he had no notion of people being in earnest in their good professions, whose practice was not suitable to them," was thus reprimanded by him : "Sir, are you so grossly ignorant of human nature as not to know that a man may be very sincere in good principles, without having good practice?"

But let no man encourage or soothe himself in "presumptuous sin," ² from knowing that Johnson was sometimes hurried into indulgences which he thought criminal. I have exhibited this circumstance as a shade in so great a character, both from my sacred love of truth, and to show that he was not so weakly scrupulous as he had been represented by those who imagine that the sins, of which a deep sense was upon his mind, were merely such little venial trifles as pouring milk into his tea on Good Friday. His understanding will be defended by my state-

¹ "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides," 3d edit. p. 209. On the same subject, in his letter to Mrs. Thrale, dated Nov. 29, 1783, he makes the following just observation : "Life, to be worthy of a rational being, must be always in progression ; we must always purpose to do more or better than in time past. The mind is enlarged and elevated by mere purposes, though they end as they began, by airy contemplation. We compare and judge, though we do not practise." — B.

² Psalms xix. 13.

ment, if his consistency of conduct be in some degree impaired. But what wise man would, for momentary gratifications, deliberately subject himself to suffer such uneasiness as we find was experienced by Johnson in reviewing his conduct as compared with his notion of the ethics of the Gospel? Let the following passages be kept in remembrance :

O GOD, giver and preserver of all life, by whose power I was created, and by whose providence I am sustained, look down upon me with tenderness and mercy; grant that I may not have been created to be finally destroyed; that I may not be preserved to add wickedness to wickedness. "Prayers and Meditations," p. 47. — O LORD, let me not sink into total depravity; look down upon me, and rescue me at last from the captivity of sin. *Ibid.*, p. 68. — Almighty and most merciful Father, who hast continued my life from year to year, grant that by longer life I may become less desirous of sinful pleasures, and more careful of eternal happiness. *Ibid.*, p. 84. — Let not my years be multiplied to increase my guilt; but as my age advances, let me become more pure in my thoughts, more regular in my desires, and more obedient to thy laws. *Ibid.*, p. 120. — Forgive, O merciful LORD, whatever I have done contrary to thy laws. Give me such a sense of my wickedness as may produce true contrition and effectual repentance; so that when I shall be called into another state, I may be received among the sinners to whom sorrow and reformation have obtained pardon, for JESUS CHRIST'S sake. Amen. *Ibid.*, p. 130.

Such was the distress of mind, such the penitence of Johnson, in his hours of privacy, and in his devout approaches to his Maker. His *sincerity*, therefore, must appear to every candid mind unquestionable.

It is of essential consequence to keep in view, that there was in this excellent man's conduct, no false principle of *commutation*, no *deliberate* indulgence in sin, in consideration of a counterbalance of duty. His offending, and his repenting, were distinct and separate:¹ and when we consider his almost unexampled attention to truth, his inflexible integrity, his constant piety, who will dare to "cast a stone at him"? Besides, let it never be forgotten, that he cannot be charged with any offence indicating badness of *heart*, anything dishonest, base, or malignant; but that, on the contrary, he was charitable in an extraordinary degree; so that even in one of his own rigid judgments of himself (Easter-eve, 1781), while he says, "I have corrected no external habits;" he is obliged to own, "I hope that since my last communion I

¹ Dr. Johnson related with very earnest approbation, a story of a gentleman who, in an impulse of passion, overcame the virtue of a young woman. When she said to him, "I am afraid we have done wrong!" he answered, "Yes, we have done wrong; for I would not *debauch her mind*." — B.

have advanced by pious reflections, in my submission to God, and my benevolence to man." "Prayers and Meditations," p. 192.

I am conscious that this is the most difficult and dangerous part of my biographical work, and I cannot but be very anxious concerning it. I trust that I have got through it, preserving at once my regard to truth, — to my friend, — and to the interests of virtue and religion. Nor can I apprehend that more harm can ensue from the knowledge of the irregularities of Johnson, guarded as I have stated it, than from knowing that Addison and Parnell were intemperate in the use of wine; which he himself, in his Lives of those celebrated writers and pious men, has not forbore to record.¹

It is not my intention to give a very minute detail of the particulars of Johnson's remaining days, of whom it is now evident, that the crisis was fast approaching, when he must "*die like men, and fall like one of the princes.*" Yet it will be instructive, as well as gratifying to the curiosity of my readers, to record a few circumstances, on the authenticity of which they may perfectly rely, as I have been at the utmost pains to obtain an accurate account of his last illness from the best authority.

Dr. Heberden, Dr. Brocklesby, Dr. Warren, and Dr. Butter, physicians, generously attended him without accepting any fees, as did Mr. Cruikshank, surgeon; and all that could be done from professional skill and ability was tried, to prolong a life so truly valuable. He himself, indeed, having, on account of his very bad constitution, been perpetually applying himself to medical inquiries, united his own efforts with those of the gentlemen who attended him; and imagining that the dropsical collection of water which oppressed him might be drawn off by making incisions in his body, he, with his usual resolute defiance of pain, cut deep, when he thought that his surgeon had done it too tenderly.²

About eight or ten days before his death, when Dr. Brocklesby paid him his morning visit, he seemed very low and desponding,

¹ For the probable reasons of Boswell's curious performance of this "most difficult and dangerous part of my biographical work," see a letter from Croker to Brougham, "Croker Papers," iii. 24.

² This bold experiment Sir John Hawkins has related in such a manner as to suggest a charge against Johnson of intentionally hastening his end; a charge so very inconsistent with his character in every respect, that it is injurious even to refute it, as Sir John has thought it necessary to do. It is evident, that what Johnson did in hopes of relief, indicated an extraordinary eagerness to retard his dissolution. — B.

and said, "I have been as a dying man all night." He then emphatically broke out in the words of Shakespeare,—

"Canst thou not minister to a mind diseas'd;
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow;
Raze out the written troubles of the brain;
And, with some sweet oblivious antidote,
Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff
Which weighs upon the heart?"

To which Dr. Brocklesby readily answered, from the same great poet:

". . . therein the patient
Must minister to himself."¹

Johnson expressed himself much satisfied with the application.

On another day, after this, when talking on the subject of prayer, Dr. Brocklesby repeated from Juvenal,

"Orandum est, ut sit mens sana in corpore sano,"²

and so on to the end of the tenth satire; but in running it quickly over, he happened, in the line,

"Qui spatium vitæ extremum inter munera ponat,"

to pronounce *supremum* for *extremum*; at which Johnson's critical ear instantly took offence, and discoursing vehemently on the unmetrical effect of such a lapse, he showed himself as full as ever of the spirit of the grammarian.

Having no other relations, it had been for some time Johnson's intention to make a liberal provision for his faithful servant Mr. Francis Barber, whom he looked upon as particularly under his protection, and whom he had all along treated truly as a humble friend. Having asked Dr. Brocklesby what would be a proper annuity to a favorite servant, and being answered that it must depend on the circumstances of the master; and, that in the case of a nobleman, fifty pounds a year was considered as an adequate reward for many years' faithful service; "Then," said Johnson, "shall I be *nobilissimus*, for I mean to leave Frank seventy pounds a year, and I desire you to tell him so." It is strange, however, to think, that Johnson was not free from that

¹ "Macbeth," Act v. sc. 3.

² "Satires," x. 356.

general weakness of being averse to execute a will, so that he delayed it from time to time; and had it not been for Sir John Hawkins's repeatedly urging it, I think it is probable that his kind resolution would not have been fulfilled. After making one, which, as Sir John Hawkins informs us, extended no further than the promised annuity, Johnson's final disposition of his property was established by a will and codicil, of which copies are subjoined.¹

¹"IN THE NAME OF GOD. AMEN. I, SAMUEL JOHNSON, being in full possession of my faculties, but fearing this night may put an end to my life, do ordain this my last will and testament. I bequeath to GOD, a soul polluted by many sins, but I hope purified by JESUS CHRIST. I leave seven hundred and fifty pounds in the hands of Bennet Langton, Esq.; three hundred pounds in the hands of Mr. Barclay and Mr. Perkins, brewers; one hundred and fifty pounds in the hands of Dr. Percy, Bishop of Dromore; one thousand pounds, three *per cent.* annuities in the public funds; and one hundred pounds now lying by me in ready money: all these before-mentioned sums and property I leave, I say, to Sir Joshua Reynolds, Sir John Hawkins, and Dr. William Scott, of Doctors Commons, in trust, for the following uses: That is to say, to pay to the representatives of the late William Innys, bookseller, in St. Paul's Churchyard, the sum of two hundred pounds; to Mrs. White, my female servant, one hundred pounds stock in the three *per cent.* annuities aforesaid. The rest of the aforesaid sums of money and property, together with my books, plate, and household furniture, I leave to the before-mentioned Sir Joshua Reynolds, Sir John Hawkins, and Dr. William Scott, also in trust, to be applied, after paying my debts, to the use of Francis Barber, my manservant, a negro, in such manner as they shall judge most fit and available to his benefit. And I appoint the aforesaid Sir Joshua Reynolds, Sir John Hawkins, and Dr. William Scott, sole executors of this my last will and testament, hereby revoking all former wills and testaments whatever. In witness whereof, I hereunto subscribe my name, and affix my seal, this eighth day of December, 1784. SAM. JOHNSON (L.S.). Signed, sealed, published, declared and delivered, by the said testator, as his last will and testament, in the presence of us, the word *two* being first inserted in the opposite page. GEORGE STRAHAN, JOHN DESMOULINS. By way of codicil to my last will and testament, I, SAMUEL JOHNSON, give, devise, and bequeath, my message or tenement situate at Lichfield, in the county of Stafford, with the appurtenances in the tenure and occupation of Mrs. Bond, of Lichfield aforesaid, or of Mr. Hinchman, her under-tenant, to my executors in trust, to sell and dispose of the same; and the money arising from such sale I give and bequeath as follows, viz.: To Thomas and Benjamin, the sons of Fisher Johnson, late of Leicester, and ——— Whiting, daughter of Thomas Johnson, late of Coventry, and the granddaughter of the said Thomas Johnson, one full and equal fourth-part each; but in case there shall be more granddaughters than one of the said Thomas Johnson, living at the time of my decease, I give and bequeath the part or share of that one to and equally between such granddaughters. I give and bequeath to the Rev. Mr. Rogers, of Berkley, near Froom, in the county of Somerset, the sum of one hundred pounds, requesting him to apply the same towards the maintenance of Elizabeth Herne, a lunatic. I also give and bequeath to my god-children, the son and daughter of Mauritius Lowe, painter, each of them one hundred pounds of my stock in the three *per cent.* consolidated annuities, to be applied and disposed of by and at the discretion of my executors, in the education or settlement in the world of them my said legatees. Also I give and bequeath to Sir John Hawkins, one of my executors, the "Annales Ecclesiastici" of Baronius, and Hollinshed's and Stowe's Chronicles, and also an octavo Common Prayer-Book. To Bennet Langton, Esq., I give and bequeath my Polyglot Bible. To Sir Joshua Reynolds, my great French Dictionary, by Martinière, and my own copy of my folio English Dictionary of the last revision. To Dr. William Scott, one of my

The consideration of numerous papers of which he was possessed, seems to have struck Johnson's mind with a sudden anxiety, and as they were in great confusion, it is much to be lamented that he had not intrusted some faithful and discreet person with the care and selection of them ; instead of which, he, in a precipitate manner, burnt large masses of them, with little regard, as I apprehend, to discrimination. Not that I suppose we have thus been deprived of any compositions which he had ever

executors, the "Dictionnaire de Commerce," and Lectius's edition of the Greek Poets. To Mr. Windham, "Poetæ Græci Heroici per Henricum Stephanum." To the Rev. Mr. Strahan, vicar of Islington, in Middlesex, Mill's Greek Testament, Beza's Greek Testament, by Stephens, all my Latin Bibles, and my Greek Bible by Wechelius. To Dr. Heberden, Dr. Brocklesby, Dr. Butter, and Mr. Cruikshank, the surgeon who attended me, Mr. Holder, my apothecary, Gerard Hamilton, Esq., Mrs. Gardiner, of Snow-hill, Mrs. Frances Reynolds, Mr. Hoole, and the Reverend Mr. Hoole, his son, each a book at their election, to keep as a token of remembrance. I also give and bequeath to Mr. John Desmoulins, two hundred pounds consolidated three *per cent.* annuities : and to Mr. Sastres, the Italian master, the sum of five pounds, to be laid out in books of piety for his own use. And whereas the said Bennet Langton hath agreed in consideration of the sum of seven hundred and fifty pounds, mentioned in my will to be in his hands, to grant and secure an annuity of seventy pounds payable during the life of me and my servant, Francis Barber, and the life of the survivor of us, to Mr. George Stubbs, in trust for us ; my mind and will is, that in case of my decease before the said agreement shall be perfected, the said sum of seven hundred and fifty pounds, and the bond for securing the said sum, shall go to the said Francis Barber ; and I hereby give and bequeath to him the same, in lieu of the bequest in his favor, contained in my said will. And I hereby empower my executors to deduct and retain all expenses that shall or may be incurred in the execution of my said will, or of this codicil thereto, out of such estate and effects as I shall die possessed of. All the rest, residue and remainder of my estate and effects I give and bequeath to my said executors, in trust for the said Francis Barber, his executors, and administrators. Witness my hand and seal, this ninth day of December, 1784. SAM. JOHNSON (L. S.). Signed, sealed, published, declared, and delivered, by the said Samuel Johnson, as, and for a codicil to his last will and testament, in the presence of us, who, in his presence, and at his request, and also in the presence of each other, have hereto subscribed our names as witnesses. JOHN COPELY, WILLIAM GIBSON, HENRY COLE."

Upon these testamentary deeds it is proper to make a few observations.

His express declaration with his dying breath as a Christian, as it had been often practised in such solemn writings, was of real consequence from this great man, for the conviction of a mind equally acute and strong might well overbalance the doubts of others, who were his contemporaries. The expression *polluted*, may, to some, convey an impression of more than ordinary contamination ; but that is not warranted by its genuine meaning, as appears from *The Rambler*, No. 42. The same word is used in the will of Dr. Sanderson, Bishop of Lincoln, who was piety itself.

His legacy of two hundred pounds to the representatives of Mr. Innys, bookseller, in St. Paul's Churchyard, proceeded from a very worthy motive. He told Sir John Hawkins, that his father having become a bankrupt, Mr. Innys had assisted him with money or credit to continue his business. "This," said he, "I consider as an obligation on me to be grateful to his descendants."

The amount of his property proved to be considerably more than he had supposed it to be. Sir John Hawkins estimates the bequest to Francis Barber at a sum little short of fifteen hundred pounds, including an annuity of seventy pounds to be paid to him by Mr. Langton, in consideration of seven hundred and fifty pounds, which Johnson had lent to that gentleman. Sir John seems not a little

intended for the public eye; but from what escaped the flames I judge that many curious circumstances, relating both to himself and other literary characters, have perished.

Two very valuable articles, I am sure, we have lost, which were two quarto volumes, containing a full, fair, and most particular account of his own life, from his earliest recollection. I owned to him, that having accidentally seen them, I had read a great deal in them; and apologizing for the liberty I had taken, asked him if I could help it. He placidly answered, "Why, Sir, I do not think you could have helped it." I said that I had, for once in my life, felt half an inclination to commit theft. It had come into my mind to carry off those two volumes, and never see him more. Upon my inquiring how this would have affected him, "Sir," said he, "I believe I should have gone mad."¹

angry at this bequest, and mutters "a caveat against ostentatious bounty and favor to negroes." But surely when a man has money entirely of his own acquisition, especially when he has no near relations; he may, without blame, dispose of it as he pleases, and with great propriety to a faithful servant. Mr. Barber, by the recommendation of his master, retired to Lichfield, where he might pass the rest of his days in comfort.

It has been objected that Johnson has omitted many of his best friends when leaving books to several as tokens of his last remembrance. The names of Dr. Adams, Dr. Taylor, Dr. Burney, Mr. Hector, Mr. Murphy, the author of this work, and others who were intimate with him, are not to be found in his will. This may be accounted for by considering, that as he was very near his dissolution at the time, he probably mentioned such as happened to occur to him; and that he may have recollected that he had formerly shown others such proofs of his regard, that it was not necessary to crowd his will with their names. Mrs. Lucy Porter was much displeased that nothing was left to her: but besides what I have now stated, she should have considered that she had left nothing to Johnson by her will, which was made during his lifetime, as appeared at her decease.

His enumerating several persons in one group, and leaving them each a book at their election, might possibly have given occasion to a curious question as to the order of choice, had they not luckily fixed on different books. His library, though by no means handsome in its appearance, was sold by Mr. Christie, for two hundred and forty-seven pounds, nine shillings; many people being desirous to have a book which had belonged to Johnson. In many of them he had written little notes: sometimes tender memorials of his departed wife; as, "This was dear Tetty's book;" sometimes occasional remarks of different sorts. Mrs. Lyons, of Clifford's Inn, has favored me with the two following: In "Holy Rules and Helps to Devotions," by Bryan Duppa, Lord Bishop of Winton. "*Preces quidam videtur diligenter tractasse; spero non inauditus.*" In "The Rosicrucian Infalible Axiomata," by John Heydon, Gent., prefixed to which are some verses addressed to the author, signed Ambr. Waters, A.M. Coll. Ex. Oxon. "*These Latin verses were written to Hobbes by Bathurst, upon his Treatise on Human Nature, and have no relation to the book. An odd fraud.*" — B.

¹ One of these volumes, Sir John Hawkins informs us, he put into his pocket; for which the excuse he states is that he meant to preserve it from falling into the hands of a person whom he describes so as to make it sufficiently clear who is meant; "having strong reasons," said he, "to suspect that this man might find and make an ill use of the book." Why Sir John should suppose that the gentleman alluded to would act in this manner, he has not thought fit to explain. But what he did was not approved of by Johnson; who, upon being acquainted of it without

During his last illness, Johnson experienced the steady and kind attachment of his numerous friends. Mr. Hoole has drawn up a narrative of what passed in the visits which he paid him during that time from the 10th of November to the 13th of December, the day of his death, inclusive, and has favored me with a perusal of it, with permission to make extracts, which I have done. Nobody was more attentive to him than Mr. Langton, to whom he tenderly said, *Te teneam moriens deficiente manu.*¹ And I think it highly to the honor of Mr. Windham, that his important occupations as an active statesman did not prevent him from paying assiduous respect to the dying Sage whom he revered. Mr. Langton informs me that: "One day he found Mr. Burke and four or five more friends sitting with Johnson. Mr. Burke said to him, 'I am afraid, Sir, such a number of us may be oppressive to you.'—'No, Sir,' said Johnson, 'it is not so; and I must be in a wretched state, indeed, when your company would not be a delight to me.' Mr. Burke, in a tremulous voice, expressive of being very tenderly affected, replied, 'My dear Sir, you have always been too good to me.' Immediately afterwards he went away. This was the last circumstance in the acquaintance of these two eminent men."

The following particulars of his conversation within a few days of his death, I give on the authority of Mr. John Nichols:²

delay by a friend, expressed great indignation, and warmly insisted on the book being delivered up; and, afterwards, in the supposition of his missing it, without knowing by whom it had been taken, he said, "Sir, I should have gone out of the world distrusting half mankind." Sir John next day wrote a letter to Johnson, assigning reasons for his conduct; upon which Johnson observed to Mr. Langton, "Bishop Sanderson could not have dictated a better letter. I could almost say, *Melius est sic pœnituisse quam non errasse.*" The agitation into which Johnson was thrown by this incident, probably made him hastily burn those precious records which must ever be regretted.—B. According to Croker, George Steevens was the man whom Hawkins suspected.

¹ Tibullus (to Cynthia), Lib. I., El. 1. 73.

² On the same undoubted authority I give a few articles, which should have been inserted in chronological order; but which, now that they are before me, I should be sorry to omit:

"In 1736, Dr. Johnson had a particular inclination to have been engaged as an assistant to the Reverend Mr. Budworth, then head master of the Grammar-school at Brewood, in Staffordshire, 'an excellent person, who possessed every talent of a perfect instructor of youth, in a degree which (to use the words of one of the brightest ornaments of literature, the Reverend Dr. Hurd, Bishop of Worcester) has been rarely found in any of that profession since the days of Quintilian.' Mr. Budworth, 'who was less known in his lifetime, from that obscure situation to which the caprice of fortune oft condemns the most accomplished characters, than his highest merit deserved,' had been bred under Mr. Brackwell, at Market Bosworth, where Johnson was some time an usher; which might naturally lead to the application. Mr. Budworth was certainly no stranger to the learning or abilities of Johnson, as

He said, that the Parliamentary Debates were the only part of his writings which then gave him any compunction: but that at the time he wrote them, he had no conception he was imposing upon the world, though they were frequently written from very slender materials, and often from none at all, — the mere coinage of his own imagination. He never wrote any part of his works with equal velocity. Three columns of the Magazine in an hour was no uncommon effort, which was faster than most persons could have transcribed that quantity.

Of his friend Cave, he always spoke with great affection. "Yet," said he, "Cave (who never looked out of his window, but with a view to the *Gentleman's Magazine*) was a penurious paymaster; he would contract for lines by the hundred, and expect the long hundred; but he was a good man, and always delighted to have his friends at his table."

When talking of a regular edition of his own works, he said, that he had power [from the booksellers] to print such an edition if his health admitted it; but had no power to assign over any edition, unless he could add notes and so alter them as to make them new works; which his state of health forbade him to think of. "I may possibly live," said he, "or rather breathe, three days, or perhaps three weeks; but find myself daily and gradually weaker."

He said at another time, three or four days only before his death, speaking of the little fear he had of undergoing a surgical operation, "I would give one of these legs for a year more of life, I mean of comfortable life, not such as that which I now suffer;" and lamented much his inability to read during

he more than once lamented his having been under the necessity of declining the engagement from an apprehension that the paralytic affection, under which our great Philologist labored through life, might become the object of imitation or of ridicule among his pupils." Captain Budworth, his grandson, has confirmed to me this anecdote.

"Among the early associates of Johnson, at St. John's Gate, was Samuel Boyse, well known by his ingenious productions; and not less noted for his imprudence. It was not unusual for Boyse to be a customer to the pawnbroker. On one of these occasions, Dr. Johnson collected a sum of money to redeem his friend's clothes, which in two days after were pawned again. 'The sum,' said Johnson, 'was collected by sixpence, at a time when to me sixpence was a serious consideration.'"

"Speaking one day of a person for whom he had a real friendship, but in whom vanity was somewhat too predominant, he observed that 'Kelly [the playwright] was so fond of displaying on his sideboard the plate which he possessed, that he added to it his spurs. For my part,' said he, 'I never was master of a pair of spurs, but once; and they are now at the bottom of the ocean. By the carelessness of Boswell's servant, they were dropped from the end of the boat, on our return from the Isle of Sky.'"

The late Reverend Mr. Samuel Badcock, having been introduced to Dr. Johnson, by Mr. Nichols, some years before his death, thus expressed himself in a letter to that gentleman:

"How much I am obliged to you for the favor you did me in introducing me to Dr. Johnson! *Tantum vidi Virgilium*. But to have seen him and to have received a testimony of respect from him, was enough. I recollect all the conversation, and shall never forget one of his expressions. Speaking of Dr. [Priestly] (whose writings, I saw, he estimated at a low rate), he said, 'You have proved him as deficient in *probity* as he is in learning.' I called him an '*Index-scholar*;' but he was not willing to allow him a claim even to that merit. He said, 'that he borrowed from those who had been borrowers themselves, and did not know that the mistakes he adopted had been answered by others.' I often think of our short, but precious, visit to this great man. I shall consider it as a kind of an *era* in my life." — B.

his hours of restlessness. "I used formerly," he added, "when sleepless in bed, *to read like a Turk.*"

Whilst confined by his last illness, it was his regular practice to have the church service read to him by some attentive and friendly divine. The Rev. Mr. Hoole performed this kind office in my presence for the last time, when, by his own desire, no more than the litany was read; in which his responses were in the deep and sonorous voice which Mr. Boswell has occasionally noticed, and with the most profound devotion that can be imagined. His hearing not being quite perfect, he more than once interrupted Mr. Hoole with, "Louder, my dear Sir, louder, I entreat you, or you pray in vain!"—and, when the service was ended, he, with great earnestness, turned round to an excellent lady who was present, saying, "I thank you, Madam, very heartily, for your kindness in joining me in this solemn exercise. Live well, I conjure you; and you will not feel the compunction at the last which I now feel." So truly humble were the thoughts which this great and good man entertained of his own approaches to religious perfection.

He was earnestly invited to publish a volume of "Devotional Exercises; but this (though he listened to the proposal with much complacency, and a large sum of money was offered for it) he declined, from motives of the sincerest modesty.

He seriously entertained the thought of translating "Thuanus."¹ He often talked to me on the subject; and once, in particular, when I was rather wishing that he would favor the world, and gratify his Sovereign, by a *Life of Spenser* (which he said that he would readily have done, had he been able to obtain any new materials for the purpose), he added, "I have been thinking again, Sir, of Thuanus: it would not be the laborious task which you have supposed it. I should have no trouble but that of dictation, which would be performed as speedily as an amanuensis could write."

It is to the mutual credit of Johnson and divines of different communions, that although he was a steady Church-of-England man, there was, nevertheless, much agreeable intercourse between him and them. Let me particularly name the late Mr. La Trobe, and Mr. Hutton, of the Moravian profession. His intimacy with the English Benedictines, at Paris, has been mentioned; and as an additional proof of the charity in which he lived with good men of the Romish Church, I am happy in this opportunity of recording his friendship with the Reverend Thomas Hussey, D.D., His Catholic Majesty's Chaplain of Embassy at the Court of London, that very respectable man, eminent not only for his powerful eloquence as a preacher, but for his various abilities and acquisitions. Nay, though Johnson loved a Presbyterian the least of all, this did not prevent his having a long and uninterrupted social connection with the Reverend Dr. James Fordyce, who, since his death, hath gratefully celebrated him in a warm strain of devotional composition.

Amidst the melancholy clouds which hung over the dying

¹ The French historian Jacques-Auguste de Thou (1553-1617), author of "*Historia sui Temporis*," in 138 books.—*Dr. Hill.*

Johnson, his characteristical manner showed itself on different occasions.

When Dr. Warren, in the usual style, hoped that he was better; his answer was, "No, Sir; you cannot conceive with what acceleration I advance towards death."

A man whom he had never seen before was employed one night to sit up with him. Being asked next morning how he liked his attendant, his answer was, "Not at all, Sir: the fellow's an idiot; he is as awkward as a turnspit when first put into the wheel, and as sleepy as a dormouse."

Mr. Windham having placed a pillow conveniently to support him, he thanked him for his kindness, and said, "That will do, — all that a pillow can do."

He repeated with great spirit a poem, consisting of several stanzas, in four lines, in alternate rhyme, which he said he had composed some years before on occasion of a rich, extravagant young gentleman's coming of age; ¹ saying he had never repeated it but once since he composed it, and had given but one copy of it. That copy was given to Mrs. Thrale, now Piozzi, who has published it in a book which she entitles "British Synonymy," but which is truly a collection of entertaining remarks and stories, no matter whether accurate or not. Being a piece of exquisite satire, conveyed in a strain of pointed vivacity and humor, and in a manner of which no other instance is to be found in Johnson's writings, I shall here insert it.

Long-expected one-and-twenty,
Ling'ring year, at length is flown;
Pride and pleasure, pomp and plenty,
Great [Sir John] are now your own.

Loosen'd from the minor's tether,
Free to mortgage or to sell,
Wild as wind, and light as feather,
Bid the sons of thrift farewell.

Call the Betseys, Kates, and Jennies,
All the names that banish care;
Lavish of your grandsire's guineas,
Show the spirit of an heir.

All that prey on vice and folly
Joy to see their quarry fly;

¹ Sir John Lade, the posthumous son of the fourth baronet by Mr. Thrale's sister. He entered eagerly into all the follies of the day, was a noted whip, and married a woman of the town. — *Croker*.

There the gamester, light and jolly,
There the lender, grave and sly.

Wealth, my lad, was made to wander,
Let it wander as it will;
Call the jockey, call the pander,
Bid them come and take their fill.

When the bonny blade carouses,
Pockets full, and spirits high —
What are acres? what are houses?
Only dirt, or wet or dry.

Should the guardian, friend, or mother
Tell the woes of wilful waste;
Scorn their counsel, scorn their pother,—
You can hang or drown at last.

As he opened a note which his servant brought to him, he said, "An odd thought strikes me: we shall receive no letters in the grave."

He requested three things of Sir Joshua Reynolds: to forgive him thirty pounds which he had borrowed of him; to read the Bible; and never to use his pencil on a Sunday. Sir Joshua readily acquiesced.

Indeed he showed the greatest anxiety for the religious improvement of his friends, to whom he discoursed of its infinite consequence. He begged of Mr. Hoole, to think of what he had said, and commit it to writing; and, upon being afterwards assured that this was done, pressed his hands, and in an earnest tone thanked him. Dr. Brocklesby having attended him with the utmost assiduity and kindness as his physician and friend, he was peculiarly desirous that this gentleman should not entertain any loose speculative notions, but be confirmed in the truths of Christianity, and insisted on his writing down in his presence, as nearly as he could collect it, the import of what passed on the subject; and Dr. Brocklesby having complied with the request, he made him sign the paper, and urged him to keep it in his own custody as long as he lived.

Johnson, with that native fortitude, which, amidst all his bodily distress and mental sufferings, never forsook him, asked Dr. Brocklesby, as a man in whom he had confidence, to tell him plainly whether he could recover. "Give me," said he, "a direct answer." The Doctor having first asked him if he could bear the whole truth, which way soever it might lead, and being answered that he could, declared that, in his opinion, he could

not recover without a miracle. "Then," said Johnson, "I will take no more physic, not even my opiates; for I have prayed that I may render up my soul to God unclouded." In this resolution he persevered, and, at the same time, used only the weakest kinds of sustenance. Being pressed by Mr. Windham to take somewhat more generous nourishment, lest too low a diet should have the very effect which he dreaded, by debilitating his mind, he said, "I will take anything but inebriating sustenance."

The Reverend Mr. Strahan, who was the son of his friend and had been always one of his great favorites, had, during his last illness, the satisfaction of contributing to soothe and comfort him. That gentleman's house, at Islington of which he is Vicar, afforded Johnson, occasionally and easily, an agreeable change of place and fresh air; and he attended also upon him in town in the discharge of the sacred offices of his profession.

Mr. Strahan has given me the agreeable assurance that, after being in much agitation, Johnson became quite composed, and continued so till his death.

Dr. Bröcklesby, who will not be suspected of fanaticism, obliged me with the following accounts:

For some time before his death, all his fears were calmed and absorbed by the prevalence of his faith, and his trust in the merits and *propitiation* of JESUS CHRIST.

He talked often to me about the necessity of faith in the *sacrifice* of Jesus, as necessary, beyond all good works whatever, for the salvation of mankind.

He pressed me to study Dr. Clarke and to read his sermons. I asked him why he pressed Dr. Clarke, an Arian.¹ "Because," said he, "he is the fullest on the *propitiatory sacrifice*."

Johnson having thus in his mind the true Christian scheme, at once rational and consolatory, uniting justice and mercy in the DIVINITY, with the improvement of human nature, previous to his receiving the Holy Sacrament in his apartment, composed and fervently uttered this prayer:²

The change of his sentiments with regard to Dr. Clarke is thus mentioned to me in a letter from the late Dr. Adams, Master of Pembroke College, Oxford. "The Doctor's prejudices were the strongest, and certainly in another sense the weakest that ever possessed a sensible man. You know his extreme zeal for orthodoxy. But did you ever hear what he told me himself? That he had made it a rule not to admit Dr. Clarke's name in his Dictionary. This, however, wore off. At some distance of time he advised with me what books he should read in defence of the Christian religion. I recommended Clarke's 'Evidences of Natural and Revealed Religion,' as the best of the kind; and I find in what is called his 'Prayers and Meditations,' that he was frequently employed in the latter part of his time in reading Clarke's sermons." — B.

² The Reverend Mr. Strahan took care to have it preserved, and has inserted it in "Prayers and Meditations," p. 216. — B.

Almighty and most merciful Father, I am now, as to human eyes it seems, about to commemorate, for the last time, the death of thy SON JESUS CHRIST, our Saviour and Redeemer. Grant, O Lord, that my whole hope and confidence may be in his merits, and thy mercy; enforce and accept my imperfect repentance; make this commemoration available to the confirmation of my faith, the establishment of my hope, and the enlargement of my charity; and make the death of thy SON JESUS CHRIST effectual to my redemption. Have mercy upon me, and pardon the multitude of my offences. Bless my friends: have mercy upon all men. Support me, by thy Holy Spirit, in the days of weakness, and at the hour of death; and receive me, at my death, to everlasting happiness, for the sake of JESUS CHRIST. Amen.

Having, as has been already mentioned, made his will on the 8th and 9th of December, and settled all his worldly affairs, he languished till Monday, the 13th of that month, when he expired, about seven o'clock in the evening, with so little apparent pain that his attendants hardly perceived when his dissolution took place.

Of his last moments, my brother, Thomas David, has furnished me with the following particulars :

The Doctor, from the time that he was certain his death was near, appeared to be perfectly resigned, was seldom or never fretful or out of temper, and often said to his faithful servant, who gave me this account, "Attend, Francis, to the salvation of your soul, which is the object of greatest importance:" he also explained to him passages in the scripture, and seemed to have pleasure in talking upon religious subjects.

On Monday, the 13th of December, the day on which he died, a Miss Morris, daughter to a particular friend of his, called, and said to Francis, that she begged to be permitted to see the Doctor, that she might earnestly request him to give her his blessing. Francis went into his room, followed by the young lady, and delivered the message. The Doctor turned himself in the bed, and said, "God bless you, my dear!" These were the last words he spoke. His difficulty of breathing increased till about seven o'clock in the evening, when Mr. Barber and Mrs. Desmoulins, who were sitting in the room, observing that the noise he made in breathing had ceased, went to the bed, and found he was dead.

About two days after his death, the following very agreeable account was communicated to Mr. Malone, in a letter by the Honorable John Byng, to whom I am much obliged for granting me permission to introduce it in my work.

DEAR SIR: Since I saw you, I have had a long conversation with Cawston,¹ who sat up with Dr. Johnson, from nine o'clock on Sunday evening till ten o'clock on Monday morning. And, from what I can gather from him, it should seem that Dr. Johnson was perfectly composed, steady in hope, and

¹ Servant to the Right Honorable William Windham.—B.

resigned to death. At the interval of each hour, they assisted him to sit up in his bed, and move his legs, which were in much pain; when he regularly addressed himself to fervent prayer; and though, sometimes, his voice failed him, his sense never did, during that time. The only sustenance he received, was cyder and water. He said his mind was prepared, and the time to his dissolution seemed long. At six in the morning he inquired the hour, and, on being informed, said that all went on regularly, and he felt he had but a few hours to live.

At ten o'clock in the morning, he parted from Cawston, saying, "You should not detain Mr. Windham's servant: I thank you: bear my remembrance to your master." Cawston says that no man could appear more collected, more devout, or less terrified at the thoughts of the approaching minute.

This account, which is so much more agreeable than, and somewhat different from, yours, had given us the satisfaction of thinking that that great man died as he lived, full of resignation, strengthened in faith, and joyful in hope.

A few days before his death, he had asked Sir John Hawkins, as one of his executors, where he should be buried; and on being answered, "Doubtless in Westminster Abbey," seemed to feel a satisfaction very natural to a poet; and indeed in my opinion very natural to every man of any imagination, who has no family sepulchre in which he can be laid with his fathers. Accordingly, upon Monday, December 20, his remains were deposited in that noble and renowned edifice: and over his grave was placed a large blue flag-stone, with this inscription:

SAMUEL JOHNSON, LL.D.
Obiit XIII die Decembris
Anno Domini
 M. DCC. LXXXIV.
Ætatis sue LXXV.

His funeral was attended by a respectable number of his friends, particularly such of the members of THE LITERARY CLUB as were then in town; and was also honored with the presence of several of the Reverend Chapter of Westminster. Mr. Burke, Sir Joseph Banks, Mr. Windham, Mr. Langton, Sir Charles Bunbury, and Mr. Colman, bore his pall. His schoolfellow, Dr. Taylor, performed the mournful office of reading the burial service.

I trust I shall not be accused of affectation, when I declare, that I find myself unable to express all that I felt upon the loss of such a "Guide, Philosopher, and Friend."¹ I shall, there-

¹ On the subject of Johnson I may adopt the words of Sir John Harrington, concerning his venerable Tutor and Diocesan, Sir John Still, Bishop of Bath and Wells; "Who hath given me some helps, more hopes, all encouragements in my



BUST BY NOLLEKENS.

fore, not say one word of my own, but adopt those of an eminent friend [Gerard Hamilton], which he uttered with an abrupt felicity, superior to all studied compositions: "He has made a chasm, which not only nothing can fill up, but which nothing has a tendency to fill up. Johnson is dead. Let us go to the next best:—there is nobody: no man can be said to put you in mind of Johnson."

As Johnson had abundant homage paid to him during his life,¹

best studies: to whom I never came but I grew more religious; from whom I never went, but I parted better instructed. Of him therefore, my acquaintance, my friend, my instructor, if I speak much, it were not to be marvelled; if I speak frankly, it is not to be blamed; and though I speak partially, it were to be pardoned." "Nugæ Antiquæ," vol. i. p. 136. There is one circumstance in Sir John's character of Bishop Still, which is peculiarly applicable to Johnson: "He became so famous a disputer, that the learnedest were even afraid to dispute with him: and he finding his own strength, could not stick to warn them in their arguments to take heed to their answers, like a perfect fencer that will tell beforehand in which button he will give the venue, or like a cunning chess-player that will appoint beforehand with which pawn and in what place he will give the mate." *Ibid.*—B.

¹ Beside the dedications to him by Dr. Goldsmith, the Reverend Dr. Franklin, and the Reverend Mr. Wilson, which I have mentioned according to their dates, there was one by a lady, of a versification of "Aningait and Ajut [*Rambler*, No. 186], and one by the ingenious Mr. Walker, of his "Rhetorical Grammar." I have introduced into this work several compliments paid to him in the writings of his contemporaries; but the number of them is so great, that we may fairly say that there was almost a general tribute. Let me not be forgetful of the honor done to him by Colonel Myddleton, of Gwynnynog, near Denbigh; who, on the banks of a rivulet in his park, where Johnson delighted to stand and repeat verses, erected an urn with the following inscription:

"This spot was often dignified by the presence of

"SAMUEL JOHNSON, LL.D.,

"Whose moral writings, exactly conformable to the precepts of Christianity,

"Gave ardor to Virtue and confidence to Truth."

As no inconsiderable circumstance of his fame, we must reckon the extraordinary zeal of the artists to extend and perpetuate his image. I can enumerate a bust by Mr. Nollekens, and the many casts which are made from it; several pictures by Sir Joshua Reynolds, from one of which, in the possession of the Duke of Dorset, Mr. Humphry executed a beautiful miniature in enamel: one by Mrs. Frances Reynolds, Sir Joshua's sister; one by Mr. Zoffany; and one by Mr. Opie; and the following engravings of his portrait: 1. One by Cooke, from Sir Joshua, for the proprietors' edition of his folio Dictionary.—2. One from ditto, by ditto, for their quarto edition.—3. One from Opie, by Heath, for Harrison's edition of his Dictionary.—4. One from Nollekens's bust of him, by Bartolozzi, for Fielding's quarto edition of his Dictionary.—5. One small, from Harding, by Trotter, for his "Beauties."—6. One small, from Sir Joshua, by Trotter, for his "Lives of the Poets."—7. One small, from Sir Joshua, by Hall, for *The Rambler*.—8. One small, from an original drawing, in the possession of Mr. John Simco, etched by Trotter, for another edition of his "Lives of the Poets."—9. One small, no painter's name, etched by Taylor, for his "Johnsoniana."—10. One folio whole-length, with his oak-stick, as described in Boswell's "Tour," drawn and etched by Trotter.—11. One large mezzotint, from Sir Joshua, by Doughty.—12. One large Roman head, from Sir Joshua, by Marchi.—13. One octavo, holding a book to his eye, from Sir Joshua, by Hall, for his Works.—14. One small, from a drawing from the life, and engraved by Trotter, for his Life published by Kearsley.—15. One large, from Opie, by Mr. Townley (brother of Mr. Townley of the Commons), an ingenious artist, who resided some time at Berlin, and has the honor of being engraver to his Majesty the King of Prussia.

so no writer in this nation ever had such an accumulation of literary honors after his death. A sermon upon that event was preached in St. Mary's Church, Oxford, before the University, by the Reverend Mr. Agutter of Magdalen College.¹ The Lives, the Memoirs, the Essays, both in prose and verse, which have been published concerning him, would make many volumes. The numerous attacks too upon him I consider as part of his consequence, upon the principle which he himself so well knew and asserted. Many who trembled at his presence, were forward in assault, when they no longer apprehended danger. When one of his little pragmatistical foes was invidiously snarling at his fame, at Sir Joshua Reynolds's table, the Reverend Dr. Parr exclaimed, with his usual bold animation, "Ay, now that the old lion is dead, every ass thinks he may kick at him."

A monument for him, in Westminster Abbey, was resolved upon soon after his death, and was supported by a most respectable contribution; but the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's having come to a resolution of admitting monuments there upon a liberal and magnificent plan, that Cathedral was afterwards fixed on as the place in which a cenotaph should be erected to his memory;²

This is one of the finest mezzotintos that ever was executed; and what renders it of extraordinary value, the plate was destroyed after four or five impressions only were taken off. One of them is in the possession of Sir William Scott. Mr. Townley has lately been prevailed with to execute and publish another of the same, that it may be more generally circulated among the admirers of Dr. Johnson. — 16. One large, from Sir Joshua's first picture of him, by Heath, for this work in quarto. — 17. One octavo, by Baker, for the octavo edition. — 18. And one for Lavater's "Essays on Physiognomy," in which Johnson's countenance is analyzed upon the principles of that fanciful writer. There are also several seals with his head cut on them, particularly a very fine one by that eminent artist, Edward Burch, Esq., R.A., in the possession of the younger Dr. Charles Burney. Let me add, as a proof of the popularity of his character, that there are copper pieces struck at Birmingham with his head impressed on them, which pass current as halfpence there, and in the neighboring parts of the country. — B.

¹ It is not yet published. — In a letter to me, Mr. Agutter says: "My sermon before the University was more engaged with Dr. Johnson's *moral* than his *intellectual* character. It particularly examined his fear of death, and suggested several reasons for the apprehensions of the good, and the indifference of the infidel in their last hours; this was illustrated by contrasting the death of Dr. Johnson and Mr. Hume: the text was Job xxi. 22-26." — B. It was published in 1800. Neither Johnson nor Hume is mentioned by name. Its chief perhaps its sole merit is its brevity. — *Dr. Hill*.

² The subscription for this monument, which cost £1155, was begun by the Literary Club, and completed by the aid of Johnson's other friends and admirers. — *Malone*. The work was executed by John Bacon, and, irrespective of the indifferent likeness, is perhaps the most absurd object to be seen either in St. Paul's Cathedral or in Westminster Abbey. As some of the members of the committee for its erection had signed the famous remonstrance to Johnson on Goldsmith's epitaph, it is a pity that they did not now take Flood's advice and insist that the genius of the author of the English Dictionary should be commemorated in the English language.

and in the cathedral of his native city of Lichfield, a smaller one is to be erected.¹ To compose his epitaph, could not but excite the warmest competition of genius.² If *laudari a laudato viro* be praise which is highly estimable, I should not forgive myself were I to omit the following sepulchral verses on the author of THE ENGLISH DICTIONARY, written by the Right Honorable Henry Flood :³

¹This monument has been since erected. It consists of a medallion, with a tablet beneath, on which is this inscription: "The friends of SAMUEL JOHNSON, LL.D., a native of Lichfield, erected this Monument, as a tribute of respect to the memory of a man of extensive learning, a distinguished moral writer, and a sincere Christian. He died Dec. 13, 1784, aged 75." — *Malone*.

²The Reverend Dr. Parr, on being requested to undertake it, thus expressed himself in a letter to William Seward, Esq.: "I leave this mighty task to some hardier and some abler writer. The variety and splendor of Johnson's attainments, the peculiarities of his character, his private virtues, and his literary publications, fill me with confusion and dismay, when I reflect upon the confined and difficult species of composition, in which alone they can be expressed, with propriety, upon his monument." But I understand that this great scholar, and warm admirer of Johnson, has yielded to repeated solicitations, and executed the very difficult undertaking. — B. Most of those who read the inscription will probably regret that Parr did not adhere to his original resolution. It is as follows:

A P Ω
* *

SAMVELI · IOHNSON
GRAMMATICO · ET · CRITICO
SCRIPTORVM · ANGLICORVM · LITERATE · PERITO
POETAE · LVMINIBVS · SENTENTIARVM
ET · PONDERIBVS · VERBORVM · ADMIRABILI
MAGISTRO · VIRTVTIS · GRAVISSIMO
HOMINI · OPTIMO · ET · SINGVLARIS · EXEMPLI
QUI · VIXIT · ANN · LXXV · MENS · II · DIEB · XIII
DECISSIT · IDIB · DECEMBR · ANN · CHRIST · CL · LCCC · LXXXIII
SEPVLT · IN · AED · SANCT · PETR · WESTMINSTERIENS
XIII · KAL · IANVAR · ANN · CHRIST · CL · LCCC · LXXXV
AMICI · ET · SODALES · LITTERARII
PECVNIA · CONLATA
H · M · FACIVND · CVRAVER

On a scroll in his hand are the words.

ΕΝΜΑΚΑΡΕΣΣΙΗΟΝΩΝΑΝΤΑΞΙΟΣΕΙΝΑΜΟΙΒΗ

On one side of the Monument ·

Faciebat

JOHANNES BACON, SCVLPTOR ANN · CHRIST · M · DCC · LXXXV.

³To prevent any misconception on this subject, Mr. Malone, by whom these lines were obligingly communicated, requests me to add the following remark:

"In justice to the late Mr. Flood, now himself wanting, and highly meriting, an epitaph from his country, to which his transcendent talents did the highest honor, as well as the most important service; it should be observed, that these lines were by no means intended as a regular monumental inscription for Dr. Johnson. Had he undertaken to write an appropriate and discriminative epitaph for that excellent and extraordinary man, those who knew Mr. Flood's vigor of mind, will have no doubt that he would have produced one worthy of his illustrious subject. But the

"No need of Latin or of Greek to grace
 Our JOHNSON'S memory, or inscribe his grave;
 His native language claims this mournful space,
 To pay the immortality he gave."

The character of SAMUEL JOHNSON has, I trust, been so developed in the course of this work, that they who have honored it with a perusal, may be considered as well acquainted with him. As, however, it may be expected that I should collect into one view the capital and distinguishing features of this extraordinary man, I shall endeavor to acquit myself of that part of my biographical undertaking,¹ however difficult it may be to do that which many of my readers will do better for themselves.

His figure was large and well formed, and his countenance of the cast of an ancient statue; yet his appearance was rendered strange and somewhat uncouth by convulsive cramps, by the scars of that distemper which it was once imagined the royal touch could cure, and by a slovenly mode of dress. He had the use only of one eye; yet so much does mind govern and even supply the deficiency of organs, that his visual perceptions, as far as they extended, were uncommonly quick and accurate. So morbid was his temperament that he never knew the natural joy of a free and vigorous use of his limbs: when he walked, it was like the struggling gait of one in fetters; when he rode, he had no command or direction of his horse, but was carried as if in a balloon. That with his constitution and habits of life he should have lived seventy-five years, is a proof that an inherent *vivida vis*² is a powerful preservative of the human frame.

Man is, in general, made up of contradictory qualities; and these will ever show themselves in strange succession, where a consistency in appearance at least, if not reality, has not been

fact was merely this: In Dec. 1789, after a large subscription had been made for Dr. Johnson's monument, to which Mr. Flood liberally contributed, Mr. Malone happened to call on him at his house in Berners Street, and the conversation turning on the proposed monument, Mr. Malone maintained that the epitaph, by whomsoever it should be written, ought to be in Latin. Mr. Flood thought differently. The next morning, in the postscript to a note on another subject, he mentioned that he continued of the same opinion as on the preceding day, and subjoined the lines above given." — B.

¹ As I do not see any reason to give a different character of my illustrious friend now, from what I formerly gave, the greatest part of the sketch of him in my "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides" is here adopted. — B.

² Lucretius, i. 72.

attained by long habits of philosophical discipline. In proportion to the native vigor of the mind, the contradictory qualities will be the more prominent, and more difficult to be adjusted; and, therefore, we are not to wonder that Johnson exhibited an eminent example of this remark which I have made upon human nature. At different times he seemed a different man, in some respects; not, however, in any great or essential article, upon which he had fully employed his mind, and settled certain principles of duty, but only in his manners, and in the display of argument and fancy in his talk. He was prone to superstition, but not to credulity. Though his imagination might incline him to a belief of the marvellous and the mysterious, his vigorous reason examined the evidence with jealousy. He was a sincere and zealous Christian, of high Church-of-England and monarchical principles, which he would not tamely suffer to be questioned; and had, perhaps, at an early period, narrowed his mind somewhat too much, both as to religion and politics. His being impressed with the danger of extreme latitude in either, though he was of a very independent spirit, occasioned his appearing somewhat unfavorable to the prevalence of that noble freedom of sentiment which is the best possession of man. Nor can it be denied, that he had many prejudices; which, however, frequently suggested many of his pointed sayings, that rather show a playfulness of fancy than any settled malignity. He was steady and inflexible in maintaining the obligations of religion and morality; both from a regard for the order of society, and from a veneration for the GREAT SOURCE of all order; correct, nay, stern in his taste; hard to please, and easily offended; impetuous and irritable in his temper, but of a most humane and benevolent heart,¹ which showed itself not only in a most liberal charity, as far as his circumstances would allow, but in a thousand instances of active benevolence. He was afflicted with a bodily disease which made him often restless and fretful; and with a constitutional melancholy, the clouds which darkened the brightness of his fancy, and gave a gloomy cast to his whole course of thinking: we, therefore, ought not to wonder at his sallies of impatience and passion at any time; es-

¹ In the *Olla Podrida*, a collection of essays published at Oxford, there is an admirable paper upon the character of Johnson, written by the Reverend Dr. Horne, the last excellent Bishop of Norwich. The following passage is eminently happy: "To reject wisdom, because the person of him who communicates it is uncouth, and his manners are inelegant; what is it but to throw away a pine-apple, and assign for a reason the roughness of its coat?" — B. *Olla Podrida* was published in weekly numbers in 1787-8. Boswell's quotation is from No. 13.—*Dr. Hill*.

pecially when provoked by obtrusive ignorance, or presuming petulance; and allowance must be made for his uttering hasty and satirical sallies even against his best friends. And, surely, when it is considered, that, "amidst sickness and sorrow," he exerted his faculties in so many works for the benefit of mankind, and particularly that he achieved the great and admirable *DICTIONARY* of our language, we must be astonished at his resolution. The solemn text, "of him to whom much is given, much will be required," seems to have been ever present to his mind, in a rigorous sense, and to have made him dissatisfied with his labors and acts of goodness, however comparatively great; so that the unavoidable consciousness of his superiority was, in that respect, a cause of disquiet. He suffered so much from this, and from the gloom which perpetually haunted him and made solitude frightful, that it may be said of him, "If in this life only he had hope, he was of all men most miserable." He loved praise, when it was brought to him; but was too proud to seek for it. He was somewhat susceptible of flattery. As he was general and unconfined in his studies, he cannot be considered as master of any one particular science; but he had accumulated a vast and various collection of learning and knowledge, which was so arranged in his mind, as to be ever in readiness to be brought forth. But his superiority over other learned men consisted chiefly in what may be called the art of thinking, the art of using his mind: a certain continual power of seizing the useful substance of all that he knew, and exhibiting it in a clear and forcible manner; so that knowledge, which we often see to be no better than lumber in men of dull understanding, was in him true, evident, and actual wisdom. His moral precepts are practical; for they are drawn from an intimate acquaintance with human nature. His maxims carry conviction; for they are founded on the basis of common sense, and a very attentive and minute survey of real life. His mind was so full of imagery, that he might have been perpetually a poet; yet it is remarkable, that, however rich his prose is in this respect, his poetical pieces, in general, have not much of that splendor, but are rather distinguished by strong sentiment, and acute observation, conveyed in harmonious and energetic verse, particularly in heroic couplets. Though usually grave, and even awful in his deportment, he possessed uncommon and peculiar powers of wit and humor; he frequently indulged himself in colloquial pleasantry; and the heartiest merriment was often enjoyed in his company; with this great advantage, that as it was entirely free from any

poisonous tincture of vice or impiety, it was salutary to those who shared in it. He had accustomed himself to such accuracy in his common conversation,¹ that he at all times expressed his thoughts with great force, and an elegant choice of language, the effect of which was aided by his having a loud voice and a slow deliberate utterance. In him were united a most logical head with a most fertile imagination, which gave him an extraordinary advantage in arguing: for he could reason close or wide, as he saw best for the moment. Exulting in his intellectual strength and dexterity, he could, when he pleased, be the greatest sophist that ever contended in the lists of declamation; and, from a spirit of contradiction and a delight in showing his powers, he would often maintain the wrong side with equal warmth and ingenuity; so that when there was an audience, his real opinions could seldom be gathered from his talk; though when he was in company with a single friend, he would discuss a subject with genuine fairness; but he was too conscientious to make error permanent and pernicious by deliberately writing it; and, in all his numerous

¹ Though a perfect resemblance of Johnson is not to be found in any age, parts of his character are admirably expressed by Clarendon in drawing that of Lord Falkland, whom the noble and masterly historian describes at his seat near Oxford: "Such an immenseness of wit, such a solidity of judgment, so infinite a fancy bound in by a most logical ratiocination. His acquaintance was cultivated by the most polite and accurate men, so that his house was a University in less volume, whither they came, not so much for repose as study, and to examine and refine those grosser propositions, which laziness and consent made current in conversation." Bayle's account of *Menage* may also be quoted as exceedingly applicable to the great subject of this work. "His illustrious friends erected a very glorious monument to him in the collection entitled "*Menagiana*." Those who judge of things aright, will confess that this collection is very proper to show the extent of genius and learning which was the character of *Menage*. And I may be bold to say, that *the excellent works he published will not distinguish him from other learned men so advantageously as this*. To publish books of great learning, to make Greek and Latin verses exceedingly well turned, is not a common talent, I own; neither is it extremely rare. It is incomparably more difficult to find men who can furnish discourse about an infinite number of things, and who can diversify them an hundred ways. How many authors are there who are admired for their works, on account of the vast learning that is displayed in them, who are not able to sustain a conversation. Those who know *Menage* only by his books, might think he resembled those learned men; but if you show the *MENAGIANA*, you distinguish him from them, and make him known by a talent which is given to very few learned men. There it appears that he was a man who spoke offhand a thousand good things. His memory extended to what was ancient and modern; to the court and to the city; to the dead and to the living languages; to things serious and things jocose; in a word, to a thousand sorts of subjects. That which appeared a trifle to some readers of the "*Menagiana*," who did not consider circumstances, caused admiration in other readers, who minded the difference between what a man speaks without preparation, and that which he prepares for the press. And, therefore, we cannot sufficiently commend the care which his illustrious friends took to erect a monument so capable of giving him immortal glory. They were not obliged to rectify what they had heard him say; for, in so doing, they had not been faithful historians of his conversation." — B.

works he earnestly inculcated what appeared to him to be the truth; his piety being constant, and the ruling principle of all his conduct.

Such was SAMUEL JOHNSON, a man whose talents, acquirements, and virtues, were so extraordinary, that the more his character is considered, the more he will be regarded by the present age, and by posterity, with admiration and reverence.

INDEX.

- ABERCROMBIE, James, of Philadelphia, i. 415, 438 *n*.
- Abernethy, Dr., Life of, in "Biographia Britannica," quoted, ii. 470 *n*.
- Abington, Mrs., Johnson attends her benefit, i. 490, 492, 495; sups with, 507.
- Abreu, Marquis of, i. 199.
- Abyssinia, voyage to, by Lobo, translated by Johnson, i. 39, 41; ii. 4.
- Accademia della Crusca, i. 167, 253.
- Academy, French, i. 103, 167, 169 *n*.
- Academy, Royal, origin of, i. 205.
- Academy, Royal Irish, transactions of, quoted, ii. 546.
- Adam, Robert and James, i. 492; "Works in Architecture" referred to, ii. 105.
- Adamites, the, i. 446.
- Adams, Dr., Master of Pembroke College, Oxford, i. 34, 69, 98, 148, 278; describes Johnson at Oxford, 23, 33; discusses dictionary-making with Johnson, 103; describes first representation of "Irene," 109; advising Johnson as to his projected Bibliothèque, 159; visited by Johnson, 565; ii. 479; letters to Boswell, i. 147; ii. 540, 566 *n*.
- Adams, Miss, ii. 479, 484.
- Adams, William, founder of Newport School, i. 68 *n*.
- Adams, Mr.; Johnson writes dedication for his "Treatise on the Globes," i. 315.
- Addison, Joseph, i. 100 *n*., 173, 203, 449, 569 *n*.; ii. 345, 357; tradition of his boyhood, i. 13 *n*.; his style compared with Johnson's, 125; Johnson discusses him and his writings, 242, 418, 506, 521; ii. 21, 153, 311, 355; said to have written for Budgell, 29; intemperate in use of wine, 556; saying of, 228; quoted, i. 321, 505; ii. 188; Johnson's Life of, quoted, 329.
- "Address of the Painters to George III. on his Accession," by Johnson, i. 199.
- "Address to the Reader," by Johnson, i. 74.
- Adey, Mary, of Lichfield, i. 582; ii. 276; letter to Boswell, i. 10.
- Adey, Mrs., death of, ii. 264.
- "Ad Lauram parituram Epigramma," by Johnson, quoted, i. 85.
- "Adventurer, The," i. 115, 129, 140-143, 180.
- "Adversaria," specimen of Johnson's, i. 113.
- Adey, *see* Adey.
- "Agriculture, Farther Thoughts on," i. 171.
- Agutter, Rev. Mr., ii. 480 *n*.; preaches on Johnson's death, 570; letter to Boswell, 570 *n*.
- Aikin, Anna Letitia, i. 543; copies Johnson's style, 114.
- Akenside, Mark, i. 203; criticised by Johnson, 388; ii. 20; extracts from Johnson's Life of, 331.
- Akerman, Mr., keeper of Newgate, brave conduct of, ii. 287.
- Alberti, Leandro, i. 506.
- Alcibiade's dog, ii. 153.
- Aldrich, Rev. Mr., of Clerkenwell, i. 231.
- Alexander the Great, i. 138, 407.
- Alfred, King, will of, ii. 383 *n*.
- Allen, Edmund, printer, Johnson's landlord in Bolt Court, i. 270, 504; ii. 91, 95, 179, 210, 255, 355, 440; letter to, from Johnson, 443.
- Almack's, high play at, ii. 15 *n*.
- Althorp, Lord, ii. 257 *n*., 285.
- Amanuenses employed on the Dictionary, list of, i. 104.
- American affairs, i. 472, 484, 486.
- Amyat, Mr., physician, tells anecdote of Johnson, i. 212 *n*.
- Andrews, Dr., Provost of Dublin University, i. 282.
- Angel, Captain, i. 197.
- Angel, Mr., asks Johnson to write him a preface, i. 427.
- "Annales," by Johnson, i. 33.
- Anne, Queen, Johnson's recollection of, i. 12.
- "Annual Register," i. 460 *n*.
- Apicius, i. 568.
- Apollonius Rhodius, i. 162.

- "Appeal to the Public in behalf of the Editor," by Johnson, i. 74.
 Appleby in Leicestershire, school offered to Johnson at (?), i. 68 n.
 Arbuthnot, Dr., i. 522; praised by Johnson, 242.
 Argenson, Mr., visited by Johnson, i. 533.
 Argyle, Archibald, Duke of, i. 104; ii. 480; Sir A. Maclean's suit against, i. 526 n.; ii. 66; entertains Wilkes, 48.
 Argyle, Duchess of, i. 136.
 Aristotle, i. 107 n.; his doctrine of the purpose of tragedy discussed, ii. 25; saying of, quoted, 303.
 Aristarchus, Greville's praise of, ii. 492.
 Armstrong, Johnny, song of, quoted, i. 228.
 Arnaud, ii. 234.
 Arnold, Thomas, M.D., his "Observations on Insanity," ii. 116.
 "Art of Living in London," by Johnson, i. 51.
 Articles, Thirty-nine, petition against subscription to, i. 379.
 Ascham, Johnson's Life of, i. 267.
 Ashbourne, Johnson stays at, i. 36; ii. 88, 112, 384.
 Assassination Plot, i. 401 n.
 Astle, Thomas, i. 84; ii. 497; letter to, from Johnson, 383.
 Astle, Rev. Mr., advised by Johnson as to studies, ii. 497.
 Aston, Catherine, i. 37 n.
 Aston, Misses, i. 36.
 Aston, Molly, i. 37, 582; ii. 332; epigram on, by Johnson, i. 37 n.; ii. 229.
 Aston, Mrs., i. 582, 584; ii. 278; her illness, 87, 140.
 Aston, Sir Thomas, i. 37, 52 n.
 Athol, Earl of, tortured, i. 291.
 Athol porridge, ii. 347.
 Atterbury, Bishop, his sermons, ii. 151, 164.
 Auchinleck in Ayrshire, visited by Johnson, i. 458; entail of estate, 546-553.
 Auchinleck, Lord, i. 415, 471 n.; ii. 143, 160; his marriage, 62; his death, 396.
 Ayrshire, election petition in, ii. 343.
 BACON, Lord, i. 122, 384; Johnson on, ii. 129; quoted, i. 7; ii. 448.
 Bagshaw, Rev. Mr., Johnson's letters to, i. 450; ii. 523.
 Baldwin, Mr., printer, ii. 504.
 Ballow, Thomas, ii. 14.
 Banks, Mr., of Dorsetshire, i. 78.
 Banks, Sir Joseph, i. 276, 376, 377 n.; ii. 115 n., 246, 248, 257 n.; pall-bearer at Johnson's funeral, 568; letter from Johnson, i. 374.
 Bannatine, George, i. 203.
 Barbauld, Mrs., *see* Aikin, Anna Letitia.
 Barber, Francis, Johnson's black servant, i. 8 n., 130, 290, 307 n., 376, 420, 465, 524; ii. 536, 541; his early history, i. 132 n.; his account of Johnson's grief for his wife, 134; serves in the Navy, 197; goes to school, 325; receives religious instruction from Johnson, 514; ii. 567; Johnson's liberal provision for, 557; letters from Johnson, i. 325, 358.
 Barclay, A., "The Ship of Fools," i. 155.
 Barclay, Mr., of Oxford, answers Kenrick's attack on Johnson, i. 287.
 Barclay, Mr., brewer, ii. 372 n.
 Barclay, Robert, of Ury, ii. 372 n.
 Baretti, Joseph, i. 145, 155, 292 n., 327, 529, 570; ii. 4, 12, 63, 107, 251; his history, i. 169; introduced to Rev. T. Warton by Johnson, 187; praised by Johnson, 323; arraigned at Old Bailey for murder, acquitted, 343, 345; quarrels with Davies, 114; writes against Mrs. Thrale in "The European Magazine," ii. 31 n.; consultation of his friends before trial, 505; his anecdote of Mrs. Thrale, 521; Johnson's letters to, i. 204, 209, 214; his Italian and English Dictionary, Johnson writes Dedication for, 199; "Easy Lessons in Italian and English," Preface by Johnson for, 470; "Frusta Letteraria," ii. 114.
 Barnard, Dr., Bishop of Killaloe, i. 276, 481; ii. 359; tells anecdote of Johnson, i. 49 n.; Johnson calls on, ii. 370; charade on, by Johnson, 421; verses quoted, 370 n.
 Barnard, Dr., Dean of Kerry, ii. 158.
 Barnard, Dr., Provost of Eton, ii. 285.
 Barnard, Mr., King's librarian, i. 309, • 313.
 Barnes, Joshua, his Macaronic verses, ii. 189.
 Barnston, Letitia, ii. 277.
 Barretier, Philip, Johnson's Life of, i. 79.
 Barrington, Hon. Daines, ii. 450; his essay against migration of birds, i. 443; Johnson seeks his acquaintance, ii. 210.
 Barrow, Dr., his sermon quoted, ii. 363 n.
 Barry, Sir Edward, Bart., his "System of Physic," ii. 21.
 Barry, Mr., exhibition of pictures by, ii. 440; letter from Johnson to, 425.
 Barter, Mr., i. 388.
 Baskerville's edition of Virgil, Johnson presents copy of, to Trinity College, Oxford, i. 328; of Barclay's "Apology," 576.
 "Bastard, The," a poem, i. 91.

- Bate, Rev. Henry, the "fighting parson," ii. 487 *n*.
- Bateman, Mr., of Christchurch, Oxford, i. 33.
- Bath, visited by Johnson, ii. 28.
- Batheaston Villa, near Bath, i. 500.
- Bathurst, Colonel, i. 132 *n*.
- Bathurst, Dr. Richard, i. 105, 129, 132 *n*., 140, 141; ii. 313; death of, i. 134 *n*., 215.
- Bathurst, Lord, i. 81; ii. 234, 270, 327.
- Baxter, Richard, i. 447; his "Anacreon," collated by Lord Auchinleck with Leyden MS., ii. 451; his "Call to the Unconverted," 461; his Erse version of, presented by Johnson to Bodleian, i. 463; Johnson commends his works, ii. 441, 448.
- Bayle, Pierre, his "Dictionary," praised by Johnson, i. 242; his account of Menage, applied well, to Johnson, ii. 575 *n*.
- Beach, Thomas, his "Eugenio," i. 438 *n*.
- Beattie, Dr. J., i. 408, 451, 455; ii. 361, 509, 511; introduced to Johnson, i. 372; his wife, 375, 377; his college, 375; his popularity, 378, 454; letter to Boswell, 377 *n*.; letter to, from Johnson, ii. 289; Johnson's admiration for his works, i. 413; ii. 416.
- Beauclerk, Lady Di, i. 437, 472; her bet with Boswell, 495.
- Beauclerk, Lord Sidney, i. 137.
- Beauclerk, Topham, i. 45, 137, 202, 210, 214, 245, 275, 308, 360, 430, 434, 437, 442 *n*., 476, 488, 492, 504, 505 *n*., 506, 526; ii. 12, 129 *n*., 139, 236, 238, 258, 280, 301, 312; entertains Johnson at Windsor, i. 138; visits Cambridge with, 280; witness at Baret's trial, 345; called *Beau*, 450; his illness, 472, 484; ii. 67; his sayings, i. 514; ii. 423; anecdote told by, i. 542; his equable disposition, ii. 3, 128; his account of play at Almack's, 14; argues with Johnson, 187; quarrels with Johnson, 257; criticised by Johnson, 262; his death, 282, 284; Johnson's affection for him, 301; his inscription under Johnson's portrait, 358, 413; his library sold, 363; letter to, from Johnson, i. 134 *n*.
- Beaufort, Duchess of, ii. 285.
- Beaumont, Francis, i. 33.
- Beaumont and Fletcher, anecdote of, i. 499.
- "Beauties of Johnson," unauthorized publication, ii. 393; criticised, 394.
- Beckford, Alderman, ii. 50, 134.
- Bedford, Duke of, attacks Ministry, ii. 501.
- Bedlam, visited by Johnson, i. 523.
- Beggars' Opera, the, criticised by Johnson, ii. 215; quoted, 357.
- Behmen, Jacob, i. 362.
- Belgrade, siege of, described by Paoli, i. 399.
- Bell, John, his "Travels," i. 322.
- Bell, Mrs., Johnson writes part of Epitaph on, i. 411 *n*.
- Bellamy, Mrs., letter to Johnson, ii. 452 *n*.
- Belsham, W., his "Essay on Dramatic Poetry," quoted, i. 219.
- Bennet, Mr., Johnson writes Dedication for, i. 267.
- Bentham, Rev. Dr., of Oxford, i. 567.
- Bentley, R., i. 31; works praised by Johnson, 567; ii. 310.
- Berenger, Richard, ii. 352, 354.
- Beresford, Mrs., an American lady, ii. 478.
- Beresford, Rev. Mr., ii. 190.
- Berkeley, Bishop, ii. 109; his sophistry, i. 271; ii. 312; Johnson's opinion of him, i. 367.
- Berwick, Memoirs of the Duke of, ii. 191.
- Berwick-upon-Tweed, Johnson passes through, i. 455.
- Bevill, Rev. Mr., his "Defence of Hammond," ii. 337 *n*.
- Bibliothèque, Johnson's scheme of, i. 159.
- Bickerstaff, Isaac, i. 337.
- Bicknell, Mr., his "Musical Travels of Joel Collyer," Johnson ridiculed in, i. 177.
- Binning, Lord, i. 403; ii. 222.
- "Biographia Britannica," i. 569; Johnson declines to edit, ii. 115; quoted, 219 *n*.
- "Biographia Dramatica," i. 203 *n*.
- "Biographical Dictionary," i. 203 *n*.
- Birch, Rev. Dr. T., letters to Mrs. Elizabeth Carter, i. 73; to Johnson, 160; letters to, from Cave, 80, 82; from Johnson, 87, 126, 159; from Earl of Orrery, 103; from Bishop Warburton, 3.
- Birmingham, i. 8, 37, 45, 51; visited by Johnson, 38, 42, 574; ii. 384.
- Bishop, a liquor, i. 139.
- Blackfriars Bridge, i. 198.
- Blacklock, Dr. Thomas, i. 186; Johnson's opinion of his poetry, 268.
- Blackmore, Sir Richard, his poems, ii. 249; criticised by Johnson, i. 353; Johnson's Life of, quoted, ii. 330.
- Blackstone, Judge, i. 33; ii. 258, 354; quoted, i. 511 *n*.
- Blackwall, Anthony, i. 37.
- Blagden, Dr., ii. 314.
- Blair, Rev. Dr. Hugh, i. 203, 223, 325, 461, 463, 474; ii. 31; his sermons

- praised by Johnson, 63, 67, 110, 140, 228, 359; attacks Johnson's style, 114; letter to Boswell, 270.
- Blair, Rev. Robert, "The Grave," a poem, ii. 30.
- Blake, Admiral, Johnson's Life of, i. 79.
- Blanchetti, Marquis and Marchioness, i. 532.
- Bland, Richard, of Virginia, i. 415 n.
- Blaney, Elizabeth, i. 9; ii. 537.
- Blenheim Park, i. 570.
- Bocage, i. 532.
- Bocardo, i. 108 n.
- Bodleian Library, i. 153, 310; ii. 247; Johnson presents books to, i. 169, 463 n.
- Boerhave, i. 522; his Life by Johnson, 74.
- Boethius, i. 74, 364.
- Boileau, ii. 234; his imitation of Juvenal, i. 60; quoted, ii. 524.
- Bolingbroke, Lady, her description of Pope, ii. 217.
- Bolingbroke, Lord, ii. 231, 234, 236, 270, 327; condemned by Johnson, i. 150, 184; letter to Sir William Wyndham, ii. 156 n.
- Bolingbroke, second Lord, i. 442 n.
- Bologna sausages, praised by Johnson, i. 408.
- Bonhours, Dominique, on beauty, i. 341.
- Bonner, Bishop, i. 33 n.
- "Bon Ton," a play, i. 492.
- Booksellers, provincial, rare in Johnson's time, i. 8.
- Boothby, Miss, correspondence with Johnson, i. 8 n., 496 n.; letter from Johnson to, ii. 332 n.
- Boothby, Mrs. Hill, i. 37.
- Boscawen, Hon. Mrs., ii. 222, 285, 358.
- Boscovich, Père Roger Joseph, i. 363; praises Johnson's Latin conversation, 542.
- Bosville, Mrs., i. 391.
- Boswell, Sir Alexander, i. 399 n.
- Boswell, Claude Irvine, Lord Balmuto, ii. 62 n.
- Boswell, David, ancestor of J. Boswell, i. 546.
- Boswell, Dr., i. 250; his description of Johnson, ii. 5.
- Boswell, Mrs., i. 459, 462, 526, 528; ii. 244; dislikes Johnson, i. 457; present from Johnson to, ii. 250; illness and death, 142, 385 n.; letter to Johnson, 399; letters to, from Johnson, 57, 398.
- Boswell, James, his views on biography, i. 3-7; on the Slave Trade, ii. 135; first interview with Johnson, i. 221; gives Johnson a sketch of his life, 229; anecdote of his childhood, 246 n.; goes with Johnson to Greenwich, 262; to Oxford, 316, 564; to the Pantheon, 391; to Bedlam, 523; to Birmingham, 574; to Lichfield, 578; to Bath, ii. 29; to Bristol, 31; to Ashbourne, 88; to Keddlestone, 105; to Derby, 107; to Sheffield, 382; goes abroad, i. 271; goes to Shakespeare Jubilee, 329; visits the Thrales at Streatham, 334; ii. 149, 232; presents Paoli to Johnson, i. 335; witnesses execution at Tyburn, 342; at Newgate, ii. 508; quarrels with Johnson, i. 352; ii. 227; marries his cousin, i. 371; questions Johnson as to his history, 390; goes to Mrs. Abington's benefit, 490; has a room in Johnson's house, 524; consults Lord Hailes about the entail, 550; his conversation with Captain Cook, ii. 5; lives with General Paoli, 22; defends liberty of pulpit, 37; sends Johnson Lord Hailes' "Annals of Scotland," 78; regrets his censure of "Biographia Britannica," 116 n.; engaged at the Parliamentary Bar, 148; his shorthand, 179; is introduced to Wesley, 265; his illness, 262; procures for Johnson information about Pope, 280; attends meeting of Robin Hood Society, 355, 357; engaged in ludicrous action in Court of Sessions, 379; parts with apprehension from Johnson, 441, 443; makes application to Lord Thurlow on Johnson's behalf, 507; bids farewell to Johnson, 515; letters to Dr. Cullen, 464; to Dr. Hope, 464; to Johnson, i. 274, 301, 323, 371-374, 413, 457, 463, 465, 471, 472, 482, 526, 529, 542, 552; ii. 57, 59, 60, 65, 69, 70, 76, 79 n., 83-87, 139, 143, 145, 184, 242, 249, 262, 266, 276, 278, 289, 292, 451, 455; to Munro, 464; to Dr. Percy, 185; to Pitt, 463 n.; letters to, from Dr. Adams, 540, 566 n.; from Rev. Mr. Agutter, 570 n.; from Dr. Beattie, i. 377 n.; from Dr. Blair, ii. 270; from E. Dilly, 71; from Sir W. Forbes, enclosing the Round Robin, 54; from Lord Hailes, i. 247; from Warren Hastings, ii. 338; from Johnson, i. 272, 289, 300, 323, 330, 354, 375, 412, 414, 454-474, 483, 526-530, 544, 547-553; ii. 28, 57, 58, 61, 67-70, 78-80, 83-88, 139-143, 185, 244, 248, 250, 263-266, 277-281, 290, 294, 341, 385, 393, 396-401, 445, 451, 455, 462, 463, 465, 522, 523, 541, 542; from Langton, 243, 284; from Mickle, 456; from Lord Thurlow, 513; from Rev. Dr. Vyse, 82; his "Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides," i. 279, 398 n., 421 n., 478; ii. 67 n., 126, 216 n., 243, 406 n., 471 n., 480 n., 554 n.;

- praised by Courtenay, by Mrs. Thrale, i. 456, 527; quoted, 8, 56, 90, 112, 124*n.*, 197, 246, 261; ii. 433*n.*; his "Thesis in Civil Law," i. 299; his "Account of Corsica" published, 316; quoted, 323*n.*; his "Hypochondriac," 342*n.*; ii. 512*n.*; his "Matrimonial Thought," i. 355; his "Essence of the Douglas cause," 431*n.*; Journal, ii. 138; quoted, 149; verses to Hon. Miss Monckton, quoted, 366*n.*; letter to the people of Scotland, 408*n.*
- Boswell, Thomas, founder of the family, i. 546.
- Boswell, Thomas David, ii. 121*n.*, 292; introduced to Johnson, 289; his account of Johnson's death, 567.
- Bouchier, Governor, i. 352.
- Bouffier, Claude, i. 271*n.*
- Bouffiers, Madame de, visits Johnson, i. 360, 542.
- Boulter, Archbishop, i. 179.
- Bouquet, Mr., bookseller, i. 135.
- Bourdonne, Madame de, i. 438.
- Bowles, William, Johnson stays with, ii. 446.
- Bowyer, William, Life of, ii. 535*n.*
- Boydell, Alderman, i. 472*n.*
- Boyle, Mr., his "Martyrdom of Theodora," i. 175.
- Bradley, in Derbyshire, visited by Johnson, i. 36.
- Braithwaite, Mr., of the Post Office, ii. 474.
- Bramhall, Bishop, on "Liberty and Necessity," i. 350.
- Brett, Colonel, i. 96*n.*
- Brightheimstone, Johnson visits, i. 329; ii. 62, 139, 398.
- Bristol, Johnson visits, ii. 31.
- Brocklesby, Dr., ii. 410, 444, 453, 459, 464, 471; his generosity to Johnson, 515, 556; his account of Johnson's death, 566; letter to Johnson, 447*n.*, letters to, from Johnson, 446, 525-528.
- Bromley, in Kent, i. 134.
- Brooke, Henry, author of "The Fool of Quality" and "Gustavus Vasa," 75*n.*; Johnson's essay on the latter, 75.
- Brooks's Club, origin of, ii. 15*n.*
- Broome, Life of, by Johnson, ii. 326.
- Brown, *Capability*, i. 571; ii. 269.
- Brown, Rev. Robert, of Utrecht, i. 292; ii. 192.
- Brown, Tom, teaches Johnson, i. 13.
- Browne, Isaac Hawkins, i. 502; ii. 471.
- Browne, Rev. Dr. John, of Cambridge, i. 366.
- Browne, Sir Thomas, i. 33; ii. 196; influence on Johnson's style, i. 123; his "Christian Morals," edited by Johnson, with life prefixed, 172.
- Bruce, James, criticised by Johnson, i. 498.
- Bruce, Robert, i. 457.
- Brumoy, Père, Johnson translates for Mrs. Lenox's English version of, i. 195.
- Brydone, Patrick, "A Tour through Sicily and Malta," i. 505, 583; ii. 240.
- Buchan, Earl of, i. 396.
- Buchanan, George, Johnson admires his poems, i. 264, 344; ii. 415.
- Buckingham, Duchess of, ii. 159.
- Budgell, Eustace, i. 430; ii. 29.
- Budworth, Rev. Mr., 37*n.*
- Bulse, Indian measure of diamonds, ii. 240.
- Bunbury, Sir Charles, i. 276, 461, 488; ii. 257*n.*; pallbearer at Johnson's funeral, 568.
- Bunbury, Henry, i. 235*n.*
- Bunyan, John, admired by Johnson, i. 436.
- Burgoyne, General, his surrender at Saratoga, ii. 240.
- Burke, Edmund, i. 194, 276, 297, 370, 399, 426*n.*, 437, 449, 507*n.*; ii. 29, 52, 174, 204, 207, 253, 254, 312, 333, 346, 347, 360, 472, 519; in praise of Johnson, i. 40; ii. 40; Johnson's views on, i. 259, 366, 570; ii. 164*n.*; witness at Baret's trial, i. 344; Goldsmith's view of his oratory, 452; writes Round Robin, ii. 55; his equitable disposition, 128; his witticisms, 216, 343; his argument on happiness, 491; his speech parodied by Johnson, 501; his defence of Johnson, 501; differs from Johnson on Baret's case, 505; compares Johnson to Appius, 538*n.*; at Johnson's sickbed, 561; pallbearer at Johnson's funeral, 568; his "Vindication of Natural Society," i. 266*n.*; his essay on the Sublime and Beautiful, 341; his speech on American Taxation, 473; his "Letter to the Sheriffs of Bristol," criticised by Johnson, ii. 124.
- Burke, Richard, i. 276; ii. 534; his death, 438*n.*; his argument with Johnson, 512.
- Burlington, Lord, ii. 234.
- Burnet, Bishop, "History of his own Times," criticised by Johnson, i. 419.
- Burney, Dr. Charles, i. 224, 276, 287, 543; ii. 171, 358; praises Johnson's "Preface to Shakespeare," i. 287; engaged on his "History of Music," ii. 246, 247; his "Travels," praised by Johnson, 416; letters to, from Johnson, i. 160, 182, 183, 287; ii. 449, 529, 541; from a lady, i. 319; quoted, 184, 243*n.*, 454*n.*, 503*n.*; ii. 383.
- Burney, Dr. Charles, the younger, ii. 546.

- Burney, Frances, ii. 283, 472, 530; takes tea with Johnson, 440; quoted, 549.
- Burney, Mrs., i. 284 n.; ii. 430; her illness, 529.
- Burrowes, Rev. Robert, his "Essay on the style of Dr. Samuel Johnson," ii. 546.
- Burrows, Rev. Dr., his sermon, ii. 254.
- Burton, Robert, at Oxford, i. 24; his "Anatomy of Melancholy" praised by Johnson, 361, 565.
- Burton's Books, ii. 461.
- Bute, Earl of, i. 211, 217, 490 n., 510, 511; ii. 51; Johnson's opinion of, i. 585; letters from Johnson to, 212, 214.
- Butler, Samuel, i. 437; Johnson's opinion of "Hudibras," 520; quoted, ii. 487.
- Butter, Dr., of Derby, i. 589; ii. 101, 108, 556.
- Byng, Admiral, i. 365; defended by Johnson, 176; his Epitaph quoted, 176.
- Byng, Hon. John, his letter to Malone, ii. 567.
- CADELL, Mr., i. 555; ii. 224.
- Cæsar, Julius, Bacon's remark on, i. 7.
- Cædonian Mercury, The, quoted, ii. 380.
- Callimachus, Johnson's opinion of, ii. 296.
- Cambridge, visited by Johnson, i. 280.
- Cambridge, Richard Owen, i. 515; ii. 166; communicates particulars about Johnson, 421; his death, 422 n.
- Camden, Lord, i. 486 n.; his judgment on Douglas Cause, 431 n.; anecdote of, ii. 208.
- Camden, William, his "Remains," ii. 204, 433.
- Cameron, Dr. Archibald, execution of, i. 78.
- Campbell, Archibald, his "Lexiphanes," satire on Johnson, i. 315.
- Campbell, Hon. Archibald, non-juring bishop, i. 421; praised by Johnson, ii. 480.
- Campbell, Sir Archibald, ii. 37.
- Campbell, Rev. Dr., of St. Andrew's, i. 203.
- Campbell, Dr. John, i. 319, 484; Johnson's opinion of, 237, 420, 569; ii. 161.
- Campbell, Rev. John, of Kippen, letter to Boswell, i. 305 n.
- Campbell, Mungo, case of, ii. 125.
- Campbell, Dr. Thomas, i. 501, 503, 508; ii. 73; his "Diary of a Visit to England," quoted, i. 47 n., 179; his "Philosophical Survey of the South of Ireland," 501.
- "Candide," compared with "Rasselas," i. 192; ii. 240.
- Canus, Melchior, of Toledo, i. 533.
- Cardross, Lord, *see* Buchan, Earl of.
- Careless, Mrs., Johnson's first love, i. 577, 578.
- Carleton, Captain, his "Memoirs," ii. 511.
- Carlisle, Frederick, fifth Earl of, his poems criticised by Johnson, ii. 369, 454.
- Carmichael, Miss, ii. 147.
- Carter, Dr. Nicholas, i. 63 n.
- Carter, Mrs. Elizabeth, i. 134, 257 n.; ii. 357, 472; account of, i. 63 n.; writes in the "Rambler," 112; her early rising, ii. 111; letter from Dr. Birch to, i. 73.
- Carteret, Lord, *see* Granville, Lord.
- Catcot, George, ii. 31.
- Catiline, Sallust on, i. 5.
- Cator, Mr., ii. 498.
- Catullus, quoted, ii. 412.
- Cave, Miss, i. 42.
- Cave, Edward, i. 57, 59, 80, 87, 91 n., 117; ii. 215; Johnson's first publisher, i. 50; begins "Gentleman's Magazine," 56; sees a ghost, 397; Johnson's opinion of, ii. 562; his letters to Dr. Birch, i. 74, 82; letters from Johnson to, 42, 52, 62, 63, 64, 71, 72, 85; Johnson's life of, 143.
- Cavendish Debates, ii. 502 n.
- Caxton, William, ii. 169.
- Cecil, Colonel, i. 401.
- Cervantes, i. 521.
- Chalmers, George, i. 81 n.
- Chamberlayne, Rev. Mr., ii. 481.
- Chambers, Catherine, i. 190, 192, 314.
- Chambers, Ephraim, his "Proposal" for the Dictionary, i. 122.
- Chambers, Sir Robert, i. 187, 209, 276, 454, 459, 464; ii. 14, 339, 519; his intimacy with Johnson, i. 303; Vinerian Professor, 316; draws Langton's will, 453; his marriage, 461; letter to, from Johnson, 153.
- Chambers, Sir William, his "Chinese Architecture" praised by Johnson, ii. 417.
- Chamier, Mr., i. 275, 505 n.; ii. 144, 168.
- "Champion, The," quoted, i. 92.
- Chapone, Mrs., writes for the "Rambler," i. 112; letter from Johnson to, ii. 454.
- Charlemont, James, first Earl of, i. 276, 434; ii. 238 n., 346, 347.
- Charles I., i. 419, 520, 521.
- Charles II., i. 137, 253, 313, 520, 521; defended by Johnson, 502.
- Charles V., witty saying of, i. 336; censured by Lord Kames, ii. 164.

- Charles XII., of Sweden, ii. 176; Johnson's lines on, i. 108.
- Charles Edward, Prince, i. 158 n., 245.
- Charlotte, Queen, i. 373.
- Charterhouse, the, i. 104; ii. 294.
- Chatham, Earl of, i. 363, 425 n., 428, 486; Johnson's opinion of, ii. 241; first speech in House of Lords, 501.
- Chatsworth, visited by Johnson, ii. 527.
- Chatterton, T., the "Rowley Poems," ii. 31, 388.
- Chelsea College, i. 326.
- Chesterfield, Philip, fourth Earl of, i. 48 n., 80, 159 n., 502; ii. 45, 260, 346; "Plan" of Dictionary addressed to, i. 102; his insolence, 143; ii. 408; his eulogy of the "Dictionary" in the "World," i. 144; his epigram on Sir Thomas Robinson, 248 n.; his pronunciation, 386; Johnson's opinion of him, 149, 418; ii. 511; letter from Johnson to, i. 146; Dilly's edition of his miscellaneous works, ii. 237; his "Letters" criticised by Johnson, i. 149, 495; ii. 33; *Literary Property* of letters contested, i. 149; quoted, 16.
- Chesterfield, Philip, fifth Earl of, at Dodd's trial, ii. 91.
- Cheyne, Dr. George, "The English Malady," i. 27; ii. 17, 58.
- Cheyne, Johnson's Life of, i. 127.
- China, wall of, ii. 179.
- Choisi, Abbé, ii. 226.
- Cholmondeley, George James, anecdote of, ii. 519.
- Cholmondeley, Hon. Mrs., i. 363; ii. 171, 174, 213.
- Christian, Rev. Mr., of Docking, i. 319.
- Churchill, Rev. C., i. 223, 241 n.; ii. 165; satirizes Johnson in "The Ghost," i. 231; his poems criticised by Johnson, 238; his "Prophecy of Famine," 238; his "Rosciad," 311 n., 327 n.; quoted, 65, 180, 278; ii. 148.
- Churton, Rev. Ralph, i. 450 n.; his views on a passage in the burial service, ii. 433 n.; on Boswell's Life of Johnson, 489 n.
- Cibber, Colley, i. 96 n., 143; ii. 175; Johnson's epigram on, i. 80, 228; his opinion of, 228, 342, 501; ii. 452; Poet Laureate, i. 102 n.; his recollection of Dryden, ii. 47; consults Johnson, 122; his "Provoked Husband," i. 317; his "Nonjuror," 490; quoted, 347; ii. 472.
- Cibber, Mrs., i. 110, 342.
- Cibber, Theophilus, "Lives of the Poets," ii. 19.
- Clare, Lord, *see* Nugent, Robert.
- Clarendon, Lord, his "History," i. 166 n.; his MSS. presented to the University of Oxford, 554; criticised by Johnson, ii. 171; his account of Villier's Ghost, 237; his character of Falkland, 575 n.
- Clarendon Press, i. 554, 565.
- Clark, Mr., of Edinburgh, his pamphlet answered by Johnson, ii. 457.
- Clark, Alderman Richard, letter from Johnson to, ii. 461.
- Clarke, Rev. Dr., i. 105 n., 225, 350; ii. 566; his sermons, 164.
- Clenardus's Greek Grammar, ii. 307.
- Clerk, Sir Philip Jennings, ii. 348.
- Clermont, Lady, ii. 285.
- Clive, Lord, ii. 225; his suicide, 237; anecdote of, 269.
- Clive, Mrs., i. 206 n.; ii. 452; Johnson's praise of, 299.
- Clubs: the Literary, i. 275, 297, 299, 434, 449, 488, 495; ii. 84, 139, 153 n., 187, 246, 248, 257 n., 568; proposed augmentation of, 69; note to, from Johnson, 351; the Blue-Stocking, 365; the city, 351; the Eumelian, 553; the Essex Head, i. 26 n.; ii. 458, 460 n., 461, 525; the King's Head, i. 106 n.; ii. 458.
- Cobb, Mrs., i. 531, 582; ii. 276.
- Cock Lane Ghost, ii. 178; Johnson's account of, i. 231.
- Cohausen, J. H., his "Hermippus Redivivus," i. 237, 556.
- Coke, Lord, i. 384.
- Col, Island of, visited by Johnson, i. 456, 479; the Laird of, 478.
- Colchester, visited by Johnson, i. 269.
- Collins, W., i. 154, 155; his character, written by Johnson, 215.
- Colman, George, the elder, i. 116, 276, 317 n., 488; ii. 63, 215, 301, 306; pallbearer at Johnson's funeral, 568; his "Jealous Wife," i. 206; his "Odes to Obscurity and Oblivion," 498; his "Letter from Lexiphanes," quoted, ii. 548.
- Colman, George, the younger, his "Random Records," quoted, ii. 34 n.
- Colson, Rev. John, letter from Walmsley, i. 50.
- Comhabus, story of, ii. 158 n.
- "Comus," Johnson's Prologue to, i. 126.
- Confession of Faith of Assembly of Divines at Westminster (Erse), i. 463.
- Congreve, Rev. Charles, Johnson's school-fellow, i. 14; Johnson laments his condition, i. 577, 588.
- Congreve, W., his "Mourning Bride," praised by Johnson, i. 339, 344; his verdict on the "Beggars Opera," 519 n.; stays at Islam, ii. 124; quoted,

- i. 219, 429; Johnson's life of, quoted, ii. 331.
 "Connoisseur," the, i. 239.
 "Considerations on dispute between Crousaz and Warburton," by Johnson, i. 85.
 Cook, Captain, ii. 5; his "Voyages to the South Sea," 495.
 Cooksey, R., Essay on Life of Lord Somers, i. 489 n.
 Cooper, John Gilbert, ii. 297; nicknamed by Johnson, i. 365; anecdote of, ii. 97.
 Coriat, Tom, his travels, i. 395.
 Cork, Countess of (Miss Monckton), ii. 365.
 Cork and Orrery, Earl of, i. 167; writes in "The World," 144 n.; Johnson's opinion of, 365; ii. 121.
 Cotterell, Admiral, i. 135.
 Cotterell, the Misses, i. 135, 209, 215.
 Coughlan, Anne, wife of Hon. Thomas Hervey, i. 308 n.
 Court of Session, decision of, in the Negro cause, ii. 140.
 Courtenay, John, i. 276; ii. 204; on the "Beggars Opera," i. 519; his "Poetical Review of Johnson," 489 n.; ii. 504 n.; quoted, i. 25, 100 n., 123, 177, 194; ii. 544 n.
 Coverley, Sir Roger de, praised by Johnson, i. 521.
 Covington, Lord, i. 142.
 Cowley, Abraham, on "Plants," i. 140 n.; Hurd's selection of his works, ii. 150; Johnson's Life of, i. 98; quoted, ii. 320.
 Cowper, William, ii. 224 n.
 Coxeter, Mr., his collection of English Poets, ii. 103.
 Crabbe, Rev. George, his "Village" revised by Johnson, ii. 409.
 Cradock, Mr., author of "Zobeide," ii. 24.
 Crashaw, R., quoted, ii. 204.
 Craven, Lady, ii. 14.
 "Critical Review," The, i. 200; Johnson's writings in, 233, 277; opinion of, 312; ii. 21; quoted, i. 233 n.; ii. 113.
 "Critical Strictures," pamphlet by Boswell and others, i. 232.
 Croft, Rev. Sir Herbert, ii. 488; his "Life of Young," 332; his "Love and Madness," 416 n.; his advice to his pupil, 495.
 Crouch, Mrs., ii. 442.
 Crousaz, his Examen of Pope's "Essay on Man," i. 72.
 Cruikshank, Mr., ii. 438; letters from Johnson to, 450, 533.
 Cullen, Dr., i. 522; on sleep, ii. 111; his letter to Boswell, 464; letter to, from Boswell, 464.
 Cullen, Mr., concerned in Negro cause, ii. 83, 141.
 Cumberland, William, Duke of, i. 158 n., 524; ii. 167 n.
 Cumberland, R., ii. 26 n., 546; his "Memoirs," i. 51 n., 381 n.; his "Observer," ii. 337; his "Odes," 28.
 Cumming, a Quaker, ii. 433.
 Cunningham, Mr., his duel, ii. 432 n.
 Cust, Francis Cockayne, i. 88 n., 93.
 DACIER, Madame, ii. 224 n.
 Daline, his History of Sweden, i. 382.
 Dalrymple, Sir David, *see* Hailes, Lord.
 Dalrymple, Sir John, his "Memoirs of Great Britain and Ireland" criticised by Johnson, i. 417.
 Dalzel, Professor, on Johnson's knowledge of Greek, ii. 546.
 Dante, i. 436; quoted, ii. 152 n.
 Dartineuf, Charles, i. 569 n.
 Dashwood, Sir Francis, i. 65 n.
 Davies, Thomas, i. 241, 278, 325, 326, 337, 339, 450; ii. 300, 303; introduces Boswell to Johnson, i. 221; quarrels with Baretti, 414; his unauthorized publication of Johnson's miscellanies, 458; misquotes *bon mot* of Johnson's, 508; describes Johnson's laugh, 525; in bad circumstances, ii. 148; plans benefit at Drury Lane, 165; his "Memoirs of David Garrick," 290; Johnson dines with, i. 476, 501; ii. 24; Johnson's views on, i. 343; ii. 303; letters from Johnson to, 444, 533.
 Davies, Mrs., i. 220, 279.
 Davison, Secretary, i. 247 n.
 Dawkins, "Jamaica," ii. 378.
 Dawson, his "Lexicon to the Greek New Testament," ii. 273.
 Deane, Rev. Mr., his essay "On the future life of Brutes," i. 320.
 Death-warrants, ii. 79 n.
 "Debates on Proposal of Parliament to Cromwell to assume the Title of King," by Johnson, i. 80.
 Defoe, Daniel, i. 388 n.; Johnson gives list of his works, ii. 177.
 DeGroot befriended by Johnson, ii. 81.
 Delany, his "Observations on Swift" praised by Johnson, ii. 166.
 DeMoret, aeronaut, ii. 526 n.
 Demosthenes, i. 393, 418.
 Dempster, Mr., i. 232, 248, 250, 251, 408, 480; censured by Johnson, 253; letter to Boswell quoted, 478.
 Dennis, John, his "Critical Works" commended by Johnson, ii. 26.
 Derby, Johnson married at, i. 45.

- Derby, Rev. Mr., Johnson writes Dedication for, ii. 73.
- Derrick, Samuel, ii. 445 n.; Johnson on, i. 217, 222, 261; ii. 420; quoted, i. 64; anecdote of, 261.
- Desmoulins, Mrs., i. 377; ii. 446; supported by Dr. Johnson, i. 27, 37; ii. 148; her story of Mrs. Johnson's selfishness, i. 132; her illness, ii. 406, 460; her anecdote of Johnson, 504; at Johnson's death-bed, 567.
- Devaynes, Mr., apothecary to His Majesty, ii. 471.
- Devonshire, Duchess of, ii. 251.
- Devonshire, Duke and Duchess of, entertain Johnson at Chatsworth, ii. 527.
- Devonshire, William, third Duke of, characterized by Johnson, ii. 124.
- Diamond, Mr., i. 134.
- Diary, Johnson's, quoted, i. 30, 35, 37, 139, 142, 281, 288; ii. 384, 386, 446, 474; his "*Ægri Ephemeris*," 543.
- Dibden, C., i. 355.
- Dick, Sir Alexander, Bart., ii. 83; consulted by Johnson, 462; his letter to Johnson, 66.
- Dictionary of the English language, by Johnson, i. 121, 143, 160, 162, 216 n., 253, 266, 382, 414, 416, 450; ii. 297 n.; first proposed to Johnson by Dodsley, i. 101; ii. 272; publication of Plan, i. 100; its dedication to Lord Chesterfield, 101; praised by Lord Orrery, 103; mode of writing, 104; discussed, 164-169; not a financial success, 170; reviewed in the "*Bibliothèque des Savans*," 182; quoted, 101, 139 n., 165, 167; ii. 131 n., 233 n.; parody of, quoted, 548.
- Dictionary, Medicinal, Johnson's Dedication to Dr. Mead, quoted, i. 86.
- Dilly, Charles and Edward, i. 443, 555; ii. 4, 191; Johnson dines with, i. 501; ii. 44, 190, 241, 242, 263, 361, 474, 509; letters to Charles from Johnson, 265, 460; letter from Edward to Boswell, 71; death of Edward, 266.
- Dilly, Mr., of Southill, Beds., i. 145, 443; Johnson stays with, ii. 372.
- Diogenes Laertius, records saying of Aristotle, ii. 303.
- D'Israeli, Isaac, "Calamities and Quarrels of Authors," i. 60 n.
- "Dissertation on the State of Literature and Authors," by Johnson, i. 172.
- Dixie, Sir Wolstan, Johnson disagrees with, i. 38.
- Dodd, Rev. Dr. William, ii. 83, 187; history of his crime, 90-97; his execution, 78, 96; Johnson's opinion of, 79, 109, 429; his sermons, 165; his poem, "Thoughts in Prison," 179; his letters to Johnson, 94, 96.
- Doddington, Mr. (*see* Lord Melcombe), ii. 334 n.
- Dodsley, James, i. 101, 110.
- Dodsley, Robert, i. 63, 64, 101, 112 n., 134, 148, 161, 178, 192, 568; suggests the "Dictionary" to Johnson, 101; ii. 272; buys "Irene," i. 110; disputes with Goldsmith, ii. 24; "Public Virtue," a poem by, 307; "Cleone," a tragedy by, i. 189; ii. 307.
- Dominicetti, Italian quack, i. 346.
- Donaldson, Alexander, bookseller, censured by Johnson, i. 250.
- Donne, Dr., Walton's Life of, i. 568; praised by Johnson, 517.
- Don Quixote, i. 30 n.
- Dosa, the brothers, i. 291 n.
- Dossie, Mr., Johnson's kindness to, ii. 301.
- Douglas, his collection of editions of Horace, ii. 475.
- Douglas, Dr., Bishop of Salisbury, i. 75, 145 n., 276, 325, 327; his history, 65; detects Lander's forgery, 127; investigates Cock Lane Ghost, 231; anecdote of Johnson by, 246; Johnson dines with, 542; calls on Johnson, ii. 474.
- Douglas, Dr., his literary fraud, i. 203.
- Douglas Estate, litigation concerning the, i. 431; ii. 5.
- Douglas, Mr. and Lady Jane, i. 431.
- Douglas, Sir James, ii. 118.
- Doxey, Miss, Garrick's niece, ii. 279 n., 280.
- Drake, Sir Francis, Johnson's Life of, i. 79.
- "Draughts, Introduction to the Game of," Johnson's dedication for, i. 178.
- Dreghorn, Lord, *see* Maclaurin, Mr.
- Drelincourt on Death, i. 387.
- Dromore, Bishop of, *see* Percy, Dr.
- Drumgold, Colonel, Johnson dines with, i. 538; praised by Johnson, 540.
- Drummond, Dr., ii. 58, 257.
- Drummond of Hawthornden, his "Polemo-Middinia," ii. 189.
- Drummond, William, i. 304; letters from Johnson to, 304-307.
- Drury Lane Journal, i. 121 n.
- Drury Lane Theatre, i. 56, 82, 100, 108, 126, 232, 492.
- Dryden, J., i. 391; ii. 319; Johnson on, i. 338, 492; ii. 234; quoted, i. 363, 426, 438; ii. 324, 492; Johnson's Life of, quoted, 324.
- Dublin Journal, i. 381 n.
- Dublin Society, i. 179 n.
- Dublin, Trinity College, i. 234; confers

- Doctor's degree on Johnson, 281;
Flood's bequest to, 181 *n*.
- Du Bocage, Madame, "The Colom-
biade," by, ii. 510.
- Du Bos, his "Réflexions Critiques sur
la Poésie et la Peinture," i. 341.
- Ducket, George, i. 179 *n*.
- Du Halde, his "Description of China,"
i. 72 *n*., 322; ii. 314.
- Dunbar, Dr., of Aberdeen, ii. 290.
- "Dunciad," The, i. 83 *n*.
- Duncombe, Mr., of Canterbury, praised
by Johnson, ii. 210.
- Dundas, Henry (Lord Melville), i. 149;
his pronunciation, 385; counsel for
Joseph Knight (the negro), ii. 141.
- Dunfermline, contested election for, i. 37.
- Dunning, John, Lord Ashburton, i. 276;
ii. 84; his accent, i. 384; compliments
Johnson, ii. 160.
- Dunsinan, Lord, ii. 26.
- Dunvegan, House of, i. 527.
- Dury, Major-General Alexander, i. 188.
- Dyer, John, "The fleece," by, i. 572.
- Dyer, Samuel, i. 276, 297 *n*.; ii. 301.
- EASTON MAUDIT, visited by Johnson,
i. 280.
- Eccles, Rev. Mr., literary fraud by, i. 203.
- Eccles, Mr., i. 241.
- Ecclesiasticus, quoted, ii. 120.
- École Militaire, visited by Johnson, i.
532.
- Eddystone, Johnson tries to land on, i.
213.
- Edial, i. 56, 373; Johnson's school at, 46.
- Edinburgh visited by Johnson, i. 455,
456; Advocate's Library at, 117 *n*.;
Transactions of Royal Society of,
quoted, 536 *n*.
- Edward I., Lord Hailes on, i. 466.
- Edwards, fellow-collegian of Johnson's,
ii. 202, 353.
- Edwards of New England, on Grace, ii.
194.
- Edwards, Rev. Dr., of Oxford, Johnson's
letter to, ii. 247.
- Edwards, Thomas, his "Canons of Crit-
icism," i. 147 *n*.
- Egg, Isle of, Erse MSS. from, i. 483.
- Eglington, Alexander, Earl of, discusses
Johnson, i. 327; his death, ii. 125;
Countess of, 246; his successor, 212.
- Egmont, John, Earl of, his history of
the House of Yvery, ii. 423.
- Eld, Mr., his definition of a Tory, ii. 218.
- Elbank, Patrick, Lord, i. 376, 403, 406,
461; ii. 15, 36; his epitaph on his wife,
301.
- Eliot, Lord, i. 276; ii. 34, 346, 507, 511.
- Elizabeth, Madame, i. 535.
- Elizabeth, Queen, ii. 303.
- Elloock, Lord (of Session), ii. 142.
- Elliot, Mr., i. 197.
- Elliot, Sir Gilbert, his pronunciation, i.
385.
- Ellis, Jack, the money-scrivener, John-
son used to dine with, ii. 13.
- Ellsfield, near Oxford, i. 152, 163.
- Elphinston, James, i. 306, 428; assists
Johnson with the "Rambler," 116, 125;
his translation of Martial, ii. 172; let-
ters to, from Johnson, 117; from
Tytler, 479.
- Elwal, E., heretic, i. 388, 446.
- Emmet, Mrs., i. 581.
- England, Church of, i. 267, 379.
- Epictetus, Discourses of, translated by
Mrs. Carter, i. 63.
- Epigrams, by Johnson, on Molly Aston,
i. 37 *n*.; ii. 229; on George II. and
Colley Cibber, i. 80.
- Epitaphs, by Johnson, on Phillips, i. 79;
on Sir T. Hanmer, 98; on Mrs. Johnson,
134 *n*.; on Mrs. Bell, 414 *n*.; on Mrs.
Salisbury, 454; on Goldsmith, ii. 54;
Johnson's Essay on, i. 79; Johnson's
dissertation on the epitaphs written by
Pope, 172.
- Erasmus, his "Dialogus Ciceronianus,"
ii. 525.
- Errol, Lord, ii. 112.
- Erskine, Hon. Andrew, i. 232; ii. 48.
- Erskine, Sir Harry, i. 217.
- Erskine, Thomas, Lord Erskine, i. 394,
396.
- Esquimaux, in London, i. 442.
- Essays, by Johnson, in the "Literary
Magazine," i. 172; on Dr. Halde's de-
scription of China, 85; on epitaphs, 79;
on the Duchess of Marlborough, 82.
- Essex, Robert, Earl of, letter to Lord
Rutland, quoted, i. 247.
- Ethiopia, History of, i. 39 *n*.
- "Eugenio," a poem, i. 63; quoted, 437.
- Euripides, i. 31, 398; quoted, 155.
- "European Magazine," i. 204 *n*., 307 *n*.,
353 *n*.; ii. 420 *n*.; quoted, i. 44 *n*.
- Eutropius, i. 436.
- Evans, bookseller, beaten by Goldsmith,
i. 417.
- Exeter, Bishop of, ii. 471.
- FALCONER, Rev. Dr., non-juring
Bishop, ii. 250.
- Falkland's Islands, Johnson's pamphlet
on, i. 368, 376, 485; suppressed by
Lord North, 368.
- "False Alarm, The," pamphlet by John-
son, i. 355, 376, 487.
- "Fantoccini," the, i. 235.
- Farmer, Rev. Dr., Master of Emmanuel

- College, Cambridge, i. 208; his "Essay on the Learning of Shakespeare," ii. 24; letters to, from Johnson, i. 357; ii. 285.
- Farquhar, "The Recruiting Officer," by, ii. 299.
- Faulkner, George, printer, i. 381.
- Fawkener, Sir Everard, i. 100 n.
- "Felixmarte of Hircania," i. 16.
- Fenton, Johnson's Life of, quoted, i. 490 n.
- Ferguson, Sir Adam, presented to Johnson, i. 392.
- Ferguson, James, astronomer, i. 346.
- Ferguson, James, advocate, ii. 141.
- Fermor, Arabella, i. 534; her niece, Abbess of Austin nuns, 534.
- Ferrara, Princess of, i. 216 n.
- Fielding, Henry, i. 93; ii. 143; his novels, i. 30 n.; ii. 28; Johnson's opinion of them, i. 317, 395.
- Fielding, Sir John, i. 241; ii. 286.
- Fife, Countess Dowager, her masquerade, i. 414.
- "Fingal," poem of, i. 473; Johnson's opinion of, 364.
- Fitzherbert, Alleyne, i. 36.
- Fitzherbert, Mr., i. 36, 205, 425, 430 n.; ii. 45, 158, 259, 313, 316; Johnson's opinion of, 97.
- Fitzherbert, William, his suicide, i. 430.
- Fitzherbert, Mrs., ii. 316.
- Five Fields (Belgravia), ii. 526 n.
- Flatman, poems by, ii. 19.
- Fleet Street, cheerfulness of, i. 500; ii. 202.
- Fleetwood, Mr., rejects "Irene," i. 56, 82.
- Flexman, Mr., Dissenting Minister, his index to "Rambler" censured by Johnson, ii. 506.
- Flint, Bet, anecdotes of, ii. 362.
- Flood, Right Hon. Henry, his will, i. 181 n.; his opinion of Johnson's oratory, 371; his sepulchral verses on Johnson, quoted, ii. 572.
- Flood, Lady Frances, i. 181 n.
- Floyd, anecdote of, i. 262.
- Floyer, Sir John, physician, i. 13; his works, 42 n.; ii. 572.
- Fludger, companion of Johnson at Oxford, i. 567.
- Fontainebleau, visited by Johnson, i. 529, 535.
- Fontenelle, Mémoires de, ii. 164.
- Foot, Samuel, i. 201, 239 n., 259, 352, 404 n., 420, 523, 538; ii. 123, 175, 473, 511; Johnson dines with, i. 82 n.; censured by Johnson, 343; his powers of mimicry, 381, 476; ii. 46; his death, 63 n.; anecdote of, 440.
- Forbes, Sir William, of Pitsligo, ii. 26, 147; letter to Boswell enclosing the *Round Robin*, 54; letter to Boswell, quoted, 138.
- Ford, Cornelius, Johnson's uncle, i. 16.
- Ford, Parson, Johnson's cousin, i. 16; story of his ghost, ii. 235.
- Ford, Sarah, *see* Johnson, Sarah.
- Fordyce, Dr. George, i. 276, 461, 488; ii. 507.
- Fordyce, Rev. Dr. James, i. 223; his friendship with Johnson, ii. 563.
- Forrester, Colonel, ii. 13.
- Forster, G., his "Voyage to the South Seas," ii. 119.
- Fort Augustus, Johnson passes through, i. 456, 479.
- Foster, Mrs. Elizabeth, befriended by Johnson, i. 127, 128.
- Fothergill, Rev. Dr., Vice-chancellor of the University of Oxford, i. 496, 497.
- "Foundling Hospital for Wit, The," ii. 482 n., 504 n.
- Fox, Charles James, i. 248 n., 276, 461, 488, 505 n.; his India Bill, 174; returned for Westminster and Kirkwall, ii. 466 n.; his unpopularity, 475; on deep play, 15 n.; on Goldsmith's "Traveller," 168, 173; Johnson's opinion of, 177, 403, 485.
- France, Johnson's views on life in, i. 540.
- Francis, Philip, Johnson commends his Horace, i. 240.
- Franklin, Rev. Dr., i. 200, 486; inscribes "Demonax" to Johnson, ii. 317.
- Frauds, literary, i. 203.
- Frederick the Great, King of Prussia, Johnson's views on his writings, i. 248.
- French, Mrs., her assemblies, ii. 326.
- Fréron, Mr., Johnson calls on, i. 533.
- Friendship, Johnson's ode on, quoted, i. 86.
- Frisk language, Johnson's interest in the, i. 274.
- Fullarton, William, meets Johnson, ii. 240.
- GALWAY, Lady, ii. 365.
- Ganganelli, his Letters, ii. 191.
- Gardiner, Mrs., i. 134; ii. 14; Johnson's kindness to, 453.
- Gardner, Mr., bookseller, i. 505.
- Garrick, Captain, i. 35.
- Garrick, David, i. 35, 49, 50, 56, 79, 82, 108, 109, 110, 111, 126, 135, 137, 139, 189, 206 n., 221, 228, 276, 277, 287 n., 311, 317 n., 337, 355, 366, 428, 429, 437, 449, 476, 484, 492, 525, 544, 563; ii. 15, 22, 32, 99, 172, 196, 215, 297, 299, 311, 452; pupil at Lichfield School, at Johnson's school, i. 13, 46; describes Mrs. Johnson, 47; anecdote of, 92;

- becomes manager of Drury Lane Theatre, 100; quarrels with Johnson, 109; Johnson's opinion of, 120, 225, 335, 342, 406; ii. 22, 122, 175, 259; on Goldsmith, i. 234 *n.*; on Johnson's wit, 432; his performance of "Ranger," 318; at Shakespeare Jubilee, 329; discusses with Johnson, 338; witness at Baretti's trial, 345; compliments the Queen, 433; mimics Johnson, 493; discussed by Johnson and Wilkes, ii. 45; his death, 249; extravagance of his funeral, 430; portrait and inscription, 358; bust, 440; ode on death of Pelham, i. 150; epigram on Johnson's Dictionary, 169; on Dr. J. Hill, 311 *n.*
- Garrick, George, i. 46; ii. 90.
- Garrick, Mrs., entertains Johnson at dinner, ii. 357, 472.
- Garrick, Peter, i. 49, 56, 484, 579, 582; ii. 276.
- Garth, Life of, by Johnson, ii. 464.
- Gastrel, Rev. Mr., cuts down Shakespeare's mulberry tree, i. 585.
- Gastrel, Mrs., i. 584; ii. 277.
- Gaubius, Professor, of Leyden, on delusions, i. 27.
- Gay, "The Beggar's Opera," by, i. 518, 519.
- "General Advertiser," letter to, from Johnson, i. 126.
- Gentleman, Mr., i. 216.
- "Gentleman's Magazine," i. 42, 56-116 *passim*, 128, 180, 199, 231, 280, 578; ii. 200 *n.*, 215, 499, 544, 562; Johnson's School advertisement appears in, i. 46; Johnson's contributions to, 42-106 *passim*, 143, 180, 199, 231; ii. 499, 544, 562; quoted, i. 99, 280; ii. 14 *n.*, 303 *n.*, 333.
- George I., Johnson inveighs against, i. 503.
- George II., i. 78, 116, 205, 388; Johnson inveighs against, 503; epigram on, by Johnson, 80.
- George III., i. 122, 199, 204, 210, 328, 426; ii. 475, 484; MS. of "Irene" presented to, i. 53; his first speech to Parliament, 199 *n.*; his interview with Johnson, 309-313; complimented by Johnson, 356; accepts a book from Johnson, 470; gives a vast sum of money to the nation, 510 *n.*; letter to, from Dr. Dodd, written by Johnson, ii. 94.
- Gerardi, Marchese, of Lombardy, ii. 218.
- Ghost, The Cock Lane, Johnson's account of, i. 231.
- Ghosts, Johnson's views on, i. 230.
- Giannone, Italian historian, ii. 296.
- Giardini, Felix, i. 427.
- Gibbon, Edward, i. 276, 460, 505 *n.*, 518; ii. 34, 166; succeeds Goldsmith as Professor in Ancient History, i. 328 *n.*; on the Pantheon, 391 *n.*; his history, ii. 162; first volume published, i. 569; imitates Johnson, ii. 549.
- Gibbons, Rev. Dr., ii. 378, 474.
- Gilbert, Rev. Mr., i. 95 *n.*
- Gillespie, Dr., his opinion on Johnson's case, ii. 463.
- Gisborne, Dr., physician to His Majesty, ii. 98 *n.*
- Glasse, Mrs., her "Cookery Book," ii. 190.
- Gloucester, Duke of, i. 426 *n.*
- Goa, i. 34.
- Goldsmith, Dr. Isaac, Dean of Cloyne, i. 235 *n.*
- Goldsmith, Rev. Mr., i. 400.
- Goldsmith, Mrs., a relation of the poet's, ii. 65.
- Goldsmith, Oliver, i. 239, 241, 243, 275, 287, 295, 360, 369, 399, 400, 422, 424-427, 437, 443-445, 451, 513; ii. 301, 303, 414, 506; character and history, i. 233; Johnson's opinion of, 232, 403, 408, 420, 431; ii. 23, 110, 163, 180, 309, 314; his attachment to Johnson, i. 237; his compliment to Johnson, 313; on Johnson, 328, 421; ii. 472; his bloom-colored coat, i. 337; engaged in writing his Natural History, 400; writes "She Stoops to Conquer," 414; his Apology to the public for beating a bookseller, 417; dedicates "She Stoops to Conquer" to Johnson, 421; sings song from "She Stoops to Conquer," 422; quarrels with Johnson, 447, 449; his death, 464; ii. 108; his dispute with Robert Dodsley, 24; anecdotes of, 208, 312; his comedies refused, 215; writes epilogue to "The Sisters," 301 *n.*; takes liberties with Johnson, 369; makes a blundering speech to Lord Shelburne, 409; his "Good-natured Man," i. 119; prologue for, by Johnson, 315; praised by Johnson, 317; his "Traveller," 236, 435; ii. 215; Johnson's account of, in "Critical Review," i. 277; Johnson furnishes some lines to, 290; quoted, ii. 168; his "Citizen of the World," i. 234; his "Inquiry into the present state of Polite Learning in Europe," 234; "The Bee," 234 *n.*; his "Vicar of Wakefield," 235; ii. 215; quoted, 252; his "Retaliation," i. 287 *n.*; quoted, ii. 502; his "Deserted Village," i. 425; Johnson furnishes some lines to, 291; his "Life of Parnell," 389; "She

- Stoops to Conquer" praised by Johnson, 433; his "History of Animated Nature," ii. 9; his Epitaph in Westminster Abbey written by Johnson, i. 234 *n.*; ii. 54; Johnson's tetrastich on, quoted, 465.
- Gordon, Hon. Alexander, i. 270.
- Gordon, Sir Alexander, Professor at Aberdeen, i. 457.
- Gordon, Rev. Dr., Chancellor of Lincoln, ii. 242.
- Gordon, Lord George, ii. 286, 287 *n.*, 352.
- Gordon Riots, Johnson's account of the, ii. 286, 287.
- Gower, Lord, i. 8 *n.*, censured in Dictionary, 166; letter from, 69.
- Graham, Colonel, of the Royal Highlanders, i. 383.
- Graham, Rev. George, his "Telemachus" reviewed by Johnson, i. 233.
- Graham, Lord, afterwards third Duke of Montrose, ii. 256, 366.
- Graham, Miss, afterwards wife of Sir H. Dashwood, Bart., ii. 273.
- Grainger, Dr. J., his "Sugar-Cane," i. 572; Johnson's opinions of, 277, 573; his "Ode on Solitude" praised by Johnson, ii. 131.
- Granger, Rev. J., his "Biographical History," ii. 60.
- Grantham, Lord, *see* Robinson, Sir Thomas.
- Grantley, Lord, *see* Norton, Sir Fletcher.
- Granville, Lord, ii. 346; anecdote of, 302.
- Grattan, Right Hon. Henry, speech by, quoted, ii. 501.
- Graves, Mr., letter from Shenstone to, i. 572.
- Graves, Morgan, i. 44 *n.*
- Gravina, Italian critic, ii. 423.
- Gray, Mr., bookseller, i. 82.
- Gray, Thomas, poems, i. 499; criticised by Johnson, 228; ii. 303; quoted, i. 290 *n.*, 494; Mason's Memoirs of, 3, 388; ii. 20.
- Gray, Sir James, i. 396.
- Gray's Inn Journal, i. 183, 201.
- Greaves, Samuel, landlord of Essex Head, ii. 458.
- Greek Comedy, Dissertation on, by Johnson, i. 196.
- Greek Epigram to Dr. Birch, by Johnson, i. 74.
- Green, Bishop of Lincoln, usher at Lichfield School, i. 14.
- Green, Richard, ii. 276; his museum at Lichfield, i. 581; letter to, from Johnson, ii. 552.
- Greenwich, Johnson at, i. 52, 262.
- Grenville, George, character of, i. 368.
- Greville, Mr., his "Maxims, Characters, and Reflections," quoted, ii. 492.
- Grev, Dr. Richard, ii. 213.
- Grey, Dr. Zachary, ii. 213.
- Grierson, Mr., His Majesty's Printer at Dublin, i. 359.
- Grierson, Mrs., i. 359 *n.*
- Grimston, first Viscount, his play, "Love in a Hollow Tree," ii. 348.
- Grotius, i. 128; Johnson on, 260; his "Adamus Exulus," 129 *n.*
- Grove, Mr., of Taunton, writer in "The Spectator," ii. 316.
- Grub Street defined in Dictionary, i. 167.
- "Guardian," The, i. 111.
- Guimené, Princess of, i. 535.
- Guthrie, William, i. 59; his "Apotheosis of Milton," 74; Johnson on, 320.
- Gwyn, Colonel, i. 235 *n.*
- Gwyn, Mr., i. 198; his "Thoughts on the Coronation of George III.," 204; his discussion with Johnson, 564.
- Gwyn, Mrs., i. 235 *n.*
- Gwynne, Nell, i. 137 *n.*
- HACKMAN, Rev. Mr., murderer of Miss Ray, ii. 258.
- Hague, usher at Lichfield School, i. 14.
- Halles, Lord, i. 149, 412, 466, 471, 568; ii. 60; toasted by Johnson, i. 258; on Ossian, 474; on the entail of Auchinleck, 548-553; sends presents to Johnson, ii. 87, 436; censures Prior's poems, 128, 266; on the Negro cause, 143, 145; his "Annals of Scotland," revised by Johnson, i. 463-468, 472, 498, 526-529; Johnson's opinion of, ii. 37, 271; his edition of John Hales's Works, 500; his letter to Boswell, i. 247.
- Hale, Judge, i. 504; praised by Johnson, 384; conversation with Langton's grandfather, ii. 497; quoted, i. 4.
- Hall, Mrs., Wesley's sister, ii. 355.
- Halsey, Edmund, i. 283.
- Hamilton, Sir William, i. 276.
- Hamilton, Gavin, i. 458.
- Hamilton, of Bangor, his poems criticised by Johnson, ii. 98.
- Hamilton, William Gerard, i. 371, 498 *n.*; ii. 162 *n.*, 519; complimented by Johnson, i. 282; advises Johnson, 488; laments Johnson's death, ii. 569; letters to, from Johnson, 453, 531.
- Hampstead, Johnson stays at, i. 106.
- Handel, festival in honor of, ii. 477.
- Hanmer, Sir Thomas, his "Shakespeare" criticised by Johnson, i. 97; epitaph on, translated by Johnson, 98.
- Hanover, House of, i. 216 *n.*, 245.

- Hanway, Jonas, his "Essay on Tea," i. 173; his "Eight Days' Journey," 362.
- Harcourt, Lord Chancellor, i. 33 n.
- Hardwicke, Lord Chancellor, ii. 21; praises "Dirleton's Doubts," 136.
- Hardwicke, second Lord, i. 145 n.
- Harleian Catalogue, Johnson writes advertisement for, i. 85.
- Harleian Miscellany, Johnson writes Preface for, i. 96.
- Harrington, Countess of, ii. 91.
- Harrington, Sir John, quoted, ii. 568 n.
- Harris, James, of Salisbury, i. 427; ii. 162, 171; compliments Johnson, i. 518; quoted, ii. 75.
- Harris, Mr., proprietor of Covent Garden Theatre, ii. 74.
- Harrison, Elizabeth, her "Miscellanies," reviewed by Johnson, i. 175.
- Harry, Jane, convert to Quakerism, ii. 199.
- Harte, Rev. Dr. Walter, ii. 511; tells anecdote of Johnson, i. 89 n.; Johnson's opinion of, 361; ii. 346.
- Harwich, visited by Johnson, i. 271.
- Harwood, Dr., ii. 24.
- Hastie, Mr., client of Boswell's, i. 401, 413.
- Hastings, Warren, ii. 434; his letter to Boswell, 338; letters to, from Johnson, 339, 340.
- Hawkesworth, Dr. J., i. 104, 134, 360; begins the "Adventurer," 129; imitates Johnson, 140, 420; his "Voyages to the South Sea," 443; ii. 5; his preface to Swift's works, i. 489 n.
- Hawkins, Mr., teaches Johnson, i. 13.
- Hawkins, Professor, i. 33; his "Siege of Aleppo," ii. 172.
- Hawkins, Sir John, i. 297, 570; called "an unclubable man," 276 n.; his inaccuracies, ii. 508 n.; his unjust reflections against Johnson, 536; Johnson's executor, 568; his Life of Johnson, i. 2, 11, 23 n., 37 n., 63 n., 81, 103, 106 n., 115 n., 161 n., 173, 192, 236, 307 n., 315, 370 n., 386 n.; ii. 14 n., 152, 386 n., 459, 539, 553, 556 n., 558; quoted, i. 65 n., 75, 89 n., 113, 128, 133, 142 n., 190, 198 n., 571 n.; ii. 27 n., 97; his edition of Johnson's works, 505 n.; letter to, from Johnson, 516.
- Hay, Lord Charles, his death, ii. 6, 309.
- Hay, Sir George, i. 197.
- Hayes, Rev. Mr., publishes Dr. Taylor's sermons, ii. 120.
- Heale, Johnson stays at, ii. 446.
- Heberden, Dr., i. 484; ii. 443, 444, 464, 525; refuses fee from Johnson, 556.
- Hector, Edmund, surgeon at Birmingham, i. 9, 12, 15, 17, 20 n., 21 n., 43, 44, 85 n., 86, 90, 574, 575, 577; Johnson stays with, 38; ii. 539; Johnson's affection for, 385; letters to Boswell, i. 43 n.; n. 539 n.; letters to, from Johnson, i. 37; ii. 392, 541.
- Heely, Mr., Johnson's kindness to, i. 306; ii. 536; letter to, from Johnson, 536.
- Henderland, Lord, ii. 6.
- Henderson, Mr., the actor, i. 493 n.; ii. 452.
- Henderson, John, student of Pembroke College, ii. 488.
- Henn, Mr., letter from, in the "Gentleman's Magazine," i. 69 n.
- Henry, Dr. R., his "History of Britain," ii. 224.
- Herbert, George, quoted, i. 514 n.
- Hertford, Lady, i. 96 n.
- Hervey, Hon. Henry, i. 37 n.; Johnson's affection for, i. 52.
- Hervey, Hon. Thomas, quarrels with his wife, i. 308; his present to Johnson, 308; Johnson's opinion of, 502.
- Hetherington's charity, i. 468.
- Hierocles, Jests of, translated by Johnson, i. 80.
- "High Life below Stairs," farce, criticised by Johnson, ii. 299.
- Hill, Aaron, letter to Mallet, i. 110 n.
- Hill, Sir John, ii. 190; Johnson's opinion of, i. 312.
- Hinchliffe, Bishop, i. 276; ii. 283.
- "Historia Studiorum," list of Johnson's works, ii. 215.
- Hitch, Charles, bookseller, i. 101.
- Hoadley, Dr. Benjamin, his "Suspicious Husband," i. 318.
- Hogarth, W., his "Modern Midnight Conversation," i. 16 n.; ii. 235.
- Holbrook, usher at Lichfield School, i. 14.
- Hollis, Thomas, Johnson's opinion of, ii. 358.
- Home, Henry, *see* Kames, Lord.
- Home, John, ii. 107 n.; his gold medal, i. 489; his "Douglas" quoted, 261; ii. 53.
- Homer, ii. 129, 222; Johnson's translation from, i. 19; quoted, 365; ii. 224, 437.
- Hooke, Abbé, i. 537; ii. 191.
- Hoole, John, i. 498; ii. 23, 230, 352, 416, 417, 457, 461, 468, 476, 565; his translation of Tasso, Johnson writes dedication for, i. 216; his "Cleoneice," 470; his translation of Ariosto, ii. 340; his narrative of Johnson's last days, 561; letters to, from Johnson, i. 470; ii. 528.
- Hoole, Rev. Mr., ii. 563.
- Hope, Dr., his letter to Boswell, ii. 465; letter to, from Boswell, 464.

- Horace, i. 514; ii. 128, 240, 261, 435; his *vlla*, 166; his "Art of Poetry," 48; translations from, by Johnson, i. 18, 19; ii. 536; translation of "Carmen Seculare" set to music, 251; quoted, i. 47, 122, 335, 359, 372, 509; ii. 48, 136, 167, 186, 216, 526, 539.
- Horne, Bishop, i. 464, 466, 568; quoted, ii. 573 *n*.
- Horneck, the Misses, i. 235 *n*.
- Horrebow, his "Natural History of Iceland," ii. 186.
- Horton, Mrs., i. 426 *n*.
- Howard, Hon. Edward, his "British Princess," quoted, i. 353 *n*.
- Howard, Mr., of Lichfield, i. 35; tells anecdote of Johnson, ii. 148.
- Howard, General, Sir George, i. 524 *n*.
- Huddesford, Rev. Dr., i. 157, 181.
- Huetius, quoted, i. 41 *n*.
- Huggins, Mr., dispute with T. Warton, ii. 299.
- Hughes, J., his edition of Spenser, i. 151.
- Hume, David, i. 100 *n*., 117 *n*., 257 *n*., 267, 292, 320, 331, 352, 435, 487; ii. 125, 192; tells anecdote of Johnson, i. 111; Johnson's opinions of, 254; ii. 100; his "Essay on Miracles," i. 566; his life written by himself, ii. 77.
- Hummums, The, ii. 235.
- Humphrey, Ozias, letters to, from Johnson, ii. 468.
- Hunter, Prebendary, Head-master of Lichfield School, i. 13, 14, 376.
- Hunter, Miss, ii. 414 *n*.
- Hunter, Dr., ii. 438.
- Hurd, Bishop, i. 37; Johnson's opinion of, ii. 418; his edition of Cowley, 19, 150; his sermons quoted, 483 *n*.
- Husbands, Johnson writes in his "Miscellany of Poems," i. 25.
- Hussey, Rev. John, ii. 248; letter to, from Johnson, 248.
- Hussey, Rev. Thomas, his friendship with Johnson, ii. 563.
- Hutchinson, F., his "Moral Philosophy," ii. 33.
- Hutton, Mr., a Moravian, ii. 563.
- Hutton, W., his "History of Derby," ii. 108 *n*.
- "Hypochondriac, The," essays by Boswell in "The London Magazine," i. 28 *n*.
- "Hypocrite, The," performed at Mrs. Abington's benefit, i. 490.
- ICELAND, chapter on snakes in, ii. 186.
- Icolmkill, visited by Johnson, i. 456; Johnson's description of, ii. 115.
- "Idler, The," i. 1, 195; ii. 206 *n*., 454; first appearance, i. 184; quoted, 122, 166 *n*., 186.
- Iffley, visited by Johnson, ii. 486.
- "Il Palmiero d'Inghilterra," romance praised by Cervantes, i. 590.
- Imlac, i. 193.
- Ince, Mr., writer in "The Spectator," ii. 21.
- Inch Kenneth, visited by Johnson, i. 456; Johnson's verses on, 472, 474.
- India, judges in, i. 503.
- Innes, Rev. Mr., accomplice of Psalmazar, i. 203.
- Inverary, visited by Johnson, i. 456; ii. 480; by Wilkes, 48.
- Inverness, visited by Johnson, i. 456, 479.
- "Irene," i. 49, 52, 82; original sketch of, 53; refused by Fleetwood, 56; produced on the stage, 109; quoted, 54, 109 *n*., 131.
- Irwin, Captain, with Johnson in France, i. 533.
- JACKSON, Harry, schoolfellow of Johnson's, i. 579; his death, ii. 87.
- Jackson, Richard (the all-knowing), ii. 12.
- Jackson, Rev. Mr., i. 132 *n*.
- James I. of Scotland, i. 291.
- James IV. of Scotland, granted Auchinleck to Thomas Boswell, i. 546.
- James I. of England, i. 395.
- James II., i. 502.
- James, Dr., praised by Johnson, i. 36; begins epigram for Johnson, 85 *n*.; his "Medicinal Dictionary," Johnson writes part of, 86; ii. 14; death of, 2; his powders, 28 *n*.; Johnson's opinion of his medicines, 526.
- January 30th, fast of, Johnson's views on, i. 380.
- "Janus Vitalis," quoted, ii. 167.
- Jeffrey, Lord, quotes Johnson's views on duelling, i. 399 *n*.
- Jenkinson, Right Hon. Charles, letter to, from Johnson, ii. 95.
- Jennings, Mr., his marble dog, ii. 153.
- Jenyns, Soame, his "Inquiry into the Origin of Evil," reviewed by Johnson, i. 176; epitaph on, quoted, 177 *n*.; his epitaph on Johnson quoted, 177 *n*.; criticised by Johnson, ii. 30; returns to Christianity, 186; his "View of the Internal Evidence of the Christian Religion," Johnson's opinion of, 193.
- Jesuits, the, satirized by Oldham, i. 60 *n*.
- "Jessamy Bride, The," i. 235 *n*.
- Joddrel, Mr., ii. 459, 471.
- Johnson, Elizabeth, Dr. Johnson's wife,

- i. 44, 47, 53, 129, 131, 333; stays at Hampstead, 106; praises "The Rambler," 116; her death and burial, 130-134.
- Johnson, Michael, Dr. Johnson's father, i. 8, 9, 24, 25, 258; his death, 35.
- Johnson, Nathaniel, Dr. Johnson's brother, i. 8, 41.
- Johnson, Dr. Samuel, birth and parentage, i. 7; childhood, 10, 11; school-days, 13-23; partially blind, 12; touched for scrofula, 12; various illnesses, 26, 278; ii. 58, 385, 443, 449, 459, 556; consults Dr. Swinfen, i. 26; consults Sir A. Dick and other Scotch doctors, ii. 463; goes to Oxford, i. 23; compelled by poverty to leave Oxford, 34; returns to Lichfield, 35; becomes an usher in Market-Bosworth School, 37; leaves Market-Bosworth School, 38; stays with Mr. Hector, at Birmingham, 38; becomes acquainted with Mr. Porter, 38; returns to Lichfield, 41; goes again to Birmingham, 42; falls in love with Olivia Lloyd, 42; with Mrs. Porter, 44; his marriage, 45; sets up school, 46; fails as a teacher, 46; goes to London, 50; lodges at Greenwich, 52; visits Lichfield, 55; takes his wife to London, 56; his various habitations, 56; ii. 272; is offered a school, i. 68; is refused degree of M.A. by Dublin, 70; wishes to practise as an advocate, 70; his poverty, 73, 87, 89; forms a club in Ivy Lane, 105; Literary Club founded, 275; institutes his Essex-St. Club, ii. 458; lodges at Hampstead, i. 106; grief at his wife's death, 130; visits Oxford, 150, 196, 303, 328, 564; ii. 384, 479, 540; receives degree of M.A. Oxon., i. 154, 155; of LL.D. Dublin, 281; of D.C.L. Oxon., 496; his scheme of a *Bibliothèque*, 159; refuses the offer of a living, 180; receives a pension, 211; visits Devonshire, 212; his library, 249; visits Greenwich with Boswell, 262; accompanies Boswell to Harwich, 267; visits Langton at Langton, 274; at Warley Camp, ii. 243; at Rochester, 446; visits Beauclerk at Windsor, i. 138; at Cambridge, 280; visits Dr. Percy at Easton Mandit, 280; becomes acquainted with the Thrales, 283; describes the family, 283; stays some months with them, 303; at Streatham, ii. 147; last visit to Streatham, 399; stays with Mrs. Thrale in Argyll St., 401; his grief at Mrs. Thrale's engagement to Piozzi, 515; presides at Club on Mondays, i. 299; has an interview with the King in the Royal Library, 309; visits Lichfield, 314, 328, 578; ii. 384, 537; takes leave of Catharine Chambers, i. 314; sends Francis Barber to school, 325; visits Brighthelmstone, 329; ii. 62, 139, 398; appointed professor in Ancient Literature by the Royal Academy, i. 328; becomes acquainted with General Paoli, 335; appears as a witness at Baretti's trial, 344; recommended for Parliament to the Treasury, 369; visits the Pantheon, 389, 391; proposes Boswell at the Literary Club, 434; offends Goldsmith, 447, 449; asks Burney to teach him music, 454 n.; travels in Scotland, 455; in Wales, 465; presents books to the Bodleian Library, 463 n.; sends a book to the King, 470; writes inscription for picture of Mary Queen of Scots, 472 n.; threatens to resign his pension, 488; goes to Mrs. Abington's benefit, 492; visits Bedlam, 523; assigns to Boswell a room in his house, 524; visits the Continent, 528; interested in the Clarendon Press, 554; mistaken for a watchman, 561; drives through Blenheim Park, 570; at Stratford-upon-Avon, 572; visits Birmingham, 574; ii. 384, 539; introduces Boswell to Lucy Porter, i. 579; in love with Mrs. Emmet, 581; visits Richard Green's Museum, 581; visits Dr. Taylor at Ashbourne, 587; ii. 384; kindness to Mrs. Williams, 16, 230; to Mrs. Gardiner, 453; visits Bath, 28; visits Bristol, 31; examines the Rowley Poems, 31; meets Wilkes at the Dilllys', 42-52; confidential conversation with Wilkes, 365; applies to Swinney and Cibber for information about Dryden, 47; Round Robin addressed to, 56; proposes R. B. Sheridan at The Club, 75; tries to get De Groot into the Charterhouse, 81; efforts on behalf of Dr. Dodd, 90-97; visits Keddestone, 105; visits Derby, 107; visits Islam, 124; interview with Lord Marchmont, 231, 263; difference with Strahan, 245; helps Dr. Burney's son to Winchester, 247; consulted by a minor poet, 251; refuses to go to Ireland, 275; frequents green-room of Drury Lane, 299; his affection for Beauclerk, 301; impressed by solemn music at a funeral, 309; rumor about his dancing lessons, 347; visits Squire Dilly at Southill, 372; visits Mr. Young at Welwin, 372; parts from

Boswell at Sheffield, 382; goes with Metcalfe to Chichester, Petworth, and Cowdray, 400; visits Morice Morgann at Wycombe, 419; sits to Miss Reynolds, 444; visits Mr. Bowles at Heale, 446; visited by Mrs. Siddons, 451; meets Miss H. M. Williams, 477; makes out list of books for Rev. Mr. Astle, 497; stays with Mr. Cator at Beckenham, 498; drawn to serve in militia, 502; apologizes to compositor, 504; declines Lord Thurlow's offer of a loan, 522; sets out for Strathfordshire and Derbyshire, 524; visits Duke and Duchess of Devonshire at Chatsworth, 527; liberality towards Heely, 536; presented with his father's house, 537*n.*; wildness of his early life in London, 553; his will, 558*n.*; burns many of his papers, 559; his death-bed, 563-567; his death, 567; burial in Westminster Abbey, 568; epitaph, 568; funeral sermon on, by Rev. Mr. Agutter, 570; cenotaphs in St. Paul's and Lichfield Cathedrals, 570.

Personal traits, method of writing, &c.: his power of mastering a book, i. 31; ii. 190; his pride, i. 34; his good memory, 10; his ways among his school-fellows, 15, 16; his irregular mode of study, 22, 32; dreads insanity, 28; his rapid writing, 31, 112; ii. 27; his affection for his wife, i. 45, 47; ii. 523, 551; his economy, i. 50; prejudice against actors, 91, 434, 541; gorgeous dress at performance of "Irene," 111; a great tea-drinker, 175; love of London, 180, 332, 360; ii. 254, 528; dislike of the sea, i. 197, 563; ii. 177; his religious tolerance, i. 230; ii. 563; given to soliloquy, i. 278; superstitious habit, 279; tricks, 279; inscription on his watch, 323; his fear of death, 342, 352, 476; ii. 100, 197, 469, 489, 553; his general mode of life, i. 360; unsuccessful in public speaking, 371; his nicknames for his friends, 450; his boisterous laughter, 453, 525; his courage, 476; his mode of utterance and pronunciation, 493, 580; ii. 131; collects orange peel, i. 495; ii. 427*n.*; speaks Latin, i. 541, 542; dislikes to have his birthday noticed, ii. 103; dislikes colloquial barbarisms, 131; his liberality, 148, 382; his unbusinesslike habits, 367; his fondness for his cat, 422; his kindness to a poor woman, 504; his filial affection, 537, 551; personal appearance, 572.

Opinions and arguments, &c.: his re-

ligious opinions, i. 29; scheme for instruction in Latin and Greek, 48; invective against George II., 78; on Lord Chesterfield, 148; defence of tea-drinking, 175; defence of Admiral Byng, 176; on a future state, 386; ii. 133; on duelling, i. 398, 428; ii. 432; on the law of vicious intemperance, i. 409-412; on church patronage in Scotland, 439-442; on toleration, 444; on the liberty of the pulpit, ii. 37-40; against slavery, 134; on the registration of deeds, 343; on Tory and Whig, 371; on original sin, 376; defence of "The Caledonian Mercury," 380.

Letters from Johnson: to Thomas Astle, ii. 383; to Edmund Allen, 443; to Rev. Mr. Bagshaw, 523; to Sir Joseph Banks, i. 374; to Francis Barber, 325, 358; to Burretti, 204, 209, 214; to Mr. Barry, ii. 425; to Dr. Beattie, 289; to Dr. Birch, i. 87, 159; to Richard Bland, 415; to Miss Boothby, ii. 332*n.*; to Boswell, i. 272, 289, 300, 323, 330, 354, 371, 375, 412, 414, 454, 455, 457, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 466, 468, 469, 470, 471, 473, 474, 483, 526, 527, 528, 544, 545, 547, 548, 550, 551, 552, 553; ii. 28, 57, 58, 61, 62, 67, 70, 78, 80, 83, 85, 86, 88, 139, 142, 143, 185, 244, 248, 250, 265, 277, 279, 281, 290, 294, 341, 385, 393, 395, 398, 401, 445, 451, 455, 462, 463, 465, 522, 523, 541, 542; to Mrs. Boswell, 57; to Rev. Mr. Bagshaw, i. 450; to Dr. Brocklesby, ii. 446, 525-528; to Dr. Burney, i. 160, 182, 183, 287; ii. 449, 529, 541; to Lord Bute, i. 212, 214; to Mr. Cave, 42, 52, 62, 63, 64, 71, 72, 73; to Sir Robert Chambers, 153; to Mrs. Chapone, ii. 454; to Lord Chesterfield, i. 146; to Richard Clark, ii. 461; to a clergyman at Bath, 394; to a young clergyman, 291; to Countess de — (in French), i. 541; to Mr. Cruikshank, ii. 450, 533; to Dr. Dodd, 95, 96; to William Drummond, i. 304, 306; to Rev. Dr. Edwards, ii. 247; to James Elphinstone, i. 117; to Rev. Dr. Farmer, 357; ii. 285; in the "General Advertiser," i. 126; in the "Gentleman's Magazine," 90; to George III. (for Dr. Dodd), ii. 94; to Mr. Green, apothecary at Lichfield, 552; to Right Hon. William Gerard Hamilton, 453, 531; to Warren Hastings, 339, 340; to Mr. Hector, 392, 541; to Mr. Heely, 536; to John Hoole, i. 470; ii. 528; to Ozias Humphrey, 468; to John Hussey, 248; to Right Hon. Charles Jenkinson, 95; to his mother, i. 191; to a presuming lady, 208; to Bennet

Langton, 182, 188, 201, 297, 315, 368, 372, 375, 464, 515, 525; ii. 81, 246, 382, 391, 450, 467, 524, 530; to Jane Langton, 470; to Dr. Lawrence, i. 474; ii. 281, 386, 390 (in Latin); to Dr. Lawrence's daughter, 390 n.; to Dr. Leland, i. 282 n.; to Robert Levett, 465, 528; ii. 61; to James Macpherson, i. 475; to Edmond Malone, ii. 388; to P. Metcalfe, 399; to Dr. Mudge, 450; to George Nicol, 532; to John Nichols, 333, 400, 535; to Mr. Nichols, the printer, 318 n.; to Charles O'Connor, i. 181; ii. 73; to John Paradise, 532; to Mr. Perkins, i. 468; ii. 372, 395, 461, 531; to Lucy Porter, i. 190, 191, 530, 531; ii. 264, 353, 389, 426, 445, 460, 462, 552; to Right Hon. the Earl of Portmore, 467 n.; to Sir Joshua Reynolds, i. 280, 372, 374; ii. 53, 60, 383, 400, 425, 438, 442, 458, 522, 533; to William Sharp, 82; to Joseph Simpson, i. 195; to Mrs. Smart, ii. 528 n.; to Sir George Staunton, i. 207; to George Steevens, 460; ii. 65; to Mrs. Strahan, 360, 388; to William Strahan, 245; to Rev. Dr. John Taylor, i. 132; ii. 443, 469; to Mrs. Thrale, i. 497 n., 525 n.; ii. 51 n., 87 n., 247, 283, 286, 444, 451, 453, 497, 498, 509, 515, 546 n., 554 n.; to the Miss Thrales, 447 n., 453; to Lord Thurlow, 522; to the Vice-Chancellor of Oxford, i. 158; to Rev. Dr. Vyse, ii. 81, 294 n.; to Dr. Joseph Warton, i. 140, 358; to Rev. T. Warton, 151, 154, 155, 156, 162, 163, 181, 187, 329, 357; to Saunders Welch, ii. 144; to Rev. Dr. Wetherell, i. 554; to Rev. John Wesley, ii. 265; to Rev. Dr. Wheeler, 246; to Rev. Mr. Wilson, 400; to Right Hon. William Windham, 442, 531.

Letters to Johnson: from Mrs. Bellamy, ii. 452 n.; from Dr. Birch, i. 160; from Dr. Brocklesby, ii. 447 n.; from Boswell, i. 301, 371, 372, 413, 458, 463, 465, 471, 472, 482, 542, 552; ii. 57, 59, 60, 65, 68, 69, 76, 79 n., 82, 84, 85, 87, 139, 140, 142, 145, 146, 147, 184, 242, 249, 262, 266, 276, 278, 289, 292; from Mrs. Boswell, 399; from Sir Alexander Dick, 66; from Dr. Dodd, 94, 96; from Mrs. Thrale, 283; from Lord Thurlow, 294.

Works: early poems, i. 17, 22, 43; extracts from his diary, 32, 35, 159, 170, 469; ii. 267 n.; from his journal in France, i. 532-539; list of projected writings, ii. 543 n.; for his other works, see their several titles.

Johnsoniana: eulogies of Johnson, i.

36, 97; his early prose style, 39; compared to Poltina, 41 n.; to Appius, ii. 538 n.; his skill as a translator, i. 59; his style compared with Addison's, 125; called the Great Cham of Literature, *The Caliban of Literature*, *Oddity* Johnson, and *Gargantua*, 197, 365; ii. 138, 170; excels in writing Dedications, i. 288; attacked by Sheridan, 339; by Bishop of Bristol, ii. 479; notes on, by Langton, 295-316; by a friend, 447; his knowledge of Greek, 546; homage of his contemporaries, 569 n.; character, 572-576; Life of, published by Kearsley, 341 n.; list of portraits, busts, &c., 569 n.

Johnson, Samuel, Librarian of St. Martin's in the Fields, i. 71.

Johnson, Sarah, Dr. Johnson's mother, i. 7, 9, 12, 28, 41 n., 45, 55, 87, 117, 162; her death, 191; Johnson's letters to, 191.

Johnson, Irish equestrian, i. 226.

Johnsonian style, begins to appear, i. 40.

"Johnsoniana, or, Bon-Mots of Dr. Johnson," unauthorized publication, i. 560; sale of, ii. 218.

Johnston, Sir James, ii. 476.

Johnstone, Arthur, Johnson's views on his verse, i. 264.

Jones, Miss, poetess, i. 181.

Jones, Phil., companion of Johnson's at Oxford, i. 567.

Jones, Rev. River, i. 182 n.

Jones, Sir William, i. 276, 437; ii. 259.

Jopp, Mr., Provost of Aberdeen, i. 471.

Jorden, Mr., Johnson's tutor, i. 24, 34.

Jortin, Rev. Dr. J., his sermons, ii. 164.

Journal, Johnson's, quoted, i. 30, 32, 35, 159, 170, 469, 470; ii. 267 n.

Journal in France, Johnson's, i. 532-539.

"Journey to the Western Islands of Scotland," i. 477, 488, 518; ii. 62, 89, 174, 201, 416; in the press, i. 463-469; criticised, 477-482, 516; sale of, 483; quoted, ii. 115 n.

"Journal des Savans," criticised by Johnson, i. 312.

Junius, Letters of, i. 389; ii. 253, 493; attacked by Johnson, i. 368.

Justitia, the, hulk at Woolwich, ii. 178.

Juvenal, i. 31, 63; imitated in Johnson's "Vanity of Human Wishes," 106; quoted, 147, 189, 429; ii. 170, 241, 369 n., 412, 527, 557.

KAMES, Lord, i. 79, 320; his "Elements of Criticism," Johnson's opinion of, 222; his "Historical Law Tracts," 410, 412; his "Sketches of the History of Man," ii. 164, 229, 237.

- Kearsley, bookseller, letter to, from Johnson, i. 119 *n*.
- Keddlestone, visited by Johnson, ii. 105.
- Kelly, Hugh, his "False Delicacy," i. 317; Johnson writes prologue to "A Word to the Wise," ii. 74.
- Kemble, John Philip, describes Mrs. Siddons's visit to Johnson, ii. 451.
- Kempis, Thomas à, ii. 150, 308, 475.
- Ken, Bishop, his early rising, ii. 111 *n*.
- Kennedy, Dr., tragedy by, ii. 158.
- Kennedy, Rev. Dr., Johnson writes dedication for, i. 206.
- Kennicott, Benjamin, his "Collations of Hebrew MSS.," i. 364.
- Kennicott, Mrs., ii. 479, 481, 492.
- Kenrick, William, i. 315; his attacks on Johnson, 287, 325; on Goldsmith and Garrick, 287 *n*.
- Keppel, Admiral, court-martial on, ii. 302 *n*.
- Killaloe, Bishop of, *see* Barnard.
- Killingley, M., landlady of the Green Man at Ashbourne, her address to Boswell, ii. 138.
- Kimchi, Rabbi David, i. 6.
- King, Captain, his "Voyages to the South Sea," ii. 495.
- King, Dr., bishop of Chichester, i. 517 *n*.
- King, Dr., dissenting minister, ii. 193.
- King, Dr., Principal of St. Mary Hall, i. 156, 158 *n*, 196.
- King's Head, meeting-place of Ivy-lane Club, i. 106 *n*.
- King's Library, MS. of "Irene" deposited in, i. 53.
- Kippis, Dr., ii. 477, 540; his edition of "Biographia Britannica," 115.
- Knapp, Messrs., booksellers, i. 101.
- Kneller, Sir Godfrey, anecdote of, ii. 157.
- Knight, Joseph, Johnson's argument on his behalf, ii. 134; wins his cause, 141.
- Knight, Lady, her account of Mrs. Johnson, i. 44 *n*.
- Knolles, his "History of the Turks," i. 49 *n*.
- Knowles, Mrs., Quaker lady, ii. 51; conversation with Johnson, 190-199.
- Knox, Mr., on Johnson's "Tour to the Hebrides," i. 479.
- Knox, Rev. Dr., Master of Tunbridge School, ii. 509, copies Johnson's style, i. 123 *n*; ii. 550; attacks Oxford, 550 *n*.
- Kristrom, Mr., a Swede, i. 382.
- LADE, Sir John, ii. 564 *n*.
- Lafeldt, battle of, ii. 167.
- Langley, Rev. Mr., head-master of Ashbourne School, ii. 90.
- Langton, Bennet, copies draft of "Irene" for George III., i. 53; introduced to Johnson, 136; midnight ramble with Johnson, 139; writes for "The Idler," 185; an original member of the Literary Club, 276; his account of P. Langton, 298 *n*; succeeds Johnson as Professor in Ancient Literature, 137 *n*, 328 *n*; his marriage, 369 *n*; entertains Johnson at dinner, 451; ii. 186, 227; makes his will, i. 452; Johnson's opinion of, 472; ii. 106, 235, 436, 475; edits Johnson's Latin verses, i. 474 *n*; his extravagance, ii. 30, 211; militia officer, 243-246, 391; recollection of Johnson dictated, 296-316; defaces inscription on Johnson's portrait, 413; Johnson stays with, i. 274; ii. 243, 446; sells some of Johnson's Latin poems, 545; his devotion in Johnson's last illness, 561; one of Johnson's pallbearers, 568; letters to Boswell, 243, 284; letters to, from Johnson, i. 162, 182, 188, 201, 315, 372, 375, 464, 515, 525; ii. 81, 246, 382, 391, 450, 451, 467, 524, 530.
- Langton, George, i. 465.
- Langton, Jane, letter to, from Johnson, ii. 470.
- Langton, Miss, i. 297, 298, 375.
- Langton, Mr., the elder, i. 202, 297, 298; offers Johnson a living, 180; entertains Johnson at dinner, 246; Johnson stays with, 274; Johnson's opinion of, 274; ii. 30, 312.
- Langton, Mrs., i. 202, 297, 369.
- Langton, Peregrine, death of, i. 297; account of, 298 *n*.
- Langton, Stephen, the Archbishop, i. 137.
- Lansdowne, Marquis of, ii. 419, 477 *n*; his "Drinking Song to Sleep" quoted, i. 139; Johnson's opinion of, ii. 22, 409; on money matters, 176; Johnson's intimacy with, 419.
- Lapland, reindeer imported from, i. 391 *n*.
- Lapukhin, Madame, ii. 229.
- La Trobe, Mr., a Moravian, ii. 563.
- Laud, Archbishop, his diary quoted, i. 419.
- Lauder, William, Johnson writes preface to his Essay on Milton, i. 127, 128.
- Lauderdale, Lord, ii. 15 *n*.
- Law, Archdeacon, ii. 279.
- Law, Bishop of Carlisle, ii. 270 *n*, 279.
- Law, William, his "Serious Call" praised by Johnson, i. 29, 362; quoted, ii. 486.
- Lawrence, Chauncey, ii. 340.
- Lawrence, Dr., i. 36, 189; ii. 14, 291, 526; letters to, from Johnson, i. 474; ii. 281, 386, 390 (Latin).

- Lea, Rev. Samuel, head-master of Newport School, i. 17.
- Le Courayer, Dr., History of the Council of Trent, French translation by, i. 52.
- Lee, Alderman, ii. 51.
- Lee, Arthur, American diplomatist* ii. 44, 45, 50.
- Lee, Jack, ii. 149.
- Leeds, Duke of, i. 276; verses on his marriage quoted, ii. 303.
- Leek, in Staffordshire, earthquake at, ii. 88.
- Le Fleming, Sir Michael, i. 265 n.
- Le Grand, Abbé, i. 39 n.
- Leibnitz, G. W., i. 382.
- Leland, Rev. Dr. T., letter to, from Johnson, i. 282 n.; his "History of Ireland," 448.
- Lenox, Mrs. C., ii. 301, 472; Johnson writes dedication for, i. 142, 207; translates for, 195.
- Le Roy, Julien, i. 533.
- "Lethc," a dramatic satire, i. 127.
- Lever, Sir Ashton, his Museum, ii. 512.
- Levet, Robert, i. 135, 136, 237, 249, 290, 419; ii. 14, 16, 36, 215, 245, 251, 355; his marriage, i. 209, 215; lives with Johnson, 209 n.; his death, ii. 389, 391, 446; Johnson's verses to his memory, 386, 471; letters to, from Johnson, i. 465, 528; ii. 61.
- Levett, Mr., of Lichfield, i. 35; letter to, from Johnson, 88.
- Lewis, F., writes for the "Rambler," i. 125.
- Lewis, Mr., his "Miscellany," ii. 494; verses quoted, 494.
- Lewis, Mrs. Charlotte, i. 209, 215.
- "Lexiphanes," a satire on Johnson, i. 315.
- Lichfield, i. 29, 52, 162; ii. 277; Johnson's birth-place, i. 7; Johnson educated at, 13; lives at, 35, 41, 53, 55; visits, 314, 328, 476, 578; ii. 384, 525, 537; manufactures of, i. 580; accent, 580; ale, ii. 358; verses on, by Miss Seward, 510; tribute, in Dictionary, 537; corporation of, presents to Johnson his father's house, 537 n.
- Lichfield, Lord, death of, ii. 207.
- Liddel, Sir Henry, brings reindeer to Northumberland, i. 391 n.
- Lilliburlo, ballad of, i. 506.
- Lincoln, ii. 242.
- Lintot, Mr., bookseller, i. 50.
- "Literary Magazine," The, comes out, i. 172; gradually declines, 180; Johnson contributes to, 172, 176, 183; article by Johnson quoted, ii. 152.
- Literary Property, question before the Lords, i. 460, 505.
- Liverpool, Earl of, *see* Jenkinson, Right Hon. Charles.
- "Lives of the Poets," i. 16 n., 31 n., 83 n., 91 n., 179 n., 290 n., 494 n.; ii. 89, 114, 232; advertised, 71; first four volumes published, 249; advertisement quoted, 317 n.; book completed, 317; Johnson gives copy to Mrs. Boswell, 250; to Lord Marchmont, 263; to Wilkes, 364; general observations on, 317-338; quoted, i. 35, 531 n.; ii. 260, 319-337.
- Lloyd, Mr., a Quaker, i. 575.
- Lloyd, Mrs., i. 575.
- Lloyd, Olivia, Johnson in love with, i. 42.
- Lloyd, R., his "Odes to Obscurity and Oblivion," i. 498.
- Lobo, his "Voyage to Abyssinia," translated by Johnson, i. 39.
- Lochmond, Johnson visits, i. 456; climate of, ii. 256.
- Lock, Mr., of Norbury Park in Surrey, quoted by Johnson, ii. 322.
- Locke, John, his "Commonplace Book," i. 113; his "Thoughts on Education," 401; ii. 242.
- Lockman, Mr., ii. 298.
- Lofft, Capel, ii. 474.
- Lombe, John, his silk mill, ii. 108.
- London, Johnson first goes to, i. 49; settles in, with his wife, 56; his love of, 180, 332, 360; ii. 168, 253; his views on, i. 240, 512.
- "London," Johnson's poem, i. 107, 260, 338; publication of, 60-68; Pope's note concerning, 76; quoted, 67, 264; ii. 45.
- "London Chronicle," The, i. 417; ii. 147; Johnson writes Introduction to, 178; Boswell reads aloud to Johnson, 349; quoted, ii. 345.
- "London Magazine" The, i. 75 n.; quoted, 367.
- "London Review," The, i. 287.
- Long, Dudley, afterwards North, ii. 344; Johnson on, 349.
- Longlands, Mr., i. 403.
- Longley, Mr., ii. 300.
- Longman, the Messrs., i. 101.
- Looking-glasses, manufacture of, i. 536.
- Loudoun, Countess of, ii. 246.
- Loughborough, Lord, *see* Wedderburn, Alexander.
- Louis XIV., i. 313, 392, 521, 536; saying of, 390; statue of, 532; his embassy to Slam, ii. 226.
- Louis XVI., i. 529, 535, 536 n.
- Love, or Leviticum, i. 515.
- Love, Mr., of Drury Lane Theatre, i. 385.
- Loveday, Dr. John, i. 450 n.
- Loveday, John, of Caversham, i. 450 n.

- Lovibond, E., poems, i. 50.
 Lowe, Rev. Canon, schoolfellow of Johnson's, i. 14, 15.
 Lowe, Mauritius, a poor artist, befriended by Johnson, ii. 217, 255, 425, 426, 431.
 Lowth, R., Professor of Poetry, his controversy with Warburton, i. 311.
 Loyola, St. Ignatius, his asceticism, i. 34.
 Lucan, Lord, i. 276; ii. 285, 507; tells anecdote of Johnson, 351.
 Lucan, Lady, ii. 285, 507.
 Lucas, Dr., his "Essay on Waters," reviewed by Johnson, i. 174.
 Lucian, quoted, ii. 317.
 Lumm, Sir Francis, i. 309 n.
 Lunardi, Vincent, his balloon ascent, ii. 526 n.
 Lutterel, Colonel, Wilkes's opponent, i. 355.
 Lydiat, history, i. 107 n.
 Lye, Edward, his "Saxon and Gothic Dictionary," i. 297.
 Lynne Regis, i. 160.
 Lyttelton, George, Lord, i. 143, 149, 424, 435; ii. 21, 162, 337; his "History," i. 311; his Dialogues, 363, 568; Johnson's Life of, quoted, ii. 332.
 Lyttelton, Thomas, Lord, his vision, ii. 488.
 MACARONIC VERSES, discussed by Johnson, ii. 189.
 Macartney, Lord, i. 207 n., 214, 237 n., 276, 490 n.; ii. 285; tells anecdote of Johnson, 14 n.; quoted, 161 n., 302 n.
 Macaulay, Rev. Kenneth, his "History of St. Kilda," i. 319; criticised by Johnson, 379.
 Macaulay, Mrs., wife of Rev. K. Macaulay, i. 526.
 Macaulay, Mrs. Catherine, i. 134, 423; ii. 123; Johnson tells anecdote of, i. 256; ii. 51; criticises, i. 281, 499; ii. 29.
 Macbean, Mr., i. 73; ii. 216, 355; Johnson's amanuensis, i. 104; Johnson writes preface to his "Dictionary of Ancient Geography," 414; admitted to Charterhouse, ii. 294.
 Macbeth, Johnson's pamphlet on, i. 197.
 Macclesfield, Anne, Countess of, i. 93, 96.
 Macconochie, Mr., pleads for J. Knight, ii. 141.
 Macdonald, Sir Alexander, i. 383, 384, 394.
 Macdonald, Angus, Lord of the Isles, i. 457 n.
 Macdonald, Flora, i. 456, 461 n.
 Macdonald, Sir James, i. 257; ii. 349 n.
 Macdonald, Lady Margaret, ii. 257.
 Macdonald, Ronald, i. 482.
 Macdonalds, The, at Culloden, i. 457.
 Mackenzie, Henry, his "Man of Feeling," i. 203.
 Macklin, Charles, i. 217; ii. 1.
 Macklaurin, Mr., imitates Johnson, i. 516; resents ridicule of his father, ii. 9; his argument in favor of J. Knight, 57, 58, 66, 141.
 Maclean, of Col, death of, i. 468, 469.
 Maclean, Alexander, of Col, i. 482, 542.
 Maclean, Sir Allan, his suit against the Duke of Argyle, i. 526; ii. 66, 83.
 Macleod, Mr., of Rasay, i. 478.
 McNicol, Rev. Donald, "Remarks on Johnson's Journey to the Hebrides," i. 482 n.
 Macpherson, James, i. 473, 482, 483; ii. 191; Ossian's Poems, i. 223, 471; his insolence to Johnson, 475; letter to, from Johnson, 475.
 Macqueen, Rev. Donald, i. 527.
 Macquharrie, chief of Ulva's Isle, i. 482; ii. 63 n., 66; sale of his lands, 83, 87.
 Macrobius, quoted, ii. 16.
 Madan, Dr., Irish clergyman, i. 490.
 Madden, Dr. Samuel, his poem, "Boulter's Monument," revised by Johnson, i. 179.
 Mahogany, a Cornish drink, ii. 347.
 Maitland, Mr., Johnson's amanuensis, i. 104.
 Malagrida, ii. 409.
 Mallet, David, i. 184; publishes Bolingbroke's Works, 150; his tragedy of "Elvira," 232; Johnson criticises him, 365; ii. 259; discards Scotch name, i. 385 n.; ii. 436; his "Life of Bacon," criticised by Johnson, 129; his poem on the "University of Aberdeen," 436; letter to, from A. Hill, i. 110 n.
 Malone, Edmond, i. 125, 234, 276; ii. 204, 507, 519; one of Reynolds's executors, 383; letters to, from Hon. J. Byng, 567; from Johnson, 388; quoted, i. 146 n.; ii. 327, 571 n.
 Mandeville, B., his "Private Vices, Public Benefits," ii. 195.
 Manley, Mrs., quoted, ii. 424.
 Manning, Mr., compositor, ii. 504.
 Manningham, Dr., ii. 106.
 Mansfield, Lord, i. 100 n., 166 n., 384, 407, 430, 500; ii. 176, 178, 327, 411; his eloquent speech in the House of Lords, i. 403; his judgment in the Douglas Cause, 431 n.; his levées, 488; his decision in Court of King's Bench, ii. 58; his house wrecked in Gordon riots, 286.
 Mantuanus, Johannes Baptista, quoted by Johnson, ii. 413.

- Manucci, Count, i. 532, 535; ii. 59, 60.
 Manyfold, underground river, ii. 125.
 Marana, I. P., his "Turkish Spy," ii. 424.
 Marchmont, Earl of, i. 385; ii. 234, 327, 328; gives Johnson information about Pope, 231, 232, 263; Johnson gives him a copy of "Lives of the Poets," 263.
 Marie Antoinette, i. 529, 535.
 Marischal College, i. 378, 454.
 Market Bosworth School, i. 37.
 Marlay, Dr. Richard, Bishop of Waterford, ii. 343, 346.
 Marlborough, John, Duke of, i. 570; anecdote of, ii. 36.
 Marlborough, Duchess of, ii. 348.
 Marmor Norfolciense, pamphlet by Johnson, i. 75.
 Marsili, Dr., of Padua, i. 181.
 Martin, M., his "Account of the Western Islands of Scotland," i. 257; criticised by Johnson, ii. 161.
 Martinelli, Signor, his "History of England," in Italian, i. 424.
 Mary, Queen of Scots, Buchanan's verses to, i. 264; Latin inscription for picture of, 458, 464, 472 n.
 Mason, Miss, *see* Macclesfield, Lady.
 Mason, Rev. W., his "Memoirs of Gray," i. 3, 388, 487; criticised by Johnson, ii. 20; of Whitehead, i. 5; his "Elfrida" criticised by Johnson, 499; his "Caractacus," 499; his prosecution of Mr. Murray, ii. 196; his "Heroic Epistle," 499.
 Masquerade in Edinburgh, i. 414.
 Massinger, P., his play of "The Picture," ii. 273.
 Masters, Mrs., i. 134; Johnson revises her poetry, ii. 453.
 Mattaire, criticised by Johnson, ii. 296.
 Maty, Dr. Matthew, i. 159.
 Maupertuis, quoted by Johnson, i. 321.
 Maxwell, Rev. Dr., his "Recollections of Johnson," i. 358-367.
 Maynell, Mr., i. 36.
 Mayo, Rev. Dr., i. 443, 447; ii. 190, 509; called the Literary Anvil, i. 447 n.
 Mead, Dr., i. 87 n.; ii. 240; Johnson writes Dedication for, i. 86; on sleep, ii. 111.
 Medmenham Abbey, Monks of, i. 65 n.
 Meeke, Rev. Mr., i. 152, 153.
 Melancthon, i. 6, 351.
 Melcombe, Lord, ii. 334 n.
 Melmoth, W., Johnson's opinion of, ii. 283; quoted, 470 n.
 Melville, Viscount, *see* Dundas, Henry.
 Memis, Dr., his case, i. 471, 475; ii. 65; Johnson's opinion of, i. 522.
 Menage, Bayles's account of, quoted, ii. 575 n.
 "Menagiana," i. 438; quoted, ii. 229 n., 575 n.
 Messiah, Pope's, translated into Latin by Johnson, i. 25.
 Metcalfe, Philip, his intimacy with Johnson, ii. 399; note from Johnson to, 399.
 Methodists, The, satirized in the "Hypocrite," i. 490.
 Middlesex, Earl of, i. 207.
 Middlesex election, Johnson's opinion on, i. 70, 355, 467; ii. 274.
 Mickle, W. J., translator of the "Lusiad," i. 401; ii. 23, 494; his dispute with Johnson over the "Lusiad," 456; his letter to Boswell, quoted, 457.
 Millar, Andrew, bookseller, i. 101, 134; ii. 224; conducts publication of the "Dictionary," i. 161.
 Miller, Sir John, i. 501; ii. 45.
 Miller, Lady, her vase, i. 500.
 Milner, Rev. Joseph, quoted, i. 263 n.
 Milton, apotheosis of, by Guthrie, i. 74; Johnson's opinion of, 126, 127, 437, 499; ii. 337; his "Tractate of Education," criticised by Johnson, 242; quoted, 342, 520; Johnson's Life of, quoted, 272, 321, 322.
 "Mirror, The," quoted, ii. 550.
 Miscellaneous Pieces, by Johnson, i. 187 n.
 Mitre Tavern, favorite resort of Johnson's, i. 226.
 Monboddio, Lord, i. 404 n., 527; ii. 377; Johnson's opinion of, i. 332, 376, 423, 451, 527; his prejudice against Johnson, 332 n.; ii. 471 n.; his "Origin and Progress of Language," i. 332 n.; Johnson gives him a copy of the "Journey to the Hebrides," ii. 66; he criticises its style, 114; his early rising, 110; his views on slavery, 142.
 Monckton, Miss, *see* Cork, Countess of.
 "Moniteur, Le," founded by Pancoucke, i. 161 n.
 Montague, Mrs. E., i. 366; ii. 30, 177, 283; painted by Miss Reynolds, 162; Johnson's opinion of, 162, 472; her "Essay on Shakespeare," criticised by Johnson, i. 340; her illness, 289; her controversy with Johnson, 337.
 Montesquieu, his "Lettres Persannes," ii. 195 n.
 "Monthly Review, The," Johnson's opinion of, i. 312; ii. 21; quoted, 19 n.
 Montrose, Duke of, ii. 366; anecdote of, 159 n.
 Monville, Mr., i. 532.
 Moody, Mr., i. 501, 503, 504.
 More, Hannah, ii. 171, 357, 472, 492; her flattery of Johnson, 196, 517; her

- Memoirs, 352 *n.*; quoted, 354 *n.*; her poem "Bas Bleu," 365.
- More, Dr. Henry, the Platonist, i. 386.
- More, Sir Thomas, i. 163.
- Morgann, Morice, tells two anecdotes of Johnson, ii. 419.
- "Morning Chronicle, The," quoted, ii. 394 *n.*
- Morris, Corbyn, quoted, ii. 363 *n.*
- Morris, Miss, at Johnson's death-bed, ii. 567.
- Mother's Catechism (in Erse), presented by Johnson to Bodleian Library, i. 463.
- Mounsey, Dr., censured by Johnson, i. 326.
- Mountstuart, Lord, ii. 61, 276, 379; his bill for a Scotch militia, i. 559, 589.
- Mudge, Dr., i. 213; letters to, from Johnson, quoted, ii. 450.
- Mudge, Rev. Zachariah, i. 213; his "Sermons," criticised by Johnson, ii. 350.
- Mulgrave, Lord, ii. 5.
- Mull, visited by Johnson, i. 456, 479.
- Muller, Mr., engineer, i. 193 *n.*
- Mulso, Miss, *see* Chapone, Mrs.
- Munro, Dr., his letter to Boswell, quoted, ii. 465; letter to, from Boswell, 464.
- Murphy, Arthur, i. 173, 257 *n.*, 337, 360, 450, 460, 523; ii. 18, 150, 459, 471; his Essay on Johnson, i. 30 *n.*, 82 *n.*, 220 *n.*; his "Gray's Inn Journal," 183; his "Orphan of China," 189; his Poetical Epistle to Johnson, quoted, 200; his share in procuring Johnson's pension, 211; introduces Johnson to the Thrales, 285; criticised by Johnson, 364.
- Murray, Lord George, i. 457 *n.*
- Murray, J., bookseller, prosecuted by Mason, ii. 196.
- Murray, William, *see* Mansfield, Lord.
- Musgrave, Sir William, i. 82.
- Musgrave, Dr., ii. 213.
- Myline, Mr., architect, i. 198.
- Mysargyrus, i. 140.
- NAIRNE, Mr., *see* Dunsinan, Lord.
- Nares, Rev. Mr., imitates Johnson, ii. 549.
- Nash, his "History of Worcestershire," i. 33 *n.*; ii. 180 *n.*
- Nash, Beau, i. 64 *n.*
- Negro cause, *see* Knight, Joseph.
- Nelson, R., his "Festivals and Fasts," commended by Johnson, i. 576.
- Neni, Count, ii. 22.
- Newbery, Mr., publisher, i. 184 *n.*, 195.
- Newcastle-on-Tyne, Johnson passes through, i. 455; story of a ghost at, ii. 198.
- Newcastle, Duke of, i. 81, 248 *n.*; lends Rev. J. Spence's collection to Johnson, ii. 336.
- Newhaven, Lord, argues with Johnson, ii. 273.
- Newport School, i. 17, 68 *n.*
- New Testament (Erse), presented by Johnson to the Bodleian Library, i. 463.
- Newton, Sir Isaac, praised by Johnson, i. 363.
- Newton, Dr., Bishop of Bristol, his censure of Johnson, ii. 479; his "Dissertations on the Prophecies," 480.
- Nichols, Dr., i. 511; his "De Anima Medica," ii. 108.
- Nichols, John, ii. 452 *n.*, 459; editor of the "Gentleman's Magazine," i. 42 *n.*; possesses papers of Johnson's, 48, 71; ii. 544; anecdotes of Johnson, i. 50 *n.*; ii. 307; his account of Johnson's last days, 561; letters to, from Johnson, 333, 535.
- Nichols, Mr., the printer, letters to, from Johnson, quoted, ii. 318 *n.*
- Nicol, George, the King's bookseller, ii. 457; letter to, from Johnson, 532.
- Nicolaidis, a learned Greek, i. 526.
- Nores, Jason de, his "Comments upon Horace," i. 567.
- Norris, Mr., Johnson lodges with, i. 51.
- North, Lord, suppresses pamphlet of Johnson's, i. 368; unfriendly to Johnson, 371 *n.*, 376; his letter to Vice-Chancellor concerning Johnson's degree, 496.
- Northumberland, reindeer in, i. 391 *n.*
- Northumberland, Duke of, i. 326, 367.
- Northumberland, Duchess of, i. 500.
- Northumberland, Elizabeth, Duchess of, ii. 181 *n.*
- Northumberland House, fire in, ii. 282.
- Norton, Sir Fletcher (Lord Grantley), Speaker of the House of Commons, i. 341, 587.
- Nottingham, learned pig of, ii. 538.
- Nourse, Mr., bookseller, ii. 9 *n.*
- Nowell, Dr., Principal of St. Mary Hall, visited by Johnson, ii. 486.
- Nugent, Dr., i. 275, 297, 437.
- Nugent, Robert, Lord Clare, i. 369; ii. 208.
- "OBSERVATIONS on the Present State of Affairs," by Johnson, quoted, i. 173.
- O'Connor, Charles, account of, ii. 73 *n.*; letters to, from Johnson, i. 181; ii. 73.
- Odes by Johnson, on Friendship, i. 86; on Winter, 100.
- Offely, Mr., pupil of Johnson's, i. 46.

- Ogden, Dr., his "Sermons," ii. 165; sermon quoted, 376 *n*.
- Ogilvie, Dr. John, his poems criticised by Johnson, i. 241.
- Oglethorpe, General, history of, i. 66; Johnson dines with, 398, 422, 432, 508; ii. 32, 188; tells anecdote of Prince of Wirtemberg, i. 399; tells ghost story, 400; Johnson's remark on his conversation, ii. 36; calls on Johnson, 406; his death, i. 509 *n*.
- Oldfield, Dr., anecdote of, ii. 36.
- Oldfield, Mrs., speaks epilogue to "The Distressed Mother," i. 100 *n*.
- Oldham, John, his Satires quoted, i. 61.
- Oldmixon, John, i. 166 *n*.
- Oldys, William, i. 83; his literary work, 96.
- Oliver, Dame, teaches Johnson, i. 13.
- "Olla Podrida," Oxford collection of essays, ii. 573 *n*.
- Omai, a South Sea Islander, Johnson's account of, ii. 5.
- Orford, Earl of, *see* Walpole, Horace.
- Orme, Captain, ii. 352.
- Orme, R., historian of Hindostan, on maps, i. 512; in praise of Johnson, 477; ii. 189.
- Orrery, Earl of, i. 135; ii. 159, 210, 408; his letter to Dr. Birch, i. 103; Johnson writes dedication to, 142; his book on Swift, ii. 166.
- Osborne, Francis, Johnson's opinion of his writings, i. 407.
- Osborne, Thomas, bookseller, i. 83; ii. 104; chastised by Johnson, i. 83; ii. 231.
- Oseney Abbey, visited by Johnson, i. 152.
- Ossian, controversy on, i. 223, 473, 477, 482; ii. 224 *n*.; Johnson's views on, i. 474, 478, 484, 488, 506; Shaw's pamphlet on, ii. 457.
- Ossory, Lord, i. 276.
- Otaheite, i. 432; Johnson's views on, ii. 31.
- "Othello," quoted, ii. 234; Johnson's opinion of, 25.
- Otway, T., ii. 308.
- Overbury, Sir Thomas, his poem quoted, i. 333.
- Ovid, i. 31; quoted, 176, 436, 492; ii. 186; Pope's translation of, quoted, i. 400 *n*.
- Oxford, Johnson goes to, i. 23; leaves, 34; visits, 150, 196, 303, 328; ii. 384; All Souls Library, i. 310; Bodleian Library, 310; Broadgate Hall, *see* Pembroke College; Christ Church, 34; Christ Church Library, 310; Christ Church Meadow, 152; Merton College, ii. 488; Pembroke College, i. 33, 34, 39, 151, 565; ii. 202, 205, 480; fifth of November celebrated at, i. 24; St. Edmund's Hall, expulsion of six Methodists, 403; Trinity College, 137, 152, 568; University College, 512, 564; University of, 521; grants Master's degree to Johnson, 157; letter from the Chancellor concerning degree, 157; Methodists at, 263 *n*.; grants Doctor's degree to Johnson, 497; letter from the Chancellor of, concerning degree, 496; gift of MSS. from Lord Clarendon's heirs, 554; proposed *Manège*, 554.
- PALAIS BOURBON, Johnson visits, i. 534.
- Palais Marchand, visited by Johnson, i. 533, 534.
- Palais Royal, visited by Johnson, i. 534.
- Palmer, John, of Islington, his "Answer to Dr. Priestly," ii. 195 *n*.
- Palmer, Rev. Thomas Fysche, curious history of, ii. 377.
- Palmerston, Lord, i. 197 *n*, 276; ii. 445, 507.
- Panckoucke, Charles Joseph, bookseller, i. 161.
- Pantheon, Johnson visits, i. 389, 391; history of, 391 *n*.
- Panting, Dr., Master of Pembroke College, overhears Johnson's soliloquy, i. 32.
- Paoli, Pascal, Lieutenant-General of Corsica, i. 325; ii. 184, 248, 507; history of, i. 331 *n*.; first interview with Johnson, 335, 541; calls on Johnson, 405; Johnson dines with, 389, 423, 452; ii. 22, 32, 217, 509; Johnson pleased with a remark of his, 101.
- Paradise, John, ii. 259, 459; account of, i. 26 *n*.; ii. 532 *n*.; Johnson dines with, 471; letter to, from Johnson, 532.
- Paris, Johnson visits, i. 529.
- Paris, Peace of, i. 510 *n*.
- Parker, Sackville, bookseller, Johnson visits, ii. 495.
- Parliamentary Debates, by Johnson, i. 80, 82, 85; ii. 562.
- Parnell, T., ii. 556; his poems quoted, 146, 263; Johnson's Life of, quoted, 330; Johnson's epitaph on, quoted, 330.
- Parr, Rev. Dr., Johnson pleased with, ii. 304; defends Johnson's memory, 570; his letter to William Seward, quoted, 571 *n*.
- "Pascal, Les Pensées de," Johnson gives Boswell, ii. 255.
- Paterson, Samuel, his "Coriat Junior," i. 395.
- Paterson v. Alexander, Johnson's views on case of, i. 523.

- "Patriot, The," pamphlet by Johnson, published, i. 467.
- Paul, Father, Life of, by Johnson, i. 74.
- Payne, William, his "Introduction to the Game of Draughts," Johnson writes part of, i. 178.
- Pearce, Dr. Zachary, Bishop of Rochester, i. 71, 165; Johnson writes Dedication for his "Commentary," ii. 73.
- Pearson, Bishop, Johnson recommends his works, i. 225.
- Peirese, i. 521.
- Pelham, Mr., Garrick's Ode on, quoted, i. 150.
- Pelisson, i. 41 n.
- Pembroke, Earl of, i. 521; on Johnson's sayings, 493 n.
- Penmanmaur, Johnson visits, i. 466.
- Pennant, T., his *Travels*, i. 506; Johnson on, ii. 180-182; praises Johnson, 183.
- Pepys, Dr., ii. 443.
- Pepys, Sir Lucas, ii. 336, 405.
- Pepys, Sir W., Master in Chancery, i. 429 n.; ii. 285, 349.
- Percy, Dr., Bishop of Dromore, i. 106, 276, 488, 505 n., 524 n.; ii. 171, 359, 519; genealogy, 180 n.; as Dean of Carlisle, 246, 280, 291; popular in Carlisle, 279; property burnt, 282; Johnson stays with, i. 280; dines with, ii. 180; disputes with Johnson, i. 326; ii. 180, 181; his anecdotes of Johnson, i. 16, 17; on Johnson's appearance, 49 n.; on Johnson's mode of writing his Dictionary, 105 n.; on Johnson's conversation, ii. 213; possesses Pope's note concerning Johnson, i. 76; on Grainger's "Sugar-Cane," 572 n.; Johnson jokes about, 573; "Hermit of Warkworth" parodied by Johnson, 369 n.; "Reliques," 506 n.; "Northern Antiquities," ii. 182; letter to Boswell, i. 32; letter to, from Boswell, ii. 185.
- Percy, Earl, ii. 184.
- Perkins, Mr., manager of Mr. Thrale's brewery, ii. 348; shrewd remark, 350; letters from Johnson, i. 468; ii. 372, 395, 461, 531.
- Perth, Duke of, ii. 151.
- Peterborough, Lord, Johnson's interest in, ii. 511.
- Peyton, Mr., amanuensis, i. 104, 382; helped by Johnson, 104; Johnson's consideration for, 382.
- Philidor, Monsieur, ii. 251.
- Phillips, Johnson's Life of, quoted, ii. 331.
- Phillips, Charles Claudius, Epitaphs on, i. 79.
- "Philosophical Transactions," i. 312.
- "Pilgrim's Progress," i. 30 n.
- Piozzi, Mrs., *see* Thrale, Mrs.
- Piozzi, Mr., ii. 516.
- Pitt, William, i. 82, 248 n., 297, 396; ii. 400 n.; characterized by Johnson, i. 68, 403; ii. 484; his correspondence with Boswell, 403 n.
- "Plain Dealer, The," i. 85, 96.
- Plaxton, Rev. George, letter from, i. 8 n.
- Players, Johnson's opinion of, i. 91, 434, 541.
- Plott, "History of Staffordshire," ii. 125.
- Plutarch, quoted, i. 5; ii. 169 n.; his "Life of Alcibiades," 177 n.
- Plymouth, Johnson visits, i. 213, 214.
- Pococke, Canon Edward, verses on, ii. 178 n.
- Pococke, R., Bishop of Ossory, ii. 178 n.; "Travels," i. 505.
- Poets' Corner, Johnson visits, i. 436.
- Politian, Latin Poems of, Johnson proposes to print, i. 41.
- "Political Tracts," Johnson's, i. 486, 565.
- Pomfret, his poems, ii. 249.
- "Pomponius Mela de Situ Orbis," i. 268.
- "Pomposo," caricature of Johnson, i. 231.
- Port, family of, former owners of Islam, ii. 124.
- Porter, Elizabeth, *see* Johnson, Elizabeth.
- Porter, Mr., i. 38.
- Porter, Mr., the younger, i. 531.
- Porter, Lucy, i. 10, 41 n., 44, 56, 131, 209, 579, 583, 584; ii. 278, 279; death of, 552 n.; letters to, from Johnson, i. 191, 530, 531; ii. 264, 353, 389, 426, 445, 460, 462, 552.
- Porteus, Dr., Bishop of London, ii. 186, 277, 279, 314; his charge quoted, 345.
- Portmore, Right Hon. the Earl of, note to, from Johnson, ii. 467 n.
- Pope, Alexander, i. 101, 182 n., 184, 212, 436, 513, 519 n., 534, 569 n.; ii. 109, 167; admires Johnson's "London," i. 66; recommends Johnson to Lord Gower, 69; his note concerning Johnson, quoted, 77; borrows from Guarini, ii. 233; Johnson's opinion of his poems, i. 338, 498; ii. 171, 223, 325; on his lack of conversation, 326; Lady Bolingbroke's description of, 217; Lord Marchmont's anecdotes of, 231, 263; verses to, 494; Dr. Joseph Warton's Essay on, i. 257; letter from Dr. Blair to Boswell concerning, ii. 270; Life of, by Johnson, i. 311 n., quoted, ii. 324; letter to, from Swift, quoted, 209; imitations of Horace, i. 122 n., 569 n.; ii. 261 n.; "Essay on Man," i. 311 n.;

- "Artemisias," 333; "Prologue to the Satires," 430 *n.*; "The Dying Christian to his Soul," ii. 19; quoted, i. 138, 400 *n.*, 509; ii. 47, 50 *n.*, 133 *n.*, 157 *n.*, 168, 233, 300, 328; "Messiah," quoted, i. 152, Johnson's Latin translation of, 25. Pope, Dr. Walter, "The Old Man's Wish," ii. 306.
- Portland, Duchess Dowager of, ii. 285.
- Pott, Mr., surgeon to Johnson, ii. 450.
- Pott, Archdeacon, Johnson praises his sermons, i. 576.
- Prayer, forms of, ii. 486.
- Prayer, quoted, i. 130; ii. 536 *n.*
- "Prayers and Meditations," i. 46, 170, 171, 263 *n.*, 328, 534 *n.*; ii. 255, 447; published with Preface by Rev. Mr. Strahan, i. 131; ii. 540; Johnson's friends disapprove of publication, 540 *n.*; quoted, i. 12, 112, 131, 133, 185, 190 *n.*, 198, 200, 202, 277, 278, 281, 282, 314, 357, 373, 405, 448, 453, 459, 514; ii. 59, 64, 65, 71, 202, 293, 317, 350, 384, 387, 390, 399, 555, 566.
- "Preceptor, The," Johnson writes Preface for, i. 106.
- Prefaces by Johnson to "Gentleman's Magazine," i. 74, 79, 82, 85.
- Prendergast, or Pendergrass, story of, i. 400.
- Priestley, Dr., ii. 195 *n.*; Johnson's opinion of, i. 362; ii. 448.
- Primrose, Lady Dorothea, ii. 329 *n.*
- Pringle, Sir John, President of the Royal Society, ii. 4, 164; dislikes Johnson, 42.
- Prior, Matthew, Johnson's opinion of his poems, ii. 128; borrows from Gombauld, 266.
- Pritchard, Mrs., i. 110, 206 *n.*, 342, 507; Johnson's opinion of her acting, 507; ii. 452.
- "Proceedings of Committee for Clothing the French Prisoners," Johnson writes Introduction for, i. 199.
- Prologue in honor of opening of Drury Lane Theatre, by Johnson, i. 100.
- "Proposals for printing Bibliotheca Harleiana," by Johnson, i. 83.
- Proposals for translating Politian, quoted, i. 41.
- "Proposals for publishing the Works of Mrs. Charlotte Lennox," by Johnson, quoted, i. 470.
- Psalmannazar, George, i. 203 *n.*; ii. 210, 417, 471.
- Psalms in Metre, quoted, ii. 3 *n.*
- "Public Advertiser, The," Essay by Wilkes in, quoted, i. 168.
- Pulteney, Mr., i. 82; ii. 159.
- Pym, John, i. 33 *n.*
- QUEENSBERRY, Duke of, i. 519.
- Quintilian, quoted, ii. 318.
- RABELAIS, i. 432; ii. 170.
- Rackstrow, Mr., of Museum in Fleet street, ii. 502.
- Radcliffe, Dr., Master of Pembroke College, i. 151.
- Radcliffe, travelling fellowship, Johnson's views on, ii. 485.
- Raleigh, Sir Walter, i. 126.
- "Rambler, The," i. 6 *n.*, 26 *n.*, 31 *n.*, 49 *n.*, 82, 374; ii. 354; first appearance, i. 112; Scotch edition, 116; sketch of No. 196, 114; general description of, 118-126; last paper published, 129; sale of, 142; against gulosity, 269; Goldsmith borrows from, 317; parodied by Dr. Blair, ii. 114; criticised by Johnson, 297; to be translated into Russian, 473; quoted, i. 5, 41, 74, 263 *n.*, 444; parody of, 121 *n.*
- Ramsay, Allan, on Horace, ii. 166; Johnson dines with, 222, 256, 273; death of, 534 *n.*
- Ranby, John, his "Doubts on the Abolition of the Slave Trade," ii. 136.
- "Random, Roderick," i. 197 *n.*
- Ranelagh, i. 239 *n.*; Johnson frequents, 360; Johnson admires, 391; ii. 132.
- Rann, John, highwayman, ii. 24.
- Rasay, family of, i. 479.
- "Rasselas, Prince of Abyssinia," i. 27; ii. 212, 372; published, i. 192; discussed, 192, 193; compared with Candide, 192; ii. 240; Lord Hailes on, i. 247; American edition, 416; quoted, 193.
- Ray, his "Nomenclature," i. 515.
- Ray, Miss, shot by Hackman, ii. 257.
- Reed, Isaac, of Staple Inn, i. 93; ii. 319.
- "Rehearsal, The," criticised by Johnson, i. 391; ii. 503.
- "Respublicæ Elzevirianæ," ii. 33.
- "Respublica Hungarica," i. 291.
- "Review, The Monthly," i. 312; ii. 20.
- Reviews, in the "Literary Magazine," list of Johnson's, i. 173; Johnson's, quoted, 175.
- Rewley, near Oxford, visited by Johnson, i. 152.
- Reynolds, Sir J., i. 67 *n.*, 76, 234 *n.*, 277, 337, 456, 472, 480, 515, 517, 528 *n.*; ii. 173, 208, 236, 263, 313, 500, 519; describes Johnson's manners, i. 77, 354; his anecdotes of Johnson, 89, 136, 279; ii. 414, 504; his conversations with Johnson, i. 111, 113, 136, 168, 211, 340; ii. 26, 230; raises his prices, i. 189; praised by Johnson, 266; ii. 298; his income, i. 209, 215; goes with

- Johnson into Devonshire, 212; portraits of Johnson, 221, 372; first proposer of The Club, 275; supports Mrs. Abington's benefit, 492; Johnson dines with, i. 542; ii. 166, 213, 227, 255, 346, 510, 514; his equitable disposition, 3, 128; his present from the Empress of Russia, 249; his "Discourses to the Royal Academy," 249, 503; praises Vanbrugh, 330; dines with Mrs. Garrick, 357; tries to have Johnson's pension raised, 508; threatens to resign Presidency of Royal Academy, 534 n.; letters to, from Johnson, i. 280, 372, 374; ii. 53, 60, 383, 400, 425, 438, 442, 458, 522, 533.
- Reynolds, Miss, ii. 170, 196, 214, 262, 444 n.; Johnson's affection for, i. 280 n.; paints Mrs. Montague, ii. 162.
- Richardson, Samuel, i. 189; Johnson visits, 78; ii. 122; writes in "The Rambler," i. 112; Johnson compares him with Fielding, 317, 395; with French novelists, 363; cited in Dictionary, ii. 297; his lack of conversation, 313; death of, i. 209.
- Richardson, Mr., son of the painter, i. 66, 76.
- Richmond, Duke of, ii. 487 n.
- Riddell, Mr., duel with Mr. Cunningham, ii. 432 n.
- Ritter, Joseph, Boswell's Bohemian servant, i. 545.
- Rivers, Earl, i. 93, 94.
- Roberts, Miss, complimented by Johnson, i. 246.
- Robertson, Rev. Dr. W., historian, i. 172, 306, 326, 432; ii. 222, 224, 225, 237, 271; Johnson's opinion of, i. 320, 435; his style formed on Johnson's, ii. 114; as imitator of Johnson, quoted, 549.
- Robertson, Mr., publisher of "The Caledonian Mercury," ii. 380.
- Robin Hood Society for debate, ii. 355.
- Robinson Crusoe, i. 30 n.
- Robinson, Sir Thomas, i. 248, 366.
- Rochester, Johnson at, ii. 446.
- Rochester, Earl of, his poems, ii. 127; quoted, 19.
- Rochford, Earl of, Johnson writes dedication to, i. 178.
- Rodney, Adm. Sir George, i. 538.
- Rolt, his "Dictionary of Trade and Commerce," preface written by Johnson for, i. 202, 504.
- Roman Catholic Religion, Johnson's views on, i. 349.
- Roscommon, Life of, by Johnson, i. 106.
- Roths, Lady, wife of Bennet Langton, i. 369, 373, 375.
- Round Robin, addressed to Johnson, on Goldsmith's Epitaph, ii. 56.
- Rousseau, Jean Jacques, i. 332, 420; censured by Johnson, 294.
- Rowe, Mrs., i. 175.
- Rowley, T., poems, attributed to (*see* Chatterton), ii. 31, 389.
- Royal Academy, origin of, i. 205 n.; Johnson Professor of Ancient Literature, 328.
- Royal Marriage Act, i. 426 n.; disproved of by Johnson, 380.
- Royal Society, i. 39 n.; Dryden's poem on, quoted, 438.
- Rudd, Margaret Caroline, i. 570 n.; ii. 52, 222.
- Ruddiman, Thomas, i. 300, 421; ii. 250; history of, i. 117 n.
- Ruffhead, his Life of Pope, censured by Johnson, i. 390.
- Russell, Lord, i. 417 n.
- Russia, increase of population in, i. 348.
- Russia, Empress of, present to Sir J. Reynolds, ii. 249.
- Rutland, Roger, Earl of, letter to, from Lord Essex, i. 247.
- Rutty, Dr. John, Quaker, his "Spiritual Diary and Soliloquies," quoted, ii. 112.
- SACHEVEREL, Dr., heard by Johnson, i. 10.
- St. Andrews, Johnson passes through, i. 455.
- St. Asaph, visited by Johnson, i. 466.
- St. Asaph, Bishop of, ii. 507.
- St. Basil, Epistle of, ii. 307.
- St. Cas, i. 188 n.
- St. Cloud, visited by Johnson, i. 537.
- St. Denis, visited by Johnson, i. 538.
- St. Germain, Library of, i. 538.
- St. Germans, Benedictines of, Johnson lodges with, i. 538.
- St. James, General Epistle of, quoted, ii. 483.
- St. John's Gate, Clerkenwell, i. 56.
- St. Kilda, i. 258, 378; Rev. K. Macaulay's "History of," 319, 379.
- St. Luke, quoted, ii. 298.
- St. Paul, i. 362; ii. 375; quoted, 197, 486.
- St. Sepulchre, Ladies' Charity School, ii. 454.
- Salamanca, University of, praised by Johnson, i. 260.
- Salisbury, Hester Lynch, *see* Thrale, Mrs.
- Salisbury, Mrs., ii. 226; death of, i. 454.
- Sallust, his account of Catiline, i. 5; Spanish translation of, ii. 421.
- Sanderson, Professor, i. 405.
- Sandwich, Lord, i. 65 n.; ii. 257 n.

- Sans-terre, brewer, i. 536.
 Saratoga, surrender of, ii. 240.
 Sarpi, Father Paul, his "History of the Council of Trent," i. 70, 71.
 Sastres, Mr., ii. 14.
 Satires, Johnson's and Oldham's, compared, i. 61.
 Savage, Richard, his character, i. 88; his poverty, 88; his influence on Johnson, 89; his history, 93-96; letter to Lord Tyrconnel, 88 n.; his "Sir Thomas Overbury," ii. 75; his "Wanderer," quoted, 481; Johnson's Life of, i. 88, 111, 135; praised by "The Champion," 92.
 Sawbridge, Catherine, *see* Macaulay, Catherine.
 Scaliger, quoted, i. 25.
 Scarsdale, Lord, ii. 105, 106.
 Scotch Courts of Session, procedure in, i. 471 n.
 Scotland, Church of, dissensions in, i. 378.
 Scotland, Episcopal Church of, ii. 250; its liturgy, i. 387.
 Scots Magazine, i. 57.
 Scott, Archibald, i. 60 n.
 Scott, John, of Amwell, i. 501; his "Elegies," criticised by Johnson, 509.
 Scott, Sir William (Lord Stowell), i. 265, 276; ii. 174, 207, 355, 519.
 Secker, Archbishop, Johnson's prejudice against, ii. 314; quoted, i. 6.
 Segued, Emperor of Abyssinia, i. 40.
 "Sentinel, The," i. 399 n.
 Settle, Elkanah, City-Poet, ii. 50.
 "1738," Satire by Pope, i. 65.
 Sévigné, Madame de, ii. 33.
 Seward, Anna, i. 43 n., 583; ii. 190, 194, 494; quotes "Acis and Galatea," 160 n.; reproaches Johnson, 194; tells story of learned pig, 538; letter to Boswell, quoted, i. 43 n.; her poems praised by Johnson, ii. 510; quoted i. 11 n.
 Seward, Canon, i. 35 n., 582; ii. 277; Johnson's opinion of, 99.
 Seward, William, ii. 80, 82, 412, 435; sees Johnson bow to the Archbishop of York, 423; letter to, from Rev. Dr. Parr, 571 n.
 Shaftesbury, Earl of, i. 267.
 Shakespeare, Jubilee at Stratford-on-Avon, i. 329; "Modern Characters from," pamphlet, ii. 170; his witches, 256; Johnson compares him to Corneille, 304; Johnson's edition of, i. 286, 288, 406, 414; ii. 35; Johnson criticises Sir T. Hanmer's edition of, Mrs. Montague's Essay on, Preface to Capel's edition of, i. 97, 340; ii. 298; quoted, 170, 311, 341 n., 342 n., 557.
 Sharp, Dr. John, his letter in "Gentleman's Magazine," quoted, i. 280.
 Sharp, William, letter to, from Johnson, ii. 82.
 Sharpe, Rev. Gregory, sermon by, i. 366.
 Sharpe, S., his "Letters on Italy," praised by Johnson, ii. 34.
 Shaw, Cuthbert, his portrait of Johnson in "The Race," quoted, i. 307.
 Shaw, Rev. Mr., ii. 142; his Erse Grammar, 69; his Gaelic Dictionary, 457; Johnson's defence of his pamphlet, 457.
 Shebbeare, Dr., ii. 211 n., 434; his "Letters on the English Nation," 368.
 Sheffield, John, Duke of Buckinghamshire, Johnson's Life of, quoted, ii. 319.
 Shelburne, Earl of, *see* Lansdowne, Marquis of.
 Shenstone, W., i. 33; his letter to Greaves about Johnson, quoted, 572.
 Sheridan, Charles, his "Account of the late Revolution in Sweden," ii. 190.
 Sheridan, Frances, Johnson's affection for, i. 202; her "Memoirs of Miss Sydney Biddulph," 219.
 Sheridan, Richard Brinsley, his marriage, i. 520; poetical compliment to Johnson, quoted, ii. 75; proposed by Johnson at The Club, 75.
 Sheridan, Thomas, i. 276; ii. 1, 75, 216, 253, 335, 355, 500, 509; Johnson's opinion of, i. 202, 218, 259, 339, 365; ii. 435; his quarrel with Johnson, i. 217, 219; his share in procuring Johnson's pension, 211; attacks Johnson in his "Life of Swift," 219, 339; his pronunciation, 385, 386; is called *Sherry*, 450; gives Home a gold medal, 489; Johnson sends message to, ii. 440.
 Sherlock, Bishop, his "Sermons," ii. 164.
 Shiels, Mr., Johnson's amanuensis, i. 104; Johnson's kindness to, 134; writes most of Cibber's "Lives of the Poets," ii. 19; anecdote of, 24.
 Shipley, Bishop, i. 276; ii. 166; quotes Plutarch, 169; Johnson's opinion of, 454.
 Siam, King of, French Embassy to, ii. 226.
 Sibbald, Sir Robert, Life of, ii. 150.
 Siddons, Mrs., visits Johnson, ii. 451.
 Sidney, Sir Philip, his "Profitable Instructions," i. 247 n.; sonnet quoted, ii. 86.
 Simpson, Mr., of Lichfield, i. 35.
 Simpson, Joseph, his tragedy, "The Patriot," ii. 18; letter to, from Johnson, i. 195.
 Simpson, Thomas, mathematician, i. 198 n.

- Skene, Sir John, ii. 278 n.
- Sky, Isle of, visited by Johnson, i. 456, 479.
- Smalbrooke, Dr., of the Commons, i. 70.
- Smallridge, his Sermons, ii. 164.
- Smart, Christopher, the poet, writes for "Universal Visitor," i. 171, 505; Johnson's opinion of, 224.
- Smart, Mrs., letter to, from Johnson, ii. 528 n.
- Smith, Dr. Adam, i. 257 n., 276; ii. 223, 310, 416; his opinion of Johnson, i. 31; Johnson's opinion of, 244; his "Wealth of Nations," 558; ii. 8 n.; his attack on Oxford, 550 n.
- Smith, Captain, ii. 244.
- Smith, Edmund, Johnson's Life of, i. 35.
- Smith, Rev. Mr., Vicar of Southill, ii. 378, 509.
- Smollett, T., i. 257 n.; ii. 156; founds "Critical Review," 21 n.; his letter to Wilkes, i. 197.
- Snowden, Johnson ascends, i. 466.
- Society for encouragement of learning, i. 82 n.
- Society of Artists, i. 205 n.
- Society of Arts, i. 205 n.
- Society for Propagating Christian Knowledge in Scotland, i. 304, 463.
- Soho, near Birmingham, i. 577.
- Solander, Dr., i. 374, 376, 377 n.
- Solihull Grammar School, i. 37 n.
- Somerville, Lord, tells anecdote of Pope, ii. 327.
- "Sonnium," verses by Johnson, i. 24.
- Sorbonne, visited by Johnson, i. 537.
- South, Rev. R., his Sermons, i. 350; ii. 164.
- Southill, Johnson stays at, i. 145; ii. 372.
- Southwark, i. 283, 468 n.; Thrale's letter to electors of, ii. 293.
- Southwell, Lord, i. 134; Johnson's opinion of, ii. 408.
- "Spectator, The," i. 111, 332, 353 n., 407; ii. 114, 153, 311, 316, 345, 354; discussed by Johnson, i. 418, 521; ii. 21, 29; epitaph from, quoted, 528 n.
- Spence, Rev. Joseph, his "Anecdotes," ii. 336.
- Spencer, Lady Diana, wife of Topham Beauclerk, i. 442 n.
- Spencer, Lord, i. 276.
- Spenser, Edmund, his "Fairy Queen," T. Warton's observations on, ii. 299.
- Spottiswoode, John, the younger, ii. 218.
- "Stage, a complete Vindication of the Licensers of," by Johnson, i. 75.
- Stamp Act, speeches on the, i. 297 n.
- Stanhope, Philip, Lord Chesterfield's son, i. 149 n., 361 n.; ii. 511.
- Stanyan, Temple, traveller, ii. 240.
- Staunton, Sir George, ii. 499; letter to, from Johnson, i. 207.
- Steele, J., his "Prosodia Rationalis," i. 493.
- Steele, Mr., Secretary to the Treasury, i. 75.
- Steele, Sir Richard, i. 353 n., 569 n.; ii. 21; anecdote of, 329, 355; his "Christian Hero," i. 569; quoted, 96 n., 284 n.
- Steevens, George, i. 276, 353, 357, 360, 461, 488, 505 n., 524 n.; ii. 127, 239, 257 n., 259; has Johnson's dial-plate, i. 323; republishes Johnson's Shakespeare, 414; helps Johnson with "Lives of the Poets," ii. 319; gives particulars concerning Johnson, 505; letters to, from Johnson, i. 460; ii. 65.
- Sterne, Rev. L., i. 395; his "Sentimental Journey," ii. 316 n.; Johnson's opinion of, 366.
- Stewart, Mr., Johnson's amanuensis, i. 104.
- Stewart, Sir Annesley, ii. 346.
- Still, Bishop, compared to Johnson, ii. 568 n.
- Stillingfleet, Benjamin, ii. 365.
- Stinton, Dr., ii. 186; his "Life of Secker," 314.
- Stirling, Corporation of, declared corrupt, i. 523.
- Stirling, road-bill in the county of, ii. 148.
- Stockdale, Rev. Mr., i. 377; his "Remonstrance," 356.
- Stopford, Hon. Colonel Edward, i. 524.
- Stourbridge, Johnson educated at, i. 16.
- Stowe, Richard, of Apsley, i. 89 n.
- Strahan, Andrew, ii. 536.
- Strahan, Mrs., i. 117; letters to, from Johnson, ii. 360, 388.
- Strahan, Rev. Mr., i. 311 n.; ii. 326, 470; publishes Johnson's "Prayers and Meditations," 540 n.; at Johnson's death-bed, 566.
- Strahan, William, i. 134, 161, 192, 309 n., 428, 465, 469, 483, 490, 491; ii. 62, 63, 147, 149, 172, 191, 223, 269, 286, 504, 536; his difference with Johnson, 245; his letter to the Treasury, i. 369; letter to, from Johnson, ii. 245.
- Strahan, William, junior, death of, ii. 360.
- Stratford-on-Avon, Shakespeare Jubilee, i. 329; Johnson visits, 572.
- Streatham, Johnson at, ii. 147, 399.
- Stuart, Andrew, his letters to Lord Mansfield, i. 430.
- Stuart, Clan of, i. 457.
- Stuart, House of, i. 423.

Stuart, Rev. James, i. 395 n.
 Stuart, Colonel James, ii. 268, 276.
 Stuart, Hon. and Rev. William, ii. 423.
 Stuart, Mr., of Dunearn, i. 399 n.
 "Student, The," a Miscellany, i. 116, 127.
 Suetonius, quoted, ii. 189 n.
 Swift, Dean, i. 69, 139 n., 247, 406, 438 n., 569 n.; Johnson's opinion of him and his works, 259, 326, 367, 434 n., 488; his letter to Pope, quoted, ii. 209; quoted, i. 76 n., 531 n.; ii. 479; Johnson's Life of, quoted, 335.
 Swinfen, Dr., Johnson's god-father, i. 23 n., 35, 37; ii. 147 n.; betrays Johnson's confidence, i. 27.
 Swinney, tells anecdote of Dryden, ii. 47.
 Swinton, Rev. Mr., i. 153.
 Sydenham, Dr., quoted, i. 77; Johnson's Life of, 83.
 Sydney, Algernon, i. 417.
 Sydney, Lord, ii. 487 n.; his attack on Johnson, 501.

TABLE, sinking, i. 534 n.
 Tacitus, Johnson's opinion of, i. 404.
 Talbot, Mrs. Catherine, writes in "The Rambler," i. 112.
 Tasso, his "Jerusalem," criticised by Johnson, ii. 222.
 "Tatler, The," i. 111, 407 n., 569 n.
 "Tatler, The, Revived," i. 111.
 "Taxation no Tyranny," pamphlet by Johnson, i. 499; ii. 146; quoted, i. 485; ii. 134; praised by Orme, 190.
 Taylor, "Demosthenes," Johnson's account of him, ii. 213.
 Taylor, Jeremy, ii. 486.
 Taylor, Mr., of Birmingham, i. 38.
 Taylor, Rev. Dr., i. 132, 583; ii. 83; his opinion of Lichfield School, i. 14; at Oxford, 33; visited by Johnson, 36, 583, 587, 588; ii. 32, 88, 147, 158; tells anecdote of Johnson, i. 92; reads MS. of Plan of Dictionary, 102; meditates between Johnson and Garrick, 109; disputes with Johnson, ii. 102; his friendship with Johnson, 120; Johnson writes sermons for him, 120; his bull-dog, 126; gives Boswell information about Johnson, 539; reads Johnson's burial service, 568; letters to, from Johnson, i. 132; ii. 443, 469.
 Temple, Sir William, i. 181, 434; ii. 221; his style compared with Johnson's, i. 122; praised by Johnson, ii. 171.
 Temple, Rev. Mr., i. 249, 443, 521; meets Johnson, 293; writes Gray's character, ii. 396; letter to Boswell, quoted, i. 487.

Temple Bar, i. 436.
 Testament, New Greek, quoted, i. 323.
 Theobald, compared with Warburton by Johnson, i. 184.
 Theocritus, i. 31; compared with Virgil by Johnson, ii. 295.
 Thicknesse, P., his "Travels" commended by Johnson, ii. 156.
 Thomas, Nathaniel, ii. 61 n.
 Thomas, Colonel, of the Guards, his will quoted, ii. 433 n.
 Thomson, James, his poems, i. 510; Johnson's opinion of, 259, 326; ii. 24; quoted, i. 46.
 Thomson, Rev. James, case against, in the Court of Session, ii. 37-41.
 Thornton, Bonnel, i. 116, 223; his mock "Rambler," 121 n.; his burlesque, "Ode on St. Cecilia's Day," quoted, 238.
 Thrale, Mr., i. 303, 329, 334, 378 n., 418, 428, 432, 442, 464, 465, 467, 484, 493, 501, 507, 528, 529, 543, 556; ii. 4, 11, 14, 15, 18, 28, 86, 264, 267, 280, 282, 348; family history, i. 283; High Sheriff for Surrey, 283 n.; his opinion of French cookery, 540; death of his only son, 583; rumor of his own death, ii. 70; illness and partial recovery, 282, 289; contests Southwark, 293; loses election, 294; his illness and removal to Grosvenor Square, 342; his death, 350, 391; his brewery sold to Barclay and Perkins, 351 n., 382; his letter to electors of Southwark, 293.
 Thrale, Mrs., i. 3, 13, 99, 233, 236, 329, 334, 373, 377, 404 n., 459, 464, 467, 468, 478, 493, 494, 526, 527, 528, 544, 556, 586, 589; ii. 4, 18, 19, 22, 28, 30, 86, 123, 142, 149, 150, 165, 211, 218, 232, 233, 245, 264, 280, 282, 342, 349, 371, 474, 538, 564; her poem, "The Three Warnings," i. 304; sells her correspondence with Johnson, 314 n.; her coarse mode of flattery, 507; copies passages for Johnson, ii. 319; her affection for Johnson on the wane, 399; her engagement to Signor Piozzi, 515; her inaccuracy, 516; imaginary ode to, 548; her letters to Johnson, i. 277; ii. 283, 515; letters to, from Johnson, i. 277, 497 n., 525 n.; ii. 247, 283-287, 427 n., 444, 451, 453, 497, 498, 509, 546 n., 554 n.; quoted, i. 29 n., 30 n., 37 n., 43 n., 47 n., 133 n., 270 n., 407 n.; ii. 27 n., 226 n., 267 n., 354 n., 501, 517-520.
 Thrale, the Misses, i. 544; ii. 282, 447 n., 453.
 Thuanus, i. 5.
 Thucydides, ii. 222.

- Thurlow, Lord, i. 505; ii. 14; befriends Macbean, i. 104; ii. 294; opinion on the case of the Rev. James Thomson, 47; application to him to augment Johnson's income, 507; offers to lend Johnson journey money, 522; his letter to Johnson, 294; to Boswell, 513; letter to, from Johnson, 522.
- Thurot, ii. 361.
- Tickell, T., i. 353; Life of, quoted, ii. 331.
- Tillotson, Archbishop, his sermons, ii. 164.
- Tonson, bookseller, Johnson dines with, i. 147 n.
- Tooke, J. Horne, censured by Johnson, ii. 211; his "Letter to Mr. Dunning on the English Particle," 239.
- Toplady, Rev. Mr., i. 443, 447.
- Topsel, Edward, his "History of Four-footed Beasts and Animals," i. 73 n.
- Torré, pyrotechnist, ii. 506.
- Torrington family, vault of, in Southill Church, i. 176.
- Towers, Dr. Joseph, "Letter to Dr. Samuel Johnson," quoted, i. 487; essay on Johnson, quoted, ii. 321 n.
- Townshend, Right Hon. Charles, anecdote of, i. 425.
- Townson, Rev. Dr., "Discourse on the Evangelical History," i. 450 n.
- Trecothick, Barlow, Lord Mayor, ii. 50, 134.
- Trianon, Johnson at the, i. 536.
- Trimbletown, Lord, ii. 150, 151.
- Tuilleries, The, Johnson at, i. 534.
- Turk's Head Coffee House, Johnson sups at, i. 255.
- Turk's Head, meeting place of The Club, i. 275.
- Tursellinus, his "Life of St. Ignatius Loyola," i. 34.
- Turton, Dr., ii. 108.
- Twalmley, "the Great," inventor of a kind of box-iron, ii. 420.
- Twiss, his "Travels in Spain," criticised by Johnson, i. 505.
- Tyburn, i. 342.
- Tyers, Jonathan, founder of Vauxhall Gardens, ii. 206.
- Tyers, Thomas, i. 353; parodies a phrase of Johnson's, 176 n.; describes Johnson, ii. 206; history of, 206.
- Tyrawley, Lord, i. 418.
- Tyrconnel, Lord, i. 88 n., 95.
- Tytler, William, his vindication of Mary Queen of Scots, i. 199; his letter to Elphinstone, quoted, 479.
- Tytler, P. F., "History of Scotland," ii. 118 n.
- "UNION, The," collection of Poems, i. 59 n.
- "Universal Chronicle, The," "Idler" appears in, i. 184; Johnson writes advertisement for, 195 n.
- "Universal History," list of authors of, written by Johnson, ii. 544.
- "Universal Visitor, The," Johnson's Essays in, i. 171.
- "Universal Visitor, The," extraordinary contract with, i. 504.
- Usher, Archbishop, praised by Johnson, i. 367.
- Uttoxeter, Johnson does penance there, ii. 538.
- VALLANCY, Colonel, antiquary, ii. 471, 474.
- Vanbrugh, Sir John, i. 317 n.
- "Vanity of Human Wishes," i. 193, 291, 296, 352; ii. 132; publication of, i. 106; quoted, 108.
- Vansittart, Dr. Robert, of Oxford, i. 196, 406, 407 n.
- Vauxhall Gardens, ii. 206.
- Veal, Mrs., story of the ghost of, i. 387.
- Versailles, visited by Johnson, i. 529, 535.
- Verses to Lady Firebrace, by Johnson, i. 72.
- Vertot, René Aubert, Sieur de, his "Révolutions Romaines," i. 436.
- Vesey, Mr., i. 276, 488; ii. 313.
- Vestris, report of Johnson's taking dancing lessons with, ii. 347.
- Vilette, Rev. Mr., Chaplain of Newgate, praised by Johnson, ii. 509.
- Virgil, i. 31, 146, 469; ii. 223; Johnson's translation from, i. 17; edited by Dr. Joseph Warton, 140 n.; compared with Homer, ii. 129; with Theocritus, 295; discussed, 437; quoted, i. 28, 264, 301, 365, 414; ii. 141 n., 408, 420.
- "Vision of Theodore the Hermit," by Johnson, i. 106.
- "Vitalis, Janus," quoted, ii. 167.
- Voltaire, i. 161 n., 294, 320, 340, 533, 542; ii. 191, 223; his cruel jest on Admiral Byng, i. 176; his comparison between Pope and Dryden, 290; attacks Johnson in "Dictionnaire Philosophique," 287; his "Candide" compared with "Rasselas," 192; ii. 240; quoted, i. 194, 249.
- Vyse, Rev. Dr., letters to, from Johnson, ii. 81, 294 n.; his letter to Boswell, 82.
- WALDEGRAVE, Ladies, Reynolds' portrait of, i. 189 n.
- Wales, Johnson's impression of, i. 466.

- Walker, Joseph Cooper, i. 180; his letter to Boswell, quoted, ii. 73 n.
- Walker, Mr., master of elocution, his conversation with Johnson, ii. 428.
- Wall, Dr., physician at Oxford, ii. 485.
- Waller, Edmund, quoted, i. 515 n.; ii. 320, 483 n.; Life of, in "Biographia Britannica," quoted, 219 n.; Johnson's Life of, quoted, 320.
- Walmsley, Gilbert, eulogized by Johnson, in "Lives of Poets," i. 35; consulted by Johnson about "Irene," 49; his prediction about Johnson, 110; his letter to Rev. J. Colson, 50.
- Walpole, Horace, i. 189 n., 257 n.; contributes to "The World," 144 n.; sale of his pictures, ii. 512; Johnson on, 499; his "Reminiscences," i. 503 n.; his account of Dr. Dodd, ii. 91 n.; his collection of *bon mots*, 128 n.; his Memoirs of the Reign of George III., 499 n.; quoted, i. 234 n., 391 n.; ii. 417 n., 423 n., 487 n.; his Letters, i. 226 n., 430 n., 500 n., quoted, 84 n.
- Walpole, Sir R., i. 75 n.; ii. 159, 499; Johnson on, i. 68, 408; ii. 36, 348.
- Walton, Izaak, i. 517; his "Complete Angler," 73 n.; his Lives, 464, 466, 568; ii. 69; praised by Johnson, i. 517.
- Warburton, Bishop, i. 309 n., 390 n.; ii. 481; his compliment to Johnson, i. 97; his friendly message to Johnson, 147; compared by Johnson with Theobald, 184; controversy with Lowth, 311; on Mallet's "Life of Bacon," 129; his style of comment, 207 n.; tribute to, from Johnson, 326; his "Divine Legation," 326; his letter to Dr. Birch, quoted, i. 3.
- Ward, well-known quack, ii. 261.
- Wardlaw, Lady, her ballad of Hardyknute, i. 341.
- Warley Camp, Johnson visits, ii. 243.
- Warren, Dr., Johnson's physician, i. 276; ii. 556, 564.
- Warren, John, of Pembrokeshire, i. 41.
- Warren, Mr., bookseller, i. 38, 41.
- Warton, Rev. Joseph, i. 60 n., 276, 309 n., 313; ii. 247; his Essay on Pope, praised by Johnson, i. 257, 390; ii. 152; letters to, from Johnson, i. 140, 358.
- Warton, Thomas, the elder, Professor of Poetry, i. 140 n.
- Warton, Rev. T., the younger, i. 60 n., 140 n., 276; his account of Johnson's visit to Oxford, 151; his poem, "The Progress of Discontent," 158 n.; elected Professor of Poetry at Oxford, 181 n.; writes in "The Idler," 185; visited by Johnson, 568; Johnson criticises his poetry, ii. 104; his History of English Poetry, 189 n.; his dispute with Huggins about Ariosto, 299; his witty saying, 499; letters to, from Johnson, quoted, i. 151, 154, 155, 156, 158, 181, 187, 328, 357.
- Watson, Dr., Bishop of Llandaff, his "Chemical Essays," ii. 372.
- Watts, Dr. Isaac, his poems, ii. 249; criticised by Johnson, i. 175; ii. 82, 242; Johnson's Life of, 249.
- Webster, Rev. Dr. Alexander, i. 459, 460, 461; his account of parishes in Scotland, 460 n.
- Wedderburne, Alexander (Lord Loughborough), i. 523; his pronunciation, 217; ii. 1; helps Johnson to his pension, i. 210, 211, 212.
- "Weekly Miscellany," quoted, i. 70 n.
- Welch, Anne, ii. 144.
- Welch, Saunders, ii. 269; his intimacy with Johnson, 143, 145 n.; anecdote of, 415; letter to, from Johnson, 144.
- Wentworth, Mr., Master at Stourbridge School, i. 16, 17.
- Wesley, Rev. John, believes Newcastle ghost story, ii. 198; Johnson's opinion of his conversation, 153; quoted, i. 362 n.; letter to, from Johnson, ii. 265.
- West, G., his translation of Pindar criticised by Johnson, ii. 313.
- Westmoreland, Earl of, i. 196 n.
- Wetherell, Dr., Master of University College, Oxford, i. 512; Johnson calls on, 565; dines with, ii. 495; letter to, from Johnson, i. 554.
- Wheatley, near Oxford, Johnson at, ii. 494.
- Wheeler, Rev. Dr., ii. 291; letter to, from Johnson, 246.
- Whitaker, Rev. J., i. 353 n.; his "History of Manchester," ii. 224.
- White, Rev. Dr., Bishop of Episcopal Church in Virginia, letter to, from Johnson, i. 416.
- Whitefield, George, the preacher, i. 33; Johnson's opinion of his oratory, 335; ii. 274.
- Whitefoord, Caleb, his amusing essays, ii. 504.
- Whitehead, Paul, Johnson's prejudice against, i. 65.
- Whitehead, William, Poet Laureate, i. 102; Mason's Memoirs of, 5; his Elegy to Lord Villiers, quoted, ii. 370.
- "Whole Duty of Man," Johnson discusses authorship of, i. 437.
- Wickins, Lichfield draper, his anecdote of Johnson, i. 225 n.
- Wight, Mr., counsel in Negro cause, ii. 141 n.
- Wilcox, Mr., bookseller, i. 50 n.

- Wilkes, Friar, i. 538.
 Wilkes, Dr., his Epitaph on Phillips, quoted, i. 79.
 Wilkes, John, i. 65 *n.*, 70, 223, 293, 331; essay in "The Public Advertiser," 168; befriends Francis Barber, 197; Johnson writes against, 355; meets Johnson at the Dilllys', ii. 41-52; Johnson on, 121; his conversation with Boswell, 149; his attack on Garrick, 259; his conduct during the Gordon riots, 286, 287; repeats repartee of Pope's, 326; his conversation with Johnson, 361-364; tells sentimental anecdote, 521 *n.*; letter to, from Dr. Smollett, i. 197.
 Willes, Chief Justice, ii. 362.
 William III., Johnson's opinion of, i. 449, 502.
 Williams, Anna, i. 135, 141, 378, 428; her account of Mrs. Johnson, 44 *n.*; lives with Johnson, 129, 290; her intimacy with Johnson, 239, 266; with Johnson at Oxford, 329 *n.*; her dexterity in making tea, 346; petitioner for Hetherington's charity, 468; Johnson's forbearance with, ii. 16, 43, 230; angry with the Thrales, 34; dines with Dr. Percy, 180; her illness, 61, 63, 80, 84, 86, 140, 245, 406; her death, 447; her writings, i. 79, 303; Johnson's tale in her "Miscellanies," 432.
 Williams, Helen Maria, complimented by Johnson, ii. 477.
 Williams, Sir Charles Hanbury, i. 308.
 Williams, Dr. Zachariah, Johnson writes a pamphlet for, i. 153 *n.*, 169.
 Wilson, case of, Johnson's opinion on, i. 409.
 Wilson, Father, i. 532.
 Wilson, Rev. Mr., dedicates to Johnson his "Archæological Dictionary," ii. 400; letter to, from Johnson, 400.
 Wilton, Joseph, R.A., i. 461.
 Windham, Right Hon. William, i. 276, 480; ii. 239, 415, 459, 473, 519, 527; at Johnson's death-bed, 564, 566; pall-bearer, 568; letters to, from Johnson, 442, 531.
 Windsor, visited by Johnson, i. 138.
 "Winter's Walk, The," by Johnson, quoted, i. 98.
 Wirmann's toy-shop in St. James's Street, ii. 217.
 Wirtemberg, Prince of, anecdote of, i. 399.
 Wise, F., Radclivian librarian, i. 152.
 Woffington, Peg, anecdote of, ii. 176.
 Wood, Antony à, quoted, i. 24.
 Woodhouse, the poetical shoemaker, criticised by Johnson, i. 364.
 "World, The," i. 144, 145; Johnson's opinion of, 239.
 "World Displayed, The," Introduction to, by Johnson, i. 195.
 Wraxall, N. W., ii. 285; his Memoirs, quoted, 409 *n.*
 Wray, Sir Cecil, ii. 466 *n.*
 Wyndham, Sir William, letter from Bolingbroke to, quoted, ii. 156 *n.*
 XENOPHON, his "Treatise of Economy," ii. 62.
 Xerxes, i. 429; ii. 133.
 YALDEN, poems by, ii. 249.
 Yonge, Sir William, i. 386; writes Epilogue to "Irene," 109.
 York, Edward, Duke of, i. 288.
 Young, Dr., i. 119; ii. 167; his "Universal Passion," 334; his "Satires," 374 *n.*; his "Night Thoughts," i. 344; ii. 334; quoted, 108, 205, 362, 488; life of, by Sir Herbert Croft, 332.
 Young, Professor, imitates Johnson, ii. 551.
 Young, son of the poet, ii. 372.
 Yvery, House of, ii. 423.
 Zeck, George and Luke, i. 291.
 Zon, Mr., His Excellency, Venetian Resident, i. 153.

92 J69b11

v.2

University Libraries
Carnegie-Mellon University
Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY



138 443

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY